



# UNDEFEATED GOD OF WAR

BOOK 08

*Fang Xiang*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Undeclared God of War

(不败战神)

by

Fang Xiang

(方想)

# Synopsis

---

Youth, is meant to be used to shed sweat under the sun!

Youth, is to continuously engage in battles, and secure the win!

The endless journey on Heaven's Road, an endless expedition, a testimony of a hot-blooded youth's legend!

A dream every man harbors, with the ignition of the blood!  
Forever young, Undefeated God of War!

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Ting, BerrryBunz @ [Translation Nations](#)

Translation Edits by Robin, Leo and De Andre, and Boost Turtle  
@ [Translation Nations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 701 – West Route's Enlightenment

---

On top of the fort, Da Lin's calm face finally changed for the first time.

Captain Huo and the other bodyguards were personally brought in by her, she knew of their strength like the back of her hands, and also thought that their coordination was powerful, and their strengths outstanding, thus entrusting them with heavy responsibility. But the five of them that attacked together were not even able to take one strike from the other party.....

Such a strong martial artist was definitely not an unknown person!

The Ursa Major Null Division, why haven't I heard of them? Are they from the Sacred Saint Galaxy? Da Lin's face changed, she secretly shook her head, the Gold Saints of the Sacred Saint Galaxy would have their strength depleted in the Sin Domain.

The Sin Domain was a real exile.

Who are they then?

She looked at Han Bing Ning once more, Han Bing Ning still had a calm expression, but her eyes never left the ghost face mask for a second. When Da Lin's gaze looked at Han Bing Ning's pupils, her state of mind trembled. In the few days of interaction, Han Bing Ning was like an ice mountain, especially her eyes, which were like ice crystals that no one could melt. But at that moment, the pupils

that were like ice crystals were filled with unconcealable pride and passion, like an ice mirror reflecting the brilliance and warmth of the sun.

They truly are hell bent on this, Da Lin bit her lips, she was not ready to accept the situation as it was.

Her family possessed a noble lineage, and no matter how much they have declined, the arrogance in their blood and bones had never left.

You want me to hand her over, not so easy!

Da Lin turned her head, she looked towards a black faced sturdy and built man. He nodded and quietly left.

\*\*\*\*\*

Since he had to take action, Tang Tian never thought of being lenient.

Walking alone on the broad west route, he ignored the groaning behind him, the slow wind that blew past was like a weak bugle horn whimpering, the swaying purple rattans were like war flags fluttering.

It was his battlefield.

There was no cowardice, no retreat, no distracting thoughts. Tang Tian only had the silently fluttering blood bear black flag in his eyes. As though the combusting battle intent was mixing into his blood, his body became extremely restless.

His speed was not fast nor slow, like his heartbeat, it was constant and strong, like the loud bass drums before the start of a war, it was not hurried or gentle, but deliberate and powerful.

His blood vessels started to expand, and his blood started to boil.

It was an unprecedented concentration, causing Tang Tian's intuition to soar to an unprecedented sharpness. The acute senses caused him to become immersed in a mystical world.

That's right, to other people, the Sin Domain was a land of exile, but in his eyes, it was a treasured land.

Heaven's Road was a place that allowed easier comprehension and enlightenment on laws as compared to the Sacred Saint Galaxy as the energy was much thinner, thus laws were much easier to surface. In the Sin Domain where no energy existed, laws were right in front of him. The majority of the citizens in the Sin Domain were enlightened on laws, because it was far easier to be comprehend them as compared to other places.

A land filled with laws that was completely different from the sea of laws in the Forceful Subjugating Bead, these laws were real and much more irregular and chaotic, but at the same time, even more stable and balanced.

Senior Gui Wu must never have imagined that there would be a place like Sin Domain.

Tang Tian was immersed in an indescribably miraculous state. His body was boiling, his fighting intent soaring to the point that he was trembling, yet his state of mind was disengaged from it, he was comprehending and reflecting on the true sea of laws. He was like a fish swimming comfortable in the ocean with an indescribable pleasure.

Something seemed to become restless in his body.

Tang Tian was oblivious to everything else, he was immersed in this sea of laws, all of the laws were in their original forms, their most primitive essence appeared in front of him.

Every step he took, he would comprehend something.

Every step he took, he would gain something.

Tang Tian was completely immersed in the world of laws and was completely oblivious to the situation outside, and was also completely oblivious to the transformation that his body was undergoing.

His temperament was constantly changing.



He would suddenly become faintly discernable, suddenly become tyrannical, suddenly became like the wind, suddenly become like a dense of water vapor, suddenly become extremely cold, suddenly become as sharp as a spear.....

Every step he took, he changed.

Every step would cause everyone watching him to feel something wrong, the ghost face mask that was slowly advancing kept on becoming a different person.

When had anyone seen such a bizarre scene before? In the large west street, it was so quiet that even a needle dropping could be heard.

Ping Xiao Shan's mouth was wide opened without restraint.

It was not easy to live in the Sin Domain, especially for the lower rung of society, they could only struggle and struggle to obtain the qualifications to live. He himself had broken through all of that and had long seen the real world, he was not spoiled and knowledgeable, but everything that he was witnessing was completely toppling all of his common sense.

When Tang Tian had grabbed onto the fiery red spear previously, he could clearly see that Tang Tian's palm had become blurred.

If we were to say that Tang Tian's toss had left Ping Xiao Shan dumbstruck, then Tang Tian's grab had left him retarded.

Air and space could not only be used to escape, but it could be used to attack and defend. The Fiery red spear that could burn anything but was unable to burn through the air. The blurred space around Tang Tian's hand that grabbed onto the spear body was a thin layer of air.

Genius, he is a true genius!

After a night of learning the Ping Family's stealth techniques, to actually unleash the spatial laws to such an inconceivable level, more than just shocked, Ping Xiao Shan was actually emotionally moved. It was just a toss and a grab, but Ping Xiao Shan was able to see the true potential of his Ping Family's stealth techniques.

But, Tang Tian's next transformation caused the passionate Ping Xiao Shan to become completely dumbstruck.

What.....what is going on.....

How can a person's temperament change so much, and so many times?

The black faced sturdy man that walked out from the fort froze in his steps, disbelief and shock flashed past his eyes, He is actually comprehending while walking!

How brazen!

He took a deep breath, the shock in his eyes disappeared, and ferocity and determination replaced it. He had seen countless of talented geniuses, and at the same time knew of hard working martial artists, but it was his first time meeting such a brave soul that was actually quietly comprehending laws while in the middle of a battle.

For some reason, the temperament and aura given off by the man in the ghost face mask kept on changing and disappearing.

What replaced it was a feeling of never retreating, the desperateness of fighting to win or die! Unable to tolerate loss! To rather die than admit defeat!

Is he in a position of life or death?

The black faced man became calm, yet his heart was filled with an alarm.

I have never seen a person as ferocious as you, a person who will never take a step backwards, a man with such conviction, a man seeking so fervently for victory.....

Truly a maniac!

If this man does not die, I cannot be his enemy.

All of a sudden, this thought surfaced in his mind.

He took a deep breath, suppressing the thoughts in his head, his gaze reinstated tranquility. The ghost face mask's craziness and transcending willpower made him feel a deep respect for him.

But, regardless of anything, he could not allow Miss Da Lin's dignity to be trampled on!

This, is his determination!

He leapt up and landed in front of Tang Tian.

When the black faced big sized man appeared on the street, it incited an uproar.

Miss Da Lin's family was the Mu'er Family, and their ancestors were the royal family of Fa'er Continent. They were banished into the Sin Domain, and the steel guards that protected the royal family rejected the Honorable Martial Continent's recruitment, and chose to enter the Sin Domain to continue protecting the Mu'er Family that were no longer the royal family.

Ben Sen was the current generation's Steel Guard, and protected Da Lin.

Mu'er Steel Guards were prestigious. After entering the Sin Domain, the Mu'er Family did not live well, they struggled and struggled, and the steel guards fought their way out for them. The group of loyal and unswerving steel guards continued to deplete

and gradually withered, and all that was left was Ben Sen.

But no one ever had the intention of fighting the Mu'er Family.

Ben Sen could be rated as a legend, since young, he received the harshest grooming, at fourteen years of age, he travelled out alone and fought in many cities of the Sin Domain, charging his way through and obtaining the name of [Black Ben Sen], he returned back to the Mu'er Family at twenty two years of age and accepted the position as a steel guard.

Just at that time, the Mu'er Family was extremely unstable, and when they announced that Ben Sen had rejoined the family and assumed the position as a steel guard, they immediately became stable.

It was also at that time that Da Lin was born. He had watched Da Lin grow up, and protected her all the way.

After that, The Mu'er Family never got engaged in any battles and stopped being in decline, becoming more prosperous as days past.

With the number one expert of the Mu'er Family appearing, it immediately caused everyone to be excited. The prestigious Black Ben Sen who became famous 24 years ago, had gone through 24 years of closed door training, so no one dared to confirm his current strength. In the past 24 years, no one had seen Ben Sen make a move, as he forever stood by Da Lin's side as an unshakeable shadow.

The Purple Cuckoo City's various families had many experts, but they had never dared looked down on Black Ben Sen.

“Eh, that aura! It's Black Ben Sen!”

In the other corner of Purple Cuckoo City, inside a dark room, a man dressed luxuriously exclaimed out, his face changed slightly, and he suddenly disappeared.

“Eh? Mu'er Family? He is finally taking action?”

In a straw hut, a long haired man stood up and opened up his palm, pa, the sword on the ground flew into his palm before he soared out.

Looking down from the sky, one could see various figures flew from various locations of Purple Cuckoo City at astonishing speed towards the Mu'er Fort.

Different from the rest, Ping Xiao Shan's face turned pale white, Black Ben Sen, an expert that had not appeared for over 20 years was actually making his move!

Quickly run.....

It's over, it's over, my Ping Family's stealth technique.....

His hands and feet turned cold, his face pale white.

Tang Tian sensed that there was someone in front of him, and immediately woke up, leaving the miraculous state. He was hesitant and somewhat wished to continue, to be able to maintain the miraculous state of enlightenment was not something that could be sought after. If he could maintain it longer, the benefits would be even more.

But he knew that it was a battlefield, and it was not the right place to obtain benefits.

His gaze landed on Ben Sen. The fighting intent that was boiling in his body but suppressed down due to the state of mind immediately lost control and exploded out like a volcano. Tang Tian's eyes flushed red, the surging and flaming fighting intent instantly swallowed all remnants of his calmness.

“If you can.....”

Before he could finish his words, the aura of the young man changed.

If I can't gain any more enlightenment, then I will obtain it through fighting!

If you don't want to hand over my friend, I will beat you until you do!

Tang Tian's pupils dilated, his left leg suddenly kicked forward, and the air in front of him exploded!

In the exploded ripple of air, Tang Tian's body suddenly disappeared.



# Chapter 702 – The Battle on the West Route

---

Initially, Ben Sen had wanted to speak a few words in front of everybody, who were all from the big families of the Sin Domain, and people who did not conform to it and instantly started attacking were viewed as ignorant people.

Truly a boorish man.

Tang Tian was extremely fast, between his blurred afterimages, his ghost face mask became extremely ghastly, the initial spirited and calm eyes were blazing with flames, his fighting intent had been released! The incoming wave formed by his kick seemed to have become hot.

Ben Sen squinted, but did not move. The other party was filled with a determination, and had even showed that he was comprehending laws on the road, he was an opponent that was definitely filled with unquestionable willpower.

But, do you think that you can win just by relying on your willpower? Too naive.

Ben Sen stepped back, his hands callus covered hands opened up, and streams of air started to flow towards his palm. Bang, he suddenly clenched his five fingers, the air distorted and an illusionary object appeared, a blade handle appeared in his hand.

Ben Sen's aura immediately changed, the originally quiet and stoic figure had become vigorous.

Clang, it sounded like a blade being unsheathed, the illusion came down from above and slashed down at Tang Tian.

Tang Tian's eyes constricted, the illusion flashed down like lightning, but Tang Tian's fighting intent was at its peak, his entire body was like a volcano with endless lava flowing out as though it could erupt at any moment.

Come!

He roared in his heart.

Come on! Come on!

The thunderous roars seemed to echo out endlessly.

He did not have any intent to dodge the illusionary blade, he welcomed it instead, and in mid air he suddenly turned his body, and lifting his right leg up like a heavy ax, he slashed down.

Bang!

The two powerful forces collided, a visible shock wave exploded out and swept the entire West Route!

The shock wave was as congealed as an opaque wall, the whistling was extremely sharp, causing everyone to be

overwhelmed with shock, all of them activated their own defenses. The more powerful martial artists only trembled, while the weaker martial artists were all pushed back seven to eight steps.

Ping Xiao Shan saw the shock wave and his body flickered, he jumped up 21m and avoided the shock wave.

But when he lowered his head to look, his face turned pale, wherever the shock wave passed, it left behind countless of scars all around the flat West Route, as though sharp sawtooths had swept past the place.

Too terrifying!

Ping Xiao Shan who was afraid retreated back 20m before stopping.

His gaze landed on the two in the distance fighting, he could not believe his eyes, Tang Tian was actually not at a disadvantage. Although he had lost to Tang Tian the night before, he knew that Tang Tian's strength was not ordinary, but although he reckoned he was powerful, he figured that the disparity was not too much.

To be in the same level as Black Ben Sen? That is such wishful thinking.....

But, watching the scene before him did not make him laugh, Tang Tian's display of strength proved everything. Unknowingly, his mentality started to change, he suddenly thought of his

thoughts to rise, and became somewhat nervous.

If Tang Tian was a nameless hero, he still felt that he himself had some value. But in the eyes of people like Ben Sen, he was just an ant and was practically worthless.

The battle on the West Route began to intensify.

The raging streams of air were extremely sharp, they whistled past the West Route, causing countless of the purple rattans to break and spin into the air. Upon colliding with other streams of air, they would split into pieces and fall down like rain, covering the entire street.

In the scene of the pouring rain, the two figures flickered around like lightning, chasing each other and colliding with one another.

The explosions caused from their collisions resonated out through the entire Purple Cuckoo City.

Tang Tian was completely engrossed in fighting.

One of the reasons was because the fighting intent in him had been brewing for a long time, with nowhere to drain it. Adding the suppression from the state of enlightenment, it had exponentially increased to an unprecedented level. Just a small spark was enough to ignite him.

Another reason was because Ben Sen was powerful.

Ben Sen trained in a unique set of laws, congealing Wind Laws as blades. After immersing himself for over a decade, his blade techniques had become saturated with Wind Laws. Suddenly light and gentle, suddenly heavy and strong, suddenly torrential and destructive, suddenly thin and sharp, it could change at any second.

The Wind Blade in Ben Sen's hands was one that he could change on a whim, he could dissipate it or congeal it at any second. Tang Tian had suffered from it a few times, with many cuts all over his body.

Tang Tian's personality was staunch and tenacious, he met strong attacks with strong attacks, the stronger the opponent, the more his fighting intent would soar and be unafraid.

In terms of strength, Tang Tian was not Ben Sen's opponent, Ben Sen's Wind Blade's control was profound, unlike Tang Tian who was an amateur that had just grasped Laws. But Tang Tian's inquisitive mind and his powerful state of mind, adding his fiery willpower that combust to his maximum allowed him to be on par. He had trained in the Zero Energy Body for a long time, and was extremely comfortable with the Sin Domain, allowing him to be extremely free. Adding his enlightenment, he was truly like an agile sailfish.

Adding all this together, Tang Tian became equally scary.

Chi, a violent wind arrow stabbed beneath Tang Tian's ribs,

transforming a blood mist, and before it could dissipate, it was blown into a mess.

Tang Tian ignored it, his eyes were fixated on Ben Sen, a long hissing sound came up as he punched out, red flames enveloped Tang Tian's fists, surging outwards like a dragon with its head raised up high.

Ben Sen's eyes shrunk, it was a fist made from the fiery red spear!

He snorted, the wind blade in his hand became invisible, as though it had scattered into the air.

In the next second, an illusionary figure smashed into the fiery red fist aura.

Bang!

The fire scattered, long dim black lines came out from nowhere, coiling around Ben Sen's wrists.

Hidden spider web!

These degree of laws were naturally incapable of binding Ben Sen down, he snorted, the wind blade in his hand dissipated again, transforming into ten minute and slender blade pieces, like ice crystals, they coiled around his wrists and broke the spider webs.

Ben Sen squinted his eyes, the crystallized streams of air that coiled around his wrists suddenly shot forward.

Ding ding ding!

A collision occurred, causing an invisible sword to tremble in the air, becoming faintly discernible in the sparks formed by the collision.

It was Captain Huo's most proficient invisible sword!

It was Ben Sen's first time seeing such a strange opponent, all three moves were the ultimate techniques of Captain Huo's team, but in just one exchange, he actually learned them all! Although the degree of control was shallow, but he had still learned them, and he was able to change the laws that he used so quickly, making it hard for his opponents to defend.

Both parties engaged in an intense battle of over a hundred moves, their techniques were never repeated, showing that their enlightenment on laws were not shallow and weak.

If not for Ben Sen's rich battle experience, he would have become flustered fighting such a strange opponent.

If it was just that, it could at most make him flustered. Other than time, spatial, life and death, the three most fundamental and great laws, the merits and drawbacks of the other laws did not have that much differences.

The most important thing was not what law was learned, but how profound one had comprehended the law. As long as the comprehension was deep enough, a law could break into millions of different laws, and that was the reason behind it. In history, it was a common occurrence for someone to comprehend a law and become a powerful martial artist.

Ben Sen's wind blades were not from a highly profound law, but in his hand, it became extremely powerful.

The other party looked to have touched upon a few laws, but because it was heterogenous, very rarely would there be people doing it. All these transformations were just petty tricks, to Ben Sen, the other party had walked the wrong path.

Since it was that, he was not afraid.

But to be able to tangle with Ben Sen for so long, not only was he relying on his shallow comprehension of laws, but he also showed his powerful physique.

Ben Sen had received extremely harsh training since young, his physique naturally surpassed many people. But personally fighting, Ben Sen knew how strong the other party was, it was really inconceivable.

All of those extremely different laws, utilized by such a strong physique was thus able to release such power.



His wind blade could easily shatter the fiery red fists, but no matter how strong it was, it still made him shudder, that was purely an attack using the physical body.

The frequency of attacks were extremely high, the changes in techniques were extremely fast, far beyond anyone could comprehend. In the time that it took to strike a match, there were already many variations.

The spectators were all intoxicated by the fight, it was not easy for a powerful martial artist like Ben Sen to take action. Whoever wanted to challenge Ben Sen meant that they were completely breaking ties with the Mu'er family.

Since it was such a rare opportunity, everybody had their eyes opened wide, afraid that they would miss something.

The West Route became the arena for the two men, the ground was littered with big pits, shattered rocks and boulders, occasionally there would be chaotic gales surging forth, cracking the walls by the side, and the purple rattan which were dragged into the chaos were all heavily damaged, not one was left hanging.

To fight to this extent, who would care about the street?

Like two lightning bolts, they chased each other relentlessly.

“This man’s will to fight is truly uplifting.” A swordsman

muttered, he floated in the air and observed the intense battle quietly.

To this point, the ghost face mask's man was still extremely imposing, blazing with passion like a fireball that would never extinguish. All of the injuries he had sustained seemed to have no effect on him, as though his physical strength could not be depleted.

Strength could not last, that was something all experienced veterans were well versed in and knew.

A full force attack could not be sustained for long. Once a person's stamina was depleted, it meant that they would have lost the initiation to engage.

Ben Sen who was fighting had subconsciously started to save his physical strength, their collisions were mostly head on, meaning that the consumption of stamina and physical strength was immense. But the ghost face mask seemed to not know fatigue.

Constantly attacking with full force was not an intelligent move, even with an astonishing physique, he would start to feel tired after a period of time.

In the air, a few people watched the battle intently.

On the battlefield, Tang Tian began to suppress Ben Sen, Ben Sen continued to retreat under Tang Tian's torrential attacks. But to

the experts who had experience, they would notice that although Ben Sen was retreating, his strides and rhythm were not in a mess.

Ben Sen was like a crafty hunter, patiently trying to ambush, waiting for his chance.

Ben Sen was extremely calm, he could feel that the opponent's attack was becoming even more fearsome, but he also knew that it was the final radiance of the setting sun, and was the sign where the other party's strength was finishing. The dread after the physical strength was used up, made the other party feel the urge to end the battle quickly.

But little did one imagine that it would consume physical strength even faster.

Ben Sen remained calm, he secretly stored his strength, waiting for the opportunity when the other party would finish up all of his strength and reveal a flaw.

Just one flaw was enough.

After the long battle, he was rather clear of the ghost face mask man's strength, as long as a flaw was revealed, he had confidence that he could kill him!

Suddenly, he noticed that the other party's leg kick revealed a momentarily slow.

It is now!

Ben Sen erupted with vigor, the wind blade in his hand was raised up high, and the wind around them stopped.

“Gust!”

His stern voice sounded like a heavy bass drum, thumping into everybody’s heart.

The wind blade in his hand thawed like ice, and transformed into an invisible gale.

The gale had locked its target, an intense sense of danger surged through Tang Tian’s entire body.

The ghost face mask remained cold as usual, the young man’s eyes turned indifferent, as though all of his strength had been used.

Behind the mask, a silent laugh came out.

Heh.

# Chapter 703 – Success

---

The invisible wind was silent.

The air around Tang Tian became chaotic, and suddenly became extremely sluggish, the intense sense of danger shrouded Tang Tian.

Chi chi!

Two blood arrows shot out of Tang Tian's legs, releasing two streaks of blood.

“Eh!”

The man dressed in a luxurious gown watching from a distance had a change in emotion, he did not sense any undulation. He glanced at the swordsman in the distance, who also revealed a look of shock.

Chi chi!

Another two blood streaks appeared on Tang Tian's shoulders.

The man's face turned serious, at their level, undulations formed by laws could not escape their eyes. But, Ben Sen's attack was extremely formless and invisible, and did not release any undulations.

Impossible!

There was no brilliance, no sound, not even a ripple in the air. But these were things that they could achieve as well, but to not even have any undulations from laws, to be able to hide it, that was too terrifying. There was only one method to stop such an attack, and that was as all rounded defense domain that had no dead angles.

Ben Sen has become so strong?

The man in the luxurious robes was secretly shocked, his gaze was fixated on Ben Sen, As expected of Black Ben Sen! The Mu'er Family's name will rise once again, as everyone has underestimated Ben Sen's strength.

He did not even look at Ghost Face Mask. Ghost Face Mask was no longer as breathtaking as before, the current Ghost Face Mask was like a docile sheep. The time of his death would be determined by Ben Sen, whenever Ben Sen wanted to tighten the noose on his neck.

That guy is dead.

The man in the luxurious robes thoughts were placed more on the undulations caused by the battle. Ben Sen's powerful display had broken the balance in Purple Cuckoo City, an element that could no longer be avoided.

In the Sin Domain, strength was king, and any strong martial artist could support a family. The Sin Domain did not have a huge population to begin with, and half was left from the harsh environment elimination. With such few manpower, it had set the path for Sin Domain, to no longer be able to have armies like the Sacred Saint Galaxy. The use of powerful martial artists rose to prominence.

The swordsman was even more direct, he turned and was prepared to leave, as he had already lost interest in the fight that had lost its suspense.

Suddenly, he seemed to have sense something and turned back.

The Ghost Face Mask pupils suddenly dimmed and became extremely bright as he was enveloped in the invisible attack.

For some reason, the swordsman's breathing stopped, he subconsciously tightened the grip on his sword hilt.

Tang Tian punched out, the red flames spurring forth.

Fiery Red Spear again? Ben Sen squinted his eyes, Seems like this opponent is truly at the end of his road, he had never repeated his repertoire of attacks, but now he is using the same move.

Time to kill you.

Ben Sen relaxed and extended out his five fingers, and suddenly closed it again.

Chi chi chi chi, blood spurted out from Tang Tian's entire body, in the blink of an eye, there were even more blood wounds on him.

The green and black ghost face mask remained silent, but the cold light aura in his eyes became extremely bright. Inside the mist of blood, the young man relaxingly extended out his lower back in mid air, ignoring the additional wounds on his body as though they had no effect.

The scene seemed to stop, the twisting figure looked like a bow string being pulled, filled with a powerful aesthetic movement as though he was about to explode forth. Contrasting with the sky filled of blood mist, this scene made everyone watch in appreciation, it was a sight hard to come by.

The feeling that he was filled with power shocked both the swordsman and the man in luxurious robes.

Ben Sen also had a change in expression.

Not good!

He was only in time to sense that something was amiss, but the punch from the Ghost Face Mask had already arrived.

The punch that was executed without difficulty moved extremely



naturally like an overflowing flood that burst forth with an unstoppable power.

In the next moment, his eyes constricted to the size of needles, Tang Tian's punched had smashed the air in front of him.

How....how did he find out?

Ben Sen was overwhelmed with shock, his [Gust] was a concealed and invisible attack, it was gentle as water, and he had even made the undulations of law invisible, this killing technique was not something that the Ghost Face Mask man could sense!

But he found the wind gap of [Gust]!

How is that possible!

The wind gap of [Gust] is everchanging, how did he find it?

This guy, was he faking it all along?

In that moment, all of these thoughts flashed past Ben Sen's mind, but he immediately calmed himself down, he had confidence in himself, [Gust]'s wind gap was concealed very well, and enemies would not be able to grasp it. But he knew where his technique's weakness laid in, so he structured a very careful design in the wind gap of Gust.

Who would have thought that, the seemingly boorish and big sized Black Ben Sen would be so crafty?

The fist made up of red flames was like a fireball, fiercely colliding into the gale.

Wait a minute!

That is not red flames!

The red flames turned grey.

Ben Sen's face changed greatly, he was not in time to react, and the wind gap in front of him exploded.

Both of their attacks clashed head on, the initial wind gap that Ben Sen was in control of lost control, causing an uninterrupted explosion that boomed on incessantly. Boom boom boom!

A sinister and extremely cold force caused Ben Sen's face to change, his body turned numb, he became confused, What kind of law is this?

The scale of the explosions were unprecedented, the terrifying sonic boom and shock wave swept through Ben Sen, causing him to feel a power that could topple mountains and oceans collide into him, causing him to lose control and fly out.

Tang Tian had awakened the Null Flames, and disguised it as the fiery red flames, merging it with the laws that he had learnt, he threw out all of his cards in one attack.

Just for this punch.

Tang Tian who had released the punch quietly floated in the air, the green and black mask remained stoic and cold, the pair of blazing eyes dimmed down, what replaced it was an unfathomable resilience.

The shock wave had released a sound like a mountain crumbling from an earthquake.

Heh.

The young man behind the mask sneered, Ahhhh, so painful.

Will a song now make me look even more handsome? Or maybe I should raise my hands up and shout 'Godlike young lad, go go go?' Should I do something to make myself look even more powerful? If Little Xu Xu were to see this, he would definitely revere me so much that he would kowtow, right? Or Ah Mo Li would too....

Oh Shit! I forgot! We have no time! Annoying!

Tang Tian who instantly felt vexed fiercely turned his body and crouched down and anticipated.

Bang, a shock wave fiercely smashed onto his back, causing the wounds on his entire body to rupture, blood gushed out. Tang Tian's vision dimmed slightly, he groaned but held on.

He did not resist the force, not because he did not want to, but because he could not, and his body was flung far out.

The scenery around him flew behind extremely quickly, Tang Tian's gaze never left the figure that stood atop the highest floor of the fort.

Tang Tian's speed was so quick that afterimages formed behind him.

Everyone was shocked by the scale of the explosion. The terrifying shock wave had collided into him directly, the entire West Route had been razed, and all the spectators were doing their best to resist the shock wave. At that moment, no one noticed Tang Tian flying out.

Da Lin was so frightened her face was as white as paper, from her position she could clearly see the gigantic explosion that devastated and razed the West Route, the environment was swept to nothing from the shock wave.

Suddenly, a little black dot in her vision quickly grew bigger.

Wait a minute, that is.....

The sinister ghost face was extremely malevolent, he had his limbs spread open like a net, pouncing towards her at an astonishing speed.

No.....

Da Lin's mind went into a blank, she was completely shocked, feeling as if she was about to be devoured.

A gust of wind swept past her body.

Ha, got you!

Behind the mask, Tang Tian revealed a pleased smile, he used his hands and legs to hug onto Han Bing Ning, but in the next second, his expression froze. Han Bing Ning's entire body was shackled, and she was extremely weak.

Not good. When Tang Tian realised that something was amiss, the two of them were not able to stop already.

Rumble rumble, the two of them rolled out a few metres.

Tang Tian shook his head to get rid of the dizziness and stood up, Han Bing Ning had the same ice cold expression, but from her neck up, she was blushing.

Tang Tian immediately removed the light needles on her back.

“Die!”

Ben Sen roared, even when comparing to the powerful shock wave, his voice was still powerful.

Tang Tian jumped in fright, he turned his head to look and noticed a black dot flying towards him at a fast speed. Hahahaha, Ben Sen looks a bit like an enraged lion, a slightly tanned lion, hahahaha.....

Tang Tian stepped forward and grabbed onto Da Lin who was stupefied.

Seeing that, Ben Sen's eyes cracked!

NO!

The smile on Tang Tian's face disappeared, he exhaled out, grabbing onto Da Lin, he used every ounce of strength he had and threw her towards the other direction.

Bang, a mist of blood erupted once more after he threw her.

Da Lin shot out like an arrow, flying out towards Tang Tian's left.

“Ahhhhhhh.....”

Da Lin's screamed pierced everyone's ears, Ben Sen erupted with full force, suddenly changing directions in mid air, he rushed towards Da Lin.

Tang Tian heaved a sigh of relief, he used his hands and legs and crawled towards the gate and pulled out the flag. This blood bear is truly too ridiculous, looking at its terrible look, Tang Tian felt that it was unbearable to look at No, Han Bing Ning will have to draw another one.....

The bodyguards of Mu'er residence finally awoke from their stupor, when they saw how Tang Tian pulled out the flag with his arms and legs, they knew that he had already used up all of his strength, and being aroused, they rushed in.

Han Bing Ning's face turned cold, without adopting any stance, a powerful aura erupted around her.

With her as the center, frost rapidly formed on the ground, she stood upright loftily, although without a sword, but an extremely cold sword concept surged into the air.

The bodyguards who were rushing towards them all stopped in their tracks.

The swordsman who was observing in the air could not resist but exclaim out, his eyes lit up, As a swordsman, he was even more

sensitive to sword concepts, and his interest grew bigger.

It was a very pure sword concept, with the ability to form ice cold glaciers yet not losing the true form of the sword concept, the swordsman's eyes revealed a look of admiration. Many swordsman chased for power and variations from the get go, adding in various laws, they can definitely increase their power initially, but as their technique becomes too heterogenous, it would become extremely difficult for them to improve when they reach a certain stage.

Only people who could hold fast to their core could obtain the top sword dao.

Suddenly, a hand extended out behind, grabbing Han Bing Ning by her arm, causing her to freeze, the powerful aura started to crumble like an ice avalanche, and disappeared.

Tang Tian grabbed onto Han Bing Ning with one hand, and the black flag in the other, he started to run, and the two immediately became blurry and disappeared.

What was left were the anxious bodyguards who looked at each other.



# Chapter 704 – Reflection

---

Whoosh.

Han Bing Ning only felt an indescribable undulation binding her as they disappeared, she felt extremely relaxed and the scene before her dimmed. But with Han Bing Ning's eyes, darkness did not affect her as she looked around cautiously.

Warehouse?

There were many goods placed all around, but there were no one else. Han Bing Ning relaxed, as it meant that it was safe.

Faint voices came out from outside.

“Ming Zhu Jie is so pissed by the guy with last name Tang, I don't even know what old granny is thinking, spending 200 thousand to buy that trash.”

“That's right! That guy is too lazy, too fall asleep like a pig while guarding the warehouse. When Young Master Qin was here, he still snored out loud! You should had seen how bad Ming Zhu Jie's face was!”

“Our Xue Family is still a family with face, to keep such a disdainful person, it truly provokes ridicule onto us.”

“Eh, don’t talk so loudly, Ming Zhu Jie and Young Master Qin went to watch some interesting things outside, they should be back soon.”

“It was such a huge commotion, god, will the entire city collapse? It scared me just now!”

“That’s right, it was like thunder....”

The footsteps went further away.

Han Bing Ning turned and looked at Tang Tian, Tang Tian’s expression was awkward, luckily he still had his mask on and she could not tell. He had actually scolded the two ladies in his heart, to actually talk behind the back of the godlike young lad, you two assholes!

But it was not the right time for them to talk, he whispered: “Hide here first, I will be back tonight.”

“Alright.” Han Bing Ning did not hesitate, the warehouse was extremely big, with so many stacks of goods everywhere, it was like a maze, and it was extremely easy to hide a person inside.

Tang Tian gave the mask and flag to Han Bing Ning: “Find a place to hide these.”

The two objects were the most offensively conspicuous items, if anyone else saw it, they would be in deep trouble. What can I say,

that stupid flag that I waved all over the city is too ugly, sigh, too embarrassing, too embarrassing....

Tang Tian nodded at Han Bing Ning, and quietly opened the warehouse door and left.

Seeing that familiar face, Han Bing Ning calmed down, the few days of panic, worry and fear, and vanished without a trace. Thinking about the battle just now, even for an ice queen like her could not refrain from feeling emotional.

She controlled her state of mind and became calm again.

She knew that the battle was but just the prologue. When Tang Tian took action, he would never stop. Her ice pupils flashed with a look of determination, Isn't this what you always wanted, the opportunity to fight by his side?

I have finally chased up to you. Her state of mind was extraordinary calm.

She sat down cross legged and started to recuperate her strength.

She was naturally quiet, although her strength had been shackled for a few days, but she never gave up being hard working. She trained in the zero energy body, and with her sharp mind, she sensed the uniqueness of Sin Domain. She quietly observed and felt the laws that were everywhere.

She had recovered her freedom, a big battle was about to begin, she threw out all the thoughts and focused on training.

\*\*\*\*\*

Tang Tian carefully dodged passersby and finally returned back to his residence without alarming anybody. He looked down at his own clothes, the wind blades from Ben Sen had caused his clothes to be tattered and torn.

He felt lucky, the Xue Family was rather generous with clothes, and prepared many sets for him, although they were simple cloth, but Tang Tian felt pleased.

After changing, Tang Tian realised that the wounds on his body had already started to form scabs.

Tang Tian knew that his zero energy body had improved yet again, after removing all energy, purely by relying on his physique, it had caused all the muscles and bones in his body to become vigorous and vibrant. In the future, as long as Tang Tian's vital parts were not injured, his wounds would heal naturally.

Tang Tian shook lightly, causing all the scabs to flake off, revealing clean and uncut skin as before.

Feeling extremely pleased, Tang Tian started to reflect on the battle. It was his first time crossing paths with a strong martial artist of Sin Domain, and he had reaped a lot of rewards. He had to

admit that the Sin Domain martial techniques had truly walked on a new dao path, one that led straight to laws and the body.

Thinking about it, Tang Tian had already witnessed three completely different types of martial techniques systems. Heaven's Road, Sacred Saint Galaxy and Sin Domain were all different. Sacred Saint Galaxy had dense energy and formed natural saints with the ability to utilise energy at an inconceivable level. Sin Domain was the complete opposite, they did not have any energy, and laws were everywhere and clearly visible. Heaven's Road was the mix of the two, with suitable energy concentration and able to produce the miraculous spirits.

Three different types of martial technique systems, they each had their own unique points and were difficult to differentiate their merits and drawbacks.

The path of Sin Domain was the most suitable for Tang Tian.

Ben Sen's enlightenment on his laws was much more powerful and profound as compared to Ping Xiao SHan. Tang Tian could use spacial laws to handle the fiery red spear, but against Ben Sen's wind blade, it was useless.

The combat between laws were completely different from the combat between energy.

The standoff between energy rested more or less on the contest of quantity. The more abundance and dense the energy were usually the crux of victory. The standoff between laws, were in fact

competing in terms of quality, the more profound, deeper and comprehension of the laws, the more power it would give.

Tang Tian was slowly experiencing and learning, his situation was different from the rest. His zero energy body had the capacity to improve in Sin Domain, which was by strengthening through laws. This point was not easy regardless of whether it was Sacred Saint Galaxy or Heaven's Road, as the two had energy. But in Sin Domain, it was not a problem, Laws scattered around the riverbed that had no water, naked and bare, one could pick one up by bending his head.

Now the problem was, the large riverbed that was scattered with countless of these laws, which law to pick. That was the biggest question.

Give an example with spacial laws, the Ping Family stealth technique's spacial laws had countless of variations, in which Tang Tian had thought of a few methods that produced good results. But Tang Tian also knew, he could easily use all these laws was because he was taking advantage of the zero energy body. But his enlightenment on each law were extremely shallow, and with such a mix, he could only use them to cheat others, Ben Sen's wind blade could not be considered as any minor law, but he could easily dispel all of his attacks.

Tang Tian had his finger on his lips while he pondered, although the null flames is powerful, but its might have been greatly reduced in Sin Domain. Since there was no energy in Sin Domain, the energy destructive capability was of not much use. But instead, the zero energy body could be improved, meaning that the power

of his physique could be greatly strengthened.

The power of physique, was the true foundation of Sin Domain.

Laws were rules of Heaven and Earth, rules itself have no power, and were just a know-how, by grasping on this know-how, it would allow a person to save effort, but if one did not even have the initial strength, no matter how profound and deep a person had been enlightened with laws, he would not be able to move a pebble.

In Sacred Saint Galaxy and Heaven's Road, Laws were frequently used to manoeuvre energy, causing the usage of energy to be more efficient and become stronger.

But in Sin Domain, there was no energy. To pry open laws, Sin Domain citizens could only think of another way to use them, and that was through the power of their physiques.

For example, Ben Sen's control over the wind blade was by using his body. He had tempered his body to become incomparably strong.

That was also why when Old Granny Xue saw Tang Tian's strong body, she decided to buy him.

Tang Tian's physique was extremely strong, zero energy bodies were much more powerful as compared to Sin Domain people, because it was through the tempering of bodies. But Tang Tian was

still not Ben Sen's opponent, because the disparity between their comprehension of laws were too great.

Tang Tian naturally was not discouraged, the boundaries of high and low were never the only factor to decide the victor and loser, if not he would not had rushed into the Mu'er Family to seize Han Bing Ning.

From his fundamental martial techniques, he was enlightened to his own dao path. This could not be termed as a law, but to be exact, a thought process, or a thought path, a thought path towards laws. But to Tang Tian, it was the most appropriate dao path for him.

Not all laws were pure, some branches out that diverged out into other laws, while some laws were formed by mixing a few laws. Like Spacial, Time, Life and Death Laws, they were the main trunk of the world tree, with millions of branches that spanned out, which were all other laws.

Tang Tian's mind suddenly stirred.

~Aren't Laws just like a martial technique system? The gigantic martial technique system is just like the main trunk of a tree. But, all martial techniques, when traced back to its origins and disassembled, would still fall back to fundamental martial techniques.

~Fundamental martial techniques is the starting point of martial techniques, and the so called origin of all martial techniques.~



So wouldn't laws have fundamental laws like fundamental martial techniques?

When this thought surfaced, Tang Tian became extremely excited, If I can achieve this idea, it will be very powerful! But he quickly calmed down, although the idea was good, but to him, it was unrealistic, to change something complicated to being simple, he needed to first understand what was complicated.

And, why am I clinging to these laws around me? Laws exist in me too, Every punch i release has some sort of law embedded in it.

Tang Tian had a thought, and suddenly began to practise fundamental martial techniques.

His fundamental martial techniques, were through hard work and numerous revisions to finally reach where he was, and was refined through countless of battles.

He suddenly thought of a question that he had previously overlooked, if fundamental martial techniques are the origins of all martial techniques, then why will there be higher ranking martial techniques? If the origin is even more powerful, then wouldn't training in the origins be enough?

Why will there be higher rank martial techniques? A High rank martial technique have even more variations in it compared to a fundamental martial technique, so it can utilise even more energy, thus the might produced will be more powerful.....

The martial techniques that Tang Tian was practising started to change, all of which he had mastered through rough practise, were put to use continuously, analyzing the transformations between them. He had trained in many martial techniques, and by practising them, he started to have some understanding.

~That's right, fundamental martial techniques is the starting point for all martial techniques, but, the reason for the additional higher ranking martial techniques, is because we need variations. [All these variations are derived from the fundamentals](#), and if they are not derived, no one will know of such variations.~

But if they already know of these variations, is it possible for these variations to be integrated into fundamental martial techniques?

Tang Tian suddenly started to train backwards, he started from the high rank martial techniques and dropped rank.

An indescribable feeling was birthed in his mind.

All these variations do exist in fundamental martial techniques, but it's just invisible. Only by training through the high rank martial techniques can one grasp it, the possibility of variations do exist in fundamental martial techniques themselves.

Tang Tian's fundamental martial techniques started to rarely break out with variations.

Because he suddenly realised, by inferring from top down, his fundamental martial techniques had some fine slip ups and mistakes.

He became immersed in training his fundamental martial techniques, not giving a care about his physical strength, which had no brilliance at all. If any strong martial artist saw him, they would be overwhelmed with shock, Tang Tian's fundamental martial techniques had suddenly become unfathomable and unpredictable.

The apex.....

What can be considered the apex?

Tang Tian who had completely become unaware of everything around him, started to grow.

This so called variations, i suppose, would be how one can give a kick. A kick can be produced by many styles, but what determines a real kick, a muay thai kick and a karate kick? All the fine movements are the variations, and high rank martial techniques would be like flying kick, through refining the differences in high ranking martial techniques, one can break down and find out what is the best way to do the flying kick, which can then be inferred down to doing a simple kick.

# Chapter 705 – Law Tempered Body

---

Tang Tian felt that his fist had become as heavy as a mountain, he clenched his teeth, every single muscle, bone and tendon were trembling at a surprising frequency, the surging physical strength emerging in various parts of his body.

Countless of variations surfaced in Tang Tian's mind, all of them developed from his fundamental fist techniques, every variation that appeared would cause the strength in his body to become restless, as though it was conforming to it.

Tang Tian was extremely happy, and forcibly restricted the flow of power in his body. Even if all kinds of variations appeared in his mind, the flow of power would be stopped, and constantly change.

Power surged throughout his entire body and gathered at his fist!

Like thousands of creeks leading back to the ocean, countless of minute power flowed on and continued to converge, continued to grow larger, becoming a powerful current.

The vigor in his fist continued to surge slowly but surely, countless of faintly discernible variations, like branches chopped off from the tree, the only difference was, on them, there were densely packed imprints of various sizes, each imprint distinguishing each of the branches.

The power formed from his flesh body flowed all around at a rapid speed, countless of different variation imprints continued to

stir restlessly.

The seemingly slow punch was unrestrained, like the starry sky shining brightly in the vast sky. The air in the room seemed to be attracted to the fist, becoming extremely viscous and gluey, causing Tang Tian's punch to become even slower.

Zzzii.

A light sound came out, and the dark room was immediately filled with light. A bright and irregular red light beam appeared inside Tang Tian's fist.

Tang Tian's fist continued to move forward slowly, zzzii zzzzi zzzzi, many flickering and differing chaotic light beams lit up, as though a rainbow colored lightning was gathering on Tang Tian's fist. This was the appearance of Laws, Tang Tian's fist seemed to contain a mysterious attractive force, attracting the laws to become bright.

The light aura continued to brighten, and the number of light beams converging on Tang Tian's fists grew more and more. The excited rainbow colored lights were like rainbow snakes swimming around, transforming into a conical shaped light barrier, the messy light beam branches were like a messy large net, emerging in front of Tang Tian.

Countless of variations flashed past Tang Tian's mind, countless of laws flashing past Tang Tian's eyes.

Suddenly, Tang Tian's body froze, the power from his physique in his body had disappeared without a trace.

Shit!

Tang Tian was not in time to even exclaim out loud, pa, the Fist barrier of laws in front of him instantly shattered. The condensed and gluey air returned back to normal. He then remembered that he had consumed a lot of his physical strength earlier, and had not recovered his strength, thus the power from his physique was not enough to sustain the technique.

Damn it.....

Tang Tian's eyes rolled back, he instantly fell to the ground fainted. A few seconds later, thunderous snores could be heard. Saving Han Bing Ning made him extremely fatigued. The power of the physique in his body had been consumed, and thus the fist could not be completed.

But, he had just overused his body, and did not sustain any injury, the zero energy body could recover extremely quickly, naturally causing Tang Tian to enter a state of sleep to ensure that the body recovers faster.

In the air, Young master Qin and Ming Zhu who had just observed the battle had pale faces, and remained silent for a long time.

Seeing that Ming ZHu's face was pale white, Young Master Qin thought that she was overwhelmed by shock from the battle, and advised her to return to rest.

In truth, he was equally shook. The battle had impacted him greatly, only from that did he know what were the bearing of true powerful martial artists! Ben Sen who ruthless and unfathomable, along with the reckless ghost face mask, the two of them displayed bizarre variations of attacks, their might were able to destroy the land around them. They had opened his eyes wide, and thus he was deeply affected.

Compared to the others of the senior generation, who all had thoughts placed on matters like children, he felt ashamed. Unknowingly, although he treated Ming Zhu politely, but it was less passionate as usual.

Ming Zhu nodded her head, then turned and left. She maintained a strong front, but her heart had long been in turmoil. Because she had realised that the ghost face mask's figure resembled the male servant Tang Tian, and they bore remarkable resemblance.

She wanted to return to the residence to see if Tang Tian was around, but she resisted.

Seeing how the ghost face mask had successfully seized the lady from Ben Sen, Ming Zhu knew that the matter would be blown up into large proportions. No one would care much with regards to the man's background, but after the matter, all the various families would be actively seeking for this mysterious guest.

For him to be able to take away his companion from the Mu'er family, it most probably meant that he would look for the other families to take back his companions. How would the various families handle that? Ben Sen had proven his own strength, but yet was at a disadvantage, which was a matter that could not be disregarded.

She did not know how the matter would turn out, but she knew that Purple Cuckoo City would become a mess.

But what she was more worried about was, whether Ghost face mask was Tang Tian?

If it was, then it would definitely not be a good matter for the Xue Family. She was sure that the various families in Purple Cuckoo City would be looking for Ghost Face Mask. When the Xue Family gets implicated, at that time.....

Ming Zhu shuddered, she did not dare think of the consequence.

She flew quickly and returned to Xue Residence, seeing the bodyguard at the entrance, she asked: "Where's Tang Tian?"

"Tang Tian?" The bodyguard was confused: "I didn't see him."

Ming Zhu's heart trembled, she bit her lips and quickly ran over to Tang Tian's residence. The servants whom she passed by had never seen the young miss look so dishevelled, they did not dare



raise their heads and remained silent.

Like a gust of wind, Ming Zhu rushed to Tang Tian's residence.

At the entrance, hearing the thunderous snores, she calmed down.

It's not him.

She carefully pushed open the door and saw Tang Tian sleeping on the ground soundly. His body was completely unharmed, clearing all suspicions.

Tang Tian who was sleeping soundly, mumbled to himself and turned his body, facing upwards towards the sky, he extended himself out flat like a pancake. Seeing that Tang Tian was sleeping so soundly, the rage that she had kept immediately sprung back up.

You slept while on duty at the warehouse, and even caused me to lose face in front of Qin Zi Shan, you are truly incorrigible!

Ming Zhu screamed: "Tang Tian! You better stand up now! You sleep at night, sleep in the day, how lazy can you be, this is ridiculous....."

Tang Tian was completely unmoved, his snoring continued like thunder.

Ming Zhu was so angry to the point of trembling, but as a person with good education, it made her unable to speak crude words. She had wanted to say that he would be chased out of the Xue Residence, but thinking about how the old lady had spent 200 thousand dollars on him, if she were to chase him out, wouldn't it be to his favor?

Ming Zhu became even more sullen.

She had seen many troublemakers before, but she had never seen a person like Tang Tian that would leave her helpless.

She heard movements behind her, but it was her subordinates that had ran over after hearing the commotion. With them watching, Ming Zhu resisted the urge to kick Tang Tian. She snorted and left.

Seeing that, everyone immediately scattered. When Ming Zhu was unhappy, it would be unlucky for us to find trouble. But their eyes towards Tang Tian were filled with curiosity, for even Ming Zhu was unable to do anything to him.

Very quickly, everyone left, and Tang Tian was alone in his room.

Of course, Tang Tian did not know of everything that happened, he slept extremely soundly.

No one had noticed the bizarre state of Tang Tian's body. His body was trembling faintly, every inch of muscle seemed to be opening and closing, as though they were breathing. With the extremely rapid rate of trembling, his body was emitting a light, these faintly discernible light auras permeating into his flesh.

Gradually, the light aura grew dimmer and dimmer and finally disappeared.

When Tang Tian woke up, he felt an indescribable free feeling in his entire body. When he took note, he heard a series of pea sized sonic boom sounds. He was startled, this situation had happened before, right after he obtained the zero energy body. But after that, no matter how much he tempered himself, it never happened again.

Why is it happening again?

He immediately inspected his body.

He was instantly stunned.

All the bones, muscles and tendons in his body had reached an unprecedented level of power, every inch of his muscles were as durable as Black Gold Threads, his bones were even more peculiar, when he inspected his bones inwardly, there were actually faint jade colored gloss on them. His bright red blood revealed a faint gold color, his life essence seemed to have strengthened by multiple folds.

He suddenly noticed the remaining essence in his body.

These are....laws!

A Law Tempered Body!

Tang Tian suddenly reacted, he finally understood what had happened. A Zero energy body was naturally compatible with Laws, and with his complete exhaustion of the power of his physique, his flesh had become a sponge that absorbed all the surrounding laws. The Laws that were extremely compatible with his muscles were absorbed in, and started to temper with his body.

There were many benefits to the Zero Energy Body, but there was always a question that poked at Tang Tian, how to improve it, until now, Tang Tian had come to a realization. That's right, Using laws to temper the body! Laws are rules of the world, by using them to temper the body, how strong would the body become?

Tang Tian opened his mouth and laughed out loud.

He stood up and started to test it out. Compared to before, his body that had been tempered by laws was many times stronger. His strength had increased by three folds. Furthermore, the state of his body had obvious strengthening.

Most importantly, the power of the physique, surged much more than previously. Tang Tian moved about, and was able to clearly feel the astonishing strength accumulated in his body.

Suddenly, Tang Tian thought about the punch that was interrupted before he fainted, he became extremely eager, If I were to use all my strength to do it now, what would the effect be?

But after looking around, he had to suppress this thought, if he were to punch, the house would definitely be demolished.

I just saved Han Bing Ning, I have to be low key.

Thinking about Han Bing Ning, and seeing that the sky was getting dark, he immediately rushed out straight for the warehouse.

The servants that Tang Tian passed by all gave him looks of disdain.

Xiao Yao coincidentally passed by, seeing Tang Tian, she called out to him and reminded him out of kindness: “Tang Tian, you better not sleep tonight, you’re always slacking off, Ming Zhu Jie will definitely punish you.”

Tang Tian was confused, he did not recognize Xiao Yao, but he still thanked her.

Seeing that Tang Tian did not seem to care, Xiao Yao could not do anything.

Tang Tian arrived at the warehouse. He pushed open the big door and after entering, he closed it shut.

Hearing Tang Tian's arrival, Han Bing Ning quietly appeared, but what surprised Tang Tian was beside her, was another person.

# Chapter 706 – The Purple Cuckoo Five Families

---

Seeing Ping Xiao Shan tied up all over with something stuffed in his mouth, Tang Tian was startled.

“He snuck in, so I pinned him down.” Han Bing Ning explained everything in one sentence.

Tang Tian felt somewhat puzzled, he walked up and took out the cloth stuffed in Ping Xiao Shan’s mouth, and asked: “Didn’t I tell you not to come back to steal? Why are you here again?”

Ping Xiao Shan lowered his head and spoke respectfully: “This lowly one wishes to serve Master.”

“Serve me?” Tang Tian was startled again, he looked at Ping Xiao Shan suspiciously and asked suddenly: “Do you owe someone money outside?”

Ping Xiao Shan looked confused, Alright, who asked me to portray myself as a thief on the first meeting. He gritted his teeth and said: “Master’s battle earlier has shocked the entire city. Master’s status is definitely honorable and is extremely powerful, but this lowly one only has humble skills, but I grew up in the Purple Cuckoo City, if Master wants any information, this lowly one can provide it for you.”

Tang Tian’s eyes lit up, he truly needed a local to help him, he

was blind towards the matters of the Purple Cuckoo City. Even Han Bing Ning was not an expert in collecting intel. If they had a local helping them in the shadows, it would save a lot of effort.

“Since you’re very familiar with the Purple Cuckoo City? Then tell me, what families have my friends?” Tang Tian asked.

Ping Xiao Shan had underwent careful deliberations with himself before coming, and naturally had things prepared. Tang Tian ignored his own safety in hopes of saving his own people, that meant he was definitely thinking of saving the rest. The matter of various families picking up people from the tide was no secret in the Purple Cuckoo City, Ping Xiao Shan went to investigate, and very quickly obtained the information he needed.

Tang Tian’s question coincidentally matched the intel he had prepared, he relaxed and his tone of speech became more confident: “Before coming, this subordinate went to check it out. From the tide the last time, this city picked up a total of 468 people. The Qin Family has the most people, obtaining 227 of them. Other than that, the Xu Family has 92, the Roland Family has 65, the Thiopiate Family has 42, the Yu Family has 40, and the remaining two are Master and Miss Han.”

These accurate figures immediately made Tang Tian trust Ping Xiao Shan more.

He really has some standards.

Tang Tian then asked: “How are they doing now?”



Ping Xiao Shan hesitated for a moment: “Not too good. Now the various families are spreading, your group of people have untamed and proud personalities, they have to be polished to be able to integrate into their families, so many of them are in torture prisons. The various families hope to be able to polish their personalities away to subdue them.”

Tang Tian’s face turned gloomy, and his fists clenched up tightly.

The young man in front of him suddenly transformed into a death god, releasing a terrifying killing intent. The air in the room suddenly became extremely dense, Ping Xiao Shan’s entire body trembled, he felt as if he was being stared at by a dangerous wild beast, and it was choking him.

Han Bing Ning could not help but look at Tang Tian, she felt that Tang Tian had grown even stronger!

Suddenly, the killing intent disappeared. Tang Tian thought that getting angry was pointless.

“Which family is the easiest to target?” Tang Tian did not bother concealing his thoughts and asked.

Although Ping Xiao Shan had decided to join under Tang Tian’s banner, he never thought that Tang Tian would be so direct, and was startled. After a moment, he laughed bitterly: “None of them are easy targets.”

Seeing that Tang Tian was not angry, he was secretly relaxed, and consolidated his thoughts, and then added: “The Purple Cuckoo City has five large families, The Purple Cuckoo Qin Family, The Law Imprint Xu Family, The Gentle Waters Roland, The Phoenix Fire Thiopiate, and The Mu’er Steel Guard. The Purple Cuckoo Qin Family is the strongest, their ancestors were the ones who built the city, thus Purple Cuckoo King Qin Zhen is the undisputed number one in the Purple Cuckoo City. No one knows Qin Zhen’s strength, in his entire life he rarely had to undertake any task, and hardly anyone knows about him. But 20 years ago, he have held the position as the head of the Purple Cuckoos, and no one had ever gone against him. Other than Qin Zhen, the Qin Family has 4 great generals, all of them with great achievements. Any four of them are able to support one family. The majority of the matters of the Qin Family are done by the 4 great generals.”

Tang Tian listened attentively, being extremely patient. He never treated his enemies lightly.

“The second strongest would be the Law Imprint Xu Family. The Xu Family’s [Life and Death Law Imprint], trains in one of three great laws, the life and death law. Every generation of the Xu Family will have an extraordinary genius. The Xu Family’s current generation Patriarch, Xu Ye, is only 24 years old this year, but his strength is unfathomable. But the Xu Family does not deal much with worldly affairs, and no one knows if it is the effects of training in the [Life and Death Law Imprint], but every generation Patriarch of the Xu Family does not have a long life, and the oldest of them is 45 years old. But the Xu Family has many demonic geniuses, and the [Life and Death Law Imprint] always has a successor.”

“In third place comes the Gentle Water Roland. The Roland Family was a prestigious family that declined, but of course, they are still doing better than the Xue Family. The Roland Family’s [Gentle Water Sleeve], is derived from Water Laws, it has unfathomable variations, and defeats toughness with gentleness. The people of the Roland Family are enemies that gives others the most headache. Their defensive capabilities are so powerful that it has become terrifying, and even if your strength far surpasses them, and you want to defeat them, it will never be easy. The Roland Family’s current generation Patriarch is Roland Su. In one of the years, the fearful Sha Kong Lie’s arm was cut off by her water sleeve, and he finally became a crippled, and dared not step into Purple Cuckoo City anymore.”

“In the fourth place, there is the Thiopiate Family, it is said that their [Phoenix Fire] stems from their ancestor enlightening on 500 different types of fire Laws, and obtained the strongest 13, after combining the flames of these 13, its might became unparalleled. Their relationship with the Roland family isn’t good, like fire and water literally. Currently, the strongest martial artist of the Thiopiate Family is called Victor. He has a loose personality, loitering around prostitutes, he has the qualifications to aim for the Patriarch position, but his actions are too casual and he always does what he wants, causing the clan elders of his family to be unhappy with him. He has no interest in authority, and likes to enjoy himself. This time, with Ben Sen showing his power, I reckon Victor will drop to 5th place.”

“And the fifth, is the Mu’er Family.”

Hearing to this point, Tang Tian’s face finally changed.

Previously when he talked about their powers, although Ping Xiao Shan had talked about how powerful they are, but Tang Tian did not know how to gauge. Until when he said that the Mu'er Family was ranked fifth did he have the most vivid comparison.

“The Mu'er Steel Guards, through the successive generations of the Mu'er Family, there will always be a batch of loyal and steadfast Steel guards, meant to protect the Mu'er Family. But the current Mu'er Family has long declined by a lot, and the current generation of Steel Guards only has Ben Sen. The Mu'er Family has a complicated passing of inheritance, but the Steel Guards practise a different thing. Since young, Ben Sen has ventured out far and wide and made a name for himself, and then returned to the Mu'er Family. Upon returning, he helped stabilize the Mu'er Family's position and power. The Mu'er Steel Guards are all loyal and devoted, causing the envy of the other families. Ben Sen trains in the [Wind Blade], but I did not expect him to be so strong, I reckon that the overall situation will change soon.”

“Black Ben Sen is only ranked five?” Tang Tian's face was not very good looking.

Ping Xiao Shan spoke till his mouth was dry, he nodded his head: “Yes, this ranking was set in place a long time ago, something that everyone somewhat agrees to.”

Tang Tian knew of the tanned man's strength. Even though he had successfully taken Han Bing Ning, but that was purely accidental, if it was truly a fight to the death, with Tang Tian's current abilities, he did not have any chance of victory.

Such a strong person is only ranked fifth in the Purple Cuckoo City!

And all the Null Division people must coincidentally landed in the four family hands. To save them all, I have to fight through four stronger martial artists.

Tang Tian took a deep breath and his state of mind became calm again, and determination blazed in his eyes.

Losing your willpower because they are stronger than you? What a joke, how can this ever happen to you godlike young lad? Everyone said to fight alongside each other, we are all here now, to even think about giving up is cowardice!

You can do it, you can definitely save everyone!

And, with so many strong opponents, that truly is exciting, thinking about them already makes my blood boil.

I want to get stronger!

Only by getting strong can I save everybody else!

Ping Xiao Shan noticed that Tang Tian did not get disheartened at all, but instead became even more spirited, he felt admiration, although Tang Tian was rather eccentric at times, but his willpower was something that did not lose to anyone. Willpower might seem to be anything to many people, but in the harsh and

cruel environment of the Sin Domain, people who lacked willpower would never be able to survive, and that was the reason for the low appraisal towards Victor.

“What do you want?” Tang Tian’s eyes glowed as he stared at Ping Xiao Shan. He knows that what I am doing is extremely dangerous, yet he still wants to join my cause, he must want something.

Ping Xiao Shan spoke the truth: “I wish to learn how Master uses spatial laws to attack and defend.”

Tang Tian was surprised, he rubbed his head: “Teaching you will be easy. But I randomly grasped that while fighting with Ben Sen. After I research and study it well for a few days then I will teach it to you.”

Tang Tian was a straightforward and open person, he did not like to take advantage of people, Ping Xiao Shan has aided him a lot, so he did not wish to cheat him.

Ping Xiao Shan was extremely grateful: “Thank you Master!”

“Don’t reveal your identity.” Tang Tian reminded him: “So we will never implicate you.”

Ping Xiao Shan was startled, he never thought that Tang Tian would say such words.

Seeing that Ping Xiao Shan was shocked, Tang Tian thought that he did not understand, and started to explain: “So if anything happens to us, they cannot do anything to you.” He then realised something: “Eh eh eh, what am I saying, what a bad mouth, no no, they will all be defeated by me! Godlike young lad will definitely defeat all of them! And save everyone!”

Ping Xiao Shan felt warmth in his heart, he had always been living in a state of cautiousness, and hearing these words reminded him of a kinder world, but the world was unchanging.

He thought for a bit: “If Master wants to take action, why not start from Victor. Victor is someone who loves to enjoy and is extremely perverted, he simply enjoys himself all day, if we take him down and use him as a hostage, the Thiopiate Family will agree to release your people.”

“No!” Tang Tian shook his head: “I already found my target.”

Ping Xiao Shan was startled for a moment: “Master, who are you talking about?”

Han Bing Ning could not help but look over.

“Ben Sen!” Tang Tian smiled, revealing his white teeth.

“But the Mu’er Family doesn’t have your companions anymore....” Ping Xiao Shan did not understand.

“Do I need a reason to fight?” A light aura shot out of Tang Tian’s eyes, the current him was like a burning regiment of flames: “Who will be a better training partner than Black Ben Sen? I have received countless benefits from the fight last time. I want to continue challenging Ben Sen!”

“I want to extract everything out from him!” Tang Tian spoke with heroism.

Han Bing Ning’s eyes lit up, and blurted out: “Growing through battle!”

Ping Xiao Shan was dumbstruck.



# Chapter 707 – Looming Events Casted Its Shadow Over The Entire City

---

Leaving the Xue Family Warehouse, Ping Xiao Shan's mind was in a mess. Such an important matter, how could they so casually just decide on something? To grow through battle, isn't difficult to comprehend. But, he actually has that much confidence in his own abilities?

This was what Ping Xiao Shan could not understand.

If anyone else were to be faced with the same situation, they would think of a plan, or find the weaknesses of their enemies, or form alliance with other powerhouses etc etc, who would find time to look for others as training partner? Hoping to grow stronger from that?

That.....that is too ridiculous.....

Ping Xiao Shan started to question whether he was relying on a reckless person, such people were statistically meant to fail. lucky for me, I have a few techniques on hand Thinking about that, Ping Xiao Shan consoled himself, This guy learned my family's stealth techniques in a night, and was able to create a few techniques for himself, maybe he can truly become stronger?

No one knew if it was this self consolation that worked, but Ping Xiao Shan's state of mind slowly calmed down.

After calming down, he started to think clearer. ~If such a person has such high perception, then this will not be the best answer. Tang Tian's fight with Ben Sen had shocked the entire city, and all the families would be cautious against him.

To collide with them right now, they would definitely lose out.

As compared to the other four families, the Mu'er Family was still lacking in strength, they only had one expert, Ben Sen, holding the fort, and it was not easy for them to encounter sieges.

~From another angle, this unanticipated action is truly acting before thinking.~

He shook his head, it was not a question and problem that he could resolve, so why waste so much brainpower? His thoughts returned back to his task, Tang Tian had instructed him to investigate on the locations of the torture prisons.

Truly self confident!

Ping Xiao Shan laughed bitterly.

Han Bing Ning did not doubt Tang Tian's decision at all, she was different from Ping Xiao Shan, she was long used to Crazy Tang's seemingly stupid and weird methods, but the rewards were always great. When the stupidity reaches a certain level, it could be considered the least expected thing.

With regards to Tang Tian's talent in training, in the entire Ursa Major Constellation, no, in the entire Heaven's Road, no one doubted his abilities.

The godlike young lad, the ridiculous nickname, had subdued the entire Heaven's Road.

Like him or hate him, no one dared to disregard his existence.

"What about me?" Han Bing Ning looked at Tang Tian.

Tang Tian replied: "You will serve as my backup, if I get injured, bring me back."

"Alright." Han Bing Ning nodded her head and went back to train.

Tang Tian immediately called out for her: "Let me teach you the Ping Family Stealth techniques."

He needed an assistant, he was not afraid of challenging Ben Sen, although Ben Sen was much stronger than him, but he was not helpless against him. The growth in strength had never been an easy matter, to want a huge growth in a short span of time, Tang Tian thought that the only possible way was to put himself in a life or death situation, to truly incite his full potential.

Tang Tian never relied on luck.

The stimulation through experiencing life or death to draw out his potential was not any new idea. But very few people were willing to do it, as the risk was too great, if one was careless, they would lose their life. Strength could be gained slowly, but everyone only had one life, and such a method would only be their last resort, as no one wanted to die.

Every life and death battle would be extremely exhausting, covered in bruises, most defensive abilities would be rendered nil, and countless eyes would be staring at him, and Tang Tian did not want to fall to such despicable people.

With Han Bing Ning around, he could let go of this last remaining fear and fight all out.

I can't wait for it!

\*\*\*\*\*

Nightfall, and countless of people could not sleep.

“Did you check it out?”

The one who spoke was roughly 40 years of age, he had a stern expression, and was the leader of the Four Great Generals of the Qin Family, Zong Zheng Yan Mei. Zhong Zheng Yan Mei was heavily trusted by Qin Zhen, he took charge of the internal affairs and was extremely prestigious. His style of executing was steadfast,

and under his control, the Purple Cuckoo City's influence had been steadily increasing.

“They are not willing to say.” The manager who spoke turned pale.

“That means, they recognize who that ghost mask man is?” Zhong Zheng Yan Mei said.

“I think so.” Seeing that his master was not angry, the manager felt relieved, he hesitated for a moment: “Do we need to punish them?”

“No.” Zhong Zheng Yan Mei replied: “From today on, watch them carefully, do not beat and scold them at will.”

The manager immediately complied.

After the manager retreated, the big sturdy man by the side spoke out: “Big brother, you are too naive! Humph, I have seen many people who are stubborn, if you hand them over to me, I promise you, I will get them to speak!”

This man was extremely muscular and had a fierce look, with a prominent cross shaped scar on his forehead, he was one of the Four Great Generals, Wei Han.

Zhong Zheng Yan Mei was not angry, and nodded: “I trust you on this, but even if we get them to speak, what of it?”

“What of it?” Wei Han was stumped.

“If this man is weak, then fine. But what if he is strong? Aren’t we making an enemy out of nothing?” Zhong Zheng Mei Yang shook his head: “All of these prisoners are extremely loyal to that ghost mask man, that means he isn’t any ordinary person.”

“So what?” Wei Han snorted: “Don’t tell me we have to throw out our people? Big brother, you cannot give them up! I’ve seen them, they are all capable seedlings, as long as we groom them well, our strength will definitely soar.”

“I feel what Big brother says makes sense.” Just then, Mu Ze who was by the side all along but remained silent spoke out: “I went to investigate, the ones that obtained these people isn’t only our Purple Cuckoo City, but other cities actually received this men. A total of more than a thousand man, this is definitely an army, the ghost mask is most likely the commander of this army.”

“So what?” Wei Han’s neck became red: “He is only one man now, can he flip the heavens?”

Mu Ze had a smart appearance, resembling a scholar, he looked to be harmless and gentle. He smiled: “One man cannot flip the heavens. But what if, one of the families return him his subordinates?”

Wei Han sneered: “Return them to him? Which idiot would do that? To spit out the meat that they have obtained.”

Zhong Zheng Mei Yang looked thoughtfully: “Third brother, what you mean is that we should assist him?”

Mu Ze’s eyes revealed a light aura that could cause the heart to palpitate: “All of these prisoners have outstandingly strong physiques, and they have no energy at all, as long as we give them some instructions, they can form an outstanding fighting strength. They are people that were in an army, how long since the Sin Domain had an army?”

Zhong Zheng Mei Yang revealed a look of surprise.

Wei Han snorted: “So what? Even if we give in to him, it’s only 200 men, a 200 man army? Ha, I alone can kill them! The Sin Domain is not suitable for an army. Furthermore, what advantage will we have by giving in to him? Third Brother, the advantage that you speak of is merely theoretical, but spitting this fat meat out is real. We managed to get 200 of them with difficulty, to spit them out, if the other families were to take them in, we will have not gotten anything, it’ll be them expanding and us becoming smaller, we would be at a disadvantage then.”

Zhong Zheng Mei Yang did not speak, Wei Han’s words were equally reasonable. His eyes turned towards the lady who had her head buried in books: “Second Sister, what do you think?”

The lady’s eyes finally left the book, her face masked with an impressive looking silver mask. This silver mask glittered brightly, contrasting with her dim eyes that looked to be an unfathomable

abyss which no one could see through. Her hair was gorgeously mixed with different colors, each strand perfectly straight like rainbow colored needles expanding outwards.

“We should wait first, we still need to examine his capabilities.”

Her voice was indifferent, as if she did not care about the entire matter.

“Second sister is right.” Zhong Zheng Mei Yang nodded his head: “We shall observe him first. The Ghost Masked Man dared to take action against the Mu’er Family, that means he will definitely make a move on the other families. We will observe for the time being, and see if he is deserving of our investment.”

Wei Han and Mu Ze nodded their heads, they have all come to a consensus.

“Xu An Zhong and Victor have revealed themselves this time too.” Zhong Zheng Mei Yang said: “Everyone, please be careful during this period.”

“Xu An Zhong came out of closed doors cultivation?” Mu Ze’s tone became serious: “Seems like the Xu Family have another Great General now.”

Wei Han’s face also became ugly, Xu An Zhong was Xu Ye’s brother, and his talent was definitely at the top, but strangely, he did not have even the slightest interest towards the [Life and Death



Law Imprint], which was a supreme technique, but was intoxicated in the sword. He always spoke of creating his own sword techniques, and completely separated himself from the Xu Family, always keeping himself in life and death situations, for him to reappear, that meant he had an absolutely great breakthrough.

Amongst the great families in the Purple Cuckoo City, the one that posed the biggest threat to the Qin Family was the Xu Family. The Xu Family did not recruit outsiders, with their known short lifespan, but every generation they had many geniuses.

Xu An Zhong was extremely ordinary amongst the Xu Family, and adding that he rebelled against the orthodox teachings of his family, he received the ridicule of others. But he was determined to form his own sword techniques and has gone through life and death closed door training, and immediately beat down all of these clamors, convincing everyone of his own powers.

This so called life and death closed door training, meant that if he was unsuccessful, he would be dead. But people who dared to do such thing were all extremely resilient and persevering people, and all of them received the heartfelt respect from others.

For him to come out now meant that he had been reborn once again.

The Qin Family was able to suppress all the other families, other than Qin Zhen's unfathomable strength, the Four Great Generals were all absolute powerhouses as well. For the Xu Family to have another Great General, their threat towards the Qin Family had increased once more.

“And there is that tanned trash,” Wei Han snorted, his eyes flashing a look of rage: “If not for that masked man fooling around, that tanned trash will always be hiding.”

Everyone knew he was talking Ben Sen, other than the masked man, Ben Sen had shocked everyone. The strength that he had revealed caused everyone to be astonished. For many years, Ben Sen was so reserved to the point that his existence seemed vague, and everyone almost forgot about him.

The Mu’er Family has always concealed their strength and hid their time, giving others the impression that they had declined, but after Ben Sen displayed his strength, it made everyone remember about the almost forgotten Fifth Great Family of Purple Cuckoo City.

“The current generation of Steel Guard is more or less exposed.” Mu Ze suddenly said: “I don’t think Ben Sen has placed any thoughts of grooming another generation of Steel Guards.”

Mu’er Steel Guards, have always been a tradition of the Mu’er Family, something Ben Sen will definitely not give up. If Ben Sen who has concealed his strength, placed all of his efforts in grooming the next generation of Steel Guards, they should have most likely be formed up.....

No one had expected that with the sudden appearance of the Ghost Face Masked Man, it would cause the initially peaceful Purple Cuckoo City to suddenly erupt into an unstable and raging

situation. All of the people present were shrewd and sharp people, but at the moment, they actually did not know what to expect.

Looming events casted its shadow over the entire city.

## Chapter 708 – Black Iron Stone and Golden Steel Gravels

---

Ming Zhu listened attentively to Xiao Yao's latest reports and accounting, Xiao Yao was extremely orderly and neat, her numbers were accurate, causing Ming Zhu to nod with praise: "With Xiao Yao around, you have saved me so much time....."

Xiao Yao giggled, she had long treated such praise as ordinary.

"Are there any other urgent matters?" Ming Zhu looked at the time, she was about to speak to another prospective business, Galloping Horse City's Lu Family had sent people with an interest. Seeing the scale of their commerce, Ming Zhu felt the possibility of a large business transaction.

Xiao Yao looked at Ming Zhu and spoke quickly: "Ever Since Xiao Tang started guarding the warehouse, there has not been a loss in Golden Steel Threads."

Ming Zhu was startled, she was somewhat surprised, and muttered to herself.

Many thefts of the Golden Steel Threads in the warehouse had continued to occur despite all the prohibitions, although these thieves dared not be overzealous about it, but there would always be traces of the Golden Steel Threads disappearing on a daily basis, and even becoming a standard. Ming Zhu suspected that the people stealing the Golden Steel Threads had already found other players to be involved in it. If it wasn't for the Qin Family doing large

purchases in the market for the Golden Steel Threads, the Xue Family would have suffered heavy damages.

For there to be no loss at this time.....

Seems like that lazy guy has some strength to him, Ming Zhu finally understood, why the various families viewed the batch of people who arrived from the Tide as treasures. Towards the families that were long stabilized, all this new fresh blood would increase their strength greatly.

But, it would not be easy swallowing this specific meat, Ming Zhu had heard countless of rumors passing around in the past few days, the people were all untameable and wanton, they were extremely ferocious and completely disregarded everything. If not, why would the families be willing to throw them into the torture prisons to grind their personalities away.

Ming Zhu started to admire the old lady, 200 thousand dollars might seem a lot, but if the warehouse was constantly stolen from, the loss would not stop at the 200 thousand dollars.

“We will observe it for a little longer.” Ming Zhu said: “Right, we are already running out of the Black Iron Stones for the silkworms. Send a batch to the warehouse and get him to shatter them.”

Hearing that, Xiao Yao immediately understood Ming Zhu's intent, she laughed: “I will send in a bit more, that guy is too lazy, we truly need to treat that.”

Ming Zhu was a hardworking person who despised lazy people.

“Wait a minute! Do not let him do it for nothing, give him a Golden Steel Gravel as well.” Ming Zhu suddenly said.

Xiao Yao was surprised, but she understood: “Yes!”

Ming Zhu was willing to part with some of her savings. The Golden Steel Gravel was the waste of the Golden Steel Silkworms. The Golden Steel Silkworms ate Black Iron Stones as food to produce Golden Steel Threads, and their excretion were Golden Steel Gravel. The Golden Steel Silkworms' intake of food were astonishing, but excreted very rarely.

The Golden Steel Gravel were good materials, they were extremely sturdy and could be used to make weapons. It was just that the Golden Steel Gravel could not be tempered with fire, and needed a unique tempering technique. As there were limitations to this unique tempering technique, it drove the price of the Golden Steel Gravel down.

Coincidentally, Our Xue Family knows of this unique technique. The Golden Steel Gravel can make powerful weapons, which Tang Tian will know upon receiving it. What could be more desirable to a martial artist than a Unique Mythical Weapon? But a batch of Golden Steel Gravel is insufficient to create a weapon, so he will have to first collect enough of the Golden Steel Gravel, and after that he would need to obtain the technique to temper the gravel, calculating all of these, it cannot be obtained in just a day.

Using gains as a lure, Young miss is truly brilliant!

Xiao Yao was completely convinced.

Seeing Xiao Yao excuse herself, Ming Zhu suddenly realised that there would be trouble. If Tang Tian truly had the ability to stop the thefts, that meant that he was strong, and to the Xue Family, it was a good and bad thing.

With an expert keeping watch and eradicating all the thieves in the night, it naturally was a good thing. But, how will Xue Family rope in this expert? If they cannot rope him in, a weak master and a strong servant would not necessarily be a good thing.

The Golden Steel Gravel was her decision to test the waters, and see if Tang Tian would take the bait.

If it was not successful, must I really do this by marriage?

Upon thinking about his loud snores, an angry fire surged in Ming Zhu's heart.

Forget it, I'll ignore him for the time being.

~The business with the Lu Family was extremely important. The strength of the Lu Family was not inferior to the Qin Family, and even if it was a meeting to make friends, it would provide the Xue Family with a lot of benefits.

\*\*\*\*\*

In the warehouse.

“There were a few people who wanted to sneak in at night, I just released a bit of my sword concept and they left.” Han Bing Ning said, she was a quiet person, but to have to stay in the pitch black warehouse for a few days, even she felt annoyed.

At night, she noticed a few people wanting to sneak in, she did not wish to reveal herself, thus exposed a bit of sword concept, striking fear into the thieves who escaped right away.

“There are truly many people in the same line as Xiao Ping Zi.” Tang Tian muttered, he then changed the topic: “I have grasped some things in the past few days, I think, with just a few more days, I can go and find that tanned guy and have a fight.”

“En.” Han Bing Ning replied, and did not speak further.

She sat down cross legged on the floor, and a silent tremble dispersed from her body, it was the trembling of the power of the physique, and all around her, one after another of light threads started to appear.

Tang Tian immediately kept quiet, his eyes were wide open, he was afraid that he might disturb Han Bing Ning.



To the martial artists of the Sin Domain, Law Exposure was the first step. The laws in the Sin Domain were like rocks exposed naked on a dry riverbed, and anyone could see them. By using the power of the body, they could allow the law to take form. Currently, the laws were like chaotic light threads, also termed as Law Threads, they came in all sorts of colors, and had extremely strange characteristics.

After Law Exposure, one had to choose the law to train in.

This step did not seem to look difficult, but in fact it was not easy. Any ordinary martial artists had sufficient power of the physique to produce Law Exposures, but the number of law threads appearing was related to the strength of the power of the physique. With sufficient power of the physique, the ones to appear would be the most common law threads.

But to Han Bing Ning who trained in the Zero Energy Body, the power of the physique in her was extremely vigorous. Adding that Zero Energy Bodies were naturally compatible with laws, she was able to produce a great quantity of law threads.

All these law threads swam around her, as though there were many colorful fishes congregating and dispersing.

Han Bing Ning was extremely focused, there were many law threads, that meant that her choice of selection was bigger, but at the same time, to be able to choose a law thread compatible to her out of the many law threads was much more difficult.

Her gaze was as sharp as a sword, she focused on the chaotic light threads, her mind sweeping across the large school of fishes.

Countless auras surfaced in her mind, some were faintly discernible and serene, some were tyrannical and in flames, some were ice cold and filled with yin, some were simple and vast, not one was the same. It was her first time coming face to face with laws. In Heaven's Road, laws were hidden amongst energy, and after obtaining the Zero Energy Body, it was like seeking fire in water, every step was extremely arduous.

But one should not sweat for nothing.

It was only this day that she suddenly realised, unknowingly, she had become so much stronger than what she had expected. Her quiet disposition, her gaze that was as sharp as a sword, gradually retracted, her state of mind which became a mirror lens, reflected the sky full of stars, reflecting the large school of colorful fishes.

An indescribable weak aura, like a fish hiding in the deep sea, accidentally revealed itself, and glimpsed at her gracefully.

Han Bing Ning suddenly opened her eyes, without any delay or hesitation, she locked onto that almost invisible aura, her fingers forming sword seals, a dim blue light beam shot out from her finger.

The surrounding colorful fishes disappeared with a speed visible to the naked eye, as though they were devoured by an invisible entity, and the space around Han Bing Ning became dark again.

Han Bing Ning closed her eyes, and went back into concentration.

Tang Tian did not dare disturb her, but suddenly he heard footsteps approaching. He immediately dodged out from the place where Han Bing Ning was hiding, whoosh, he appeared at the door of the warehouse and opened it.

Xiao Yao was just about to open the door when it automatically opened by itself, scaring her. Seeing that it was Tang Tian, she heaved a sigh of relief, and immediately patted her chest: “Xiao Tang, you scared me.”

Tang Tian noticed that there were many carts behind Xiao Yao.

“Miss Xiao Yao, why are you delivering things to the warehouse in the middle of the night?”

Tang Tian was surprised, after staying in the warehouse for a few days, he had grasped the rules of the place. Various goods were transferred into the warehouse in the day, and never at night.

“I have specially come for Xiao Tang this time.” Xiao Yao smiled: “During this period of time, there isn’t enough manpower in the residence, so there isn’t sufficient food for the silkworms, and I came here hoping to seek help from Xiao Tang.”

“You want my help? Tell me, Xiao Yao.” Tang Tian did not

decline and readily accepted. Although he was slightly foolish, but he was not stupid, he knew that everyone else in the residence looked at him with disdain, but only Xiao Yao and a few others in minority treated him better.

“Then I will have to thank Xiao Tang!” Xiao Yao laughed and said: “Golden Steel Silkworms eat Black Iron Stones as food, but we cannot feed it to them directly, and need to shatter them first, each the size of a sesame seed. It cannot be too big or too small.”

“The size of a sesame seed....” Tang Tian was startled, he muttered in his heart, ~These silkworms are sure hard to please, to be so fussy with even the size...~

Xiao Yao retrieved out a bag and gave it to Tang Tian. Tang Tian accepted it, he was surprised, the small bag was actually extremely heavy. Opening it, he noticed that inside it were truly small pieces that were all the size of sesame seeds. He used his hand to pick one up and scrutinized it, the black stones were smashed extremely uniformly, resulting in the same size. He casually pinched it, but the Black Iron Stone did not budge, causing him to be surprised.

Such a strong material!

“Black Iron Stones are very strong, and is time and effort consuming, the residence is filled with ladies with insufficient strength, so we usually hand it over to outsiders to crush them. But who knew there would be an accident and they are unable to do it, under this helplessness, I can only come and seek help from Xiao Tang.” Xiao Yao said courteously, and retrieved out another bag that was woven with gold: “Young Miss said, this will require a lot

of time and will be exhausting, so this Golden Steel Gravel will be for Xiao Tang as a reward.”

“Golden Steel Gravel?” Tang Tian accepted the bag.

It was different from the previous bag, the Golden Steel Gravel was extremely light, if not for him being able to physically touch it, Tang Tian would have suspected that the bag was empty.

It was his first time hearing the term Golden Steel Gravels, seeing Xiao Yao’s serious look, he guessed that it was not cheap.

It made him curious, and he immediately opened the bag woven with gold.

## Chapter 709 – Life Origin Essence

---

The Golden Steel Gravel was around the size of a piece of gravel in any river. Quietly lying inside the golden weaved bag, it's dark gray color made it look extremely unremarkable. Tang Tian carefully lifted one up, and used his finger to rub on it, its texture was very strong, stronger than the black iron rocks.

A spark of interest grew.

Normally, any hard object would be heavy, but the Golden Steel Gravel were as light as feathers. He raised the Golden Steel Gravel to eye level and scrutinized it, before he noticed it. The Golden Steel Gravel's bodies were in truth transparent, but inside it was an extremely tiny grey vortex, making it appear to look gray. What made Tang Tian feel even more shock was that the tiny grey vortex was actually spinning very slowly.

Interesting.

Tang Tian guessed that the Golden Steel Gravel characteristics was most probably because of the tiny grey vortex. He had not grasped the use of the vortex, but as a tyrant who had seen various types of treasures, he could tell that the Golden Steel Gravel were not ordinary objects.

“Then I'll take it.”

Tang Tian kept the golden bag casually.

Xiao Yao heaved a sigh of relief in her heart, she had an uncertain feeling dealing with Tang Tian. His manner of doing things was always out of expectation, he was difficult to understand, thus Xiao Yao did not dare assure that she could complete the task.

After completing the task, she could return to report to Ming Zhu, and she need not worry about any other things. Whether or not Tang Tian could complete it, would be a reward or punishment, and that Ming Zhu's decision.

“Then I will head off first, three days later, the people will come to collect the food for the silkworms.” Xiao Yao smiled at Tang Tian.

“Yes yes yes.” Tang Tian who was fixated on the Golden Steel Gravel no longer cared to reply properly.

After Xiao Yao took the people and left, Tang Tian immediately took the gravel out and started to examine it again.

This time, Tang Tian scrutinized it even further, inside the transparent gravel, the grey vortex rotated very slowly, and occasionally there would be a flicker of silver light.

To find out what the gray vortex inside is, the simplest method is to break it open!

Without saying a word, Tang Tian used all of his strength, all of

his muscles, putting everything he had to his two fingers and squeezing the Golden Steel Gravel. But no matter what Tang Tian did, it would not even budge.

Tang Tian was shocked, his current strength was extremely powerful, compared to last time, it had multiplied a few folds. Even if a silver grade star treasure from Heaven's Road would be easily broken apart in his hands.

But, even with all of his might, he was helpless against this tiny Golden Steel Gravel.

Tang Tian did not believe it, he tried multiple methods, but he could not even cause a wound in this tiny Golden Steel gravel.

How do i break it open?

Tang Tian suddenly realised that he was somewhat unable to do anything.

All of a sudden, his mind shook, he thought of something, Laws!

He instantly thought about Spatial laws, the laws obtained from the Ping Family Stealth techniques, were just one branch of the many in the spatial laws. But they were hailed as one of the three great laws, even if it was just one branch, it had extraordinary might.

To Tang Tian, the Ping Family Stealth Technique's strongest



aspect was its ability to split open space. In Heaven's Road, the only one whom Tang Tian saw could achieve a bit of it was Little Fool when he summoned the Saint Sword Ocean Prison.

Splitting space was an extremely powerful feature.

Tang Tian did not immediately test it out, but sat down and started to plan.

Time slowly crept past, suddenly, Tang Tian who sat as still as a statue moved.

The power of the physique in his body started to move, a strange law thread grew quickly along his fingernail. In the blink of an eye, it was over 30 cm, and started to wave around in the air.

His body suddenly became blurry, his dull eyes resembled the reflection of the stars on a water surface, the light auras faintly rippling.

This law thread did not have any brilliance at all, it was the Ping Family's Stealth Technique's law thread, one of the threads of the Spatial Laws. Inside the dimension of blurriness, Tang Tian's eyes erupted with light, his mind fixed on that particular law thread.

Tang Tian had some admiration towards Ping Xiao Shan's ancestor, the law thread's grade was definitely not low, and, its aura was extremely weak, if not for it slipping out from Tang Tian's finger, he would not have been able to sense it. Even now, as

it continued to wriggle on Tang Tian's fingertip, he still had difficulty completely catching it. On one sense, it was because of its extremely faint aura, and on the other, it was because it could move through space. One end of it was stuck on Tang Tian's fingertip, while the other seemed to be flickering, disappearing and reappearing. Imagine, if it was swimming in the air, with its strange manners, catching it would be extremely difficult!

But it was a pity, although they had grasped on a powerful law thread, they actually chose a wrong path, and did not truly expand on the potential of the law thread.

This pity swept past in Tang Tian's mind for a short moment.

Tang Tian could clearly feel and see the law thread, regardless of how it kept on disappearing and appearing, it was as black as ink, and thinner than a strand of hair, appearing in the air. Upon appearing, it produced an extremely faint ripple with it as a center, resonating outwards.

This ripple made Tang Tian feel an indescribable palpitation, he could clearly feel the space around him rippling.

An unstable space was the most terrifying bomb, an intense sense of danger caused all the hairs on Tang Tian to stand.

Eh, this method isn't bad at all!

Tang Tian became excited, but he did not dare to test it out, Han

Bing Ning was still immersed in her meditation in the darkness, if he startled her, it would be terrible. Furthermore, Tang Tian was not sure what would happen if the space exploded.

Tang Tian secretly remembered this idea for a future opportunity to test it out.

But for now, the most important thing to do is to break open this Golden Steel Gravel.

One Golden Steel Gravel floated in front of him, Tang Tian concentrated with all of his attention to control the law thread. The pitch black law became extremely straight and like a blade, it cut the Golden Steel Gravel.

The transparent outer shell broke effortlessly.

The black law thread, upon cutting through the shell, attacked the gray vortex.

Bang!

Tang Tian only felt a thunder erupting in his mind, his entire body trembled, a violent power surged through his body as though he got hit. That power suddenly scattered within, causing Tang Tian to groan, and blood to drip out from the corner of his mouth.

Tang Tian did not even bother about the blood, he was too focused onto his front.

The Law Thread crumbled inch by inch and disappeared, while the gray vortex transformed into a fine and thin mist. Inside the mist, the silver lights flickered continuously, like countless of silver stars rumbling inside the mist. But after that, the silver stars in the mist became brighter and brighter, and very quickly, the entire mist had transformed into a silver color.

The silver mist was dense and beautiful, but its transformation had not ended, as gold lights started to blossom in the silver mist. Not long later, the gold lights started flickering in the silver mist, like gold granules being mixed into it.

This change was so fast and beautiful, it was a feast for Tang Tian's eyes.

The gold stars and silver mist rose in spirals in the air, like a vast star river body.

The mist emitted a foreign aura and an indescribable sense of elation surged out from Tang Tian's body. Tang Tian was startled, it was as though every muscle in his body was crying out in joy.

It was Tang Tian's first time witnessing such a thing.

This is.....

Tang Tian's mind flashed with a thought, and a look of joy appeared in his eyes.

This aura, it is pure vitality force!

This is Life Origin Essence!

Tang Tian's mouth was wide opened, he stared at the scene in front of him like a foolish man.

Tang Tian's power of the physique had already reached a bottleneck. The powerful Whirlpool Sword Storm had refined his body to an extremely high level, and his Zero Energy Body was by itself extremely powerful. After fighting Ben Sen, his complete exhaustion of physical strength resulted in him having a law tempered body, and his fleshly body had been refined to an unimaginable level.

Just with his tyrannical degree of body strength, even the strongest blood saint was unable to compare to him.

In terms of training, Tang Tian was having trouble improving, thus he placed all of his attention on laws, when his comprehension of laws reached a profound level, it would allow his strength to improve.

But the Life Origin Essence in front of him made Tang Tian see a new light. Life Origin Essence was an immense nourishment to any living being, it could greatly increase the vitality of the body.

Vitality is something that cannot be seen but truly exists. In

every living being, the composition of the body would long be stable, all the so called tempering and refinement of the body was to remove the impurities in the body, allowing the person's physical state to be even stronger, but never able to raise the upper threshold of Vitality.

Given Tang Tian's body as an example, his muscle strength exceeded that of steel, his bones comparable to star treasures, even his ability to make blood from the bone marrow, his capability of gaining more muscles are much stronger than saints. But such tempering of the body isn't limitless. His current body had been refined to close to perfection, and it was extremely difficult to improve further, and that was dictated and set the moment he was born. At this step, to want to improve further, he could only rely on Life Origin Essence.

The gray mist inside the Golden Steel Gravel was actually Life Origin Essence!

Breaking open the Golden Steel Gravel, the entire process of the gray mist changing was like a phoenix going through nirvana, it was beautiful and splendid, and brimming with the throbbing of life.

Although the strand of Life Origin Essence was weak, but its value was incomparable. Tang Tian had previously placed his eyes on Laws because compared to enlightenment of laws, raising the vitality was not as feasible.

Life Origin Essence would allow Tang Tian to improve much more substantially than anything else. Tang Tian's body had

already been refined to almost perfection, there were no impurities, and thus he would be able to absorb vitality very well.

After regaining his senses, without saying a word, he reached out for the Life Origin Essence.

Sssi!

A warm flow entered Tang Tian's body, which was like a dried riverbed under a pouring rain, which sucked and absorbed all the rain cleanly.

Tang Tian closed his eyes and carefully observed the changes to his body. After a moment, he opened his eyes, filled with a desire to continue. The strand of Life Origin Essence was definitely good stuff, but it was too little. It was unable to induce a substantial change to his body.

Thinking about the Golden Steel Gravel in the bag, Tang Tian immediately became excited.

Without saying a word, he decided to repeat the process, but what he did not expect was, he was unable to congeal the Law Thread!

Tang Tian jumped in fright, but quickly found the reason, revealing a bitter smile on his face. The cut with the law thread previously actually consumed all the power of the physique in his body, and the remaining power of the physique was unable to

allow him to concentrate to congeal out the law thread.

The strand of Life Origin Essence was actually able to nourish his body, but was unable to help him recover from the fatigue.

Thinking about all the Life Origin Essence that he was unable to absorb, he became very dejected.

Tang Tian who was feeling upset turned towards the pile of Black Iron Stones.

The smile on his face became even more bitter.



# Chapter 710 – The People from Lu Family

---

The Black Iron Stones were far sturdier than he had imagined, but knowing the strength of the Golden Steel Gravel, Tang Tian was not too surprised. Luckily, the Black Iron Stones were not as excessive to require the need for the Spatial Law thread to cut them.

The requirement for the Black Iron Stones size was extremely harsh, and Tang Tian recalled back the time when he trained in Minute Collapsing Fist by crushing rocks. In terms of crushing rock materials, Minute Collapsing Fist was the most suitable method.

I don't have that much strength left.

Tang Tian became calm and focused, and slowly recalled back the Minute Collapsing Fist.

The Minute Collapsing Fist is a relatively low rank fist technique, it uses True Power to induce a high frequency vibration. Tang Tian currently had no more True Power in him, but it did not stump him. His body was extremely tyrannical, and could easily mimic such vibrations.

Tang Tian did not do that. Using his muscles to mimic the vibrations could be done, but its efficiency was too low. He did not have much strength left, and if he mimicked the vibrations, he could only break a few of the Black Iron Stones.

He thought about laws.

He had been frequently using laws, and thus became much more familiar with them.

He suddenly thought about the incomplete punch, causing his eyes to light up. Not a bad choice. Tang Tian then revealed a bitter smile, it was because he had no strength left in his body the previous time that it remained incomplete. Currently, he too did not have much strength left, and would not be able to complete the punch.

Tang Tian smacked his forehead, thinking himself as a fool, Why must I complete the punch? I can test out the incomplete version first, it doesn't require much strength anyway.

Tang Tian decided to do it, and carefully thought about the punch. At that time, his initial thoughts were to change the complications to simplicity, inferring in a reverse method, and condensing all the variations in punch techniques into one punch.

Although it was incomplete, but the might of the punch had already revealed signs of its loftiness. Tang Tian believed that the punch's might would definitely surpass everything he had ever seen, even all of the martial techniques and spirit techniques.

Upon thinking about it, Tang Tian immediately realised that all the countless inferred variations flooded back into him like a gushing tide.

Tang Tian did not panic, once he confirmed a path, he never stepped back. When in Bing's training, he had learned to tackle such problems. He did not care about the Black Iron Stones and sat down cross legged and started to create a mind map.

Fist techniques had countless of variations, and every variations had marks. Easy to difficult, small to big, Tang Tian chose the main variation mark out of the thousands of marks, and assimilated it into his fist technique.

The last time when Tang Tian was in the state of enlightenment, all of these thousands of variations appeared like flickering lights and shadows that flashed past his heart effortlessly. But currently, he was inferring them extremely slowly, and it became an extremely arduous process which was extremely hard.

Tang Tian's physical strength was already low, after thinking extremely hard, he became even more tired, and unknowingly he once again fell asleep.

In the conference room, although it was late at night, but lights splendidly burned, the atmosphere was extremely tensed with the state of mutual hostility.

“Miss Ming Zhu, what about it?” Lu Ling Nan smiled, he was unscrupulously admiring Ming Zhu's appearance, a look of lust flashing across his eyes. He had long heard of the beauties of the Xue Family, and they were truly living up to their name.

The other Lu family members all had arrogant expressions, their

faces revealing disdainful expressions.

“Actually, following my Lu Family will be better than following the Qin Family.” Lu Ling Nan spoke with a glib tongue: “The Patriarch has already said that as long as the Xue Family realigns your allegiance, there will be preferential treatment. As the saying goes, under a big tree there will be plentiful shade, the Lu Family is such a big tree, we will be able to block the wind and rain for the Xue Family. All you need to do is feed your silkworms in peace, and any other matters, you will not need to care, how peaceful would that be.”

The ladies behind Ming Zhu all revealed awkward looks, they had never thought that the Lu Family would be thinking of swallowing the Xue Family as their own, and all of them looked towards Lu Ling Nan’s people angrily.

Ming Zhu’s expression turned cold and replied coldly: “The Lu Family is a big tree, but unfortunately it is something my Xue Family cannot enjoy. If the Lu Family wants to buy our products, it will be at market price, for anything else, I request that you keep it to yourself.”

“Haha, it is said that Miss Ming Zhu is naturally unyielding, to see it personally, it is indeed true.” the smile on Lu Ling Nan’s face remained, he spoke leisurely: “The reason why we are here to discuss with Miss Ming Zhu is because we respect Miss Ming Zhu. If not, with the strength of the Lu Family, if we wanted to take something, what can’t we take??”

Ming Zhu’s face finally changed, and she replied coldly: “Young

Master Lu is overly pleased to the point of forgetting. We are in the Purple Cuckoo City, not the Galloping Horse City.”

The smile on Lu Ling Nan’s face became even wider, it was like a cat and mouse game, he lifted up his teacup and took a sip: “Yes, this is the Purple Cuckoo City, the Qin’s Family Purple Cuckoo City. But, did Miss Ming Zhu think about the fact that I came to the Xue Family residence but there is no one from the Qin Family here?

Ming Zhu’s body swayed slightly, her complexion turned pale. It was not only her, Xiao Yao who was behind her also had a change in expression. For a large family to enter the Purple Cuckoo City, the Qin Family would definitely be very cautious, but up till now, there were no Qin Family members that appeared.

“It seems like Miss Ming Zhu is unwilling to give up until you see a coffin.” Lu Ling Nan sighed, he then retrieved out a letter from his bosom, he flicked it, sending it flying to Ming Zhu: “Why not take a look at this first before speaking.”

Ming Zhu then saw the words “To Miss Ming Zhu” written on the paper, her entire body trembled, all the blood in her face disappeared, she was extremely familiar to the handwriting, it was by the Great General of the Qin Family, Zong Zheng Yan Mei, he handled the internal affairs of Qin Family, and frequently interacted with the Xue Family.

Ming Zhu opened the letter with trembling hands.

In the letter, Zong Zheng Yan Mei's tone of writing was extremely warm, but it contained a trace of unquestionable loftiness, Zhong Zheng Yan Mei said, the Qin Family and Lu Family are the closest allies, and the alliance between both parties would impact the future of the Purple Cuckoo City and the Galloping Horse City. He implied that joining the Lu Family would allow the Xue Family to be able to improve, and hoped that the Xue Family would see the bigger picture and move to the Galloping Horse City, the gift of the Xue Family will be another reason for the alliance. And lastly, if the Xue Family met with any problems in the future, they could seek out the Qin Family, whom will help the best they could.

An indescribable despair spreaded in Ming Zhu's heart, she had never thought that the Qin Family would give up on the Xue Family.

It was as though she could not stand properly, without the shelter of the Qin Family, the Xue Family had become an open wound, and countless of wolves would pounce on them, and devour them whole.

But after that, an unspeakable rage filled her heart. Although the Xue Family relied on the protection of the Qin Family, but they were not a vessel of the Qin Family, but Zhong Zheng Yan Mei treated them like one.

They are just bullying us!

Ming Zhu's face was pale, but she raised her head, an unbending look flashed past her eyes, and she said: "The Xue Family has never

been anybody's vessel, the Xue Family's future will be decided by me, and does not require anybody's permission."

The smile on Lu Ling Nan's face disappeared, he frowned and put down his teacup. He then spoke expressionlessly: "It seems like Miss Ming Zhu is still hell bent on rejecting us. The Xue Family is truly not anybody's vessel, but without a big tree, how long can the Xue Family last?"

A sneer formed on his mouth, he stood up: "We will come to visit in a few days, who knows if Miss Ming Zhu will change her decision?"

The group of people stood up and left.

All of the energy in her body disappeared, she plopped back into the chair as though she had lost all spirit.

After walking out of the Xue Residence, a subordinate of Lu Ling Nan asked: "Young Master, what do we do now?"

"They are truly overestimating themselves, we should let these oblivious women wake up." An evil look flashed past Lu Ling Nan's eyes, he said: "Without the protection of the Qin Family, how will there be the Xue Family? Furthermore, the Xue Family's warehouse is frequently robbed from, the Xue Family does not have any means and are helpless against it, without any capability, they still wish to clash with us? Tie Xie, tonight go and take half of their Golden Steel Threads from their warehouse."

Tie Xie was a skinny man who was roughly at the age of 40, and had a sinister expression.

Another subordinate asked: “Should we set them up on fire?”

“The Purple Cuckoo City has more than the Qin Family.” Lu Ling Nan shook his head: “If we overdo it, we will scare them, the aftermath will not be good.”

Hearing that, the few people nodded their heads.

Tie Xie did not say anything, and disappeared under the shadows of the night.

Tie Xie was like a shadow, quietly sneaking in the darkness, and quickly arriving at the outer walls of the Xue Residence. The bodyguards in the Xue Residence were huddled together and gossiping, and did not even sense a person sweeping past them. Tie Xie quickly found the location of the warehouse, and following the walls, he quietly advanced like a shadow.

The guards of the Xue Residence were truly incapable, they were weak and were at terrible standards. Tie Xie knew immediately that these incapable guards were purposely left by the Qin Family. The Qin Family did not have plans to pull the Xue Family out from the predicament, this showed how much the Xue Residence relied on them.

Qin Family is not good to be depended on!



Thinking about the unfathomable Qin Family, Tie Xie's heart turned cold.

But, despite their reasons for doing so, Tie Xie felt it was advantageous for them. With such a terrible defensive perimeter, he completely skipped past them.

He arrived outside the warehouse.

The door was closed shut, he hugged himself on the wall, and was immediately shocked.

Someone was snoring inside!

The rhythmic snoring sounded out so loudly that he could hear it clearly from the other side of the wall.

A look of disdain flashed past Tie Xie's eyes, The Xue Family truly has fallen. Seeing the bodyguards chit chatting, he already felt disgusted. But the guard protecting the warehouse dared to even sleep and snore, that was truly unprecedented.

He raised his head and saw a window, and became a shadow once more. Hugging onto the wall, he quietly wiggled upwards, and like a strange liquid, he went through the cracks of the window and infiltrated in.

Mountains of goods were piled up inside the warehouse, causing Tie Xie to feel the wealth of the Xue Family.

What a big piece of meat!

He finally understood why the Young Master had his eyes on the Xue Family. Luckily the Young Master only asked me to steal half of the Golden Steel Threads, with so many things, even if I were to pull a cart, I would need to do it a few times before completing the mission.

The snoring was like thunder, the guard in the warehouse was sleeping soundly. It turned out to be a young man.

A look of disdain flashed past Tie Xie's eyes, he quickly found the location of the Golden Steel Threads. It was easy moving them, as the Golden Steel Threads in the warehouse did not exceed 150kg. Tie Xie alone could easily take them away.

But a pity, Young Master only asked me for half of it.

He licked his lips, and extended his hands out to grab the Golden Steel Threads.

Suddenly, his arm was stuck in place, his entire body became as heavy as steel, and he could not move at all.

From nowhere, a burst of ice cold sword concept locked down on him, he could feel the sharp aura pressing down on his nape, he

was overwhelmed with shock, terror-stricken!

# Chapter 711 – Infamous Tie Xie

---

The Qin Family.

Qin Zi Shan had his head lowered in front of Zhong Zheng Yan Mei, his hands were clenched tightly, he never expected that his Uncle would actually gift the Xue Family to the Lu Family. Thinking about how Miss Ming Zhu had fallen into the demonic hands of the Lu Family, he felt as if blades had cut into his heart, and his eyes were bloodshot.

Zhong Zheng Yan Mei looked at his nephew and laughed, He is still young.

Although the Four Great Generals did not have the last name of Qin, they still held revered positions in the Qin Family, and all of the Qin Family disciples had to greet them with etiquette as younger generations.

“Zi Shan, I know that you like Miss Ming Zhu.” Zhong Zheng Yan Mei did not avoid the question, but he spoke gently: “The Lu Family used 200 of the Null Division prisoners in exchange for the Xue Family, Zi Shan, you tell me, should we do this exchange or not?”

Qin Zi Shan suddenly raised his head, he was filled with shock, his mouth was wide open, but he did not say a word.

He did not expect that the Lu Family would actually be willing to exchange 200 of the Null Division Prisoners for the Xue Family!

Ever since the Ghost Face Mask shouted out the words Ursa Major Null Division, all of the prisoners had a special nickname, the Null Division Prisoners. This group of Null Division Prisoners had bodies of outstanding qualities, and what was even more surprising was that they did not have any energy in their bodies. People even suspected that the Null Division Prisoners were truly from the Sin Domain. If not, why would they have no energy in their bodies?

Deep in the Sin Domain, there were still many places that no one dared to step in. The various families that were banished in Sin Domain, over the centuries, had merely established themselves and found a footing, they did not even have any remaining strength to set foot into the unknown.

But there was a point that could be confirmed, regardless of where the Null Division Prisoners came from, it was the best replenishment to the various families of Sin Domain. Furthermore, their bodies were extremely outstanding, with just a bit of grooming, they would all become elites.

Them being untamed and wanton was never an issue to them.

With the current price of the Null Division Prisoners, 200 prisoners was worth far more than the Xue Family. 200 of the Prisoners, as long as they took them in, it could change the strength and position of a family.

Although the Xue Family made outstandingly strong defensive

products, there were always substitutes for them in the Sin Domain.

And even Qin Zi Shan could not reject such a deal.

Seeing Qin Zi Shan's speechless expression, Zhong Zheng Yan Mei spoke: "For this transaction, we have definitely profited. Furthermore, the friendship of the Lu Family is more important to our Qin Family. With the alliance of the Qin and Lu Family, it means that the Purple Cuckoo City and the Galloping Horse City have formed an alliance, this will serve as a self preservation move if the situation becomes too chaotic. With your abilities, Zi Shan, I think you can also see the gains and losses."

Qin Zi Shan's mind was in a blank, his face became a mix of white and green, a look of confusement in his eyes. As a son of the great family, he himself was not a useless person, and could see the gains and losses clearly.

But it made him feel more pain.

Zhong Zheng Yan Mei stood up and walked to him, he patted Zi Shan on the shoulders and consoled him: "Uncle knows, how much of an effect this has on you. Relax, no matter what, Uncle will find a great beauty for you. I heard that there is a beauty in the Lu Family who is extremely beautiful, even more than Ming Zhu, she is also a warm and gentle person, and is good at understanding others, she will be perfect for you. During this period of time, she will be at our Qin Family as a guest, Zi Shan, why not you go take a look and see if you like her. If you do, Uncle will help you speak up.

Qin Zi Shan walked out of Zhong Zheng Yan Mei's study dispirited, his expression was one of sadness.

"This time, it is Zi Shan who bears the pain."

Mu Ze walked out from a bookshelf, his face filled with awkwardness.

"Youngsters shouldn't attach importance to such matters, how can they grow with matters of relationships?" Zhong Zheng Yan Mei said, he then changed the subject: "What do you think of Lu Ling Nan?"

"A fierce tiger!" Mu Ze's eyes flashed a look of admiration: "He is extremely slippery, and in fact a wild card, and is very ambitious. That man with him, should be Tie Xie."

"Yes it is." Zhong Zheng Yan Mei nodded his head: "I never thought that the infamous man would be recruited under him, Lu Ling Nan is truly something."

"A pity, compared to him, Zi Shan is still lacking a bit."

"Yes."

The two of them talked leisurely, Qin Zi Shan was the most outstanding in the new generation of the Qin Family, but

compared to Lu Ling Nan, the difference was so huge that it hurt.

The Infamous Tie Xie, was a truly ominous man, his hands were covered in blood after killing countless of people. In the Sin Domain, there was no good or bad, only the strong and the weak, with the strong being the one in the right. To be able to recruit a person like Tie Xie proved Lu Ling Nan's strength.

\*\*\*\*\*

In the entire Xue Residence, no one slept, and the lights remained on.

“That man by Lu Ling Nan's side was Tie Xie!” Xue Yan who was in charge of obtaining information had a pale face, she had lived outside for a period of time, and her understanding of such matters was superior to the rest. She suppressed the panic in her heart: “Tie Xie is notorious for killing many people, he has always been alone, but who knew that Lu Ling Nan would recruit him. He is a B Rank Infamous person.”

“B Rank Infamous person!” Ming Zhu's expression changed.

Everyone else's faces were also pale white.

In the Sin Domain, a man with the word Infamous tagged to him indicated that he was a person who specialised in working in the dark business. They did not attach themselves to any aristocratic families and worked alone, they were merciless and cunning, all of



them enjoyed killing, burning and stealing. They could do anything. According to their strength and infamy, they are classified under Ranks A, B, C and D. With only 12 people in the A Rank, the food chain in Sin Domain, and even the Great Families dare not make enemies out of them.

Under the 12 people would be the B Rank Infamous people.

All those able to rise to the B Rank Infamy are notorious people who have mixed in with all corners of the Sin Domain, and no one dared to provoke them. C Rank Infamous people are all experts, and it must be known, there are only 194 people in the D Rank.

The reason for their pale expressions, was because there was once a D Rank Infamous man who coveted the Xue Family's wealth. If not for the Great General Wei Han personally acting out and chasing that person away, the Xue Family would have been struck devastatingly. Ming Zhu and the rest had personally witnessed and experienced the incident, as they had even recruited experts who died like paper dolls in front of the D Rank Infamous man.

15 Bodyguards, only one survived, it was too ferocious and terrifying.

The current strength of the bodyguards was not even comparable to that of the past.

Ming Zhu bit her lips tightly, causing them to bleed slightly, feeling the despair overwhelming her. Just Tie Xie alone was enough to sweep the entire Xue Family. In the past, she still had

the protection of the Qin Family, but currently.....

Lu Ling Nan will definitely not rest, he thinks it's too easy to take care of Xue Family!

“We need to recruit people!” Ming Zhu said with determination, we must bring out all of our products and Golden Steel Threads and entice experts with them!”

“Ming Zhu Jie!” Xue Yan was so surprised by Ming Zhu's decision that she stood up.

The value of all their cloth and Golden Steel Threads was astronomical.

“At such a time, we can only rely on ourselves!” Ming Zhu recovered her steadiness, burning flames flashing in her eyes: “Even if we beg them, they will not let us go. They will make us divulge the secrets of the Golden Steel Silkworms, at that time, we will not be valuable anymore, and we will become their toys. Instead of suffering such humiliation, why not fight to the death?”

Upon hearing that, the other ladies looked at each other, the fear and panic on their faces slowly disappearing.

They knew that Ming Zhu was right, upon obtaining the secrets of the Golden Steel Silkworms, the Xue Family would be considered as worthless. They will then be separated and forced into the hands of the disciples.

“Ming Zhu Jie is right, if they want to swallow us, they have to see if they have the capabilities.” Xue Yan said.

“We can go to the other families. The Qin Family accepted Lu Family’s alliance tacitly, but they will never dare publicize that they are helping the Lu Family to deal with us. Furthermore, we are Purple Cuckoo City people, if they do so publicly, how will the other families see it?” Xiao Yao’s eyes were glowing as she recovered her calm.

“We will work from a few angles!” Ming Zhu replied: “The property is all materialistic possessions. As long as we can preserve and protect the Xue Family, protect the secrets of the Golden Steel Silkworms, the Xue Family can rise again!”

Outside, hearing the ladies speaking with such determination, the Old Granny could not help but reveal a smile of gratitude.

\*\*\*\*\*

Lu Ling Nan returned to his hotel and closed his eyes to rest.

But as time went by, he opened his eyes, sensing that something was wrong.

Why isn’t Tie Xie back yet? It’s been two hours, he should be back by now.

After waiting for another hour, Tie Xie still had not appeared, Lu Ling Nan could no longer sit still. He stood up and paced around, becoming anxious.

After another hour, Lu Ling Nan's anxiousness had disappeared, his face was now green.

He was sure that an accident had occurred!

He had never expected that the place that had the lowest possibility of having an accident, would have an accident.

He knew perfectly well of Tie Xie's strength, and the Xue Family could not have any strong martial artist that could pose a threat to Tie Xie. Who can it be? Could it be other families butting in? The other families of the Purple Cuckoo City?

Tie Xie is not back yet, so he wouldn't be injured, so he will either be suppressed or killed.

To be able to do that, it must be someone with the caliber of the Qin Family's Four Great Generals. That must mean a Patriarch of the other families has taken action.

Lu Ling Nan calmed down, with other families intercepting, things would become even more complicated.

What should I do now?

He walked to the window and looked out of it, and spotted the distant Xue Residence. The Xue Family that was broken down, currently seemed to resemble a large mouth in the darkness, as though it would devour anyone.

\*\*\*\*\*

Back in the warehouse, Tang Tian who slept soundly for four hours finally woke up.

He yawned and stretched, opening his eyes lazily, he felt as though he had a good rest, feeling an unspeakable comfort. How did I fall asleep? Tang Tian rubbed his head in confusion.

Suddenly, he noticed a person from the corner of his eyes.

He exclaimed out loud and turned his face.

Standing before the golden steel threads, the man's body was frozen like a statue. Tang Tian immediately knew that he was locked down by Han Bing Ning's sword concept, and did not dare to move recklessly.

Han Bing Ning grew stronger!

Tang Tian then reacted, he was extremely happy. After being happy, he placed his attention on the thief.

Seriously, this place has many thieves!

Tang Tian muttered in his mind, he quietly headed towards Tie Xie.

Tie Xie's entire body was permeating with perspiration, his body was extremely stiff, and he did not dare to move. He heard footsteps, and guessed that the bodyguard that was sleeping was awake, but he still did not dare to make a move. He had a very strong feeling, that as long as he moved, he would be pierced by the swords.

The reports were wrong!

The Xue Family actually has such a terrifying expert!

Just at that moment, the sword concept suddenly disappeared.

Tie Xie was overjoyed, Chance!

He immediately activated his techniques to protect himself, causing a red flush to cover his entire face, and like lightning, he rushed towards the door!

I just need to escape the warehouse.....

A figure blocked his path, it was the bodyguard that was sleeping.

Tie Xie's face revealed a sinister smile, Seeking death!

But in the next second, his smile froze.

## Chapter 712 – Dismayed Tie Xie

---

Tie Xie opened his eyes wide, a dazzling light splendor suddenly cut through the darkness, reflecting on his frozen smile.

A fist arrived.

Dazzling law threads like colorful lightning streaks enveloped the fist and released powerful light auras.

Previously, the sword concept that enveloped him, caused him to feel as if a sword was at his neck, which made him feel that he could not take action recklessly.

But the fist instantly caused his spirit to almost fly out of his body. The vast aura, seemingly having power strong enough to topple mountains and oceans, caused the air in the warehouse to seem to have stopped, no dust moved, no undulations were produced, the multi colored law threads intercrossed each other and fused together!

To be ranked as a B Rank Infamous person, Tie Xie had an abundance of experience, and have killed many people, and very few people could fight against him.

He had never witnessed such a bizarre and terrifying punch that went beyond common sense.

In the boundary between life and death, the instinct to live made



him do one thing, that was to instinctively retract his body, he crossed his arms and blocked his front, his shoulders becoming a strange black, the black law threads appeared from his hands, and surged forward, gathering up like a mist.

A pitch black hand armor appeared on his hands, blocking his front.

The mix of chaotic law threads on the fist clashed onto the black armor head on.

Bang.

It was not loud, but in Tie Xie's ears, it was like thunder.

The power passed through his defense, causing Tie Xie's throat to sweeten, and he immediately spat out blood.

Even in the perilous situation, the experienced Tie Xie did not give up, using the momentum, he retreated backwards. He did not have any idea on how to continue fighting, and only had one thought in mind, run!

The opponent's strength was not something he could block.

The black armor's surface had many colorful and strange law threads that formed a strange colorful spider web.

Pa.

The black armor crumbled, as though he was struck by some powerful attack, and he spat out blood.

Even after spitting blood out twice, Tie Xie's speed did not drop, but instead went faster. He was like a black shadow that sprung up and headed towards the window.

Escape now!

His entire mind was filled with those two words, there were actually two hidden experts in the Xue Family warehouse!

Who said there weren't any experts in the Xue Residence?

Tie Xie did not have any intention to fight any further, he knew that he had fallen this time, and to be able to escape and preserve his own life was already a blessing. The blood in his body was stimulated to maximum, he could not care about all the injuries on his body and activated his life preserving techniques while trying to escape.

His face was as white as a sheet of paper, his eyes were sunken and his skin was withered.

The surging blood force was like lava surging and rumbling in his body. At that moment, his strength had broken through to his usual limit, and he was at an unprecedented strength. But, he did

not even dare to hesitate as he sprinted straight for the window.

The light shooting through the window looked so enticing in his eyes, as long as he made past it, he could survive.

His eyes suddenly constricted again!

A black figure had suddenly appeared before him without any warning, and blocked off the light.

The light that shot in through the window shone on the black figure's back. Tie Xie could only see the outline of the person in front of him. The other party's expression was shrouded by the shadows, Tie Xie could not make out what he looked like.

Tie Xie's heart turned cold.

I am truly a joke....

Thinking about how when he had just entered, the other party was actually just sleeping and snoring out loud. He felt extremely resentful. You are so strong but you still feigned asleep, acting like a pig to eat an old tiger, what for! What for! Why don't you give me an escape route!

He wanted to cry.

Tie Xie's eyes were red.

He did a bizarre turn in mid air, like an angry arrow, he shot once more towards the door. His movements were extremely smooth, like when he was shooting for the window, he moved like a fluid spear.

Suddenly, the figure appeared once again, blocking Tie Xie's path.

This time, before Tie Xie could even dodge, another fist came out.

The colorful light that caused Tie Xie's spirit to almost fly out of his body came out once again.

Previously, his black shield was instantly destroyed by it, causing Tie Xie to feel so dismayed and in despair. All of the law threads were not of high grades, and any one of them, or even a few of them, were unable to pose a threat to his [Night Shield].

But there were over a hundred of them!

Over! A! Hundred!

Tie Xie felt as though he was about to go crazy, he had never met someone who could produce over a hundred law threads at the same time!

And more importantly, none of them were the same!

Not! One! The same!

Over a hundred different types of Law Threads corroding at the same time, who could ever block that? Who could! Many ants could bite an elephant to death, over flooding of soldiers could push down and kill a general, it was capricious mule headedness, there was no skill involved, no tactics, no coordination, unreasonable and unfair.....

He....he should be the entire Sin Domain's public enemy number one! This is going against the norm!

Run run run!

The Night Shield appeared once again, barely blocking the attack, and as his throat sweetened again, Tie Xie ignored everything else and spat out the blood while turning his body in a weird fashion, trying to escape, turning into a blood mist arch in the sky.

Tang Tian was surprised, the enemy was truly sneaky, he was clearly beaten up to a bad state, but was still able to escape at a crucial moment.

Tang Tian was somewhat dissatisfied.

If I need to put in so much effort fighting with a thief, how will I

fight with Ben Sen? I should only require one move to handle a thief. Although the thief in front of him was stronger than Ping Xiao Shan, but to Tang Tian, how outstanding can a person who has chosen the life of a thief be?

Humph!

Tang Tian who was feeling unhappy became serious, he looked at Tie Xie who had shot towards the window, but did not have any intention to chase him.

He stepped out half a step with his left leg with his waist bent down, and his left hand stretched forward, the fingers on his right hand clenching tightly, as though he was pulling on a bow, he gradually accumulated power.

Countless fist technique variation marks surfaced in Tang Tian's mind like flickering lights, zzzz zzzz zzzz, even more law threads quickly gathered at Tang Tian's right fist.

With his lower body in a horse stance, the power in his fist became full.

The atmosphere in the warehouse became extremely dense.

Seeing that the window was just 2m away from him, Tie Xie was ecstatic, as long as he got out, he would have thousands of methods to escape. Suddenly, his body turned sluggish, causing his expression to change. The sudden change in the atmosphere

around him before had already made him feel wary, but now, the density had reached an all new level, with the air around him feeling like sticky glue.

An aura brimming with destructive force grew like a tornado right behind him.

Tie Xie who had lived his life on the edge for countless of years had extremely sharp sense towards the dangers between life and death.

In that instant, he had already made a judgement.

He used the remaining of his blood force to turn his body, and like a flatbread, he extended out on the ground with four limbs down, he smashed his face right into the ground.

“This lowly one surrenders!”

Ping Xiao Shan was back at a hotel bar drinking wine, his gaze seamlessly looking around. He remembered his own mission, but it was no easy to ask about the locations of the prisoners from the various families.

Furthermore, his Master's actions had been overboard for the past two days, the Mu'er Family was infuriated, and treated all the other families as enemies. To ask around for such sensitive information would attract the attention of the other families. Ping Xiao Shan knew of his own capabilities, any of these great families

could simply extend out fingers and easily crush him like an ant, thus inciting trouble on himself would simply lead to his own death.

That was why Ping Xiao Shan was being extremely cautious.

He had no choice but to be cautious.

Just then, the discussion at the nearby table attracted his attention.

Galloping Horse City's Lu Family? The Xue Residence?

Thinking about how Master Ghost Face Mask was still in the Xue Residence, his ears immediately perked up.

“This time, the one leading the diplomatic talk is Lu Ling Nan, The Lu Family's current generation's well known figure. The Galloping Horse City's Lu Family is a family stronger than the Qin Family. Lu Ling Nan is truly working hard, to actually be able to recruit Tie Xie!”

“Tie Xie? Oh my god! You're saying, the B Rank Infamous Tie Xie!”

~B Rank Infamous Man! These words caused the wine glass in Ping Xiao Shan's hand to tremble.



“That’s him. B Rank Infamous man, he is a truly fearsome man, upon being recruited, he will definitely be a dauntless fighter. He was a nobody before he turned 30, after that, he unknowingly obtained the inheritance of [Flowing Night], and his strength increased substantially. Remember [Flowing Night], it was A Rank Infamous Zuo Si Tu’s technique! Comprehended from the Night Laws, it is the most suitable for assassinations in the night and in the shadows. No one knows how many great figures had died in Tie Xie’s hands.....”

Hearing about [Flowing Night], Ping Xiao Shan’s hand trembled once again.

He had heard of the fearsome name of Zuo Si Tu before. There had always been only 12 members in the A Rank Infamous People, and all of them were large pillars in the underground world. For Tie Xie to actually obtain the inheritance of Zuo Si Tu, the Xue Residence was definitely in trouble!

\*\*\*\*\*

"This is Flowing Night?" Tang Tian stared at Tie Xie who was tied up like a dumpling with an unkind expression, his face filled with disappointment.

It was a waste of resources using Golden Steel Threads to tie someone up, but it was absolutely reliable.

Tie Xie immediately nodded his head, he was as docile as a domesticated goat. He no longer had any thoughts to escape. When

Han Bing Ning appeared from the shadows, he was even more shocked, and suddenly remembered the news about what had happened in Purple Cuckoo City. A ghost face masked man had brought a bloodied flag and stole a lady from the Null Division from Black Ben Sen. Before leaving, the lady even revealed her hand of using sword concepts.

Ghost Face Mask!

The young man in front of him was actually the Ghost Face Masked man of the Null Division!

The icy beauty standing in front of him was the lady that Ghost Face Mask rescued, Tie Xie immediately knew her name, Null Division's Han Bing Ning.

When he truly understood his predicament, he almost wanted to cry.

~The Xue Family has no experts?~

Whoever relayed the information should be cut into pieces! They actually have the person who could steal someone out of Black Ben Sen's hands, I actually came in foolishly into such a person's hands. What the hell, This is so unfair.

A wise man submits to his circumstances, how wealthy a person is depends on how he defines wealth, but the power of might will never be wrong.

Tie Xie exhibited a right frame of mind, he was suddenly honest and obedient, and despite how Tang Tian had tied him up, he handed over the [Flowing Night] technique without hesitation.. His life was in another person's hands, and playing any form of tricks was simply seeking death.

The last time, Tang Tian managed to benefit from Ping Xiao Shan, and thus he decided to repeat his method and exploit Tie Xie. But after comprehending [Flowing Night], he was [Flowing Night] it was not that Night laws were not sharp, but its might was actually stronger than Ping Family stealth techniques, but to him, it had too many limitations. The Ping Family Stealth Technique was a technique branching out of the spatial laws, and thus had even more potential and more depth and vastness to infer about space.

For example, Tang Tian was able to create techniques involving spatial laws from inferring Ping Family Stealth Techniques, thus its might was extremely powerful. And as he gained more enlightenment and understanding of spatial laws, his improvements with using space became bigger.

That was why Tang Tian had no interest in [ had Flowing Night] technique" > Tian .

Naturally, Han Bing Ning was not even interested.

Upon seeing Tang Tian's unhappy expression, his heart dropped, he immediately spoke up: "Master, The Lu Family will definitely

not leave this to rest, We must make preparations. This lowly one will follow Master from now on, as long as Master gives the order, this lowly one will run through fire, and work extremely hard....”

“The Lu Family?” Tang Tian was confused, but after hearing the words ‘work extremely hard’, Tang Tian’s eyes lit up, he patted Tie Xie’s shoulder, and said loudly: “Good!”

Tie Xie quivered, he immediately revealed a loyal smile.

Tang Tian then pulled Tie Xie to the Black Iron Stones, removing the Golden Steel Threads on him, he ordered: “Make sure you finish smashing all of this. Do your best.”

Tie Xie was dumbstruck.

# Chapter 713 – I Want to Defeat You

---

When Ping Xiao Shan returned in a hurry to report of the information, he saw how Tie Xie was diligently smashing stones at the side while coughing blood, Tie Xie looked extremely pathetic. A B Rank Infamous person with the inheritance of [Flowing Night] has actually fallen this low.....

It is better for me to obtain information.....it's safer that way.....

Ping Xiao Shan who had rushed back, with a stunned expression, rushed out even faster.

After finding someone to do the manual labor, Tang Tian finally felt free.

Although he had not fully perfected the [Godfist], it was already a prototype. Tang Tian wanted to give it a name, The fist technique created by me, a godlike young lad, will definitely be called [Godfist].

With the prototype complete, Tang Tian's confidence exploded. If I do not challenge Black Ben Sen now, how can I live with myself?

He donned on the black ghost face mask and obtained the blood bear flag with high spirits.

Han Bing Ning quietly held a sword behind her back, it was a

sword she found in the warehouse, although its quality was not extremely good, it was still usable.

In the darkness, the ghost face mask was extremely sinister, the blood flag remained silent.

Despite going into battle, Tang Tian's state of mind was extremely calm, the power in his body flowed calmly, while the flame in his pupils burned fiercely.

The darkness before him was their situation, but his sharp eyes could clearly see the dust floating in the air. He slowly closed his eyes and listened to his own breathing, as though he was listening the the voice in his mind.

Everyone, I will not make all of you wait for long.

He opened his eyes and raised the blood bear flag, without looking back, he spoke out: "Let's go!"

Han Bing Ning followed behind him.

Tie Xie looked at the door blankly.

With the light coming in from the door, the young man with his flag walking in silence, his ugly mask revealed an imposing manner of pressing forward, his high spirited figure brought forth an effable nobility and unbending determination that inlaid with the background.

Tie Xie was stunned.

\*\*\*\*\*

In the night, the Purple Cuckoo City's main street was lit up so brightly as though it was daytime. With all the shops on both sides of the street brightly lit, the Purple Cuckoo City's nightlife was extremely exuberant, and in fact, it was not only the Purple Cuckoo City, the entire Sin Domain's nightlife was extremely lively. All of these banished aristocratic and noble families had continued their familiar nightlife styles. The bitter and cruel lives they led, the memories of glory and honor, caused them to feel even more pain. Countless people were immersed in alcohol, using it to forget their troubles.

As usual, the street was bustling with people at this time.

But, a bizarre silence appeared at the end of the street, after that, like a poison, it quickly spread through the entire street.

Pa pa pa.

The only sound left was footsteps.

Time seemed to have turned sluggish for the bustling street. The shop owners who were initially shouting and haggling had their mouths opened without any noise coming out from their throats. When his gaze swept past, all of the customers who had

enthusiastic moods immediately turned silent.

Even the lights that originally gave off some warmth had been layered with a bone chilling cold intent.

Pa pa pa.

A figure with a flag on his back walked down the street slowly, the hilariously hideous looking blood bear ruffled with the wind. The lady behind him was like a figure made out of ice.

The entire street fell into complete silence.

But in the next moment, the dead silence erupted into chaos.

Screams, cups breaking on the ground, panic footsteps, tables and chairs pushed onto the floor, chaos ran wild everywhere. People frantically turned and escaped, the customers on the streets ran to find cover.

In the blink of the eye, the entire street became empty.

Lu Ling Nan who lived on the highest floor of a hotel heard the screams from outside, he immediately ran to the window and coincidentally witnessed the scene. He was overwhelmed with shock. On the road, he had heard about the ghost face mask, but thought he was nothing. But to witness the scene, he then understood why the ghost face mask had left such a deep impression on the city.



Lu Ling Nan slowly regained composure, he stared at the figure with the flag who was walking slowly.

Such arrogance! Such Recklessness! So fearless!

Ghost Face Mask huh? Truly an arrogant fellow, to completely disregard the Purple Cuckoo City. Despite being fully aware of the Ghost Face Mask's behavior, which was considered to be foolish, but for some reason, Lu Ling Nan's heart was filled with raging emotions. All the schemes, all the rules, all the fears, seem to be fleeing away from the arrogant person.

That's right, arrogance.

Looking at the person who was extremely arrogant, it made his blood boil!

Lu Ling Nan involuntarily clenched his fists, compared to the Ghost Face Mask, Tie Xie's Infamous name was just a temporary glory. Lu Ling Nan completely recovered from Tie Xie's disappearance, Even if the Xue Residence has an expert, so what? I am Lu Ling Nan, how can I be lacking compared to their experts?

This Ghost Face Mask dares to become the public enemy, and I am still afraid of being the enemy of a family?

Lu Ling Nan never thought that the reckless actions of the Ghost Face Mask would actually help him break through the bottleneck

of his mental state. Feeling the overflowing power in his body, Lu Ling Nan laughed out loud.

That's right, my own strength is the most important!

Ghost Face Mask, truly an interesting fellow, who knows if we will have the chance to cross hands in future.

Lu Ling Nan stared at the figure below, his heart filled with battle intent. Just then, the ice beauty walking behind the Ghost Face Mask raised her head, and their eyes met.

Lu Ling Nan only felt a strand of ice cold sword concept piercing through his eye brows, the sensation was like being placed in an icehouse, plunging the boiling sensation of his body into a sudden frostbite.

How terrifying!

Lu Ling Nan revealed a look of fear.

Han Bing Ning retracted her gaze, she had felt the trace of battle intent in the other person. In her eyes, how could the fearless and high spirited person walking in front of him receive the disturbance of others?

In her eyes, no one in the Sin Domain had the qualifications to become Tang Tian's enemy.

All of them have already lost their courage, accepted their fate, and lost their bravery.

She retracted her gaze and silently followed behind Tang Tian.

The night breeze blew, causing the blood flag to flutter in the quiet street, two figures, one ahead and one behind, quietly walked forward.

The Ghost Face Mask is here!

The news spread across Purple Cuckoo City like wildfire.

Purple Cuckoo City which was plunged in the darkness of the night, had buildings lighting up one after another, many figures flew out, following the direction of the night breeze, they swept across the sky coming from all directions like water gushing towards one central location.

Every single one of their faces were filled with unspeakable excitement.

The first appearance of Ghost face mask could be said to be unexpected. But, for him to appear at the time where the situation was at its fiercest, it made many of them feel respect towards him.

“Truly rampant!”

“Yea, no one has been like this before.”

In the night, many discussions were occurring at the different corners of Purple Cuckoo City at the same time.

Anyone could call him foolish, arrogant, or overestimating himself, or opinionated. But everytime, as long as he appeared, it was as though he was releasing brilliance of lights, and no one could disregard his existence.

The huge Purple Cuckoo City had countless people pouring in, anxiously following the reckless blood bear flag.

All of them were curious, what was the Ghost Face Mask going to do?

When Tang Tian stepped onto west route, everyone who heard immediately flew into uproars.

\*\*\*\*\*

The Mu'er Residence, lights were still brightly lit.

Ming Zhu looked at Da Lin in front of her and sighed in her heart. The smile on Da Lin's face was perfect, flawless and filled with warmth, but Ming Zhu knew that she was forcefully maintaining the look.

The Qin Family was too strong, the mere thought of the possibility causing the Qin Family's dislike was enough to cause majority of the families to flinch. Even the Five Great Families of Purple Cuckoo City did not want to be looped into it. Furthermore, the opponent was not just the Qin Family, but even the Lu Family of the Galloping Horse City, a Family even stronger than the Qin Family.

No matter how much more Ming Zhu gave, it was not enough to move them.

Ming Zhu was feeling extremely anxious, she was perfectly of her situation, as long as they obtained a bit of support, they had the chance to change the situation. Since the Lu Family were outsiders, the Qin Family would be unable to do anything overboard.

But, how do I move these people?

Ming Zhu did not have an answer to that. She went to the Xu Family, the Roland Family, the Thiopiate Family, but hit with a wall at every one of them. All the families did not outrightly reject her, but did not give her their support, they spoke beautifully, but not one of them extended their hands out to help them.

Suddenly, a servant rushed in. his face filled with fear.

Ming Zhu and Da Lin stopped in unison.

Da Lin retracted her smile and asked: “What happened? Why the panic?”

The servant raised his head and wanted to speak, but stopped.

Da Lin’s face darkened: “Speak.”

“Gh-....Ghost Face mMask is back!” The servant stuttered.

Ben Sen who was standing behind Da Lin with hands behind his back the entire time opened his eyes, killing intent flashing past his eyes, he snorted: “Does he think that our Mu’er Family is a wet market? To think he can come and go whenever he pleases? Young miss, please stay here with Miss Ming Zhu, this subordinate will be back soon.”

With that, Ben Sen disappeared.

Ben Sen stepped on the roof and looked down on the street, upon seeing the ghost face mask with his flag, killing intent surged from his heart.

He had already decided to behead the Ghost Face Mask.

The last time, the Ghost Face Mask managed to take Han Bing Ning away from him, causing Ben Sen to be completely discredited, to actually come again, it was multiplying the Mu’er

Family's humiliation. Not only did he have to win, he had to win beautifully.

Ben Sen had the confidence to do so, in the last battle, he had grasped the strength of the Ghost Face Mask extremely clearly. If not, he would be tired out from Ghost Face Mask's endless trickeries, but upon getting used to it, the Ghost Face Mask's weakness was enlarged in Ben Sen's eyes.

I will definitely win this.

Ben Sen said in his mind, his gaze shifted away from Ghost Face Mask and landed on Han Bing Ning, and surprise filled his eyes.

He did not care much about the purchase of Han Bing Ning, as to him, only Da Lin's happiness mattered. But after not seeing her for a few days, Han Bing Ning's aura had strengthened a great deal.

Ben Sen did not care much about the rumors of the Null Division Prisoners having high talent, but after seeing Han Bing Ning's transformation, Ben Sen realised that the rumors were not based on nothing!

If we can recruit her back into the family....

But very quickly, Ben Sen knew that it was not feasible, he could see Han Bing Ning's loyalty towards the Ghost Face Mask.

Ben Sen threw out all his thoughts, from above, he shouted

down: “Ghost Face Mask, you have already taken your friend, why come back?”

When he heard that the Ghost Face Mask was back, he was initially infuriated, but he quickly calmed down and started to assess the situation. It was illogical, they no longer had any prisoners from the Null Division, and Ben Sen believed that the Ghost Face Mask knew of their disparity in strength, and his tricks could not succeed again.

What is the meaning of him coming back to find trouble with my Mu'er Family? What is his goal?

Ben sSen's voice was deep and resonated far out.

Ben Sen's question was the same for many people.

Under the countless eyes, Ghost Face Mask stopped, he stabbed the flag into the ground beside him and raised his head fearlessly, looking straight into Ben Sen's sharp eyes, he spoke loudly: “I want to defeat you.”

Ben Sen was stunned. Everyone else was stunned.

Out of all the reasons and discussions everyone had, no one had expected this.

After two seconds of silence, uproars exploded.



# Chapter 714 – Gale

---

Amongst the torrents of clamor, all their gazes that were filled with anticipation changed to despise, they all saw him as overestimating himself!

Ghost Face Mask's last performance had truly surprised all of them, to be able to force Ben Sen to be in such a difficult situation, and reveal his true strength, but his last move to retrieve Han Bing Ning caused everyone to call foul. But, people who had foresight could see that the Ghost Face Mask's strength was not comparable to Ben Sen.

If he was not weaker, why resort to such means?

The Ghost Face Mask's public challenge appeared to them as ridiculous as not knowing the immense difference between heaven and earth.

Tang Tian stood unmoved, his gaze never left Ben Sen, and the young man behind the mask pouted.

I didn't lie, I really want to defeat you! Only by defeating you can I defeat people stronger than you, only by defeating all of you can I save everybody.

I don't do schemes, I am not intelligent, I can only use my fist to defeat all of you.

I know this is not smart, but it is what I can and want to do.

Black Ben Sen, you are my first target!

All the thoughts were burnt into ashes by his burning battle intent, in the young man's eyes, there was only the figure on the roof, that stout and towering figure, was someone he had to win.

Ben Sen sneered, whether it was anger or happiness, no one could make it out from his suntanned face, and only a thread of ridicule flashed past his eyes.

So you think after that after playing for a bit, you have the qualifications to challenge me?

Ben Sen's gaze turned cold, he threw all the thoughts away, regardless of whether the Ghost Face Mask had any other plans or not, but in the face of absolute strength, all schemes and plots were just thoughts.

The new generation Steel Guards will come forth soon.

At that time, the Mu'er Family will only get stronger. Ben Sen was definitely not going to allow someone to harm the Mu'er Family's name.

Looking down at ghost face mask, Ben Sen's expression turned cold, he snorted: "Overestimating yourself."

He did not shout, but his words were like thunder that exploded in the sky, resonating out far and wide.

Under the eyes of everybody, he raised his right hand and pointed straight into the sky.

Weng weng weng, the air around him trembled fiercely, and it seemed that his body had started to distort. The air started to become heavy, and a terrifying aura enveloped the entire west route.

The air was flaring up, with many air vortices appearing, they grew extremely quickly, and in the blink of an eye, they transformed into a hurricane around Ben Sen.

Inside the hurricane, Ben Sen stood there, unmoving. The size of the hurricane continued to increase, expanding and increasing its speed at an alarming rate. The rocks, trees and tiles around Tang Tian started to be uprooted and flew into the sky.

Ben Sen's gaze remained cold, his tanned skin seemed to be moving with a strange flow on his body. The tanned color on his face quickly receded, revealing a pure white skin, and the dense darkness continued to flow towards his palm.

The blood bear black flag was being rattled by the crazy winds.

His technique seemed to be even more powerful than the last

time!

Tang Tian's eyes lit up, the battle intent in his chest soared, and he became completely immersed in it. Like a needle, he stayed drilled at his original position without moving an inch, while the blood bear flag by his side was being blown crazily.

Ka, Tang Tian extended his hand out and grabbed the flag pole, and used strength to stab deeper in.

Upon being stabbed deeper, the flag stabilized.

Han Bing Ning's mind trembled, although she had been enlightened on laws, but compared to Ben Sen, she was still lacking a great deal. Ben Sen's comprehension on laws was far more profound than hers. The wind grew bigger and bigger, causing her to be unstable, her face changed, and she grabbed her sword hilt.

All around her, dim blue light auras glowed, regardless of how powerful the berserk winds blew, it was unable to shake her.

Bang bang bang!

The recently renovated west route was once again destroyed, becoming a path of destruction. All the newly placed tiles on the ground were pulled out and mixed into the tornado, the gusts appeared again, pa, the tiles were destroyed.

The tiles that were being peeled continued to fly into the sky and into the tornado.

The ear piercing wind sounds became extremely low and gloomy, causing people to become afraid.

A man in red robes became alarmed, he suddenly flew into the sky and bellowed: “Every one of you, retreat now!”

His voice resonated far out under the screeching sounds. The spectators who were completely stunned by the horrifying scene woke up from their state of blankness, and all of them started to retreat.

Xu An Zhong who was in plain clothing and straw sandals with a sword on his back was surprised when he saw Victor. Who knew that the sloppy person would have such a good heart.

Victor dropped from the air, his red robes resembling a flower that just blossomed. His unruly and handsome look, did not have the casual and nonchalant expression he had normally, but was instead stern and serious.

“Let’s retreat.”

Victor murmured.

The beautiful servant stared at him in shock and disbelief: “Young Master, is Ben Sen that strong?”

She had never seen such expression on her young master face. In her heart, the young master had always been grounded and nothing seemed to move him.

“That’s [Gale].”

Victor grabbed his female servant and retreated and explained: “Wind Blade is no secret, and many people train in it. Wind Laws are the most commonly seen laws. It is easy to learn but difficult to master, and the more one trains in it, the more difficult it becomes. Especially its killing technique. Wind Blade has two killing techniques, [ more Gust]pan class="copyright-obfuscation"> grabbed and [ and Gale]pan class="copyright-obfuscation"> more .”

“Gust? Gale? They sound very ordinary.” The beautiful servant replied.

“Ordinary?” Victor smacked his lips: “They are not ordinary at all. Very few have learned these two techniques. Do you know Shi Yun?”

“Gale Singer Shi Yun?” The beautiful servant became shock. If anything else, she would not truly understand, but upon saying that name, she immediately understood the power of [ Singer Gale].

“That’s right. That’s him we’re talking about. One of the fearsome men that ranked in top 10 of Sin Domain 30 years ago, he also mastered [ ago, Gale]pan class="copyright-obfuscation"> That .

He became pleased with it. That is how he nicknamed himself.”

“Ben Sen is already so powerful?” The beautiful Servant opened her adorable small mouth, somewhat in disbelief. Gale Singer Shi Yun, what kind of character was he? Even the current Qin Zhen of the Qin family could not achieve that standard.

“No.” Victor’s eyes lit with some light, but he spoke calmly: “He should only have a bit of an enlightenment on it, if he was younger by 10 years, who knows if he had the opportunity to catch up to Shi Yun. Alright, he is truly very powerful now, I just want to take a look at Qin Zhen’s expression.”

“Isn’t it a sure lost for Ghost Face Mask?” The beautiful servant was somewhat emotional, to her, ghost face mask was willing to place himself in danger to save his female subordinate, proving that he was a real affectionate man.

“There will always be a chance of lost.” Victor said: “But I cannot grasp his bottomline at all.”

He looked towards the tornado, the tornado was currently at an alarming size, it had shot up towards the sky, and no one could see its end. It was as though a wind pillar now existed between Heaven and Earth. The clouds in the sky were continuously being pulled into the tornado, thunder and lightning had appeared, as though it was doomsday, the scene was extremely horrifying.

Victor’s gaze was extremely sharp, he could see the figure in the tornado standing as straight as a spear.

Han Bing Ning stood there, faintly leaning forward, with sword in hand, the screeching winds were like blades, and there was no chance to gasp at all. She was bitterly controlling the blue auras around her, with gritted teeth, using all her strength to resist. Her enlightenment on Sword Concept and Law was extremely weak in the eyes of the crazy tornado.

But, she had yet to give up. Nor was she thinking of giving up!

The figure that was being devoured by the crazy winds, but she still held unwavering belief in him, if it was him, he would definitely not retreat half a step!

He was always like that!

Blood started to drip from the corner of Han Bing Ning's mouth, frostbites quietly grew on her eyebrow and eyelashes, a thin layer of ice covering her entire forehead. The intense and powerful pressure had caused her body to tremble uncontrollably.

Yet, she did not budge.

If it was him, he would never back off..

Han Bing Ning tightened her grip on the sword hilt, the immense pressure caused her mind to go blank, under the chaos, she kept on repeating those words.



In the distance, Xu An Zhong stared at Han Bing Ning, his sharp gaze revealed looks of admiration. He had never thought that such determination and willpower would actually be displayed in the young lady.

She is born to be a natural swordswoman!

The area around Tang Tian darkened, the sand and rocks flew all around, the crazy winds screeching and along with the pieces of trees and rocks flinging around, it sounded like ghosts and wolves howling.

Bang bang bang!

Rocks flung around by the tornado continued to smash towards Tang Tian, but as long as they entered a radius of 10m around Tang Tian, they were all smashed into powder. The blood bear black flag beside Tang Tian remained uninfluenced by the crazy gales, and only moved gently.

A big tree with a huge radius flew towards Tang Tian like a war chariot, but before it could reach Tang Tian, they were cut into pieces by wind blades.

The black color area on Ben Sen's body surged towards his hand, and gathered into a black dot on his palm.

The determination of Ghost Face Masked had surprised Ben Sen, Seems like he had a breakthrough since our last battle.

But, to rely on this minor breakthrough to challenge me, you are truly foolish.

The Gale rose upwards.

This is my [ not Gale]pan class="copyright-obfuscation"> to , to couple strength and gentleness, it can conquer every obstacle it faces. Although I have not trained [ that Gale]pan class="copyright-obfuscation"> but to great success, but it's powerful and destructive might, is definitely not something that coward can resist.

The gale rose, and its might started to form.

Inside the tornado, the wind fluctuated irregularly, its intangibility congealed and dissipated, and as long as someone was trapped, he would have no chance of escape.

Chi chi chi!

The gale started to change in the air, it started to transform into many different wind blades, suddenly congealing and suddenly dissipating, it was completely unable to be grasped.

Sssi, a wind blade cut through the air around Tang Tian, leaving behind a cut on Tang Tian's arm, causing blood to flow.

It's so powerful.

Behind the mask, the young man muttered without a sound, his eyes releasing a light aura that was extremely bizarre and strange.

Ben Sen definitely doesn't know how I trained out my Zero Energy Body.

This resembles the Whirlpool Sword Storm so much.

It's familiarity is so similar.

Behind the mask, Tang Tian licked his lips, remembering the past.

Remembering the time of pain and perspiration under the sun, remembering when everyone accompanied each other and teased each other, remembering the warm sun in Ursa Major Constellation, the smoke taste in the air that never left, remembering the humongous Bear Egg.....

Heh.

Lightly puffing out air, he kept back the warmth look in his eyes, and raised his head up high.

# Chapter 715 – Dyed in Blood

---

Training had never been easy, every step of progress was always filled with perspiration and the will to bear the dryness and pain. All of this had long been ingrained in Tang Tian's growth, and if he had to choose what was the most painful training, it would definitely be the Whirlpool Sword Storm.

Other than strenuously trying to hold on, he could not do anything else in the heart piercing and lung tearing pain.

The entire process was so long that it could make a person's hair stand.

Even the unyielding Tang Tian never wished to do it again.

The Ursa Major Constellation had researched the Whirlpool Sword Storm for a relatively long time. Other than being the only way of realising the Zero Energy Body, Tang Tian used the Whirlpool Sword Storm to destroy an army, and even Saints were unable to escape, showing its powerful battle effectiveness.

The [Big Dipper Plan] that had greatly influenced the Ursa Major Constellation, and one of the most important research topics was with regards to the Whirlpool Sword Storm, its form, its strength and weaknesses, its effectiveness etc etc. The current [Null Division] was made possible because of the [Big Dipper Plan].

But what they used were smaller scales Whirlpool Storm Swords, where its effectiveness was not as strong as Tang Tian's, but at the

same time, it's pain was far less terrifying than what Tang Tian had experienced.

That also proved the understanding of the Whirlpool Sword Storm that Ursa Major Constellation had reached.

Tang Tian was also interested in the Whirlpool Sword Storm, that could destroy an entire army with its destructive force, unlike saints where they dare not contend against an army alone, was worth investing in.

But, the research in [Big Dipper Plan] later proved that the requirement to produce such a large scale Whirlpool Sword Storm was extremely harsh, and also, the stress placed on the controlled was even higher. Even for Tang Tian, if not for him being placed in a raged state, the demanding and harsh requirements was something that he would be unable to endure.

When Tang Tian saw the killing technique used by Ben Sen that strongly resembled the Whirlpool Sword Storm, he was filled with admiration.

The Sin Domain was a place with no energy, and such a thing can only be realised with the use of laws, and this required an extreme comprehension of the law, furthermore, this required an extremely abundance of the power of the physique.

Even Tang Tian had to admit he could not do such a thing.

But, Tang Tian still saw the chance of victory.

No one could be as familiar to the Whirlpool Sword Storm as him, not only was it because of him staying inside it for a few months, but also because of the intelligence and information gathered by everyone. Its weakness, its core, its formation, how to break it, everything, Tang Tian knew of it like the back of his hand.

To want to break a tornado, one has to destroy its eye.

Maybe ordinary people would think that the eye of the tornado was the black dot on Ben Sen's hand, but Tang Tian knew it was not, the black dot was the origin, but the eye was beneath Ben Sen, and according to positioning, it should be the flat and empty ground behind the fort's doors.

As long as he struck the eye, the tornado that extended into the heavens would break.

But, even if one knew the location of the eye, thinking to destroy it was much more difficult/

The closer it was to the eye, the faster the wind speed, the more powerful the wind blades, and they would be congealed to the point of becoming a wall of wind blades, which was tougher than steel. The big doors of the fort had been newly installed, and was obviously stronger and denser than previously, and the color also looked different.

Tang Tian guessed right, after the last time, the doors had been changed into a door that was made of Black Iron Stones, its thickness was over a meter. Every time the door was opened or closed, they would require 10 bodyguards who would exert all of their strength just to move the door.

The Black Iron Doors were a metre thick and 220m long.

The wind pressure was too strong, causing the surrounding space to become chaotic, and if the Ping Family Stealth Techniques were used, a problem would easily surface. 220m long, it can be compared to a moat.

But, I have no choice.

Tang Tian also did not have time to think of another possibility.

He took a deep breath and bent his waist, maintaining a horse stance, he immediately pulled back his fist.

Countless light beams started to coil and gather around his right fist, like rainbow colored lightning bolts. The air around him suddenly became still, as though being locked down.

Ben Sen who was up on the building felt something, and a look of disbelief flashed past his eyes. He could clearly feel all the berserk wind blades flying towards Ghost Face Mask.

Impossible.....

Ben Sen was startled for a moment, he was in disbelief. Such a situation could only be produced when the tornado felt that something could threaten it. The tornado was produced from laws, and thus had an awareness of exploiting advantages and avoiding harm.

Wu wu wu!

The space around Tang Tian darkened, countless wind blades covered the sky and surged towards him, all the wind blades formed to become a dense mass, as though trying to separate the light threads.

The pressure on Tang Tian suddenly increased, but he did not panic, as the tornado had sensed the danger coming out from him. In the research of [Big Dipper], the larger scale the tornado, the more it would possess a strong ability to assimilate, and would be even more aware of existences that threatened it.

They still thought that it was because of the dense energy involved in the Whirlpool Sword Storm, and because of the gathering of the remnants of spirits, but who knew that Ben Sen's tornado in the Sin Domain would have such a peculiar trait as well.

Ding ding ding, sparks started to break out.

The condensed and still air seemed to be like a transparent glass, crumbling at a visible speed. All the wind blades possessed were powerful, and with even more astonishing quantity. The space



around Tang Tian seemed to be breaking before the wind blades.

Tang Tian's body was trembling involuntarily.

[Godfist] had the ability to freeze space, this was his biggest discovery, because his Godfist could extract all the law threads in the said space. But, the current frozen space was quickly crumbling.

All living things would always be miraculously held in equilibrium. The Godfist could draw out law threads and cause the space to freeze, but the currently congealed space was broken, and Tang Tian's fist power had become extremely sluggish.

It was his first time witnessing such a situation since his enlightenment on Godfist.

Before, every time he punched out halfway, he would faint, but every time, his fist aura would be extremely fluid, because of his countless repetitions of training, and the fundamental fist technique had become an instinct. His talent for the variation marks might be smaller, but the power of his fist had always been of the highest quality.

This was where laid the true strength of his [Godfist].

But at that moment, he actually felt that he was unable to control his fist, the law threads converging on his right fist had become restless, and struggled free from the momentum of his fist.

Tang Tian's attention was towards his front, his gaze was fixated on his fist that he was pulling back from, countless variations submerged into his body, causing him to tremble incessantly, but his fist remained extremely stable.

The wind blades grew closer and closer to him, and the surrounding frozen air was being thawed away like an ice in hot weather.

Tang Tian's body suddenly spasmed violently, the green and black interweaved ghost face mask's eyes lit up with brilliance.

The Wind Blade that was getting extremely close was like the scythe of a Death God, almost touching the tip of Tang Tian's nose, but Tang Tian remained oblivious to it, all of his focus was on his fist.

The power in his fist slowly pulled to a full.

The light aura on his right fist was dazzling with a myriad of colors.

Chi, one ray of wind blade arched across Tang Tian's shoulder, drawing blood into the air that quickly spread into a blood mist.

The green and black ghost face mask's eyes that was releasing a brilliance of light seemed to break through the wind barrier, the young man behind the mask smiled.

~This fist, is extremely difficult to pull off, but all of its unprecedented focus caused it to break through once again.

The fist power that had been accumulated to its full was completely released!

The wind blades in the area turned sluggish. The multi-colored fist aura entered the storm.

The chaotic wind blades that could cut through swords was actually helpless against the dazzling fist, countless Law Threads coiled together, and formed a peculiar destructive effect.

It was like a burning bullet shooting through the snow.

Wherever the fist aura swept through, it would leave behind a large pathway.

Tang Tian's entire body was aching badly, for the sake of not getting the fist aura affected, he had used his body to endure the attacks from the wind blade made on the frozen space. But at the moment, he did not dare to rest, for he knew it was a fleeting opportunity.

The empty pathway formed by the fist could only exist for a short time.

Taking the chance of the stable space, Tang Tian moved, and appeared 60m away. The pathway was constantly crumbling, countless wind blades were flying and sweeping all around.

The intense sense of danger enveloped Tang Tian. Without panicking, he roared once, and suddenly pulled his fist once more.

Bang!

The sky filled of wind blades fiercely classed onto the barely completed frozen space.

Tang Tian's body trembled, but this time, he who was prepared did not allow his fist to be affected at all.

Another punch!

The fist aura produced was like a cannon shooting into the storm, leaving behind a circular pathway.

Using that, Tang Tian swept forward again.

54m.

Tang Tian raised his fist again, and once more punched out.

45m.

Tang Tian had just released another punch when countless cuts formed on his body, causing blood to spurt out. The Godfist exhausted a lot of his physical strength, adding that he had to endure the immense attacks, Tang Tian's physical strength was close to withering up. His body could no longer tolerate the fist that he was enduring, and he became severely injured.

Ben Sen who was feeling immense shock finally heaved a sigh of relief, disbelief still spread in his eyes. ~How can that fist technique exist in this world? What kind of fist technique is that, to actually draw all the law threads in the space around it?~

In the face of the strange and dazzling fist aura, his [Gale] was actually weak as paper, causing Ben Sen to not believe his own eyes.

Only until he saw Tang Tian spurting out blood from all over his body did he heave a sigh of relief. Such a terrifying fist technique must definitely have some sort of powerful flaw, if not why didn't he use it the last time?

As expected, the exhaustion of strength is not ordinary.

To lose his strength here, He has no chance of victory.

But for some reason, Ben Sen did not sense any joy in victory, his expression was rigid, the palm of his left hand was actually covered with perspiration.

Fresh beads of blood swept past the green and black ghost face mask as time seemed to have stopped to a crawl, Tang Tian's entire body had stopped, and he was in a daze.

Is this the end.....

But in the next moment, the eyes beneath the ghost face mask suddenly became crazy and aflame, all the muscles in his body started to stretch taut, he bellowed out once and suddenly stepped out, the blood mist in the air suddenly shot towards him.

NO!

How can this be the end?

Tang Tian, are you a coward? Are you afraid now? Are you thinking of retreating?

His heart bellowed out loud, he was like an enraged lion continuously questioning himself, his eyes were flushed red, covered with erupting blood vessels.

You said it before, even if you die, you will save everyone first!

If you're not even afraid of death, why are you fearing now?

He raised his head, his eyes fuelled with fire, the face behind the

mask was extremely sinister, he suddenly raised his fist again, countless of blood drops flew past his vision, the warm blood flowing down his cheek, to the corner of his mouths, he felt an endless feeling of elation, and his entire body on fire, he felt that he needed to tear the tornado apart.

Just like this!

That's right, just like this!

He raised his head up and bellowed.

# Chapter 716 – Primordial Fire Origin

---

Bellowing into the sky, an invisible shockwave erupted out with Tang Tian at the center, and all the wind blades around were swept away.

Tang Tian's entire body was covered in blood, but he was oblivious to it, and only felt an indescribable contentment from the roar, as though something had broke out from within. Strand after strand of transparent gray flames surged out from the deepest parts of his body, burning at the surface of his body.

This is....the Null Flames!

Tang Tian raised both his hands up, and looked at the faint gray flames enveloping his entire body. The Null Flames in the past only enveloped his arms. A sense of enlightenment rose in his mind, the Null Flames were flames formed by “Combusting” the power of the physique.

As expected, only at the moment between life and death, can I break through my limits huh.....

Tang Tian muttered in his mind, and thought about Energy Transmutation. It was the indication of a silver saint, after going through a special transformation, the energy would transform into an even higher grade force. His own Null Flames, like Energy Transmutation, was through the arousal and combustion of the power of the physique, transforming into a higher grade power.



Tang Tian's previous Null Flames started from the place where he tempered and trained the most, his fists. But a human body has to blend well together, and at that time the Null Flames was unable to release its true might. It wasn't until Tang Tian's body went through law tempering, that it reached the criteria for the Null Flames to be released to its full potential. And through the few Godfists that he released previously, it consumed all the power of the physique in his body, adding the faith of improving in the moment of life and death, it was like throwing a small flame into a pile of completely dried firewood.

With the depletion of old power, new power could be born.

A sea of fire burned in his body, thread after thread of Null Flames surged out from his body.

Compared to the berserk power of the physique, this new power was even more gentle and vast. It was like there was a sea of flames inside Tang Tian's body, extremely pure and peaceful, yet surging and vast, he could clearly feel the amount of power accumulated in it.

This feeling, it feels too good.

A heavenly shaking roar that sounded like a wild beast exploded out from within the layers of mist.

Facing this loud roar, all the screeches made by the wind suddenly turned sluggish.

Ben Sen who was at the top of the building finally revealed shock, the Ghost Face Mask in the tornado was like a wild beast roaring in anger, the imposing aura from his body expanding outwards. But when he saw the gray flames surging all over Ghost Face Mask's body, his mind instantly buzzed.

Primordial Fire Origin!

That is the Primordial Fire Origin!

How is that possible.....

Han Bing Ning who was swaying roughly heard that roar, her mind was roused, and her morale instantly increased.

Truly, he did not retreat!

She clenched the sword hilt even tighter unknowingly, and the light around her became brighter.

She did not give up.

“Eh!” Victor suddenly revealed a look of disbelief.

“Young Master, what happened?” The beautiful servant asked.

Victor's expression was inconceivable: “Someone activated the

Primordial Fire Origin.”

“Primordial Fire Origin.” the beautiful servant started perspiring.

“Yes, no matter how much a person wants to refine and temper his body, there will always be a limit. Activating laws, and using the power of the physique, the majority of these laws abide the same set of rules, the stronger the technique used, the stronger the requirement for the power of the physique.” Victor explained: “If the technique requires power, far more than the limit of the power inside the body, what will happen? Countless of our ancestors have tried to study it, and found the solution, and that is by igniting the Primordial Fire Origin.”

He then continued: “Igniting the Primordial Fire Origin will transform the power inside the body into a brand new power. This power is of the same branch and type of the power of the physique, but it is of a higher grade and much stronger, and can easily use laws.”

“Young master, have you ignited your Primordial Fire origin?” The beautiful servant asked curiously.

Victor revealed a bitter laugh: “I have not. The Primordial Fire Origin is hard to ignite, the conditions to do so is extremely harsh. The degree of tempering on the body needs to be extremely high, my body, hahahaha. That is why people say, stupid people will ignite the Primordial Fire Origin, smart people will enlighten on laws. Your family’s young master can barely be considered a smart person, hahahaha, that’s the only reason.....”

The beautiful servant covered her mouth and chuckled.

Victor also laughed out loud, but in his eyes, he was not laughing at all.

Powerful.....

Xu An Zhong also noticed that someone inside the tornado had ignited his Primordial Fire Origin, but his gaze never left Han Bing Ning.

The light aura around Han Bing Ning's body gradually dimmed, like a candle in the wind that could blow out at any moment. Xu An Zhong trained in the sword himself, and knew that determination was the most important when training in the sword, to have a strong will and unperturbed heart. If she had not held on, she would have injured herself. But for her to hold on under the torrential storm, she would definitely be reborn.

Noticing the blue light around Han Bing Ning's body becoming brighter and brighter, happiness appeared in Xu An Zhong's eyes.

As expected, the blue light started to become more stable inside the storm, it began to release an extremely sharp aura, like a sword embryo being polished again and again, revealing an extremely sharp snow white aura.

She is advancing.

Xu An Zhong was secretly happy, to witness a swordswoman advance, as he was one himself, filled him with admiration. To him, the powerful martial artist that had ignited his Primordial Fire Origin will never be as important as a swordsman's advance.

But, only a few people on the scene were capable of sharply realizing that the tide of the battle was quietly changing.

Tang Tian whose body was filled with immense power and his fighting intent soared to maximum became even more berserk.

He pulled another punch again, and the new power that was like a vast body of water immediately rumbled, the surging power flowed, the momentum was like a sprinting thunder, it flowed through his right hand and into his fist.

Tang Tian's state of mind was in an unprecedented calmness and clearness, the inference of variations that he made before, started to sweep past his mind like a mist being blown quickly. Countless of starlight pulled forward like pages of a book flipping, big and small variation marks appeared, every single of them extremely clear.

The sounds of the wind around him suddenly disappeared, countless light beams, as though they were being sucked, entered Tang Tian's right fist.

Ben Sen's eyes constricted, the rainbow light regiment on Tang Tian's right fist was swelling by a few folds, it had become the size

of a wicker basket, and was releasing a terrifying aura. The dazzling myriad of colors of light auras, shining on the green and black ghost face mask, revealed an indescribable horror.

He punched out!

The wicker basket size light regiment shot into the storm, penetrating through the wall of wind blades silently, all of the surging and torrential wind blades could not affect it at all.

Bang!

The thick Black Iron Stone door was covered with a colorful spider web.

Pa.

A light crack sound sounded out, the Black Iron Stone door crumbled like a biscuit.

The transparent glass like eye of the storm, floated quietly in the air.

A figure suddenly appeared beside the eye like a ghost, and punched straight into it. Prrrinngggg, like glass shattering, the eye shattered and disappeared.

Bang bang bang!

The tornado pillar that shot into the sky, seemed to be pulled by something, step by step, it crumbled down as countless drops of mist cascaded down, surging and churning, it was a spectacular and astonishing sight. The entire Mu'er Residence was buried in the dense mist.

All of the spectator's face changed, their legs turned soft.

When the mist dissipated, it revealed the outline of the Mu'er Residence.

Ben Sen who was on the top of the building was like a statue, he still could not believe that his [Gale] was broken through.

The Ghost Face Mask who was covered entirely in blood slowly walked out of the fort, the dense Black Iron Stone door had disappeared, and Ben Sen looked as if he had lost his spirit.

All the spectators held their breaths, the entire west route was in silence.

Who won?

No one could see the battle inside the crazy storm, and no one knew whatever that had happened in it.

The Ghost Face Mask looked to be in a terrible state, his entire

body was covered in blood, but he stood straight like a spear.

Pa pa pa.

His footsteps broke the silence once again, Tang Tian walked to the blood bear black flag and pulled it out.

Without saying a word, he walked to Han Bing Ning's side, carrying Han Bing Ning on one shoulder, the two figures become blurry, and disappeared without turning back.

Ben Sen who was standing still on the tower turned and walked back into the fort.

Who won, who lost? That became the question that lingered on everybody's mind.

With the two of them leaving, the invisible pressure disappeared, everyone who had witnessed the spectacular scene immediately flew into an uproar of excitement, and started to discuss in passion.

Back in the fort, Da Lin anxiously went forward: "Uncle Ben Sen!"

Ben Sen could no longer hold on, he sat down straight on the ground, his face as pale as paper, his entire body was completely wet.



Da Lin's face changed, she was shocked: "Uncle Ben Sen, you're injured?"

Ben Sen gasped for a moment, and spoke with difficulty: "I'm fine."

He had been injured, the destruction of the eye had caused him a huge backlash. Now that he had the time to think back, he felt that it was inconceivable, to ignite his Primordial Fire Origin in the midst of the battle, although it was rarely seen, but it was considered normal. But the fist technique was extremely weird, he had never seen such a fist technique before.

But what made him confused was that the Ghost Face Mask was actually able to accurately pinpoint the location of his eye!

Did that ghost face mask train in [Gale] before?

This guess was quickly thrown aside, [Gale] was not something that one could learn just because he wanted to, it needed an extremely profound enlightenment on wind laws. Anyone facing [Gale] for the first time will definitely be unable to accurately, without hesitation, the weakness of [Gale], and find the location of its eye.

Ben Sen guessed that, Ghost Gace Mask's mentor was probably proficient in [Gale], and thus Ghost Face Mask would be familiar with it.

He definitely isn't from any simple background!

And, Ghost Face Mask's action of leaving without even turning back surprised Ben Sen even more.

Previously, when the Ghost face Mask announced that he would defeat him, Ben Sen's heart was filled with caution, thinking that the other party had some sort of plot. But Ghost Face Mask had won uprightly, and left without saying a word. This made Ben Sen become somewhat convinced of his reason.

Just to defeat me huh?

Ben Sen laughed bitterly.

He isn't simple at all, the leader of the Null Division, Huh? Thinking about the Null Division Prisoners, he suddenly became somewhat glad, the Mu'er Residence only had Han Bing Ning, but she was already taken away.

The other families must be uneasy now.

With such a powerful person lying in wait for the opportunity, it will not be a good feeling to be targeted.

Victor stretched his back and yawned. With a tired look, he said: "Let's go, the show is over, time to sleep. Really, to cause such a

ruckus in the middle of the night and disrupt my sleep, can't they do it in the day?"

The beautiful servant revealed a pained look: "Go back to sleep!"

Xu An Zhong revealed a look of thought, after a moment, he turned and left.

Suddenly, he spotted two familiar figures from the corner of his eyes, it was Wei Han and Mu Ze, So even the Qin Family can't sit still anymore huh?

Xu An Zhong chuckled, for some reason, he became somewhat excited for what was to come.

# Chapter 717 – The Xu Brothers

---

The effect brought about by the battle far exceeded that of the previous time.

Ben Sen's shocking [Gale], was portrayed right in front of everybody to witness its might. Both parties fought extremely intensely, with so many spectators, it far surpassed the previous battle. And Victor's casual drunk remarks on the Ghost Face Mask igniting his Primordial Fire Origin incited excited discussions amongst the others.

[Gale] was a famous technique, and the ultimate goal for all the martial artists who trained in Wind Blades. For such an ultimate killing technique to make an appearance in the Purple Cuckoo City, how could it not cause an uproar.

The last time Ben Sen revealed his strength, it caused countless people to cry out in shock, and after [Gale], it shot Ben Sen's name to a whole new level.

Ghost Face Mask's strength was also reevaluated by everybody. Under the power of [Gale], for him to push forward, Ghost Face Mask's strength was tyrannical by itself. No one saw how Ghost Face Mask actually fought against [Gale], as everyone's attention was fully on the Primordial Fire Origin.

The difficulty of igniting the Primordial Fire Origin was not easier compared to learning [Gale], it required repeated tempering of the body, and the duration it required for refining could not be

overlooked. Victor was right about stupid people being able to ignite their Primordial Fire Origin, as those who were able to do so, were all of those who knew their talent was ordinary but able to bear the tedious and boring tempering.

Because of that, there had been very few people who had been able to ignite their Primordial Fire Origin.

Without question, everyone knew that Ghost Face Mask was an expert, just with the point of being able to ignite his Primordial Fire Origin was enough.

Enlightening on laws allowed for easier use of laws, but the activation of laws required the power of the physique, Ghost Face Mask's enlightenment of laws might be shallow, but his astonishing power of the physique allowed his attacks to break through that weakness.

Of course, such a type of expert did not shock people like Victor, powerful martial artists like Victor and others, their comprehension and usage of laws had reached a level that caused others to call great.

People brimming with talent were always radiating with brilliance, using their strength to rush straight for the top.

But what everyone loved to discuss, was who actually won. At the end of the battle, both parties left without saying a word, and it was hard to determine the winner.

“Ghost Face Mask won.” Xu An Zhong was sure of it, even at home, his sword never left his body.

He always had a strong sense of trust towards his elder brother in front of him. Xu Ye had a pale white complexion, his eyes extremely black, looking as though he was sick and extremely weak. But anyone who looked down on him would only die horrible.

The two brothers sat across each other, forming an extremely strong contrast. Xu An Zhong’s figure was tall and sturdy, dressed in plain clothes and straw sandals, and his skin was rough. Xu Ye on the other hand looked like an aristocratic young master, with ravishing and luxurious robes, every action of his was graceful.

“Oh, why is that?” Xu Ye smiled and asked.

“The moment Gale was broken, Ben Sen lost.” Xu An Zhong said.

Xu Ye: “Can you break Gale?”

This question made Xu An Zhong remain in silence for a moment before replying: “It’ll be difficult.”

Xu Ye laughed, An Zhong said difficult and not impossible, seems like An Zhong’s strength is far stronger than I have imagined. He? He was happy about it, with another strong martial artist in the family, it would be of immense help in such a time.

“Why did you think Ghost Face Mask went to find Ben Sen?” Xu Ye asked.

Xu An Zhong shook his head: “I don’t know about that.”

He truly did not understand, no matter from how he saw it, there was no reason for Ghost Face Mask to look for Ben Sen at all. Unless, it was as what Ghost Face Mask said, to defeat him. But this reason to Xu An Zhong was too much of a child’s play. He did not believe that a leader would play such a game.

Ghost Face Mask must definitely have some plan.

Xu An Zhong knew for himself that he was not intelligent, and did not brood too much over it as he looked at Xu Ye, whose mind was a hundred times stronger than his.

“I can’t comprehend it either.” Xu Ye laughed: “But thinking about it, his final aim is definitely saving his Null Division Prisoners still.”

“We also have the Null Division Prisoners.” Xu An Zhong reminded Xu Ye.

Xu Ye laughed: “Don’t be too worried about it, now the ones who should be anxious isn’t us, but the Qin Family.”

“Qin Family?” Xu An Zhong was surprised.

“The Qin Family used the Xue Residence in exchange for 200 of the prisoners from the Lu Family.” Xu Ye’s smile was like the sun without any hidden intent: “Counting it down, the number of prisoners the Qin Family will have is about 400 to 500. You have to know, the total number of prisoners is slightly less than 5000, for the Qin Family to obtain a tenth of it, what do you think, will they be willing to give them up?”

“No they won’t.” Xu An Zhong shook his head, he had seen the prisoners before, each and every one of them had outstanding and unique physiques.

All of them seemed to have walked on Ghost Face Mask’s path, and had gone through an extremely strong tempering of the body. To any family, such an addition was a huge plus. Even if their perception was bad, with such power of the physique in their control, it was enough to display a substantial might.

If they only had 200 people, maybe the Qin Family might be willing to give them up, but it was almost 500 people, and the Qin Family would definitely not give them up, but instead think of ways to buy even more in. As long as they digested these 500 prisoners, the Qin Family’s strength will increase by a level, and if they increased the number of prisoners to a 1000, then the Qin Family would have the qualifications to become the number one family of the Sin Domain.

It was an attractive power that the Qin Family was incapable of rejecting.



“Then tell me, what will the Qin Family do now?” Xu Ye asked.

Xu An Zhong immediately understood: “They will look for him!”

“That’s right.” Xu Ye laughed: “Ghost Face Mask is able to defeat Ben Sen, that is already too big a threat. And Ghost Face Mask is the leader of the Null Division, as long as he remains alive, all the prisoners will not submit. Instead, if the prisoners are rescued by him, then Ghost Face Mask’s strength will increase greatly. Such a character, do you think the Qin Family will let him live?”

“No.” Xu An Zhong shook his head, all of these clues started linking up in his mind, and it became clear: “Then what are we going to do now?”

“What will we do?” Xu Ye laughed: “Of course we will enjoy the show.”

“Enjoy the show? If Ghost Face Mask dies, then when the Qin Family subdues all the prisoners, we will be in trouble.” Xu An Zhong frowned, to him, it was time to secretly help Ghost Face Mask.

“Relax, how can he die so easily?” Xu Ye said relaxingly: “He is able to defeat Ben Sen and [Gale], even with the Four Great Generals taking action, they might not be able to defeat him. As long as he gets some subordinates back, his strength will explode even further.”

“All of those prisoners have average strength.” Xu An Zhong said. Although they had outstanding physiques, but they did not know anything about laws, their martial techniques looked to be powerful, but without laws imbedded in them, their might was lacking.

“They are an army.” Xu Ye reminded, and then sighed: “It’s been too long since an army has appeared in the Sin Domain, everyone has forgotten about the might of an army. Truth be told, I am rather excited to see how strong Ghost Face Mask’s army is.”

“Then let us gift our prisoners to him.” Xu An Zhong said.

“Relax, there will be people who will gift him the prisoners.” Xu Ye laughed.

Ming Zhu returned to the Xue Residence, her expression extremely grave. After witnessing the intense battle at Mu’er Residence, her state of mind was greatly shaken. She finally realized, that in the eyes of powerful martial artists, existences like her Xue Family were just like ants.

The rejection from the great families had made her even more exhausted.

But the greatest impact that she received was from Ghost Face Mask. He remained arrogant and strong even when he was covered in blood, the silent and indescribable determination was even felt when he carried his female companion.

For some reason, she suddenly thought of Tang Tian.

Their figures were too similar, but their strength were worlds apart. If only Ghost Face Mask will help the Xue Residence.....

Ming Zhu laughed bitterly, thinking that her own thoughts were too absurd. Even then, she could see that Ghost Face Mask was public enemy number one. She could not help but feel sympathy for him, Isn't the Xue Family also surrounded by enemies?

When she regained from her thoughts, she realised that unknowingly, she had walked to the warehouse.

Ming Zhu was speechless, Alright, is that last name Tang still sleeping again.

She walked towards the warehouse.

Outside the big doors, she heard the gasps and smashing of rocks, she was extremely familiar with the sound, it was the work of breaking the Black Iron Stones.

~He finally isn't asleep anymore, seems like I have enticed him with the Golden Steel Gravel."

Ming Zhu consoled herself, but for some reason, a thread of disappointment surfaced in her mind. ~If it was Ghost Face Mask, he would not be enticed by such small gains.~

Ming Zhu laughed bitterly once again, it was a bad day for her. She knew that the strings of events had formed a flaw in her previous steady state of mind.

Her eyes regained the determined look once again, she did not disturb Tang Tian and turned to leave.

Inside the warehouse, Tie Xie was gasping for breath, he was giving his all to use the hammer to smash the Black Iron Stones, I am a B Grade Infamous person, to be lowered to do manual labor now..... He wanted to cry.

“Continue.”

Han Bing Ning said coldly, causing him to tremble, he then raised the hammer and smashed it down again.

Han Bing Ning protected Tang Tian by his side, her hand remained on her sword hilt as she continued being cautious. As long as Tie Xie had any slight strange movements, she would kill him.

After returning back to the warehouse, the moment Han Bing Ning woke up and saw Tang Tian's bleeding state, she almost took her sword to kill Tie Xie, but luckily, Tang Tian stopped her.

On Tang Tian's body, a thin layer of gray transparent null flames flowed around, and his wounds started to heal at a rate visible to

the naked eye. All around him, the Golden Steel Gravel quietly floated in the air.

Suddenly, Tang Tian opened his eyes and his ten fingers danced.

Sssi!

Ten threads of pitch black spatial law threads, like ten rays of soft blades cut ten beads of Golden Steel Gravel at the same time.

His current power of the physique had long gone through a qualitative change, and the previously high consumption of spatial law threads, was no longer a problem to him.

Pa pa pa.

The Golden Steel Gravel started to explode one after another, and the Life Origin Essence transformed into silver auras and entered Tang Tian's body.

In the blink of an eye, all of the Golden Steel Gravel was broken by Tang Tian, and the great quantity of Life Origin Essence entered his body, causing Tang Tian to reveal a look of surprise.

The quiet sea of Null Flames suddenly boomed, the Life Origin Essence was like shattered stones plummeting down from the sky, and smashing into the sea of Null Flames. Every ray of Life Origin Essence seemed to be a stimulant, causing the sea of Null Flames in his body to become extremely violent.

Tang Tian never thought that absorbing the Life Origin Essence would be so different, the first time being calm, but now, it had become so violent.

But at the moment, he had no time to think, all of his focus was on the activation of the Null Flames, trying to digest the Life Origin Essence.

## Chapter 718 – Victor and Roland Su

---

Roland Su looked at Victor with a look of surprise: “You’re injured?”

Roland Su, who was around 30 years of age, was composed and refined, like a mature woman with an implicit charm.

Victor’s face was bitter, he drained the cup in front of him with one mouth: “Yes, that stupid fool, sold all the prisoners to the Qin Family. I and Qin Zhen fought, and it was not easy to come back fully intact.”

Roland Su became quiet, she understood what that meant. The Qin Family had over 500 Null Division Prisoners, and it was considered a disaster to the other Families of the Purple Cuckoo City. The original alliance of the families would be able to resist the Qin Family, but if the Qin Family absorbed the 500 prisoners, the balance would be tipped. At that time, all the other families, other than becoming a vassal of the Qin Family, had no other route. With Qin Zhen’s strong personality, it was either surrender or death.

“What are you trying to say?” Roland Su’s gaze landed on Victor’s face, a complicated emotion flashing past her eyes.

“Gift the Null Division Prisoners to Ghost Face Mask.” Victor placed down the cup and did not shy away from Roland Su’s eyes, he said: “We cannot let the Qin Family become organized, if not, we will definitely not live.”

“Gift them to Ghost Face Mask?” Roland Su looked at Victor calmly: “And then what, my Roland Family have to bear the anger of the Qin Family?”

Victor remained quiet, his face that was originally white had a flush of red: “Who dares say that we gifted them to him? As long as we report that the Ghost Face Mask infiltrated into the Roland Family and that the Roland Family was also a victim, what can the Qin Family say?”

“The Qin Family might not say much on the surface, but the matters after that would be complicated.” Roland Su remained calm.

Victor was not angry either, but also acted calmly: “Can the Roland Family become the vassal to others?”

Roland Su kept quiet.

“My family, has already lost its courage. What they are thinking of, is how to struggle whilst at death’s door. To those old men, it is enough to survive. What does it matter who it is with? As long as Qin Family throws a bone, they will happily fetch it for them.” Victor’s tone was filled with disappointment, he raised his head and looked at Roland Su: “But, will the Roland Family do the same?”

“No.” Roland Su replied sharply, her tone was calm, but it was firm.



Victor Laughed, the Roland Family was soft on the outside and firm on the inside, like Roland Su, they would never be unable to accept being the vassal of another family. He looked at the lady in front of him, the familiar face, and the memories of the past swept past his mind.

He calmed himself down, and his gaze turned gentle: “The Xue Residence bought a male servant, who is also a prisoner, and is most likely Ghost Face Mask. Ghost Face Mask’s fleeing technique utilizes spatial laws, and what’s more, there is a guy called Ping Xiao Shan who is proficient in it. Ping Xiao Shan had made moves on the Golden Steel Threads countless times, although he does it very secretively, but he still leaves a trail, he is a veteran.

If i did not guess wrongly, Ghost Face Mask’s fleeing technique was learned from Ping Xiao Shan.

Roland Su was taken by surprise: “Ghost Face Mask is in the Xue Residence?”

The Xue Residence had recently sought help from all over, and even sought help from the Roland Family.

“Things are THAT interesting.” Victor’s face revealed a frivolous smile: “Lu Ling Nan was rejected by Xue Ming Zhu, he came out from the Xue Residence, and not long later, Tie Xie who was with him disappeared and never came back. Xue Ming Zhu has a steadfast personality, a bit like you. If I did not guess wrong, Tie Xie has already been done in by Ghost Face Mask.”

“The Qin Family will also find him.” Rolan Su reminded Victor.

“They can definitely find him.” Victor said: “But, the male servant of the Xue Residence was bought by money. The Xue Residence has always respected the Qin Family deeply, but this time the Qin Family silently sold them out, thus they are already in the wrong. If they go up and ask to look for Ghost Face Mask, they are truly bullying them. With the temper of the Old Granny in the Xue Family, who knows if they will start fighting at first sight. Without the Xue Family, how will the Lu Family be willing to hand over the 200 prisoners to the Qin Family?”

“So?” Roland Su led him to continue.

“So they will use plots.” Victor explained: “The Lu Family has lost Tie Xie, and will definitely be unhappy. The Lu Family is stronger than the Qin Family, since they have many experts, how can they leave it as that? To the Qin Family, they only need Ghost Face Mask to die, so with the Lu Family being the blade, everyone will be happy.”

“Are you betting on Ghost Face Mask not dying?” Roland Su asked.

“That’s right.” Victor’s indifferent look disappeared, he became serious: “I witnessed Ghost Face Mask’s two battles. This time when he beat Ben Sen, many people assumed that he was hiding his strength. But from what I saw, he was not hiding his strength, but he actually improved.”

“He improved?” Rolan Su’s expression could no longer be kept calm, revealing a look of surprise.

She knew Victor very well, his foresight was astute and sharp, his observing ability was extremely strong and he was intelligent. He had witnessed both battles, and to come up with that thought, he definitely had some discovery. But, the time frame between both battles was extremely short, but for him to improve so much, that.....was too scary.....

Victor laughed, but Roland Su could see that he had become lively, his mood suddenly became better: “That’s right, the first time, he merely relied on the law threads and the ability to sense them and caught Ben Sen off guard. He has a very shallow enlightenment on laws, but this time, his martial technique had reached a new realm.”

“A new realm?”

“At the start, I thought that the reason that he could become the beat Ben Sen was because of the ignition of his Primordial Fire Origin. But after thinking about it, even with igniting the Primordial Fire Origin, it is impossible to defeat [Gale].” Victor became serious again: “Although the Primordial Fire Origin is much stronger than the power of the physique in terms of quality and density, but Ben Sen already has profound enlightenment on laws, if not he can’t even use [Gale]. His [Gale] was used with the power of Heaven and Earth, it is endless, no matter how strong a person’s Origin Force is, it is unable to contend against the power of Heaven and Earth. Furthermore, when they fought, I sensed a

strange aura from inside Ben Sen's gale."

Roland Su listened attentively to him, and asked: "What strange aura?"

Her curiosity had peaked, Victor was uninhibited and licentious, but his knowledge and experience was extremely extensive, if even he said that it was strange, then it was definitely not normal.

"I can't tell." Victor's face grew solemn, and continued: "I felt that that was the crucial thing that allowed him to destroy Gale, but that aura was too weird, I have never felt something like that. I wanted to gain clarity on it, so I snuck into the Mu'er Residence."

Roland Su's eyes became wide, she was surprised: "You went to find Ben Sen?"

Victor nodded his head: "Only Ben Sen knows what happened in there. Only Ben Sen knows how Gale was broken. I wanted to know the answer, so the best way to find out was to ask Ben Sen personally. Ben Send did not hide anything, he said that Ghost Face Mask used a fist technique, which was extremely strange, it could attract all the law threads in the space around him."

"What?" Roland Su exclaimed out, her face in disbelief.

Victor's expression became even more serious: "Ghost face Mask's fist technique was always the same technique. But that one technique contains countless of variations, Ben Sen suspects that

Ghost Face Mask had condensed all the variations into one fist. When he pulled out his fist, the law threads in the space around him started to be attracted to his fist like a magnet, and the space which all the law threads were pulled from turned completely frozen. This frozen space was extremely stable, and regardless of how his Gale tried to demolish it, it was extremely difficult. Ben Sen had never seen such a fist technique before. This Fist technique demands an extremely high power of the physique, and at the start of the battle, Ben Sen's [Gale] had completely locked it down. But who knew at the crucial moment, Ghost Face Mask was able to ignite his Primordial Fire Origin, and [Gale] was destroyed quickly after that."

Roland Su's moist and red lips opened up, her face filled with shock.

"When I was about to leave, Ben Sen suddenly shouted at me." Victor's tone became down: "He told me, never to be Ghost Face Mask's enemy."

"Why? Because of that fist technique?" Roland Su could not help but ask.

"Ben Sen saw how Ghost Face Mask ignited his Primordial Fire Origin." There was an additional indescribable feeling to Victor's tone: "The strange fist technique had already consumed all of Ghost Face Mask's physical strength, but he still continued releasing that fist, causing the blood to churn in his body, and started to seep out from every single pore on his body, but he did not even stop, he was like a fierce and berserk tiger, blood continued to spray out from his body, and it was the last strand of

power inside him that he used to ignite the Primordial Origin Fire.”

Hearing that, Roland Su did not know what to reply.

“Ben Sen said he had never seen before such a desire to win, to be able to ignore everything else.” Victor’s expression became complicated: “Ben Sen also said that Ghost Face Mask could have killed him. But he did not do that, he only looked at Ben Sen and left. Ben Sen suspects that Ghost Face Mask was truly there just to challenge him, to break through his own limits, he is a real maniac.”

Roland Su was quiet for a long time, and then spoke up: “So you have placed your bets on him?”

“That’s right, we have been in exile for too long, everyone is starting to get used to living life with their backs bent.” Victor said indifferently: “How many years has it been since someone walked the death path to home? The road to our ancestors’ bones must definitely be lonely. The swords of the saints of the Honorable Martial Continent guarding the gates to Sin Domain must have already rusted. We have already lost our courage, and we can even live without the sun. Qin Zhen himself is a person that does not need light, I am not, but I am also afraid of pain, sigh, so I skive, and leave it to the brave people.”

Roland Su kept quiet, and then commented: “No one tried to barge through the gates of Sin Domain.”

In the first few months of banishment, countless families and people who were not happy of being banished rushed towards the Sin Domain Gates in madness, hoping to return to the Sacred Saint Galaxy. The Honorable Martial Continent's Saints guarded the gates and killed all of them. That path were littered with bones, and had been called the death path to home.

No one had succeeded, because the Honorable Martial Continent was too powerful.

Slowly, the various families got more used to Sin Domain, their lives gradually grew stable, and fewer people tried to walk the Death Path to home, and in the recent decade, no one had walked the path covered in bones anymore.

"Maybe." Victor laughed heedlessly, his pale white handsome face revealed a smear of spirit: "But, it is worth a gamble. Talking about it, we will also not lose much. It is a good bet that rarely comes by."

"I got it." Roland Su nodded her head, not showing any indication of what she felt, she left.

"Although we cannot stop Qin Zhen from taking the prisoners away, but, I took the chance to do something, and found some trouble for Qin Zhen."

Su stopped in his tracks: "Trouble?"

“Oh, I only told those prisoners that Ghost Face Mask is still alive.” Victor laughed happily, a light aura dazzling in his eyes: “Oh oh, I also went to investigate the name of the male servant in the Xue Residence.”

“I heard that his name is Tang Tian.”



## Chapter 719 – Get Rid of Them

---

On a tall building near the Xue Residence, Mu Ze and Wei Han stood guard, the two of them occasionally looking at the Xue Residence.

“That Tang Tian is really the Ghost Face Mask?” Wei Han snorted: “I have to say, the Patriarch is truly too cautious, if we just get rid of him now, who is going to say anything?”

“The Patriarch naturally has his considerations as a Patriarch.” Mu Ze said: “Furthermore, we just have to prevent him from escaping. If someone is willing, then that would be better. Since the start, none of these matters would ever land on us. And, can you defeat Ben Sen? That [Gale] is not anything ordinary, you cannot underestimate Ghost Face Mask’s strength.”

“So what?” Wei Han sneered: “as long as the two of us work together, I don’t believe we can ever fail.”

“Stop talking nonsense and just focus on standing guard.” Mu Ze was lazy to argue with Wei Han and focused on drinking and enjoying his tea.

Inside the warehouse.

Tang Tian gradually opened his eyes, he felt as swollen as a balloon, the Life Origin Essence was like a miss permeating inside his flesh, and then turning into Null Flames. Tang Tian could feel his entire body on fire, as long as there was a slight movement, it

would cause his body to be filled with overflowing power and make him restless.

He floated in the air, his entire body enveloped in the transparent gray flames, making him look like a war god.

Tie Xie looked at Tang Tian in reverence, that's right, in reverence.

“You say this is the Primordial Fire Origin?” Tang Tian looked at the flames enveloping his hands.

“Yes Master.” Tie Xie replied respectfully. In Sin Domain, the strong was the lord, after fighting with Tang Tian the last time, he was still unconvinced, but currently, Tang Tian who resembled a war god in front of him gave him a feeling of being unable to resist.

In the Sin Domain, all experts would have two goals, which were to enlighten on laws from the law threads, another was to ignite their Primordial Fire Origin, transforming the power of the physique in their bodies into Origin Force. It was not that he had never met any strong martial artist that never had their Primordial Fire Origin ignited, but he had never met one whose Primordial Fire Origin was so fearsome.

Tang Tian's Primordial Fire Origin was like a volcano spewing out lava, even when he was over 10m away, Tie Xie could feel the surging Primordial Fire Origin aura.

Primordial Fire Origin Flames are released to such an extent, and to be able to form such fearsome Primordial Fire Origin, Master's Origin Force must be extremely terrifying.

Too scary!

He told Tang Tian everything he knew.

Listening to Tie Xie's explanation, Tang Tian nodded his head: "Origin Force? That's a good name. Using the law threads to comprehend the initial surface of the law, interesting, could it be that at the last final stage, it is about enlightening on the law space?"

"Yes. Once you gain enlightenment on the law space, you can form a law domain. Such a powerful martial artist is not one you can win against." Tie Xie explained.

"There are no undefeated people." Tang Tian said objected, then asked with curiousness: "Are there anyone who have gained enlightenment on law domains?"

"I think only the strongest martial artists at the peak." Tie Xie replied with slight hesitation: "This lowly subordinate is not too clear about that."

"Law surface? Is it like this?" Han Bing Ning who was by the side suddenly spoke out, a thin blue light piece appeared in front of her. The Light piece was extremely thin, like a thin sheet of paper.

Upon appearing, its cold and sharp aura instantly enveloped the entire place.

Tie Xie's expression turned rigid as he swallowed his saliva, As expected of them, talents will only play with talents, perverts will only be friends with perverts.

He then explained: "Yes. As long as the Law Surface is formed, you can project out a force field."

"Project out a force field...." Han Bing Ning was somewhat confused.

Tang Tian asked curiously: "What kind of force field can your Law Surface project out?"

Tie Xie spoke respectfully: "This lowly subordinate's law surface casts out a force field that allows this lowly one to be like mist at night, and can flow and change shape anytime. Other than that, as long as this lowly one uses Flowing Night, my senses towards the vibration in the air becomes extremely sharp."

"Come and test it out." Tang Tian was extremely curious about it. Whether it was in Heaven's Road or Sin Domain, their battles were done through energy, and it was not as bizarre and fluctuating as in the Sin Domain.

Tie Xie's body flickered, his body became blurred, he started to dissipate and in the blink of the eye, he transformed into a

regiment of mist, after that, he transformed into some sort of liquid form.

Tang Tian's eyes grew wide, he became extremely excited, it was too fun.

Suddenly, a thin voice came into Tang Tian's ears: "Master, someone is watching us!"

Tang Tian was startled, the smile on his face instantly disappeared, he motioned towards Han Bing Ning and spoke softly: "Where?"

"Quite far." Tie Xie was somewhat excited, he finally had the chance to showcase himself, and he definitely wanted to do it well. I must let Master see my strength and value, and pull myself out of this manual worker position.

Tie Xie who was roused with fighting intent quickly found his goal.

"On a building at the southeast side, there are two of them." Tie Xie informed.

Tang Tian flew over to the window and through the cracks, he looked towards the Southeast direction. Truly, on the roof, there were two faint figures standing there.

"They are not the Lu Family people." Tie Xie's face changed, if

they were the Lu Family, he would feel that it was normal, Lu Ling Nan was not a person who would let the matter rest. Tie Xie's mist like figure quickly extended out in all directions.

In the blink of an eye, the thin mist formed a cauldron and floated in the air.

This was Tie Xie's own creation, a monitoring unique technique, [Relay Cauldron], and had used it to achieve many meritorious work.

He carefully aimed the cauldron's top at the direction, this allowed him to concentrate on the sound coming from the direction, and allows him to listen from far away. He slowly got rid of all the chaotic static, and the two men's voices on the building gradually became clear.

"They are the Qin Family people. They came to observe Master and watch you, they are not letting Master leave, and the ones to take action will be the Lu Family."

"Qin Family, huh?" Tang Tian's eyes flashed a look of seriousness, Seems like the Qin Family have already confirmed my identity.

Regarding this, he actually did not care at all. He challenged Ben Sen with the hopes of becoming stronger, grinding himself. He never retreated and other than moving forward, other than doing battles, he did not know how to improve.

The life and death battle brought him an immense growth, and the current Tang Tian was overflowing with confidence and fighting intent.

The battle with Ben Sen was just the drawing of curtains. In Tang Tian's plans, what came next were the consecutive strings of battles. He would use all the battles to save everyone out.

He had initially wanted to use a few days of preparations to absorb everything from the battle, but he never expected for the other parties to find their way up his door.

Then let's start with them.

Tang Tian was not fearful of them at all, and never thought to retreat. He was never truly satisfied with the number of battles, which were forever sudden and random, where he had no control over, but, the determination and willpower to fight, the courage and fearlessness, was the heavy ax that he held on tightly facing such battles.

The heavy ax in hand would slice his enemies apart.

"I will go get rid of them."

Without hesitation, Tang Tian's killing intent soared, he retrieved out the Ghost Face Mask and wore it.

"Let me help you." Han Bing Ning said without hesitation.

Tie Xie was shocked by the killing intent that suddenly soared out of the two of them, before he could even react, the two of them had disappeared. He was dumbstruck, Who exactly is the Infamous person here? Why do I feel that the two of them are even more ferocious than me.....

Wei Han and Mu Ze would have never expected for their conversation to be picked up by someone so far away. For the sake of preventing Tang Tian from escaping, the two of them had chose such a location. It was the highest building in the vicinity and could watch the entire Xue Residence.

The building was called the Plucking Clouds Building, which was built by the Qin Residence for the sake of observing the Xue Residence. On the surface, it had always looked as though the Qin Family was protecting the Xue Residence, but in fact they actually held another intent. The Qin Family had coveted the Xue Family's wealth for a long time, but it was just that they had a good relation with the previous generation of the Xue Family, and if they were to take over the Xue Family, it would be an ugly action.

But the Qin Family never got rid of the idea, The Xue Family's inability to attract strong martial artists was another underhand move of the Qin Family. The Qin Family was clear that as long as the Xue Family held onto the secret techniques of the Golden Steel Silkworms, they will never be lacking money. As long as the Xue Family recruits an expert, the situation would be less desirable for the Qin Family.

Thus the Plucking Clouds Building was built beside the Xue



Residence, causing the unhappiness of the Xue Family, but Zhong Zheng Yan Mei personally controlled the situation, therefore silencing the unhappiness.

The long night could not affect Mu Ze and Wei Han's physical strength, but it was extremely boring. Wei Han became restless and started to practise his drills, while Mu Ze sat by the window sipping and enjoying his tea.

The two of them were oblivious to the incoming danger.

Tang Tian brought Han Bing Ning and skirted between the houses quietly, they were like shadows, as he had unleashed the full potential of the Ping Family's Stealth Techniques. He pasted himself close to the walls and borrowing the shadows, they advanced forward.

Other than the spatial laws, the Ping Family Stealth Techniques had many other stealth movements, all of which were refined through many years. In truth, while he was using the stealth techniques, he rarely used spatial laws.

Because the moment Law Threads cut into the space, it would produce a light undulation which could easily startle the enemy.

Tang Tian was like a beast stalking its prey, patiently and slowly moving towards his enemy. The layout of the buildings gave him good cover. Although the Xue Residence was unable to stop the Qin Family from building the Plucking Clouds Building, they could do whatever they wanted inside their own land. For the sake of

blocking the ability to observe them from the Plucking Clouds Building, the Xue Family had built many high majestic walls, and the broad rims on the walls covered the paths inside the residence. They also built a pavilion with huge canopies to obstruct the line of sight, thus the Xue Residence did not have much empty spaces.

To Tang Tian, it was truly the best terrain.

Han Bing Ning retracted her sword aura and followed behind Tang Tian.

Tang Tian moved left and swatted right, borrowing the rims as a cover, he reached the end of the long passageway, which was the pavilion. The pavilion stood right in the center of a man made lake, and was the most spacious place in the residence.

Tang Tian pointed to a beam of the pavilion and spoke softly: “You hide here and wait for the ambush, I will make a roundabout to their backs.”

Han Bing Ning nodded, and subconsciously tightened her grip on the sword hilt.

Tang Tian nodded at her in encouragement, and like a shadow, he disappeared.

Although the Xue Family had declined, but after all, they used to be a bustling and rich family, and the structures inside the residence still showed their wealth and power of the past. Turning

and turning, Tang Tian felt himself going dizzy, lucky for him that the Plucking Flowers Building was too obvious that he could accurately find the right direction.

The scene before Tang Tian's eyes dazzled, after entering the inner residence, Tang Tian felt as if he had entered a palace.

He did not bother about it, as long as he found the right direction, he would be able to walk out, if there were no routes, there were windows.

Suddenly, a voice bellowed out from the front: "Who?"

Tang Tian was startled, before he could even reply, a light wall appeared in front of him, and right at that moment, a faint undulation came out from behind him. He immediately turned back to look, and there was another light wall behind him.

He was trapped.

A figure appeared at the other side of the light wall.

When Ming Zhu, who was filled with killing intent saw the mask behind the light wall, she was immediately stunned.

# Chapter 720 – Double Kill

---

Tang Tian never expected that he would have barged into Ming Zhu's residence.

“Kindly remove this, thanks.”

Tang Tian pointed at the light walls around him.

“Oh.” Ming Zhu subconsciously removed the light walls, before she regained her composure, the light walls were already gone, causing her face to distort. All of these light walls were customized from laws meant for restriction and used for warnings, and was left behind from the previous generations.

Without the protection of the light walls, she was practically helpless in front of Ghost Face Mask like a docile sheep. What did I just do?

Ming Zhu calmed down, but the unease filled her entire heart.

But what surprised her was that the gray figure suddenly swept past her, Ghost Face Mask did not even have the intention of doing anything to her.

Wait a minute....that direction, that's my chamber!

Ming Zhu's face immediately turned red, she secretly felt vexed,

How can Ghost Face Mask barge into a lady's chamber. She clenched her teeth and gathered her courage and followed in.

Tang Tian was like a gust of wind rushing in, but after that, he became bewildered.

The room was huge, but it was filled with shoes, clothes, and countless of unfamiliar female products, it was like a small warehouse, causing Tang Tian to become confused, He had to be extremely careful not to topple anything. Furthermore, there were piles and piles of clothes, shoes cabinets, wooden chests, causing the place to be a maze.

What direction is it to the Plucking Clouds Building?

Tang Tian was confused, everything that was in his vision were all sort of colored shoes and clothes, dazzling products lined up one after another, causing Tang Tian to lose his sense of direction.

The footsteps behind Tang Tian became his lifesaver.

Ming Zhu's face was so red to the extent that blood would seep out at any moment, no one had entered her room before, and she did not like others to clean her room, so it had remained messy. The Xue Family was rich, and she did not have any hobbies, so she would spend all her money on such products. It was a pity she had to take charge of the house, and could not dress casually, so her clothes were graceful and elegant, but her inner desire of all the beautiful things, had always been adored by her.

“It’s really messy here.”

Hearing Tang Tian’s words, Ming Zhu’s face became hot, she so badly wanted to dig a hole and crawl into it. Her chambers was actually judged like that, Ming Zhu became extremely ashamed.

But she was still surprised at how casual Ghost Face Mask was with her, as though they knew each other.

Wait a minute, why is Ghost Face Mask in the Xue Residence?

Ming Zhu was startled.

Tang Tian did not give her time to think: “Where is the Plucking Clouds Building?”

~Plucking Clouds Building? Ming Zhu was startled once again, she subconsciously pointed to the right: “That way.”

Before she had even reacted, Ghost Face Mask had already disappeared.

Ming Zhu smacked her own lips, ~What’s gotten into you today? Why are you so distracted? Why are you speaking without thinking? Are you too tired?~

Wait a minute, Plucking Clouds Building!

Ming Zhu's body turned rigid, her face changed. Plucking Clouds Building, belonged to the Qin Family! Ghost Face Mask wants to take action on them!

But why?

A cold intent surfaced in Ming Zhu's heart, the Xue Family had survived in the shadows of the Qin Family for so many years, and thus the immensity of Qin Family's strength had been deeply imprinted in her. She dared to disobey the Qin Family, but it was because the matter of the Xue Family being sold to the Lu Family was overboard. But she knew that, as long as this information were to land in the Qin Family, the Qin Family would immediately swallow the Xue Family up without hesitation.

Ghost Face Mask is sneaking into Plucking Clouds Building from the Xue Residence, if there are any losses in the Plucking Clouds Building, the Qin Family will use the battle as an excuse, and then the Xue Family.....

Ming Zhu shuddered, her face became as white as paper.

She bit her lips, but she screamed in her mind to calm down. Since when did Ghost Face Mask enter the Xue Residence? Why is he making a move on the Plucking Clouds Building? Suddenly, she thought about the casual speech that Ghost Face Mask had used with her as though they knew each other, she was shocked, Could it be....

Without saying a word, she rushed towards the warehouse.

Just as she ran out of the room, she heard an explosion, she turned her head back to look, the tall Plucking Clouds Building had been cut in half at the center, and falling towards the Xue Residence.

Shadows flew out, roars were exchanged, and all the blood in Ming Zhu's face had disappeared.

No one had noticed that Tang Tian had approached nearby, regardless if it was Wei Han or Mu Ze, they never expected Ghost Face Mask to initiate the attack. Even if Ghost Face Mask was able to defeat Ben Sen, but in their eyes, Ghost Face Mask who was alone and could not cause any huge reaction. The Qin Family had killed off many experts secretly, and the two of them had met before many different powerful martial artists, thus they did not place the Ghost Face Mask in their eyes.

Under the immense pressure of Qin Family, Ghost Face Mask could only struggle on bitterly, to initiate an attack on the Qin Family? That was too stupid!

As long as the person had the brains, he would never choose this path of suicide.

Sneaking his way to Plucking Clouds Building, Tang Tian quietly got closer. He had just broken through, and had his state of mind at the maximum. Even the most minute of actions would cause the overflowing Origin Force in his body to ripple.



Tang Tian who had entered his battle state had become extraordinarily cool.

Such coolness was not just for the enemy, but for himself. Despite the raging Origin Force in his body, his state of mind was so focused that his movements, his breathing and heart beat were not affected at all, every movement was performed fluidly without additional motions.

He was like an outstanding hunter, quietly pulling the prey into his own attacking radius.

Just as he moved, Wei Han was practising his blade, the blade light was like water, flowing endlessly. His blade technique was crafty, bizarre and filled with toxin. Like a venomous snake, every movement contained the most inconceivable method to kill. A faint black color coiled around the white fluid blade light, like a black mist lingering on.

Wei Han was a fighter with an explosive temperament, but once he trained in the blade, his personality would suddenly change and become extremely cold and strange.

Suddenly, he felt the surrounding air change.

The black mist on his blade light suddenly disappeared, the air in the space around him suddenly froze, Wei Han was shocked, he shouted: “Ene.....”

Bang!

A horrifying force exploded from beneath his feet.

He felt the ground tremble, and his body was suddenly prancing in the air, his heart jumped, the building was collapsing. The wooden beams beneath his foot suddenly shot towards him like rain.

Without thinking, Wei Han's figure flashed, he flew out.

He rushed out of the building, Wei Han could not see anything, but the senses in his mind was jumping on red alert, all the hairs on his body were standing straight. He immediately unleashed his blade light towards the front.

Ding ding ding!

Sparks were ignited, a few light blades seemed to be cut into two by something or someone.

A cold shiver travelled up Wei Han's spine, he could finally see ahead of him. In front of him, there were a few strands of Law Threads interweaving, sealing his front path.

Although all these law threads were extremely fine, but they were extremely sharp, and in the chaos, it was hard to detect.

If I had rushed forward, I would have been sliced into pieces right there and then.

The scariness of the opponent caused Wei Han to feel fear for the first time, the explosion beneath his feet contained a lot of force, but in that situation, the opponent was able to quietly lay out another killing technique, that showed how terrifying the opponent's methods were!

But in that pause, the shattered rocks behind him suddenly shot towards him like rain.

The light blade in Wei Han's hand moved, the shattered rocks and beams seemed to be stopped by an invisible hand before flying in the other direction. But in the next second, Wei Han's pupils became round, a multi-colored round ball appeared in front of him.

An unprecedented sense of danger enveloped him, he felt a deathly aura extremely close him, in that crucial juncture between living and dying, Wei Han let go of the silver blade in his hand without hesitation. Upon separating from the silver blade, it transformed into a black mist, the black mist churned and roared, transforming into a snake that raised its head up high and roared.

The multi-colored light ball and the black mist snake collided.

Wei Han did not care about the result, using everything he had, he pounced towards his left.

Mu Ze who had flown out of the building was like a swallow, the upper half of Plucking Clouds Building was leaning to one side, but countless of rocks and planks were pouring down onto him like rain.

Wei Han's furious roar sounded out behind him, causing Mu Ze to tremble. The chaos was most suitable for the enemy to launch his sneak attack, causing Mu Ze to be unable to get close, and had to first leave the chaotic field. Once I obtain my distance, wait for your punishment!

Mu Ze's face was green, his body lit up, and a bow appeared in his hand.

His gaze landed on the pavilion of the Xue Family, it was coincidentally the best place for him to unleash his attacks, and it was impossible to lay an ambush there, the only ambush that could happen was on the pavilion itself! Under the rush, Mu Ze pulled his bow, and a light arrow appeared on the bow string.

The light aura flashed.

Bang!

The pavilion is destroyed, no more ambush left!

Mu Ze relaxed, he increased his speed, and he appeared above the man made lake.

Now, it's time to counterattack.

Mu Ze turned and faced the Plucking Clouds Building, coincidentally seeing Wei Han rushing out without his silver blade. Mu Ze's heart jumped, he took a deep breath, and pulled on his bow once again!

Just at that moment, a change occurred.

The man made lake that was extremely calm, suddenly exploded without any warning.

Countless ice crystals flew out of the lake, like a storm of crystals, they shot towards Mu Ze.

There's someone in the water!

Mu Ze's face changed, the whistling of the crystals had shaken his spirit. What made him feel even more fearful was that all the ice crystals contained faint sword concepts, they were practically countless ice swords.

Damn it!

Mu Ze bent his waist, like a boneless snake, he fiercely flew downwards, and released the bowstring in his hand.

The light arrow flashed, and shot into the ice crystals rain of

swords.

Bang!

Countless of the ice crystal swords exploded into fine powder, forming a mist.

Before Mu Ze could heave a sigh of relief, an extreme cold aura broke through the mist.

The sub zero sharp sword concept, aimed straight for the space between Mu Ze's eyebrows, causing his face to change again.

At this moment, because he had already moved, the power of the physique in him had a momentary pause.

The cold aura arrived.

He had no choice but to use his bow to cover his front, ding, the extremely cold sword concept pierced into the bow's body.

Bang!

The bow shattered into pieces like an ice statue being destroyed, Mu Ze spat out blood, but he instantly retreated.

A sharp whistle, that caused his skin to go numb, came from

behind him, causing Mu Ze to become alarmed.

Endless ice crystal swords suddenly flew out from the water behind him, like rain, they stabbed into his back.

Mu Ze's body trembled like a sieve, the expression on his face became stiff, the flesh on his body was visibly turning into ice, the ice crystal swords continued to shoot, bang, the ice statue shattered.

In the air, Tang Tian appeared behind Wei Han like a ghost.

He gently moved his fingers, and an indistinguishable spatial law thread coiled around Wei Han's neck.

Wei Han's pupils expanded, before he could even plead for his life, his head flew into the air.

# Chapter 721 – The Fierce Battle on the Street

---

Xie Tie had already made preparations, as long as the situation was not right, he would run. He had followed the Lu Family with hopes of wanting to live better, as a B grade Infamous Man, many people wanted him dead, but he had always lived very well.

He could freely retire in any city, as he was most proficient of hiding in the darkness.

He could only observe Ghost Face Mask's fight with Ben Sen from afar, but the power of [Gale] had greatly shocked him. And he felt that it was even more inconceivable when Ghost Face Mask actually won. Is that fist technique truly that powerful? When Tang Tian initially used [Godfist], Tie Xie immediately sensed the approaching danger from it, thus he chose to surrender without hesitation.

The Origin Force that Ghost Face Mask was overflowing with completely made him submit, with such vigorous Origin Force, it was enough for him to run amuck anywhere.

But he still did not see any hope for Ghost Face Mask against Mu Ze and Wei Han. Although he had chosen to rely on the Lu Family, he had studied on the various powerhouses of the cities, and knew of all of them. The Four Great Generals of the Qin Family held immense strength, and countless people had died under them. Qin Zhen himself had rarely appeared for so many years, because it was not needed at all.



Ignoring the fact that Ghost Face Mask beat Ben Sen, if it was a real fight, Ghost Face Mask would most probably be killed instead. Not observing the actual fight in the Gale, Tie Xie himself made his own conservative prediction.

Against Wei Han and Mu Ze's collaboration, Black Ben Sen would not be able to do anything. The Four Great Generals of the Qin Family were all experts, all roped in through Qin Zhen's countless blood, sweat and tears. Although the four were not from the family, Qin Zhen viewed them very importantly, and thus the Four of them held revered positions in the Qin Family in which even the family of the Qin Family had to greet respectfully.

But the result of the battle almost caused Tie Xie's eyes to drop out.

The time it took for the Plucking Clouds Building to fall and for the two to be killed was just the time needed to blink his eye. Especially Han Bing Ning, the ice beauty that did not look dangerous at all, actually knew how to ambush a person inside the man made lake.

Terrifying!

Tie Xie stopped running, his expression has now extremely confused. For some reason, he had a premonition that Ghost Face Mask was far stronger than he thought, and the Null Division would most probably be even stronger than what everyone thought.

Ming Zhu's hands were cold as she looked at the messy Xue Residence blankly.

Everyone in the Xue Family were shaken, all of them ran out, and when they saw the horrifying scene, many of the ladies screamed out loud, causing the Xue Residence to grow further in chaos. The few who were more knowledgeable like Xiao Yao, Xue Yan etc, all had blank and pale faces. It was the Plucking Clouds Building, the Qin Family's Plucking Clouds Building.

“What are you all being so noisy for! I am not dead yet!”

The old granny walked out with a servant supporting her, upon seeing the chaos, she bellowed.

The old granny still wielded power, upon her shout, all the people inside the residence stopped screaming, and only the fear remained on their faces.

“Ming Zhu, what's going on?” Old Granny Xue asked.

Ming Zhu then regained her senses, with a pale face, she explained everything she knew.

Old Granny Xue instructed calmly: “Go and check out the warehouse.”

After a while, a servant reported back: “Tang Tian is not here!”

Even when the conjecture in her mind was proven right, Ming Zhu's face was still filled with disbelief, and could not speak for a long time. The other ladies looked at each other, their faces overwhelmed with shock, no one would have thought that, all the disturbance of Ghost Face Mask, was actually the Tang Tian that they all despised on, the one who slept all day inside their own home.

After that, the place became silent.

Ming Zhu was confused, but she finally understood why Ghost Face Mask spoke so casually to her. Tang Tian, was actually the real Ghost Face Mask!

Old Granny Xue coughed lightly and broke the silence.

“This is a good thing.”

Her words were said very slowly, but it was unhesitating, causing Ming Zhu and the rest to raise their heads in confusion. To them, it was the destruction of the Xue Family, Qin Family that never had the reason or excuse finally had one now, and would take action without hesitation.

“During this period of time, you have visited many families. But what happened? Is anyone willing to lend a hand?”

The Old Granny's gaze swept across everybody, causing them to

lower their heads in silence.

“No. That’s not strange, the Qin Family’s influence on Purple Cuckoo City is too big, no one dares to openly fight with the Qin Family. But now there is one, so isn’t it a good thing?”

“Madam, are you talking about Ghost Face Mask?” Ming Zhu asked.

“That’s right.” The old granny said: “He killed Two Great Generals of the Qin Family, there is no way to alleviate the tension with the Qin Family anymore, if we can get his assistance, we will be much safer too. I know that all of you are worried about going into conflict with Qin Family, but now, it’s not that we don’t want to, but the Qin Family will definitely make a move on us, so stop wishing for the best.”

“But Ghost Face Mask is but one person....” Xue Yan spoke softly.

“One person?” The old lady shook her head: “He is not alone. Don’t forget, there is the Null Division behind him. Although his subordinates are not here, but I heard that they are extremely loyal to him, as long as some back to him, his strength will grow. At this moment when he is under difficulty, we must help him, which is also helping ourselves. All of you go and ask around, find our close contacts, and look for those who has the Null Division Prisoners. Buy them all! 10 times the price! If 10 times is not enough, a 100 times! This is not the time to be worried about money, give it all out, it is better than landing in the hands of the Qin or Lu Family.”

Everyone was roused.

Xiao Yao suddenly asked: “Then....where is Tang Tian?”

Everyone’s expression changed again.

The old granny spoke: “Immediately send people to find him.”

\*\*\*\*\*

In a small alley not far from the Xue Residence, Tang Tian asked: “Are you sure it’s real?”

“This subordinate will never lie.” Ping Xiao Shan immediately replied: “Just now, this subordinate was about to report back to Master. Suddenly, a lady blocked my path, saying she is from the Roland Family, they are willing to gift the Null Division in their hands to you. It is not convenient for them to appear, and require Master to take them by yourself.”

“The Roland Family?” Tang Tian scoffed.

“Yes, this location is Roland Family’s mine.” Ping Xiao Shan said respectfully.

He was greatly shaken, he had coincidentally witnessed the battle at Plucking Clouds Building, the ferocity that his Master had displayed was too horrifying. Before Ben Sen revealed his strength,

the name of the Four Great Generals of the Qin Family said that they were much stronger than Ben Sen. Bewitching Blade Wei Han, Chasing Light Mu Ze. Many people had fallen under their hands, but they were killed at Plucking Clouds Building. No wonder the Roland Family were willing to throw out the symbol of peace.

What made him even more excited was that Master's last technique was actually the Law Thread of the Ping Family's Stealth Techniques!

The streets were in chaos, the huge commotion of Plucking Clouds Building was most likely known by the Qin Family. Ping Xiao Shan knew that time was of the essence, the huge battle would have completely infuriated the Qin Family, and there was no turning back for both parties. The Qin Family would use everything they have to fight him.

“Do you know to go there?” Tang Tian asked.

“Yes.” Ping Xiao Shan licked his lips. No matter how stupid a person was, they knew that the battle had already drawn the curtains for the chaos in Purple Cuckoo City. To be able to have a hand in such a huge matter, he realised that he was anxious and excited, but not afraid.

“Lead the way.” Tang Tian's flashed a look of excitement, Han Bing Ning followed him without hesitation.

“I want to go too!” Tie Xie spoke up, he jumped down from the

wall of the alley.

Tang Tian looked at Tie Xie with surprise.

Tie Xie laughed bitterly: “If I stay in the warehouse, I will just be killed by the Qin Family, it’s safer for me to stay with Master.”

“Let’s go!” Tang Tian nodded, and did not ask further.

Ping Xiao Shan was like a snake, he moved through Purple Cuckoo City extremely quickly and with obvious familiarity, leading everyone through streets and alleys. But very quickly, Ping Xiao Shan noticed something, and his face changed: “Master, they sealed the street ahead.”

“We will break through it!” Tang Tian stood at the front without hesitation: “Tell me where.”

Ping Xiao Shan pointed at the entrance of an alley: “Once you exit this alley, it will be the main street, as long as we go through the main street, we will rush out to the city gates, and as long as we are out, we will be safe. But don’t fly into the air, the city gates has traps meant to deal with people flying.”

“Follow me tightly.”

Tang Tian ordered without turning back, he took a large step and walked out of the alley.

The line of them had just walked out when they heard a shout: “Stop! Check them!”

When Tang Tian turned his face and revealed the green and black Ghost Face Mask, the elites of the Qin Family immediately had a change of expression, and immediately blew on a whistle. The sharp whistle sound sounded out far and wide. All of the Qin Family elites from all around started to rush over.

Tang Tian took a deep breath, exerting force from both his legs, he shot forward like a bullet, and rushed into the group of people.

Bang!

Like a bullet, he smashed into the group, and because of his immense strength, many figures flew up into the sky.

Tang Tian extended both his arms, with his fingers opened up, 10 sharp spatial law threads formed a Death Net. Wherever it passed through, blood and flesh would fly.

But the elites of Qin Family were all powerful martial artists themselves, far stronger than any ordinary martial artists. Blades, Swords, Spears and Pitchforks all shot forward from all angles, the undulations of various laws expanded out. It was a shocking scene.

Clang Clang Clang!



Consecutive bursts of power coming from the Law threads in his hands caused Tang Tian's fingers to turn numb, and the Law Threads were broken.

It was a big sized sturdy man holding a pitchfork, an earth yellow light aura lit up around his entire body, which extended out from the ground. Tang Tian immediately understood, the opponent's law was most probably linked to the earth, thus the immense strength.

But, when comparing strength, when was Tang Tian ever weaker than others?

Tang Tian's expression turned cold, the fight was in chaos, the various laws releasing undulations caused the place to be in disorder, thus the most suitable move was to use the Ping Family's Stealth Technique. His body flickered, and appeared by the side of the sturdy man.

Without any variations in his right fist, he punched out.

Seeing that, the sturdy man did not bother dodging, he bellowed out, gathering all the strength in his body and transmitting it into his bronze pitchfork, the light aura exploded out, causing an aura of a mountain to arise!

The fist and bronze pitchfork clashed head on.

Boom!

The low resounding sound came out, causing the sturdy man's entire body to shake, and the top half of the pitchfork was completely bent.

The robust man was like a statue, he remained unmoved until all of a sudden, blood started to seep out from his skin. The sturdy man fell.

The elites were horrified, without any hesitation, Tang Tian rushed forward again, with Han Bing Ning and Tie Xie protecting his sides, no one could stop them.

At that moment, more elites gathered at the wall above them, and a bone chilling order came out.

“Release the arrows!”

Tang Tian raised his head, the ghost face mask looking extremely sinister with the bloodshot eyes, he looked at them with soaring killing intent.

# Chapter 722 – Qin Zi Zhen

---

Above the city gates on the broad city walls, there were many archers.

The Qin Family Treasured Bows, this name shook the entire Sin Domain.

The Qin Family specialized in bow techniques, and there were many martial artists that trained in it, the most outstanding one being Mu Ze, but very few people knew that there was one more person whose bow techniques were not the least bit inferior to Mu Ze, and that was Qin Zi Zhen. Qin Zi Zhen had a tall build, he had a cold expression and his gaze was sharp. He kept a low profile, and did not enjoy revealing himself, thus more people knew of Qin Zi Shan and not him.

Other than his extraordinary strength, Qin Zi Zhen had spent a great deal of time grooming his bow.

He had trained in different bow techniques using this same bow, and through the grinding, they had formed an effective rapport. Qin Zhen praised Qin Zi Zhen more than once, and gave him authority and command over the Archer Unit. Qin Zi Zhen did not disappoint Qin Zhen's anticipation in him, although the army of the Sin Domain had already declined, but amongst the book collection in the Qin Family, there were still contents they could study and research, causing the Archer Unit to be extremely strong.

The book collection in the Qin Family was from the first generation of the Qin Family who entered the Sin Domain, recording and writing everything they could. The majority of them were not suitable to be used in Sin Domain, but they still kept it for their future generations as references, and were worth a lot of money.

The Qin Family Archer Unit were formidable and had earned many achievements.

The other families in Purple Cuckoo City who had restraining fear towards the Qin Family was towards the dauntless Qin Zhen and the Archer Unit.

Qin Zi Zhen had received the orders to immediately seal the city gates. He was filled with shock as he knew of Uncle Mu and Uncle Wei's strength, for Ghost Face Mask to actually kill the two of them, it meant that Ghost Face Mask was stronger than everyone had expected.

But at the same time, Qin Zi Zhen was filled with anger, his archery skills were received by Mu Ze daily, as Qin Zhen did not have time to guide him, thus he and Mu Ze had a very close relationship. They were not only uncle and nephew but Teacher and disciple.

Hearing that Uncle Mu was dead, Qin Zi Zhen had decided to take revenge,.

He never expected for the opportunity to arise so quickly.

You dare to rush up the city gates, truly not knowing what is death.

Qin Zi Zhen sneered coldly, his archer unit elites were already in position. The archers were not using bows that would appear in the market, but were the Qin Family Tyrannical Monarch Bows. The Qin Family produced Tyrannical Monarch Bloodwood, which took extremely long to grow, were as sturdy as steel with trunks flushed blood red. With black flaming lines they were the best materials to make bows. But its production rate was extremely low, and the Qin Family considered them as treasures as well.

The Bowstrings were made of Golden Steel Threads, but they were not ordinary Golden Steel Threads. Amongst the Golden Steel Threads produced by the Xue Family there would occasionally be completely black threads hailed as the Golden Steel Black Threads. These Black Threads were much stronger and sturdier as compared to ordinary Golden Steel Threads, and as the production of it was extremely low, the majority of it was given to the Qin Family.

Thus, manufacturing the Tyrannical Monarch Bow with the Tyrannical Monarch Bloodwood as the bow body and the Golden Steel Black Threads as the bowstring was extremely expensive, but without hesitation, Qin Zhen gave all of these treasured weapons to equip the Archer Unit, showing the high hopes he had placed in them.

Qin Zi Zhen's raised his head and portrayed a stance, his eyes staring intently at the incoming Ghost Face Mask who was rushing through the crowd, his eyes revealing hatred.

Each and every elite of the Archer Unit carefully opened their arrow box, and reached into the deepest layer and retrieved out a metal arrow carved with intricate designs. These arrow were the size of fingertips, the body covered with beautiful engravings that layered upon each other, there were no feathers, the arrowtip revealed an extremely cold glare, and a faintly discernible tyrannical aura coming from the arrow.

It was the extremely precious Law Cleaving Arrow.

Every arrow contained law imprints, which were formed from the archers imbuing their law aura and sealing it into the arrow every single day, and with sufficient time, it would form the law imprint inside the arrow. Law Cleaving Arrows were the archer's life saving arrows, it was a difficult task to leave behind an imprint of their law inside an arrow, as it usually required the patience to do it for one full year. Since it was difficult to form a Law Cleaving Arrow, the archers would not use them recklessly.

As the law imprints were sealed personally by the archers, the arrow and archer complemented each other well, thus the might of the arrow was amplified.

Qin Zi Zhen did not even want to probe, initiating everyone to use their Law Cleaving Arrows. It showed the restraining fear he had on Ghost Face Mask, he did not want to leave it to chance, a person that could kill both Mu Ze and Wei Han, how could he ever leave it to chance?

Qin Zi Zhen was fixated completely on Ghost Face Mask, the treasured bow in his hand was slowly pulled, and a dazzling silver arrow placed on the bowstring. At both his sides, the Archer Unit elites all did the same action.

The Tyrannical Monarch Bow and Law Cleaving Arrows were pulled slowly.

Qin Zi Zhen's face remained extremely cold, the gentleness in his eyes gradually dissipated. The bow was pulled into a full circle, he stood as still as a statue and did not move an inch. The Elites by his sides all had the exact same posture as him.

With the bowstring right at his mouth, he gently spoke out.

“Release the arrows!”

The bow strings twanged like thunder.

Upon leaving the bowstring, the arrows exploded with light auras which permeated out from their bodies. The dazzling light aura became more glaring, and the entire arrow was enveloped by the light aura, like a shooting star that moved as fast as lightning, it screeched through the air.

Tang Tian had already sensed the danger at the first second, the moment the other party had locked onto him. But he did not stop, but instead became even more berserk. He unleashed his offense, causing the space around him to become blank white.

10 arrow auras shot down at Tang Tian like rain.

Tang Tian's eyes became enlarged, he could sense the destructive aura from the arrows. The light of arrows shot down from all directions, sealing any space for them to dodge. Under the intense danger, it made him resemble a cat hissing in fright, all of his hairs standing up straight. He subconsciously wanted to break the space to evade, but.....

He thought about Han Bing Ning, Tie Xie, and Ping Xiao Shan who were behind him.

They were definitely be unable to defend against the terrifying arrows!

Tie Xie's face turned gray, he closed his eyes in desperation, he had never thought that the Qin Family would be so powerful, to the point of making others feel despair.

Damn it, I bet on the wrong side....

Just at that moment, a bellow came out.

Tang Tian suddenly stepped forward with his left leg with immense power, causing his footprint to be embedded deep into the ground, countless of cracks that resemble spiderwebs expanded out all around his leg. The Primordial Fire Origin from within Tang Tian's body spewed out as though a breeze had caused it to



expand, and it unexpectedly rose by a few meters.

Pulling his fist back, the young man's Godfist appeared once more, and the frozen space around him started to expand outwards.

After fighting with Ben Sen, Tang Tian had realised that the frozen space when he activated the Godfist could be used as a form of defensive perimeter.

Since I cannot escape, I can only use this, and help everyone block the rain of arrows!

The more Laws Godfist pulled, the larger the space that was frozen, and the stronger its defensive capability.

Tang Tian had sensed a powerful danger coming from the archers on the wall.

Under the stimulation of fighting to the death, Tang Tian gave it his all, because he dared not do otherwise. He frantically urged all the Primordial Fire Origin from within his body, the surging and churning Fire Origin flooded Tang Tian's state of mind, causing him to tremble, and almost lose control of the fanatical current. He forced himself to calm down, the originally excited sea of Primordial Fire Origin inside his body had been aroused so greatly, instantly becoming berserk, causing Tang Tian to feel as if his body was about to explode.

He compelled himself to discard the fear and distracting thoughts in his mind, countless fist techniques variation marks started to flash past his mind like fleeting clouds. It was as though with a thought, the thoughts would keep on transforming, and the countless variation marks would vanish. Normally, Tang Tian never dared to try using too many variation marks, because he realised that the more variation marks he used, the higher the consumption of the Primordial Fire Origin in his body.

But this time, the Primordial Fire Origin in his body was too overwhelming, it was like a raging tide attacking Tang Tian's state of mind.

Tang Tian immediately sensed that something was wrong, if the Primordial Fire origin were to lose control, then he would not even need to die under the light arrows, but he would be disintegrated by his own power. All of the variations that he never dared to think about, came into Tang Tian's mind.

Countless law threads started to streak across the sky, forming different colored streaks of lights, entering Tang Tian's fist, causing the light around Tang Tian's right fist to become bigger and bigger.

The frozen space crazily spread further outwards.

In the blink of an eye, the light arrows were about to collide with the expanding frozen space.

The moment they collided, the light arrows would explode, ping,

it was like ice shattering, jolting Tang Tian's body.

Ping ping ping!

The condensed collision sounds came out, causing Tang Tian's body to tremble like a sieve, but his fist stance still maintained extremely stable. It was not the first time Tang Tian had encountered such a situation, he knew that his body would not sustain anything from any sorts of attacks. But once he allowed his fist stance to lose control, the surging Primordial Fire origin and the Law Threads that were being pulled in would shatter his body instantly.

Every light arrow that exploded upon colliding with the frozen space would reveal a light aura that entered the frozen space.

These are Law imprints!

When the law imprints entered the frozen space, they would become like fish entering water, and be extremely nimble and agile.

Tang Tian realised that he was unable to pull in those law imprints. The law imprints that were swimming like water were different from the Law threads in the surrounding space, they were strengthened daily by the archers, slowly formed layer by layer, and had almost the same consciousness as the archer, thus were unable to be absorbed.

Suddenly, a dark blue law imprint shot into Tang Tian's body like a spirit wanting to possess him.

It was Qin Zi Zhen's law imprint!

Tang Tian's entire body shook, a numb sensation spreaded all over, and what caused Tang Tian's face to change was that the Primordial Fire Origin in his body was not able to suppress the bizarre law imprint. It was like a dark blue barracuda, fighting and boring itself further into Tang Tian's body.

Damn it!

Tang Tian's face became shocked, the law imprint was drilling to his heart!

But right at that moment, Tang Tian's fist was already filled with law threads to a maximum, if he did not release it, Tang Tian felt that it would explode on his hand.

Without caring about anything else, Tang Tian roared and released his punch!

The light regiment that was the size of a millstone was multi-colored and extremely dazzling, but did not release even a ripple in the air, bringing forth a spectacular tail of light, it flew towards the city gates.

Qin Zi Zhen who was on the city wall roared in fright:

“Scatter....”

Before he could even finish his sentence, the city gates beneath his feet swayed, an absolute and terrifying power that seemed to be able to topple mountains exploded beneath his feet, Qin Zi Zhen groaned out in pain, his mouth was bloodied. Before he could react, his eyes turned dark, and he flew away.

Bang bang bang!

Stones and debris flew everywhere, each debris contained an astonishing amount of power, every single person who were struck by the debris would have countless cavities in their bodies. Countless blood spurted out at the same time, and cries and wails filled the ears.

The majestic city gates had disappeared, and what remained was a hole that was over 60m wide.

“Let’s go!”

Tang Tian picked up Ping Xiao Shan who was completely dumbfounded, he roared out and immediately rushed out.

Han Bing Ning and Tie Xie awoke from their daydream and immediately followed him.

## Chapter 723 – Movements From All Sides

---

“Now you know that you did not bet on the wrong side.....” Victor watched the hoorah at the distant city gates, his blood red shirt contrasted with his pale face.

Roland Su was also out of focus, but her face was covered with a veil, and her expression was not clear.

The day’s event had greatly shaken her, firstly, she had watched how Ghost Face Mask and Han Bing Ning defeated Wei Han and Mu Ze, and then saw how Ghost Face Mask destroyed the city gates with one punch. She finally understood why Victor would place so much hope on him, the powerful momentum of his was too terrifying.

Even by observing from a distance, she was still greatly shaken.

The Sin Domain was filled with experts, but as time flowed, their bravery became weaker and weaker, which was clearly proven in the fight, there were already very few people who would use such brave techniques and risk their lives to fight, but instead, crafty techniques and tricks had become more in trend.

When she saw that Ghost Face Mask was unyielding and unstoppable, fearlessly rushing in head on, it made her blood boil. But when she saw Qin Zi Zhen’s Archer unit releasing their Law Cleaving Arrows, Victor and Roland Su’s faces changed. They knew of the power of the Law Cleaving Arrows and the might of the Archer Unit, how terrifying they were, and no one had ever

survived from their arrows.

But right in front of their eyes, not only did Tang Tian not retreat, he even took a step forward!

At that time, Roland Su's mind was already in a state of confusion, an unspeakable bitterness, like a bloody stench mixed with a burning smell, suddenly pervaded out. Victor became even more excited, the fighting intent in him had been aroused.

Roland Su did not joke with Victor anymore, the young and stern figure that commanded the Archer Unit was one who was a pain in the stomach for everyone else, like a boulder embedded in them. Facing him and the archer unit, she would have retreated, dodged, or escaped.

But, Ghost Face Mask did neither of those things.

He continued to advance.

“Actually, he could have dodged it.” Roland Su suddenly said, she did not even understand why she said that, Maybe That's what I would do?

Victor was stunned, he remained silent for a moment, then spoke with melancholy: “When I was rushing back, my family had already formed an agreement with the Qin Family, in which I was helpless to stop it. I was furious, and started to fight with Qin Zhen. But when I lost, Qin Zhen did not kill me, he believed that I

would not dare do anything reckless, as he saw that I was doing it with the family at heart. I was unhappy, I felt that I needed to do something, so before the Family had sent the prisoners away, I told the prisoners that Ghost Face mask was still alive. Did you know what I saw? I saw crazy burning flames in every single one of their eyes. Every single one. That was when I know, they are definitely willing to die for him.”

Roland Su listened on quietly.

“At that time, I was very happy, because when these prisoners were sent to the Qin Family, the news of Ghost Face mask being alive would spread to the other prisoners, making them even more patient, more disobedient, and that will successfully hinder the Qin Family’s speed at absorbing all of them. At that time, the majority of the reason for doing so was to make myself happy. I had already thought, at that time, that no one can stop Qin Zhen, no one will be able to stop the Qin Family.”

Victor’s voice became even more gloomy, and then strange.

“But after that, the light aura that blossomed in the eyes of the prisoners after hearing the news appeared again. Qin Zhen is sufficiently powerful, but I have never seen his subordinates having those burning flames in their eyes. It was something I had never seen in the Sin Domain before. I was thinking, Why? After thinking for a long time, I still did not understand it, but I got to know something. Since there are so many traits in him that are not present in our Sin Domain people, who knows, this person, is able to do some things that we are unable to?”



Roland Su looked at Victor in shock, she had never expected Victor to harbor such thoughts.

Victor looked at the broken city gates, and the figures that had long disappeared, and suddenly laughed: “I was just thinking about it, at such a time, for someone to still be willing to protect his own companions, regardless of who it is, the people following him will never worry about being forsaken or thrown away by him. No wonder his subordinates are all loyal towards him till death. To us, this is a good thing. Don’t you think that the Sin Domain needs such an unintelligent hero?”

“Hero?” Roland Su frowned, she did not like the word.

Victor laughed, but did not explain further.

“Why isn’t Qin Zhen out yet?” Roland Su suddenly frowned and asked.

Victor then spoke: “He went over to the Galloping Horse City, the alliance between Qin Family and the Lu Family this time isn’t normal.”

Roland Su wasn’t as crafty and spot on as Victor, but after being in the seat of the Matriarch for so long, she still had some foresight.

“Is the Xue Family truly worth 200 of the Null Division Prisoners?” Victor scoffed: “For the Lu Family to actually be willing to exchange 200 Null Division prisoners for the Xue Family,

if this isn't strange, then it's strange.”

Roland Su knew Victor well, and did not beat about the bush with him, and asked directly: “Why do you think it is a problem?”

“I don't know.” Victor sighed:” Who knows, maybe the Xue Family has some secret none of us knows about.”

“You're a drunkard.” Roland Su snorted, but upon saying that, she felt uncomfortable. It was too intimate.

Victor rubbed his own nose and laughed bitterly: “It's not like you don't know me, I have no say in my family. I have not cared much about the family matters too, so how will I know such secrets. But even some times, whenever I go out drinking, I will hear a few interesting pieces of news.”

Roland Su glanced at Victor, but did not show sign of interest.

Victor who initially wanted to let the climax reach its peak spoke with embarrassment: “In truth it is nothing much, but it is said that there is a great secret regarding the Golden Steel Silkworms of the Xue Family. This secret might possibly be directly linked the the Xue Family's inheritance, but who would have thought that the secret would be lost, and because the Xue Family is missing the most important part, they are slowly declining.”

“A bunch of rumors.” Roland Su snorted.

No one would doubt about the Xue Family having a secret regarding the Golden Steel Silkworms, otherwise, why were they the only one with such a product? But to say that the Golden Steel Silkworms were linked to their inheritance, Roland Su did not believe that at all.

“You might say that, but I do believe in it slightly.” Victor spoke out: “Don’t forget, The Xue Family used to have many experts. And furthermore, at that time, the Xue Residence isn’t like how it is today, only women. At that time, the Xue Residence flourished with both men and women alike, that is why I believe in it.”

“Don’t tell me, you think that the Lu Family knows of this secret?” Roland Su scoffed, although Victor was many a times not reliable, but he was extremely sharp. For him to say that, he most likely 90% certain.

“That is why I am also curious. Is the Lu Family lacking in inheritance? Even when the Xue Family was in its prime, it isn’t comparable to the current Lu Family. Why would the Lu Family be interested in Xue Family’s inheritance? Just for it, they are willing to hand over 200 Null Division prisoners?” Victor’s mouth twitched, his face filled with disdain.

“Then what do you want to do?” Roland Su asked.

“Doesn’t Ghost Face Mask come into play here?” Victor said: “At this time, they will definitely draw a line with Ghost Face Mask, and say that he is an outsider. But now, the Xue Family is left at a corner with no road to go, at this time, if they were to let go of Ghost Face Mask’s backing, then they will truly be stupid. I am

truly excited, we already have such a powerful Ghost Face Mask, adding another 50 or 60 of his subordinates, how strong will he become? Aren't you excited?"

"You've long thought about all of this?" Roland Su asked.

Victor was surprised, he rubbed his nose again: "So you always thought so highly of me, I am not as powerful as you think I am, I am just taking advantage of the situation."

"You best not have any intentions on the Roland Family, if not I will kill you." Roland Su said coldly.

Victor laughed bitterly: "Hey hey hey, I didn't do anything to you...."

\*\*\*\*\*

At another corner of the city.

"Victor is also powerful, upon suffering from Qin Zhen, he immediately stabbed right back at him, Qin Zhen is definitely regretting now on not killing him the last time."

Xu Ye carried on leisurely: "Victor is best at seeing opportunities, for him to actually think of using Roland Su's men. Roland Su is also very decisive, to place her bets without hesitation. Rumors were that the two of them had a relationship when they were young, now that I see it, it is most likely true."

Xu An Zhong did not care about it, he was still reminiscing about the process whereby Han Bing Ning killed Mu Ze.

Han Bing Ning's improvements had surprised him, and it was obvious that she was not skilled in sneak attack, but when she did so to kill Mu Ze, it was a true masterpiece.

Xu Ye looked at Xu An Zhong: "That Han Bing Ning is loyal towards Ghost Face Mask, you won't have a chance."

"I only want to be a disciple." Xu An Zhong raised his head and replied.

Xu Ye laughed out loud and changed the topic: "What about Ghost Face Mask's Fist?"

Xu An Zhong did not say anything. Only when he saw the fist did he understand how Ben Sen was defeated. He thought back about the fist, if he were to be placed in Qin Zi Zhen's position, to suddenly realise that he was unable to block the fist, under that panic, he could only wait to be reincarnated.

"Yes." Xu Ye's smile disappeared: "Who would have thought that someone would actually be able to use such an unfathomable fist technique. His enlightenment on the Fist Dao has reached a great depth. He does not require any enlightenment on laws, the variations accumulated in his fist will naturally absorb the law Threads around him, all of them would be inclined towards his fist, that amount of variations accumulated in his fist that cannot

be seen by anyone else, that is truly ignoring the exterior beauty.”

“I have no guarantee of beating it.”

This phrase seemed to be spoken out with all the strength he could muster. But after saying it, Xu An Zhong felt more relaxed, the terrifying pressure had disappeared.

“Congratulations, An Zhong.” Xu Ye’s eyes lit up with a strange light, he trained in the Life and Death Laws, and was extremely acute to the differences in a human body. When Xu An Zhong said those words, not only did the vitality in his body lessen, but it became extremely calm, and become even slightly stronger.

Xu An Zhong could clearly feel the break through in his state of mind, but did not reveal any joy, maintaining his calm: “Although I have no chance of beating his punch, but I still desire a battle with him.”

“The opportunity will come.” Xu Ye laughed: “But, Qin Zi Zhen’s arrow is not easily subdued. Relax, there is a show to watch.”

# Chapter 724 – Reporting! Reporting! Reporting!

---

Ah Mo Li had sensed that the atmosphere in the barracks was extremely strange, there were fewer guards, and it was extremely relaxed.

“Hey, Old Nie, there seems to be a situation.”

Nie Qiu felt rather upset, Why are you speaking so loudly, are you afraid that no one can hear you?

“Yes, there seems to be a situation.” Nie Qiu replied, to such a stubborn person, if you did not answer his question, he would forever pester you until you reply. The crucial point was that this man was a senior, one from the same generation as the Master, one who was by the Master’s side even before the Master had gained recognition. This was someone that Nie Qiu could not offend.

After experiencing it for a few times, Nie Qiu tactfully responded to him. In addition, with the training throughout the road, everyone became more familiar with one another, Nie Qiu had a favourable opinion towards the bullish man, he was a straightforward, honest and passionate man, other than being slightly dumb, he was not malicious at all.

He laughed bitterly in his mind, And you are still thinking about achieving your goals, this is the perfect example of being sent out to die upon graduation, becoming a prisoner instead.

The daily manual labor had tired him out, and what made him feel worse was that the True power in his body was already dispersed, and not one drip was left. He was like a truly handicapped person, unable to raise his hands, unable to move his shoulders. If not for Ah Mo Li and the rest sharing his work, he did not know how much of the whipping he would have had to endure everyday.

There was a way out, which was to willingly sign a contract to serve the master of the mines by selling themselves, excusing them of manual labor, and even obtaining benefits.

No one signed it, Ah Mo Li and the rest snorted at the contract, they all believed in Tang Tian, and did not have much emotions towards being a prisoner. What kind of problem is this, Crazy Tang has met with even more desperate struggles and passed through them. The Null Division was made up of mostly Lupus people, they were all born in poverty, with sturdy and strong characters, such manual work was nothing in their eyes.

To die for the young man who had pulled them out from the hell that was barren and lifeless, bestowed them with dignity and honor was every Lupus person's greatest pride. This emotion was something no one else could understand.

They were uncommunicative, but they never betrayed their own beliefs.

But Nie Qiu did not have faith, for he believed that he had the



grounds to prove that their way of thinking was truly laughable. He could instantly point out more than fifty talented and powerful overlords that harbored high aims but died due to it. Against the world, no matter how strong and powerful one person was, he was insignificant.

But he did not voice it out, for he was an intelligent person, saying such a thing would provoke everyone else, and no one wanted to hear such words, no one was willing to hear such words. Be it Ah Mo Li or the Lupus people, they were all obstinate people. Furthermore, he was suffering the worse compared to them. In a place with no energy, it provided Ah Mo Li and the rest enormous benefits, but he himself had become a handicapped person, a handicapped person that no one would want.

Nie Qiu was clever and realistic, he knew that no matter what, he was worth something.

Even though he had no energy and strength, but he had never relied on anyone else to obtain food, he had the brains, and was the most intelligent person out of everyone in the group. What he did not expect was that his dantian pools actually dissipated, his meridians disappeared, but his senses had instead become even sharper.

“The number of guards outside is only a fifth of the usual.” Nie Qiu spoke softly.

“It is a good opportunity!” Ah Mo Li’s eyes lit up, he became excited, although their strength was restrained, but in the past few days, they had grasped a few ideas on how to be able to fight.

Especially Ah Mo Li, who uses brute force like a madman, the Sin Domain was undoubtedly the best and most suitable fighting grounds for him. For the longest time, Tang Tian's pure brute force had always lost to Ah Mo Li.

Nie Qiu was a genius, if not he would not have led Lei Ang to feel the difficulty in letting him join the Ursa Major Constellation. His work was shared amongst the rest, and thus he was left with one thing, on how to save themselves. As a brilliant military general, Nie Qiu's mind completely overwhelmed Ah Mo Li's. Saving themselves did not mean breaking out of prison, everyone had little understanding of the Sin Domain, and he knew how dangerous that was. They needed to have self sufficient fighting power, and by relying on his sharp senses, he quickly grasped the differences of the Sin Domain.

The willing members of the Null Division became his best test subjects.

Very quickly, they worked out a few knacks that could enable them to unleash a specific amount of strength, but because he was not anxious to make a move, they chose to continue conserving their strength.

A fifth of the guards, Nie Qiu's first reaction was, Is this a trap? But he quickly threw away that thought, he could clearly feel that although the guards were strict and their work was heavy, but the work supplied everyday were never in shortages. Other than the overseers taking out two whips, there were no other ways for them to take drastic measures.

They seem to value our lives.

After observing secretly, Nie Qiu confirmed his guesses. If it was a guess, then they would be dragged out but not killed, so what meaning would there be?

Something must have happened outside!

As an outstanding military general himself, he was extremely sharp towards opportunities in battle, almost like an instinct. Nie Qiu immediately sensed that it was a perfect opportunity.

Just at that moment, an explosion suddenly occurred from the main entrance of the mines ahead.

Nie Qiu's face became gloomy, he quickly motioned out: "Everyone gather, we must make preparations."

Ah Mo Li ran over excitedly, the prisoners who were working all got up and started to gather towards Nie Qiu from their respective positions. The continuous work did not dull their previous training. Their movements were quick and precise.

The overseers became panicked, they occasionally looked towards the main door, but very quickly, the actions of the prisoners caused them to be even more anxious.

“Scatter! All of you scatter! Do all of you want to die....”

The overseers bellowed.

Bang!

A figure was flung like a sandbag to them, it was a guard, who was dead. The overseers were suddenly grabbed by their necks, and their shoutings had stopped.

A familiar figure appeared on the hill beside the mine, his sinister mask caused everyone to be startled.

“I’m here!”

A familiar voice resonated throughout the entire field, immediately, earth shattering cheers sounded out.

“Crazy Tang! Han Bing Ning! I’m here!”

Ah Mo Li’s loud voice overwhelmed the entire place, it was like thunder while he waved his hands high up in the air.

Nie Qiu was stunned, It’s actually Master Tang Tian!

He had clearly felt a terrifying aura coming from the direction of the gates, but never expected it to be Master Tang Tian. Master,

you truly did not die, and you're here to save us! He could clearly feel the excitement in everyone else, the morale....was truly heaven toppling!

The overseers were already covering their heads and sneaking away, in which no one else bothered about anymore.

Tie Xie was stunned, They are Ghost Face Mask's subordinates? Is this the rumored powerful Null Division prisoners? No, they are no longer prisoners. As an Infamous person, Tie Xie had seen many betrayals, annexes, betraying blood relations for benefits, but he had never seen the blazing flames in their eyes, in which he believed that if Ghost Face Mask asked them to die, they would do it without hesitation.

They....

For some reason, the group of people made Tie Xie feel fear, as though hidden inside the blazing flames in their eyes accumulated a power that made him afraid.

~There are restrictions, we need to find the keys.....”

Ping Xiao Shan's voice travelled into Tie Xie's ears, causing him to awake from his stupor. He looked at it and immediately said: “I can break these restrictions.”

Tie Xie did not know whether Ghost Face Mask would bring the group of them into destruction, but he knew that, he had entered a

pirate ship that was not easy to get out from. Regardless of whether it was the Lu Family or Qin Family, no one would let him go.

A black mist enveloped his palm, which quickly flew onto Ah Mo Li's body, and the light needles were pulled out. The moment the last light needle was pulled out, Ah Mo Li felt his entire body becoming light, the binding feeling that was all over his body had disappeared without a trace.

Ah Mo Li who was overwhelmed with excitement roared!

A powerful surging aura gushed out from his body, Tie Xie was not in time to defend, and was stupefied from it.

He slowly regained from the stun, feeling overwhelmed with shock. He had fought all over the Sin Domain before, and knew of many people, solely from the imposing aura, he knew that Ah Mo Li was an extremely strong and brave man.

When he continued to remove the restrictions, all the Null Division prisoners that seemed ordinary all started to reveal auras of powerful elites, causing Tie Xie to be even more shocked. What horrified him even more was that even at such a time of joy, these people continued to maintain silence, able to control their emotions.

~How terrifying, how cold, how scary are they!~

He felt like he was a docile sheep that had fallen into a pack of wolves, alone, weak, and helpless.....~Wu wu, who is the real Infamous Men.....~

Only Ah Mo Li ran towards Tang Tian and Han Bing Ning, splattering saliva all over, his voice shouting out here and there. Everyone else stood in formation consciously, waiting for Tang Tian's orders.

Han Bing Ning who was long annoyed by Ah Mo Li used her sword and pointed it at Ah Mo Li's throat and snorted: "Shut up!"

Ah Mo Li became rigid, and immediately became embarrassed.

Han Bing Ning used her sword and got Ah Mo Li back into the formation, who upon seeing everyone standing straight and positioned well, revealed an apologetic expression.

The mine that had quieted down was reeking of killing intent.

Tie Xie managed to swallow his saliva with much difficulty, it was only 60 odd people in front of him, but the killing intent that they were releasing caused his heart to jump to his throat, his skin was numb all over. Ping Xiao Shan who was beside him was pale in the face as well, his lips were dry, but his gaze was filled with desire and excitement.

66 men, all of them dressed in their tattered and torn prisoner clothes, their faces and hands were covered in mud, their naked

feet were soaked in mud, their hair was all messed up, those with facial hairs had dust on it, all of them were remarkably alike prisoners who had been through hardship.

But all of them stood extremely straight and still, there were no fluctuations to their expressions, all of them seemed to be dressed in the most uniformed uniforms, as though they were standing on a flat ground instead of the bumpy puddle and rocks, their gaze were extremely sharp, their expressions serious.

It was exactly like their countless training, the tight and strict formation remained silent.

Han Bing Ning walked forward, and saluted solemnly: “Ursa Major Null Division Han Bing Ning, reporting!”

Ah Mo Li’s face was equally stern, void of the usual happy-go-lucky vibe, and saluted solemnly: “Ursa Major Null Division Ah Mo Li, reporting!”

Nie Qiu was affected as well, he subconsciously stepped forward and saluted solemnly: “Ursa Major Null Division Nie Qiu, Reporting!”

One after another, the figures all stood out.

“Ursa Major Null Division Lu Chen, reporting!”

“Ursa Major Null Division..... Reporting!”



“Ursa Major Null Division..... Reporting!”

.....

“Reporting!” “Reporting!” “Reporting!”

Behind the mask, the young man’s eyes turned teary.

## Chapter 725 – Echo Hill Castle

---

Tang Tian's movements at the city gates were too huge, and it naturally spread around to others, for example Xue Ming Zhu.

At the start, Ming Zhu was caught in a daze, but the Old Granny's shout immediately brought her back to her senses, and knowing that the Xue Family were currently one leg into the problem, her resolve became apparent.

Other than finding Tang Tian, she had made another decision, that was to move the entire Family out of the city.

The Purple Cuckoo City belonged to the Qin Family, if they continued to stay in there, they would still end up being the ingredients on the Qin Family's dinner plate. And even if she found Tang Tian, he could not return to the Xue Residence, as it was simply him, the sheep, entering the tiger's den. Fighting the Qin family in Purple Cuckoo City was too stupid.

Outside of the city, the Xue Family had a castle called the Echo Hill Castle, which was built by the first generation Xue Family when they entered Sin Domain. At that time, there was no Purple Cuckoo City, the castle was very simple and crude, but the living environment outside was cruel and harsh, so after the construction of the Purple Cuckoo City, the Qin Family did their utmost to invite everyone to join, and thus the Xue Family moved into the city, and the castle was left to rot.

But at the moment, it was their best course of plans. Ming Zhu

had been to the Echo Hill Castle before and understood the terrain well. The Echo Hill Castle was situated at the top of a mountain which was easily guarded and difficult to attack. In the past, due to the harsh living environment, wild beasts roamed the land, and to defend against them, Echo Hill Castle was constructed to be extremely sturdy, with its own water supply.

Ming Zhu's decision was supported by the Old Granny, who was experienced through her time, and thus knew that there was no time for hesitation.

Ming Zhu could rejoice, before all of this, as the Xue Family was in a severe predicament, they had long made preparations to leave Purple Cuckoo City as they looked for support from others, thus all of their important baggage was packed. If not, all of the baggage would take them a few days to finish packing.

Ming Zhu's judgement on the opportunity was extremely precise.

Qin Zhen was not around, Mu Ze and Wei Han was dead, Qin Zi Zhen's Archer Unit was defeated. The Qin Family had not suffered such a huge loss before, and the entire family was in panic mode. Being a cautious person, Zhong Zheng & Yan Mei decided to activate their defenses, retracting all of their forces to defend, and await the return of Qin Zhen. His idea was simple, if the prisoners held by the Qin Family were taken, then the last hope of the Qin Family would disappear. So long as Qin Zhen returns, they could obtain back whatever they had lost.

And that was why, there was not a shadow of the Qin Family elites.

Ming Zhu immediately saw through Qin Family's fear, and without hesitation, she got the Xue Family to load up everything and move the carriages. Ming Zhu, brazenly bet for the safe evacuation of the caravans, without meeting with any obstruction.

When Ming Zhu and the group arrived at the destroyed city gates, upon seeing the scene which had not been cleared, she was overwhelmed with shock. She could imagine the intensity of Ghost Face Mask's battle.

Ming Zhu immediately understood that Ghost Face Mask was their last hope.

But they did not expect to chance upon Tang Tian and his group as they left the city, causing the entire Xue Family to rejoice out loud.

“Master Ghost Face Mask, Ming Zhu has eyes but no foresight, and has neglected Master, and deserve ten thousand deaths! But I hope for Master to give the Xue Family a chance, for us to serve under Master, to redeem our sins! My entire Xue Family offers ourselves to you!”

Seeing Tang Tian, Ming Zhu immediately kowtowed without hesitation.

If they were to enter the Lu Family, their end was definite, it would definitely be tragic, and they themselves would be subjected to being playthings for the people in the Lu Family. The Xue

Family would also be disbanded, the secrets of the Golden Steel Silkworms would land in the hands of the Lu Family.

When Ming Zhu thought about the pros and cons, she was shocked to realise that it looked risky relying on Ghost Face Mask, but in truth, it was one of the better options. Ghost Face Mask had lived in the Xue Family for many days, with his strength, provided that he had ulterior motives, no one would have escaped his grasp. But Ghost Face Mask did not even make a move, and seeing Han Bing Ning who was so beautiful, Xue Ming Zhu became even more assured.

Ghost Face Mask was powerful, he defeated Ben Sen, killed Wei Han and Mu Ze, and destroyed the Archer Unit, all of this signalled that even if he was not comparable to Qin Zhen, he was still a top grade powerful martial artist. Furthermore, Ghost Face Mask was the leader of the Null Division, and as long as he could save his subordinates, his strength would swell even more.

The more she analyzed it, the more Ming Zhu became shocked, she actually realised that Ghost Face Mask actually possessed the possibility to change the entire situation of Sin Domain.

Tang Tian was startled for a moment, he did not agree instantly, but asked: “What happened?”

Ming Zhu then explained everything that had happened in simple terms, and spoke honestly: “We have no other way out, no matter how we think, only being with you, Master, can make us feel more assured. We will be relying on Master for your protection, so all of our wealth, our assets, our manpower,

everything will be usable by Master, I hope that master will give us a chance.”

Tang Tian was just thinking about how to obtain the Golden Steel Gravel from the Xue Family, it truly was so difficult to obtain in the past, but now it was all gifted right to his doorstep.

He immediately agreed: “Fine! Right, did you bring the Golden Steel Gravel?”

Ming Zhu heaved a sigh of relief, and said: “We brought everything.”

“That’s great!” Tang Tian revealed a look of joy.

Ming Zhu found it strange, Why does Master Ghost Face like the Golden Steel Gravel so much? The last time, when he was willing to exchange the Black Iron Stones for the Golden Steel Gravel, she did not think much about it, but now, knowing his identity, and him asking about it again, she found it extremely strange that he viewed them with such importance.

If Tie Xie could hear Ming Zhu’s thoughts, he would definitely be boiling with rage. The person who was shattering the black Iron Stones was me, was me, was me.....

Old Granny Xue heard the conversation between the two, and came down from the carriage: “I heard that Master is talking about Golden Steel Gravel?”

“Hello Old Granny.” Tang Tian nodded his head: “Yes I did.”

The Old Granny was curious, she first got everyone to retreat, then asked: “Can I know what does master want the Golden Steel Gravel for?”

“I want it because of the Life Origin Essence.” Tang Tian did not hide anything.

Xue Ming Zhu’s eyes opened wide, her face filled with disbelief, she exclaimed out: “ Life Origin Essence? How is that possible? How can there be Life Origin Essence inside the Golden Steel Gravel?”

She was extremely familiar with the Golden Steel Gravel, since young, she knew that they could be used to create weapons, but she had never heard of them actually containing Life Origin Essence!

Tang Tian looked at Ming Zhu who was overreacting, and found it strange: “You guys don’t know about it?”

“Heaven has opened its eyes! Heaven has opened its eyes!!” The Old Granny started to repeat herself excitedly, her eyes flowing with tears: “The heavens does not want my Xue Family to die! The heavens does not want my Xue Family to die!”

Tang Tian stared at the two of them, he could not understand the

situation.

After the Old Granny calmed down, she asked: “Does Master have any place to reside?”

Tang Tian shook his head: “No, I wanted to ask you if you had any. You guys are more familiar with this place, do you have any place to stay?”

“Not far from here, our Xue Family ancestors have an ancient castle called the Echo Hill Castle. As long as we clean up a bit, it will serve as a good place to stay. Its defense is still rather intact, what does Master say?” Old Granny Xue asked.

“There’s such a place? That’s great!” Tang Tian immediately cried out in joy.

“Then we will head towards the Echo Hill Castle, Master surely has many doubts, when we reach and settle down in the Echo Hill Castle, will you accompany this Old Granny then?” The Old Granny was overly excited, due to her old age, fatigue was written all over her face.

“No worries, no worries.” Tang Tian waved his hand: “You do not need to tell me your secrets. Let us quickly head towards the Echo Hill Castle.”

With the Null Division members joining the caravans, their movement speed increased greatly. The entire Xue Residence then



understood why they were so greatly sought after. The journey was rugged and hard to move, and the caravans moved at turtle speed, but the Null Division proved their immense strength as they easily controlled and moved the caravans.

What was even more terrifying was the man who looked like a barbaric cow, talking loudly non-stop, but he was able to pull a cart that was filled to the brim with one hand.

All the wild beasts they encountered on the road were sliced into pieces, thus the journey was unnaturally smooth.

When they were able to see the mountain of Echo Hill Castle, the people on the caravans cried out in joy.

The Echo Hill Castle was covered with weeds, vines twisting everywhere, with one look, everyone could tell that no one had stayed for a long time. But Tang Tian and his company were ecstatic to see it, although the stone castle was ruined, but its entire body structure was maintained rather intact. And furthermore, they could see that the designer who planned the castle had placed a lot of thoughts into it, there were many deployments laid out that contained profound principles.

It was a perfect place for them to stay.

Tang Tian had discussed over with Nie Qiu on the road, the current Null Division was unable to supply enough fighting power. They had not been enlightened on laws, and Nie Qiu required time to grasp how to fight. If it was Tang Tian alone, he could cause a

ruckus in Purple Cuckoo City with no problems, he could casually find a place to hide and the Qin Family would have difficulty finding him.

But they were now 60 odd men strong, if they were in the castle, the target which was too huge could not be concealed that easily. If they were to be found by the Qin Family, they would be placed back to square one.

And as Tang Tian's movements and actions were too huge, the Qin Family would have definitely learned from it, to use the same method to sneak an attack, the possibility of succeeding was lower. And flipping over, the Qin Family that had suffered such huge setbacks, would no longer take such risks and make such mistakes in their future battles.

Their most urgent need was to find a suitable place to stay.

With a suitable place, they would have time to rest and train. Tang Tian would be able to teach everybody on how to quickly be enlightened on laws, on how to handle the powerful martial artists of Sin Domain. Due to their lesser numbers, they could not bear to sustain too severe injuries, and as long as they grasped their own proper path and techniques, they would be even stronger.

Tang Tian felt that Nie Qiu made sense.

If he was alone, he would not be afraid challenging Qin Zhen, as he could simply run if he could not defeat him. But with more than 60 men, it would be difficult to fight the same way.

But, he was still filled with confidence.

Ah Mo Li and the rest had Zero Energy Bodies, the Sin Domain was their natural fighting environment, and they only need a short time to become comfortable in it. Furthermore, there was the Golden Steel Gravel, with the replenishment of the Life Origin Essence, they could become even stronger.

Each and everyone of them, were courageous and fearless. Each and every one of them, were filled with fighting spirit.

My battles alone has finally ended, now, we can all fight side by side.

Tang Tian observed the desolate and ruined stone castle, his heart filled with deep spirits.

Ursa Major Null Division, Mission: Conquer Sin Domain, begin!

# Chapter 726 – Rainbow Drift

---

“Everyone, make haste, in another two hours, the Rainbow Drift will come.”

Ming Zhu spoke loudly, at the moment, she no longer had the bearing of a family's young miss, her sleeves were pulled up, she was perspiring from head to toe, even her forehead had some grass stuck to it.

Everyone tensed up and quickened their pace, if they were not able to hide in the Stone Castle when the Rainbow Drift appears, they could easily be killed. Tang Tian and his company did not know what the Rainbow Drift was, but seeing everyone being so anxious, they knew that it was something dangerous.

The Echo Hill Castle had many places that had collapsed, and were the most dangerous places, luckily for them, Ah Mo Li and a few others readily formed human cranes, huge boulders and stones were like nothing in their hands, and under the guidance of the craftsman of the Xue Family, they quickly reinstated the damaged places.

The ladies of the Xue Residence looked at all the strong and able men with sparkling eyes. When Ming Zhu noticed it, her heart was moved, the Xue Family had the most females to marry off. Regardless of how she looked at it, the Null Division Prisoners were the best choice, seeing their robust and powerful bodies, all of them had vigorous blood that shone like flames, inside the dark and quiet Sin Domain, they were truly irresistible forces, and it was no wonder the ladies were secretly crushing on them.

The Null Division members were all high in spirits, disciplined and rigid, even when working manual labor, they did things quietly, all of them giving their all.

Ming Zhu's heart trembled, she could not help but glance at Tang Tian who was working as well, How did he create such a powerful elite group. She did not know much about armies, but in her heart, the Null Division was not inferior to Qin Zi Zhen's Archer Unit.

Ming Zhu was filled with respect for Ghost Face Mask, seeing how he worked together with everyone else and not taking a superior high ground. In the Sin Domain, they had strict hierarchies, forming upper and lower levels which could not be defied. There was no Patriarch who would work alongside everyone else like Ghost Face Mask. No wonder his subordinates would be so loyal to him, Ghost Face Mask's attitude is beyond good.

She retracted her thoughts, and worked harder to clean the place up. If not for Ghost Face Mask and the rest, with just the Xue Family women, it would take an unknown period of time just trying to reinstate Echo Hill Castle.

It would be their home for the long run.

Ming Zhu sighed in her mind, the family had escaped from battle, they had to start from nothing again, and all the hazy thoughts that were clouding her mind swept away, a hint of anticipating growing.

Tang Tian worked and studied the stones. They were different from the stones in the Purple Cuckoo City, they were cornelian in color, meticulously lubricated, revealing a layer of cloudlike patterns.

The craftsman called it Cornelian Cloud Stones, and were superior grade construction materials, with better effectiveness against Rainbow Drifts as compared to Woodash Stones. But its production rate was smaller, too few for the requirements of a city.

Cornelian Cloud Stones was even more difficult to manufacture as compared to Woodash Stones, its quality was harder, Law Threads could not be used to cut them, and could only rely on the pure power of the physique, Woodash Stones' quality was much softer, and thus its overall manufacturing process was easier.

Furthermore, Cornelian Cloud Stones had another flaw, which was, that after a certain period of time, its cloud lines would slowly become vague, and at this time, they had to be polished again, and allow the cloud lines to appear, which also means that over a course of period, it needed maintenance and manpower.

So rarely were Cornelian Cloud Stones used to construct cities, but constructing houses or structures were more frequent.

Although it was a flaw, but it also had advantages that Woodash Stones did not have. Its effectiveness on deflecting Rainbow Drifts was more outstanding, and furthermore, it could emit a unique cloud mist that could nourish the flesh and blood, becoming

beneficial for a human body.

Rustle rustle rustle, everyone was doing their best to polish the outer walls of Echo Hill Castle.

The wear and tear of time were slowly being polished off,= as beautiful cloud linings started to surface slowly, forming a whole, and like a living being, it flashed with a warm light aura, and nothing was more beautiful than it. The black cold mountain peak seemed to brighten up greatly. The faint warmth slowly emitted out, dissipating the cold intent of the mountain, causing everyone to feel more comfortable.

Echo Hill Castle, A castle that echoed the magnificence of the mountains.

Watching how the dim and ruined stone castle flourished back to life and became even more beautiful in their own hands, everyone was filled with emotions.

Just at that time, Nie Qiu sensed something and raised his head: “There’s something approaching!”

Up above the dark and gloomy sky, a dazzling rainbow colored light belt diffused out, heading towards them.

“Rainbow Drift!” Someone exclaimed out.

Ming Zhu glanced at the sky and immediately called out:

“Everyone, get into the castle now!”

All the servants who were initially clearing the weed and vines outside all rushed in. Tang Tian was extremely curious, but still called out as well: “Everyone, go in and hide.”

Everyone rushed into the stone castle, while Tang Tian curiously stood by the window and observing the Rainbow Drift.

Ming Zhu knew that Tang Tian was an outsider, and explained: “Sin Domain’s sky is where spatial laws are the most chaotic. Every few days, the chaotic spatial laws would collide, and form a unique whirlpool. As it increases and becomes bigger, it would be like an avalanche, where all the flowing law threads would convene, thus forming the Rainbow Drift. Master can see how beautiful the Rainbow Drift is, that is because of the huge amounts of law threads.”

Before Ming Zhu’s voice echoed away, the Rainbow Drift arrived.

The sky started to release chaotic and rumbling sounds that were unpleasant to the ears, like rolling of thunders churning back and forth, and owls hooting along, the fragmented sounds was extremely bone chilling.

The dazzling light aura, like a ray of light, swept across the entire mountain ridge.

Sand flew all over, and rocks turned and turned, it was like



Doomsday.

When the rainbow light swept across Echo Hill Castle, the Cornelia Cloud Stones' cloud lining seemed to be awakened, a faint mist emitted out from the stones, and in the blink of the eye, the entire Echo Hill Castle was covered in a layer of thin mist.

Not being able to do anything to the mist, the light did not stop and continued sweeping ahead.

When the light swept past Echo Hill Castle, Tang Tian felt the blood in his body churning, and his face changed. He could clearly feel the chaos and extreme danger inside the rainbow colored lights.

Suddenly, a groan came out, Tang Tian turned to look, Nie Qiu's face was blank white, his entire body trembling. Tang Tian immediately understood why, Nie Qiu's senses were extremely acute, and thus the influence due to the chaos and danger from the Rainbow Drift could affect him greater.

Tang Tian bellowed: "Hold on, it's good for you!"

Hearing that, Nie Qiu was jolted, he immediately forced himself to sit cross legged on the ground.

Ming Zhu looked at Nie Qiu in surprise, she did not understand, with the cloud stones as protection, no one should be affected. She had noticed Nie Qiu earlier, in the Null Division, he was extremely

eye catching, he was different from all the built and strong members, he was skinny and thin, and even incomparable to some of the ladies of the Xue family. But the most prominent feature of his was that his eyes, that could not see.

In the Sin Domain, surviving was extremely cruel, and disabled people would always live shorter. For someone who had lost vision in both eyes, he would not be able to survive in Sin Domain.

But Ming Zhu realised in shock that Nie Qiu held a high position in Null Division, even Ghost Face Mask treated his suggestions with respect. Ming Zhu then understood that Nie Qiu had other abilities.

Tang Tian did not shout recklessly, due to Nie Qiu being blind, his awareness was naturally sharp, and adding his strengthening when growing up, even Tang Tian was inferior to him. After entering Sin Domain, Nie Qiu's energy was completely crippled, but his senses had shot up to a whole new level.

And that was why, even though Nie Qiu was protected by the Cornelian Cloud Stones, he was still able to sense the chaotic flow of Laws, and was thus influenced by it. Nie Qiu was now bearing the torture of it, but at the same time it was a great way to temper the mind.

The tempering of the mind was more difficult than training in Laws.

Maybe Nie Qiu will find a new dao path to train in.

Tang Tian retracted his gaze, looking outside of the castle, wherever the light swept, the mountain ridge would produce countless of cracks, and the originally flourished trees would become bare, the leaves would fall all over. Even the vines would be destroyed.

Tang Tian suddenly frowned: "This Rainbow drift comes often, but why can the plants still grow so lusciously?"

He remembered very clearly that when they just arrived, there were not many trees on the ridges, but they were overflowing with leaves.

"Master does not know about this, but these wild living organisms that thrive in the outside has their own unique ways of surviving." This time, the one who spoke was Tie Xie, he had traversed the lands and was well versed in many things: "For example, that Mosquito Fruit Tree, Master might see that it is currently dying, but its roots system is extremely well developed, expanding out to almost a hectare radius, as long as the roots are not pulled, their life essence will not be hurt, and by the next day, they can produce sprouts. And for those Steel Line Vines, their Vitality force is even stronger, as long as the Rainbow Drift ends, they will start growing again. All these plants know how to use the Rainbow Drift, for example that tree called the Fallen Tree. It has that name because as long as the Rainbow Drift passes through it, its branches will be cut off, and the branches that are cut off will continue flying until they fall onto the ground, and with that, they can grow again. That's how they reproduce."

Tang Tian was dumbstruck, and only felt that the world was so huge, and there were all sorts of oddities.

“Everything outside is extremely dangerous.” Tie Xie was very experienced: “All ordinary beasts know how to hide from the Rainbow Drift. To survive in the Sin Domain, every living thing has their own way of surviving. At night, we have to employ people to stand guard, because after the rainbow drift, the wild beasts in the mountains will move recklessly. Some will look for the shattered plants, some to hunt for food. Now that we are further away from Purple Cuckoo City, the wild beasts here are definitely not small in numbers. I will take the night guard tonight, master, employ a few more people with me, those that can conform well.”

Tie Xie initiated the volunteering, his attitude extremely proactive.

The performance of the Null Division had shaken him to an unprecedented level. If all the Null Division, were like that, Tie Xie felt that no one else could tame them. He sort of understood why the Lu Family would exchange the 200 prisoners for the Xue Family. Most likely, they had already found out about this point.

At the start, him following Ghost Face Mask was a helpless decision, but now, Tie Xie was secretly brimming with anticipation.

Once the entire Null Division combines, they will definitely be able to sweep the entire Sin Domain.

Tang Tian got Han Bing Ning to follow Tie Xie to stand guard at night. With Tie Xie's abundant experience and his familiarity with the various wild beasts of Sin Domain, along with Han Bing Ning who was currently the expert amongst Tang Tian's comrades.

As for the others, Tang Tian had no intention to waste time, he wanted them to understand the way Sin Domain fought.

Every moment counts.

# Chapter 727 – Toppling His Knowledge

---

All of the weeds and stones on the Echo Hill Castle's stone slabs were swept clean, the Cornelian Cloud Stones released a warm mist that dissipated the cold air of the night. Tang Tian had not stayed in the wilderness of the Sin Domain before, and did not know that the difference in temperature in the wilderness was so great, the cold night could permeate the body and quietly corrode the flesh and blood.

But, the Cornelian Cloud Stones were superb in deflecting the chill of the night.

The Null Division members stood extremely still, along with Ping Xiao Shan. The Lupus people were all very excited, to be able to obtain direct guidance from the King, if the rest were to find out, they would definitely be envious to death. Ping Xiao Shan was equally excited, he did not know why, but the well behaved and rigid Null Division seemed to be extremely attractive to him. From the start, he had always been alone, and wherever he was, he had to be cautious and do things carefully, so what was comradeship? He never had it before.

Tang Tian did not waste time either, he started to explain, how to utilize the power of the physique, and how to find suitable laws for themselves.

Everyone had Zero Energy Bodies, their power of the physique was extremely vigorous, and they were adept at getting the technique. The Heaven's Road martial techniques were much more meticulous compared to the Sin Domain, with the only difference

being laws. In Heaven's Road, enlightening on laws was something that could only be done at a high level, but in the Sin Domain, without the interference of energy, laws were much more easily discovered and utilized as compared to Heaven's Road.

As long as they could find their suitable law and assimilate it into their martial techniques, they would form their preliminary fighting ability.

At this time, they needed to grasp it and know how to combine it as a formation.

Armies were constantly learning how to form formations, if not, there would be no value in Armies. This was Nie Qiu's job. Nie Qiu's mind was outstanding, and he was not one who adhered to customs and conventions, as well as being well versed in military strategies, he was without a doubt the most suitable candidate.

On the second day, Tang Tian got them to continue refining their bodies.

Although Ah Mo LI and the rest had Zero Energy Bodies, their bodies were not as pure as Tang Tian's, and they did not have as much space and time to temper themselves. Tang Tian hoped that even if not everybody could ignite their Primordial Fire Origin, at least some of them could achieve it.

After igniting the Primordial Fire Origin, the Life Origin Essence could be utilized to its fullest potential.

Tang Tian's vitality force was extremely vibrant, as the Life Origin Essence continued to permeate into Tang Tian's body, strengthening his body and making him stronger, the Origin Force in his body became even more vigorous.

Tang Tian had already begun to understand, the essence of Life Origin Essence was the pure Life Laws.

Spacial, Time, Life and Death, the three great laws, all of them were broad and deep with large systems. Different from Spatial and Time laws, Life and Death did not have variations. Life was Life, Death was Death, and like both sides of a coin, they exist forever opposing each other.

The Life Origin Essence was uncommon because it was the most extreme form of Life and Death Laws, it represented the most origin vitality.

Bodies that had been tempered and refined to a high degree could enjoy bigger benefits when absorbing Life Origin Essence. Upon contact with Life Laws, their bodies would filled with even more vitality, producing even more Origin Force, thus upon getting injured, they would be able to recover even faster.

But if the body was filled with impurities, then there would be not much effect.

Tang Tian started to guide everyone on how to use the power of the physique, and allow the Law Threads to be exposed. Tang Tian explained it with detail, after bouts of experimenting with himself,



and him having a Zero Energy Body as well, he was clear on what problems everyone would face, and thus his explanation was extremely clear.

Before he had even finished, there was already someone who accomplished Law Exposure.

What surprised Tang Tian even more was that the person was actually Ah Mo Li!

In terms of power of the physique, no one here can compare with that barbaric cow, but in terms of comprehending such things.....  
Hahahahaha

So when Tang Tian saw countless of Law Threads surfacing beside Ah Mo Li, he was so surprised his eyes almost fell out.

Ah Mo Li's monstrous and vibrant body, could compare to Tang Tian's, so when Law Exposure occurred, it was extremely spectacular.

Within a perimeter of 30m, countless of Law Threads formed a dazzling belt of light.

Ping Xiao Shan's face turned white as he took in a breath, Wh-wh-what....the hell is going on?

Everyone have experienced Law Exposure before, and even the weakest person could expose seven to eight law threads, and the

outstanding ones could produce many Law Threads. But to produce a 30m wide Law Belt, is he still human?

Ming Zhu who was by the side subconsciously covered her mouth, as though she was pushing back the surprise that was leaking from the sides of her mouth back inside, her eyes was brimming with shock, in her blank mind, the words 'genius' came out!

Tie Xie who was standing guard at the wall heard the commotion, and turned his head to look. Instantly, his entire body turned stiff, his expression frozen, dumbstruck like a chicken.

Countless multi-colored light beams had formed a dense light belt, swimming and surrounding Ah Mo Li, causing him to completely lose sight of Ah Mo Li's figure.

Th-th-this.....

All the other members looked at Ah Mo Li with envy, and all started to scatter. No one was unhappy with the result, Ah Mo LI had always been extremely powerful in the Null Division, and he trained extremely hard, he was an easy going person as well, and was well liked by everyone.

Inside the light belt, Ah Mo Li's expression was sluggish, he stared at the dazzling light of law threads all around him and muttered: "Which one to choose....which one to develop...."

Tie Xie who was at the wall regained his senses, his eyes bloodshot red. There were so many law threads, any of them could be taken, and he so badly wanted to take one for himself. After a while, there were still no movements below, seeing that, Tie Xie immediately jumped to Tang Tian's side: "Master, get him to choose quickly!"

"He hasn't really thought about it." Tang Tian looked at him and said.

"If he takes too long, the power of the physique will be exhausted, all the Law Threads will disappear, next time...." Tie Xie said anxiously, Law Exposure was a stage that all martial artists of Sin Domain had to experience, and they were rather familiar with its research, as everyone had engaged in a study into it together. If one hesitated and could not choose over the course of time, and along with the exhaustion of the power of the physique, it would end up as many failures.

"Oh, it doesn't matter." Tang Tian shook his head.

If we were to compare, Tie Xie's power of the physique was like a small candle, then Ah Mo Li's power of the physique was like a raging bonfire.

Tang Tian mumbled: "With his intellect, we'll have to wait for tomorrow for him to choose one."

Wa....wait for tomorrow?

Tie Xie thought he had heard wrong, he opened his eyes wide and his expression stunned, What kind of person's body would allow the Law Exposure to last one full day?

Tang Tian clapped his hands and shouted: "Everyone find a place and test it out by yourself, it won't be easy the first time, but once you find the knack to it, it'll be easy."

With that, Tang Tian patted his butt and left.

The others all looked for a place of their own and started to practise.

Very quickly, there were others who succeeded, but luckily, there were no more 30m wide light belts, but, each and every one of them were all 15m, which was.....

Tie Xie had to admit, it was possible for a person's endurance to grow constantly. When he saw one after another of the light belts lighting up, not one of them were smaller than 10m, he was no longer surprised.

He was numb to it.

He rested his chin in his hand, standing guard by the wall for the entire night, but his eyes never left the biggest light belt. He firmly believed that no one was able to endure putting up the Law Exposure for one night! It is a ridiculous idea, and even if it was Master who said it, it is still ridiculous.

He stood there, feeling the need to uphold his knowledge, he wanted to have proof with the reality, to show that the Master had made a mistake.

Reality truly proved his master was wrong.

Ah Mo Li only picked his law on the third day.

“Hahahaha, I have chosen it! Crazy Tang, come, let us fight, I want to beat you until all your teeth fall out....”

The figure that was laughing like crazy was simply an irony. But Tie Xie no longer had any strength in him, his poor and weak spirit was greatly affected, he felt that all the knowledge he had was being toppled, and the scene before him was causing his heart to bleed.

He was dispirited.

Even when the maniac figure was beaten up by Tang Tian, it did not even lift his spirits one bit.

A total of 65 people of Null Division, aside from Nie Qiu, had found their respective laws. What made him feel even crazier was that the Null Division people were already training, and he had stared at the large brute figure for so long, making it look as if he had some deep grievance with him.

On how to assimilate laws into one's own martial techniques, Tang Tian did not know how to teach.

So he chose the simplest method, 'Grasp it for yourself'.

To the Null Division, training through real battles was the most familiar method, their [Tiny Null Flame] was grasped from that method. So when Tang Tian gave that order, they started to form groups of three to five, and started to test it out.

Everyone became enthusiastic again when they started sparring, and everyone started to benefit considerably from it.

Everything went smoothly, but Tang Tian could see that they still had a long way to go in terms of truly forming their fighting ability. Compared to training the body, the use of laws required great comprehension, and it was rather rare to have people with comprehension as deep as Han Bing Ning.

They were a group of fearsome men, so trying out fanciful things was not easy.

Tang Tian was somewhat embarrassed, so when he saw Tie Xie who was appearing listless at the wall, he had an idea, he could simply ask Tie Xie, he did not believe that everybody in the Sin Domain were intelligent people, there were always some who were not as bright.

"Tie Xie, how do martial artists in Sin Domain like to fight?"

Tie Xie subconsciously blurted out: “Using pure power to prevail over their enemies.”

“Oh, how does one do that?” Upon hearing that there was indeed a method, Tang Tian was roused.

Tie Xie then finally reacted, he trembled and immediately focused: “Reporting to Master, in terms of using pure power to prevail, it is using the power of the physique to win. There are endless of variations in laws, but the most fundamental variations always boils down to three to five types. As long as a person trains well in these, with everyone’s powerful power of the physique, as long as they have sufficient amounts of it, the power produced will not be small, that is how the term using pure power to prevail comes about.”

Tang Tian nodded his head, it was too suitable for the Null Division.

Nie Qiu who was listening by the side spoke out: “That’s right, taking the initiative to look for fights, it is best that we have one or two ways of sure kills, we have enough power, so upon attacking our enemies, they must die. We ignore our injuries and find kills, with the rate of our recovery, we have the advantage. Exchanging wounds for lives, from there, in terms of momentum, I believe that we are stronger.”

The more Tie Xie listened, the more he felt that it was absurd. What kind of people are they? Exchanging wounds for lives.....how

can this blind man be so vicious!

Just nice, Old Granny Xue had walked in and overheard the conversation, she then spoke out: “Master, maybe this old one has some ideas.”



# Chapter 728 – Heavy Demonic Execution

---

Lu Tian Wen flew along the mountain ridge.

He received a great shock upon hearing information regarding Ghost Face Mask on the road. To kill two of the Four Great Generals of the Qin Family was nothing much, but to destroy Qin Zi Zhen's entire Archer Unit, that had greatly shaken him.

Qin Zi Zhen's Archer Unit was not widely known outside as they had always kept a low profile, but every family had a certain degree of fear towards the Archer Unit, which was second only to Qin Zhen. They were all elites who had been through vigorous training and were armed with powerful weapons, even Lu Tian Wen did not dare say for sure that he was able to advance towards the Archer Unit.

How powerful is this Ghost Face Mask?

Lu Tian Wen's mind trembled. Upon receiving news from Lu Ling Nan, the Lu Family immediately sent out Lu Tian Wen without hesitation. The Lu Family had resources far stronger than the Qin Family, which was supported solely by Qin Zhen, and the so called Four Great Generals were from elsewhere. But the Lu Family was succeeded by generations of experts, Lu Tian Wen being one of them.

The Lu Family's intent was quick and decisive, requesting him to use the fastest speed to bring the entire Xue Family back. Lu Family's patience had already ran out.

Along the way, Lu Tian Wen got to know of the Xue Family joining the side of Ghost Face Mask, and the Qin Family's heavy losses.

He felt that matters had become even more troublesome, and the only way was to kill Ghost Face Mask. But upon thinking of Qin Zhen, he could not help but rejoice at Qin Zhen's mess. Qin Zhen was an ambitious man, upon arriving at Galloping Horse City, he started a series of plots and schemes. But most likely, the news should have reached Qin Zhen's ears, and he would be angered to the heavens.

But, to use me to kill Ghost Face Mask, he has gotten it cheaply.

Lu Tian Wen did not have a good feeling towards Qin Zhen. To him, Qin Zhen was an extremely intelligent person with unfathomable strength. He was just excessively conceited causing others to dislike him. Oh well, I'll just treat it as doing a good deed. Lu Tian Wen consoled himself.

The information given by Lu Ling Nan included Echo Hill Castle's location.

Lu Tian Wen was lazy to enter the city to meet with Lu Ling Nan, his train of thoughts was simple, to accomplish the mission as soon as possible. As long as he killed Ghost Face Mask, all of the remaining complications could be thrown to Lu Ling Nan.

In the wilderness up above a mountain top, a stone castle could

be clearly seen.

\*\*\*\*\*

Tang Tian looked around at his surroundings, in the short span of a few days, the entire place had a complete makeover, there were no longer cobwebs and dusts in the corners of the room, new rattan bookshelves were placed in the room, which was filled with books.

When Tang Tian entered, he could not help but be gentle on his feet, his entire face was filled with reveration, although he was not a well learned person, but Tang Tian still had respect to learning.

“The Xue Family has over 2000 years of history, although it is not considered much in the Sacred Saint Galaxy, but it is still something.” Old Granny Xue’s tone was filled with pride, but also with pain: “The Xue Family was a small family of the mountains, and it was an ancestor of ours that accidentally obtained an inheritance that we started to rise. At that time, the Xue Family did not have much influence, but with this Patriarch of ours, who was fully aware of the superficial wealth accumulation of the family, he did not allow the Family to live luxuriously, but instead poured his heart and soul into looking for various inheritances. At that time, our Xue Family built a library, called the Xue Enquiries, with all sorts of inheritance records placed inside, for the disciples of the Xue Family to consult. It was because of his far sightedness, that many geniuses and talents were produced in the Xue Family, and thus the expansion of the Xue Family in the future.”

Tang Tian listened quietly. He was not able to completely

understand the feelings of such a large family, but he was able to discern out the recollection of the Old Granny, one who had lived through times.

Ming Zhu sat by the side listening attentively, although she had long memorised all of this history, but listening to the old lady actively narrating it, it made her blank and entranced.

“The records here are all recorded down by the first generation ancestors who were banished into Sin Domain. Due to many of them being recalled from memory, it is difficult to avoid mistakes, the majority of them do not have any more value, but just as reference works.”

Old Granny Xue's face did not have any remorse.

“It is not only us, the other families are the same. The Xue Residence's most famous inheritance, [Cloud Wave], is no longer usable, many of our ancestors had exhausted their heart and soul, but were unable to produce it again in the Sin Domain. Under that helplessness, our ancestors could only look for another way in other inheritances. After a lot of hard work, our ancestors finally saw hope in one of the unorthodox inheritance. It was called the [Tri-Line Devil Body] many, which amongst the many inheritances that the Xue Family had collected, was considered of a lower grade. But our ancestors found out that, although the [Tri-line Devil Body] that was considered low grade in the Sacred Saint Galaxy, but its fleshly body transformation technique is exquisite, and after

Tang Tian spoke in a serious tone: "I will do my best to learn it!"

Old Lady Xue was gratified, but suddenly, she heard Tang Tian speak softly in embarrassment: "But, how do I read all these words...."

It is proven, that a fool that hardly studied would find it extremely difficult to read through a book, all the densely condensed books caused Tang Tian's eyes to turn dizzy. Luckily for him, Ming Zhu had learned of the technique before, and passing it down was not a problem. Ming Zhu demonstrated the entire sequence once, and then started to explain about the contents from the book, but was shocked to realise that Tang Tian had already started training in it."

This Heavy Demonic Execution is very clearly expressed, and simple to pick up.

Ming Zhu had only explained slightly, but he understood the gist of it. The Heavy Demonic Execution was a technique used by people who walked the path of using pure power, it did not have many variations, with only five moves, and all of it was extremely simple. Its might was completely from the Origin Force, executed from the power of the physique.

It could, in a short span of time, cause all the power of the physique to converge at one point, and its might was naturally fearsome.

Tang Tian became immersed in Heavy Demonic Execution, he did not use any weapons, but his hands as blade, slashing at the air

in front of him. The Heavy Demonic Execution required the entire body's coordination to fully utilize the power of the physique, so every single slash included a corresponding foot technique, and all the muscles in the body would be used.

One step, one slash, five steps for a definite kill!

Tang Tian's face became gloomy, his expression serious. The Heavy Demonic Execution's law was extremely unique, [Combustion]. It was only [CoCombustion] but what it combusts was the power of the physique.

It feels like it is an incomplete source of power....

Tang Tian suddenly remembered that Han Bing Ning and the rest trained in [Tiny Null Flame], which was a similar technique. This is truly suitable for Null Division, Tang Tian realised. The [Tiny Null Flame]'s power of the physique was extremely vigorous, and after combustion, it would become multiple times stronger, and with the converging technique of Heavy Demonic Execution, the slash would contain the full power of the body.

That slash will definitely be earth shattering!

There were no complicated variations, but its design could be said as top rated. The Null Division's path of [Tiny Null Flames] then stopped without advancing, while the Heavy Demonic Execution could improve it, by combining them together, it would become unstoppable.

Tang Tian then understood why the Xue Family had slowly declined, the path of using pure power demanded an extremely powerful body. The ancestor of the Xue Family was talented and had also absorbed the Life Origin Essence from the Golden Steel Gravel, to be able to unleash the might of the Heavy Demonic Execution. But his future generations did not have talent comparable to him, and after losing the secret of the Golden Steel Gravel, naturally they had difficulty going back to their prime.

It was a tyrannical martial technique, if the body was stronger by a point, the might would definitely increase by more than a point, but likewise if the body was weakened by a point, the might of the technique would drop less than a point.

A five move technique, each move after move became more tyrannical and berserk. The figure in Tang Tian's mind moved and slashed down an attack that seemed unstoppable.

It was a fearsome slash, causing Tang Tian's blood to boil, but he had to control himself, he suspected that if he were to use all his strength, the Echo Hill Castle would be destroyed.

He so badly wanted an enemy to appear, and have a good bout.

As though as someone had sensed his thoughts, a loud alarm rang, it was an indication that an enemy was invading!

# Chapter 729 – Thunder Wind Spear Lu Tian Wen

---

When Tang Tian rushed over, he saw Han Bing Ning fighting with the enemy.

Han Bing Ning was obviously at a disadvantage, the opponent's attack was exceptionally severe, his figure moved like lightning, and every spear brought about the power of thunder and wind, every time the sword and spear clashed, Han Bing Ning's sword aura would shatter.

After seven to eight moves, Han Bing Ning's aura became chaotic.

“Lu.....Lu Tian Wen!”

Tie Xie's spoke while trembling, he had followed Lu Ling Nan, and was familiar with the experts of the Lu Family. He immediately recognized the incoming enemy, and his face turned gray. Tie Xie not only knew of Lu Tian Wen because of his ties with the Lu Family, but every Infamous person was extremely familiar with Lu Tian Wen.

A Rank Infamous Fu Ren Bo was defeated in his hands, and immediately swore never to step into Galloping Horse City.

A Rank Infamous People were all extremely ferocious characters of their generation, and they were not inferior to the martial artists who stood at the top. It was just that they stood alone with



no backing, without any families to support them, they had no worries for their actions, and were hailed as Infamous People, thus forming their own list of power.

But despite that, with their strength, they were able to fight their way into the top 50 rankings of the entire Sin Domain's List of Powerhouses, who were the peak martial artists of the Sin Domain. But such a martial artist was defeated by Lu Tian Wen.

In the Sin Domain's List of Powerhouses, Lu Tian Wen, was at the position of 39.

His spear technique was unique, with the power of thunder and wind, it was called [Thunder Wind Spear].

Purple Cuckoo City's strongest person was Qin Zhen, with a position of 43 on the List of Powerhouse. Lu Tian Wen was not the strongest of the Lu Family, the strongest being the current Patriarch, Lu Sheng Xiang, who was a peak martial artist with a position of 16 on the List of Powerhouses.

The power of the Lu Family was apparent.

For the Lu Family to dare send Lu Tian Wen alone, showed their confidence in his strength. Without Qin Zhen around, only if the other families were to form an alliance could they be able to fend off Lu Tian Wen's Thunder Wind Spear. In Lu Tian Wen's eyes, Purple Cuckoo City was just a small city not worth mentioning. The only one who could make him interested was Qin Zhen. But he also had restraining fear of Qin Zhen, who was extremely cunning

and crafty, if he was not careful, he would fall into the other party's pit.

Qin Zi Zhen who was the commander of the Archer Unit was also someone to fear, but it was just a little. To attack Qin Zi Zhen head on was actually extremely difficult. If they moved in thousands, Lu Tian Wen would be more worried, but if it were just a few, it would be difficult for the archers to get them.

He could use speed to completely toy with the Archer Unit. Of course, he was not stupid enough to attack the Archer Unit head on, so when he heard of how Ghost Face Mask confronted the Archer Unit, he jumped in shock, feeling that Ghost Face Mask was definitely proficient in a defensive type law.

A turtle shell covered martial artist was the natural enemy of the Archer Unit.

But it was no matter, regardless of how sturdy the turtle shell was, Lu Tian Wen thinks that he could easily shatter it.

Lu Tian Wen appeared and strutted in front of Echo Hill Castle, a small castle like the Echo Hill Castle was nothing in his eyes. Along the path of the Lu Family's rise to prominence, he had helped them sweep many other strongholds and castles, and such a small castle was very ordinary.

When Han Bing Ning appeared, he even had the time to admire her beauty, his mind sighing at the thought that such a beauty had to die in his hands. But he was not like his worthless nephew, and

did not have too much of an interest in beauties.

Only blood and war could excite him.

When Han Bing Ning made her move, his eyes lit up, the Cold Concept was hardly seen, he did not care much about the laws that had just been learned and formed in front of him, and the only thing he could admire was the sword concept which was extremely pure, and was extremely hard to come by.

After exchanging a few moves, Lu Tian Wen lost interest.

I should end the battle, such a level of opponent is nothing much.

But after another ten over moves, Han Bing Ning was still able to persist bitterly, which surprised Lu Tian Wen. He had not met an opponent that could fend off over ten of his moves for such a long time. His Thunder Wind Spear could spur the wind and thunder when he moved, every spear attack contained a force of over a thousand catties, much less a petite and beautiful lady, even those powerful and sturdy looking man had difficulty blocking three to five of his moves.

Very quickly, Lu Tian Wen understood, the lady's only had minor achievements in her laws, but her sword technique was exquisite, adding her minor achievement in sword concept, she was able to hold herself.

What exquisite sword play!

After looking carefully, Lu Tian Wen became even more interested. His eyes were very sharp and with a glance, he could tell that Han Bing Ning's sword moves and path was not the style of the Sin Domain. The Sin Domain's martial techniques originated from the Sacred Saint Galaxy, but the Sacred Saint Galaxy emphasized more on energy while the Sin Domain more on Laws, but the degree of intricate moves were roughly the same.

Lu Tian Wen became curious, and the spear aura on his hand became denser.

Every spear he used had the wind and thunder elements, dazzling lightning enveloped the spear tip, it was extremely bold and powerful, his spear's momentum could be endless, each spear heavier than the previous spear.

The pressure on Han Bing Ning increased sharply, the hair band that she used to tie her hair had been cut by the wind, causing her hair to fly around messily, but as she was unyielding, being under even heavier pressure, it roused her excitement to do battle even further, and every sword she unleashed was with all her strength.

Tang Tian stopped Ah Mo Li who wanted to rush up, he could tell that although Han Bing Ning was bitterly hanging on and was in danger, her sword concept never had any signs of dissipating, and such battle experience was extremely precious.

Clang clang clang!

Lu Tian Wen struck out seven times, and the flashing lightning struck Han Bing Ning's sword.

Her sword instantly shattered like a biscuit, Han Bing Ning felt as though she was struck by thunder multiple times, spitting out blood, her entire person was thrown backwards.

Lu Tian Wen who found joy in killing had no thoughts of being merciful, his body flowed along with his spear, the wind and thunder moved wildly as he went straight for Han Bing Ning.

The moment Lu Tian Wen had struck Han Bing Ning's sword, Tang Tian had already moved, he took a blade from Tie Xie with lightning speed and had disappeared. In the next moment, he had appeared by Han Bing Ning's side, he grabbed hold of her and slashed with the blade.

It struck the spear accurately.

Tang Tian felt an astonishing amount of power from the opposing side, he snorted and with a flash, he suddenly appeared 15m away, staggering a few steps from the recoil before stabilizing himself. He threw the already fainted Han Bing Ning to Ah Mo Li, and turned to face Lu Tian Wen.

After enlightening on the Heavy Demonic Execution, Tang Tian so badly wanted to test it out, and after witnessing Han Bing Ning being suppressed, the anger in his heart could no longer be held back. If not for the extremely important experience battling an expert being important to Han Bing Ning, he would had long

struck out.

The little bit of control he had instantly disappeared with the attack of his. The excitement from enlightening the Heavy Demonic Execution, mixed with the anger from watching Han Bing Ning being suppressed, was already roaring in Tang Tian's chest.

His face was gloomy as he pointed the blade at Lu Tian Wen.

“Ghost Face Mask Tang Tian?”

Lu Tian Wen squinted his eyes, he licked his lips, as though he had just encountered an interesting prey. The blade from Tang Tian was not fanciful at all, but its power was not weak, which gave him a kick!

Tang Tian had no intention of replying, Tie Xie had told him about the Lu Family before. But as to who Lu Tian Wen was or how powerful he was, Tang Tian did not care about it at all, the fighting intent in his chest was soaring, he just wanted to get rid of Lu Tian Wen!

Ssssi, Tang Tian's figure suddenly disappeared.

Lu Tian Wen was not panicked at all, he knew that people who trained in Spatial Laws loved playing such games. Lu Tian Wen's sneered, Spatial Laws involved disappearing and appearing to engage in sneak attacks, but the undulations formed when the space was affected was unable to escape his senses.

His gaze turned sharp, he turned his waist, and twisted his body in mid air, his spear resembling a dragon flying out of its cave.

Bang!

Wind and thunder sounds erupted, the fanatical thunder and lightning brought forth a dazzling spear of light.

A figure appeared right in front of his spear aura, as though he was welcoming the spear.

But, Lu Tian Wen's eyes constricted, Tang Tian's posture was extremely weird, the blade was pointed straight ahead, parallel to the ground.

What is that technique?

Seeing that the spear tip and the blade was about to collide, the extremely straight blade was like a guillotine as it suddenly slashed downwards, completely without any accumulation of power, but the slash was extremely ferocious.

Heavy Demonic Execution!

Clang!

The blade completely destroyed the wind and lightning

enveloping the spear tip, and struck heavily on the spear tip.

Lu Tian Wen only felt a terrifying force suddenly surging towards him through his spear, his palms grew hot as he was almost unable to control the spear.

This is enjoyable!

What a powerful force!

Lu Tian Wen grabbed onto the spear body tightly, the surging power caused his entire body to fly out like an arrow.

The power from Lu Tian Wen's spear also caused Tang Tian's figure to recoil back, but at the moment, his fighting intent was surging crazily, and this little bit of recoil was completely disregarded by him. His body flashed forward, he did not use any concealment techniques, but simply advancing through stepping on the air.

Bang bang bang!

A series of explosive sounds came out one after another.

A series of Vacuum Plates had formed beneath Tang Tian's legs, which then shattered, it was like a pontoon bridge, his figure flashed forward like a fierce tiger pouncing out of its cage, straight towards Lu Tian Wen.



So fast!

Lu Tian Wen's pupils constricted further, he had never met anyone who could use such a peculiar air technique.

Tang Tian's body had become a blur by rushing forward, but Lu Tian Wen was clearly able to see every movement of Tang Tian's, every muscle of his being utilized. Lu Tian Wen seemed to be able to see countless streams pouring out from every corner of Tang Tian's body, like hundreds of tributaries converging back to the sea, converging at Tang Tian's right shoulder.

It's goal, was obviously towards the blade!

Heavy Demonic Second Execution!

The vein on Lu Tian Wen's temple jumped, without thinking, he knew that the slash was even more tyrannical and terrifying than the first. In that urgency, Lu Tian Wen roared, his entire body released dull wind and thunder, the green colored winds mixed with the silver colored lightning, it was as though he had donned a beautiful armor.

He stopped abruptly, and with an intense revolution of the spear, he thrust out.

The revolving spear was like a vortex, producing an astonishing suction force, all of the wind and thunder enveloping Lu Tian Wen

was abruptly absorbed until not one drop was left, the dense wind and thunder flowing on the spear body. This spear currently emitted an extremely destructive aura.

The figure that was like a beast and a ghost, slashed down.

The confident and graceful person, thrust out his spear.

The two figures clashed head on ferociously.

Bang!

The thunderous impact from the clash caused everybody's eardrums to go numb, the terrifying shockwave that erupted was mixed with countless of green aura and lightning, which struck the nearest mountain peak.

Bang!

The mountain peak looked as if it was cut off by a whip, rocks and mud were flung out by what seemed to be a whirlwind, an extremely deep slash appearing right at the peak of the mountain.

Bang Bang Bang!

The mountain was unable to bear the attack, and the ground beneath immediately collapsed.

The two people suffered greatly from the attack as well, Tang Tian felt as if he had collided with a wild beast head on, he was unable to control his body and was flung backwards. Lu Tian Wen was in no better position, Tang Tian's slash was filled with a powerful force that caused him to fly out like a ball, smashing straight into the mountain peak behind him, revealing an extremely deep hole.

Everyone was dumbstruck by the impact and aftereffects of the clash.

The battle was simply not something achievable by humans.

Old Granny's tears were flowing all over her face, Heavens has taken pity on us, Our Xue Family's Heavy Demonic Execution, has finally appeared once more.

Pa, an explosion suddenly occurred inside the deep pit, zzzzi, wind and thunder broke out, Lu Tian Wen suddenly appeared at the location of the slash.

His entire body was in a terrible situation, his clothes were tattered and torn, eyes revealing a fervent look of fighting intent, he licked his lips, and said: "I will kill all of you!"

# Chapter 730 – Devil, I, Execution

---

How long has it been since Lu Tian Wen had been forced into such a situation? He could no longer remember.

He could not be bothered to, currently, his eyes were bloodshot as he stared at Tang Tian with only one thought in mind, to kill them, to kill all of them.

Crack crack.

An electric crackle came out not too far from Lu Tian Wen as a streak of light suddenly lit up.

Crack crack, the concentrated subtle booms lingered on, one after another, streaks of light blossomed in the air and in the blink of the eye, the area around Lu Tian Wen was lit up with condensed green light streaks. Wu, a gust of wind caused the streaks of light to flash.

A transparent ripple swept past the lightning, wu wu wu, a skin numbing, low resounding wind screech, gradually arose and produced a transparent ripple rose with the spear tip as the center around Lu Tian Wen.

Even in the distance, the people at the wall felt a sense of unstableness, causing them to be filled with shock.

Tang Tian remained indifferent, he was recalling the two slashes,

although it was his first time unleashing them, but the two slashes had instantly made his blood boil, making him feel extremely satisfied. This was because his body was strong, adding his outstanding control over his body, that allowed him to be able to use it at the first try, and produce such an outstanding result.

The Heavy Demonic Execution had five moves, [Blade Devil Transformation], [Executing the Heavens], [Devil, I, Execution], [Sacrificial Execution], [Demonic Desolate Execution].

[Blade Devil Transformation] and [Executing the Heavens] were both extremely powerful, and even Tang Tian felt that he was almost unable to control them well, the Origin Force in his body was abundant, and it was reasonable to say that such a thing should not happen. In terms of the degree of tyranny, Tang Tian could be said to be at the apex, and for him to continue to improve, he could only strengthen himself through the Life Origin Essence. Tang Tian was confident of his tyrannical body, and firmly believed that even the ancestor of the Xue Family was definitely not stronger than him.

There must be other profound meanings behind it, Tang Tian realised that Heavy Demonic Execution was not as simple as he thought.

Suddenly, Tang Tian felt a powerful wave approaching that caused him to immediately come out of his thoughts, as he realised that the area around Lu Tian Wen was in a strange state, causing his eyes to constrict.

That is.....

Lu Tian Wen was in the Sin Domain's List of Powerhouses, with a position of 39, and was already one of the few peak martial artists in Sin Domain, compared to Han Bing Ning with her minor achievements in terms of her law surface, his comprehension of his own law surface was perfect, and the distance towards enlightening on the Law Domain was just a step away.

A mature law surface was able to project out a vast and powerful force, it was like a layer of light that layered upon Lu Tian Wen's body. Lu Tian Wen's aura increased exponentially, and continued to rise, becoming extremely lofty. The spear tip released undulations that emitted outwards, interfering with the air around him, continuing to expand out and cause the air to be unstable.

What a powerful aura.....

The terrifying aura locked down on Tang Tian, causing him to have the misconception of being unable to move.

Tang Tian's body trembled, pa, the ripple that swept past his body was instantly shattered, causing him to become lighter. But even more ripples continued to surge out, causing the air to become extremely viscous.

Recalling back to the Heavy Demonic Execution that he used, Tang Tian remembered the movements, he tightened his grip on the blade hilt, the power in his body surging forth, all the flesh and blood in his body started to hum with excitement, and an intense aura surged forth.

The earth-shattering and imposing aura was extremely majestic, but in Tang Tian's eyes, it was nothing. He finally understood the true essence of Heavy Demonic Execution.

Although he did not understand why it was called Demonic, but from the blade technique, he could feel the ant biting sensation all over his body, and a heaven defying determination. Even the Heavens could not subdue him and cannot make him surrender.

Truly a decisive and desperate blade technique!

A good blade technique!

Tang Tian was affected by the sensation, he suddenly faced upwards to the sky and roared, the desperate decisive fighting intent blazed like a bonfire being fed with fuel, bringing forth a wanton and reckless sensation.

He slowly raised the blade in his hand.

The Origin Force in his body gradually surged, but this time, it was different from the two previous slashes. The power of the physique in his body cycled around, hovering inside his body back and forth, the intensity of its flow caused Tang Tian's entire body to tremble slightly.

Tang Tian did not move, he endured the pain in his body, but the light in his eyes became bright.

Why was it called Devil, I? Any person would always struggle between his inner evil desires and good thoughts. Hesitation and being confused will always be a part of human nature, as long as one was able to endure through it, as long as one was able to persist, they would be able to see the light, to see their true intentions clearly.

Bitterness and struggle, hesitation and confusion will never disappear, it is like the devil playing tricks on a human's mind, every time a person experiences it, they will be able to see clearer, the steps they take will be more stable, and their state of mind sturdier.

The path of the demon will always be destined to defy the heavens, and this path will be even more bitter, more painful, and much more intense.

His desire entered the blade edge, bearing the pain of it all. He desire to devour the demon, he had to bear it all.

All the muscles and flesh in his body struggled with the surging tide which was endless, Tang Tian's gaze became clearer and clearer, the blade in his hand became even more stable, and even the Null Flames that had erupted all over his body had become calmer and docile, he retracted all of his imposing aura, and there were no leakage.

The transparent ripple upon reaching near his body would quietly disappear.



Lu Tian Wen's eyes were bloodshot, his gaze extremely ferocious, the fighting intent in his body soared even higher. He had never expected Ghost Face Mask to be powerful to this extent, the blade had not been released, but its aura was already not normal.

Too interesting!

The blood of such a powerful martial artist will be even more tasty.

The blood in Lu Tian Wen's eyes became even more dense, he lightly waved the spear in his hand, the formless ripple retreated back like a net, the dense light streaks were all pulled back, the low resounding wind blows became even more terrifying.

Lu Tian Wen sneered, and thrust out.

The ripple that was mixed with wind and thunder, booms suddenly converged at the spear tip, causing the entire space everywhere else to become empty.

The figure moved along with the spear, the green and silver colors of wind and thunder spear aura interweaved, forming a screeching sound, as though the spear aura had countless beasts imprisoned in it, and like a shooting star, he shot forward and appeared in front of Tang Tian.

Right at this moment, the Origin Force in Tang Tian's body

surged out intensely from its original calmness, Tang Tian's aura suddenly erupted into a mist. The light in his eyes exploded, and he waved his blade and slashed down silently.

A slash without any hint of power.

For some reason, Lu Tian Wen's eyes shrunk, he had seen many brilliant bladesman before, and to release a blade that did not emit any power was only something that could be done by the bladesman who had pure blade concept.

Wasn't it said that Ghost Face Mask used his fists?

Why is his blade technique so powerful?

But he did not feel any fear, only excitement. Come! Come!

The gentle slash cut into the spear aura, as though both were magnets, they clashed perfectly.

A surging power came from the blade, and immediately, Tang Tian sensed something was wrong.

Ping!

The blade in his hand shattered.

Tang Tian's body was able to bear the brute force, but the blade was unable to. The moment that he had slashed, he flickered and broke the space, disappearing from the same position. Tang Tian's Devil, I, Execution was not normal, it looked to be simple, but when the terrifying power transmitted into the spear, it immediately exploded, causing the spear aura to swell like a balloon, becoming a ball of wind and thunder.

Bang!

The ball exploded.

Dazzling wind and thunder streaks mixed with the terrifying blade aura ripple, making it look like a blade covered with lightning, spanning across the entire area.

Bang bang bang!

Every wind blade that landed on the ground would erupt into an explosion, forming deep pits. Under the endless explosions, the soil on the ground was flung in all directions, and in the blink of an eye, the ground had become full of holes.

Blood trickled down from the corner of Tang Tian's eyes, and the right side of his body was charred black.

Lu Tian Wen's spear was extremely formidable, even when he managed to retreat at the first second, he still suffered from heavy injuries. He looked at his body, the flesh was burnt and charred

black, his bones were visible, the tyrannical wind and thunder was constantly corroding his body.

After the blade, Tang Tian was shocked to realise that the Origin Force in his body was left with less than 30%! For his abundant Origin Force to be used up to such an extent after 3 strikes from the Heavy Demonic Execution, it showed the heavy toll it required on the body.

He finally understood why the Xue Family Ancestor was able to unleash the true might of Heavy Demonic Execution, it was a blade technique completely made up after using countless Life Origin Essence.

Tang Tian's origin force rumbled and attacked the green and silver wind and thunder. Null Flames enveloped his wounds, and his body started recovering at a speed apparent to the naked eye.

Lu Tian Wen's entire body was charred black. He stared blankly at Tang Tian, he never expected the blade to be so strange, it could drill into his spear aura before exploding! He was not able to defend in time, and thus suffered from it.

But what made him feel even more sullen was that Tang Tian's wounds were regenerating.

Asshole! What nonsense is this....

Didn't they say that he trained with fist techniques! Why is he

able to display such blade techniques! To even use it at such proficiency is fine, but the law that he trained in, is actually Life and Death Laws!

Such a powerful self regeneration ability, only those people who train mainly in Life and Death Laws can do it.

Lu Tian Wen felt hurt, an indescribable sullen emotion surged, It's like we agreed to compete with strength, but you started to compete in techniques, fine, if you want techniques, I can do it too, but in the end, you decided to compare who is more suave!

Tang Tian's strength was nothing in his eyes. The rumored fist techniques did not appear, which Lu Tian Wen was extremely cautious about, since he heard that the fist was extremely strange. Lu Tian Wen then thought that Tang Tian's usage of the blade was just a pretense, and his true killing technique was still the fist technique.

A feign will always be a feign, everyone trains in one martial technique, and that is definitely difficult to change.

And he even found Tang Tian's weak point, noticing that the blade Tang Tian used was extremely ordinary, unable to bear too much power, instead of the spear in his hands, which was a top grade treasure. The Lu Family had spent a great deal of wealth refining and creating the Thunder Wind Blade.

He thought with that weakness, he would win.

But in the end.....

The rumored fist technique did not appear, but he was forced into such a sorry figure, seeing that Tang Tian was completely fine and regenerating but his own body was charred black, his heart turned sour!

You just wait, I will be back!

Lu Tian Wen who was charred black all over left in fury.

# Chapter 731 – Ping Xiao Shan's Special Training

---

Tang Tian watched Lu Tian Wen disappear, he was too weak to chase. Although Lu Tian Wen was charred black, Tang Tian was clear that his exhaustion was not as great as his own. Lu Tian Wen's power projected from his Law Surface was too strong, and since then, his consumption was not too great. Instead, Tang Tian did not have any Law Surface, and he had completely consumed the Origin Force in his body.

The Law Surface was like a personal base that could be nourished and replenished, that is why in the Sin Domain, martial artists who trained in laws were far more powerful than martial artists who ignited their Primordial Fire Origin.

Of course, martial artists who ignited their Primordial Fire Origin also had their own advantages. Regardless of how strong the power projected out of the Law Surface was, ultimately it was not the martial artist's own strength, compared to someone using his own power, using it was not as natural. Origin Force was produced by transforming the power of the physique, and controlling it was simply on a whim.

Tang Tian returned back to the castle, and was instantly treated like a hero.

Who is Lu Tian Wen? A fearsome figure positioned 39th in the Sin Domain's List of Powerhouse, such a fearsome person actually suffered under Tang Tian's hands, if this message was passed over to the Purple Cuckoo City, it would most like shock everybody.

Tie Xie's gaze towards Tang Tian was completely one of reversion.

People able to fight on equal grounds with Lu Tian Wen were all big figures!

To follow such a powerful figure, my future will definitely be hard to decline even if I wanted to.

Upon landing on the ground, Tang Tian's legs immediately turned soft, and he fell. Ah Mo Li was shocked, and immediately supported him up: "Crazy Tang, are you alright?"

"I'm fine, just feeling weak now." Tang Tian laughed bitterly, he did not even have the strength to lift a finger. The regeneration of the wounds on his body was from the Life and Death Laws, but it was not like what Lu Tian Wen had guessed, it was not through training, but from the absorption of Life Origin Essence. Life Law Imprints allowed his wounds to heal, but had extracted the 30% Origin Force left in his body.

"Ming Zhu, prepare some Golden Steel Gravel." Tang Tian was seeing black, he never thought that it would take so much of his Origin force, he could only turn to Ping Xiao Shan: "Xiao Shan, I'll have to trouble you."

Ping Xiao Shan was bewildered: "Wh-....what do I have to do?"



Like Tie Xie, Tang Tian and Lu Tian Wen's battle had shaken Ping Xiao Shan to an extent that he had never felt before. He had thought that Ghost Face Mask was powerful, but he had never thought that Ghost Face Mask was able to fight with the rumored martial artists standing on the peak on equal grounds, that level was something he was unable to comprehend.

When he heard Tang Tian speaking to him, he was completely dumbfounded.

Hearing the words Golden Steel Gravel, Ming Zhu immediately sprinted away, and not long later, she brought a sack full of Golden Steel Gravel over.

In Tang Tian's dumbstruck gaze, Ming Zhu threw the sack down on the ground and asked in concern: "Is this enough? We never sold any of the Golden Steel Gravel that was produced in the recent years, everything is here, if it is not enough, I will look for the buyers in the past and see if we can purchase some back."

"It's enough, it's enough." Tang Tian immediately nodded his head, he now understood why the ancestor of the Xue Family was able to master the Heavy Demonic Execution. Thinking about what Ming Zhu had said, all the few years of Golden Steel Gravel was never sold but given to him to be absorbed.

Seeing the sack full of Golden Steel Gravel, Tang Tian was sure that he must have used the Life Origin Essence to train it out!

How will the body change by absorbing so much Life Origin

Essence? Tang Tian used to be so sure that his own body was much more tyrannical than other people, but upon seeing the sack full of Golden Steel Gravel, he became terrified.

How many sacks did he absorb.....

Wait a moment, you must be ambitious, how can you be so low as to compare with the number of sacks? We have to compare coolness!

Tang Tian remained expressionless, he quietly imagined the look of the ancestor growing old, allowing Ah Mo Li to bring him into the castle. Ping Xiao Shan followed in quietly, he did not know what he had to do. On the other hand, Tie Xie stood by the side, filled with jealousy, thinking when the boss would be able to trouble him even the slightest, wanting the sense of being important.

After placing Tang Tian down well, Ah Mo Li and the rest were chased out, and only Ping Xiao Shan was left alone.

Seeing Ping Xiao Shan look reserved in front of him, Tang Tian coughed lightly: "Xiao Shan, let me take a look at your Law Thread."

Ping Xiao Shan raised his head with a look of joy in his eyes: "Master, you want to teach me stealth techniques?"

The reason why he chose to follow Tang Tian was because he

harbored the hopes to complete the Ping Family Stealth Techniques, from a stealth technique to a legacy that could attack and defend. The battle between Tang Tian and Ben Sen gave him that hope, and the battle on the street showed him the power of spacial law threads, which was capable of being a killing machine.

“That’s right!” Tang Tian said righteously, his expression serious.

Ping Xiao Shan suddenly jumped in fright, Is Master dying? At this time, he wants to hand over something to me? If not why would Master choose to teach me when he is so weak?

That’s right, That was Thunder Wind Spear Lu Tian Wen he fought! Master had fought him for so long, and most likely he is severely injured, for the sake of protecting everybody, he could only scare Lu Tian Wen away, but his body is already at the lowest!~

Ping Xiao Shan started to think about all the random thoughts, and started to feel sad, he then exclaimed out: “Master, you have best rest up first, wait until your injuries are healed, it won’t be late to teach Xiao Shan.”

“We must make use of all the time we have.”

Ping Xiao Shan became even sadder, and felt that his guess was right. The Heavens are jealous of him, Master is such a heroic and powerful man, his fate is too unfair! Even at this time, Master still has not forgotten about the promise he made to me Feeling moved and sad, tears started to flow.

Tang Tian became confused on why Ping Xiao Shan was crying.

Ping Xiao Shan wiped away his tears. I must definitely give it my all and not disappoint Master.

He maintained a calm state of mind with an unswerving determination in his eyes, he activated his Law Thread, and a thin spatial law thread appeared on his fingertips.

Tang Tian pointed at the sack of Golden Steel Gravel and said: “Try and use your law thread to cut the Golden Steel Gravel, remember, cut a small hole at the outer surface of the Gravel’s wall, do not, at all cost, touch the vortex in it, it is extremely dangerous!”

Tang Tian discovered that so long as the law thread did not touch the vortex inside the Golden Steel Gravel, there would be no problems, as there was a small space between the vortex and the gravel.

~As expected, Master’s training technique is not ordinary, and inside this, there is definitely a profound secret!

Ping Xiao Shan devoutly took out a Golden Steel Gravel from the sack. He took a deep breath, and carefully pinched the gravel with his right hand, and the law thread on the other hand, he carefully cut the Golden Steel Gravel.

~Break the shell, do not touch the vortex~ Ping Xiao Shan constantly reminded himself.

Ping Xiao Shan's control over his law thread was far more outstanding than Tang Tian, but he had never used the law thread to perform such a meticulous activity. The Golden Steel Gravel is small by itself, the vortex inside even smaller, and to cut open a small crack on the shell and not touch the vortex was extremely difficult.

Only after spending close to 10 minutes did he succeed.

When he released the law thread, he felt an unspeakable fatigue overwhelming him.

“Master, I did it.”

Tang Tian took the Golden Steel Gravel and nodded his head with satisfaction. He threw the Golden Steel Gravel into his mouth and sucked out the Life Origin Essence, His current body was like a dry riverbed, and the thread of Life Origin Essence quickly assimilated into the muscles of his body.

Tang Tian who wanted more pouted, he spat out the Golden Steel Gravel, and looked at it carefully. He noticed that the shell was still intact, and only a fine thin crack was visible. Tang Tian suddenly had a thought, Maybe the gravel shell has some other use.

Seeing Ping Xiao Shan perspiring all over, Tang Tian smiled:

“Was it difficult?”

Ping Xiao Shan gasped for breath and replied honestly: “Yes Master.”

“That’s right, it must be difficult to refine your usage of the Law thread.” Tang Tian was deadpan, revealing a look of recollection, he spoke with the tone of an experienced person: “In the past, when I was training in a type of claw technique, just to master it, I grinded through over 30 thousand iron slabs. Perspiration will never lie.”

I never expected Master to actually be so hard working, but it should be like that, to be able to wield such strength today.

Ping Xiao Shan who was greatly encouraged immediately sat up straight and said: “Master is right! Xiao Shan will definitely keep this to heart!”

With that, he took another Golden Steel Gravel and focused on cutting it.

Tang Tian’s face was filled with gratification.

I finally found a good labourer!

After swallowing the Life Origin Essence, Tang Tian could clearly feel it nourishing his withered body. But the process was extremely slow, but as his Origin Force had been completely exhausted, the

Life Origin Essence did not turn into Origin Force.

Although it needed Origin Force, but Life Law's regeneration efficiency was extremely useful and powerful.

Tang Tian laid down and rested, unknowingly, 10 more Golden Steel Gravel shells were piled in front of him.

Ping Xiao Shan remained focused, ignoring the fatigue, he continued to cut the Golden Steel Gravel, and his speed gradually increased.

On the second day, Tang Tian opened his eyes. Through the night, he had swallowed the Life Origin Essence of over a 100 Golden Steel Gravel, they slowly nourished his body, causing the vitality in him to be regained.

The origin Force in Tang Tian's body quickly recovered.

Tang Tian patted on Ping Xiao Shan who was completely numb: "Xiao Shan, the special training will end here, go and rest."

Ping Xiao Shan 'oh'd' as a reply. He had worked for over 10 hours, his mind was working sluggishly. He got up and headed to his room.

Seeing Ping Xiao Shan swaying to his room, Tang Tian was filled with admiration, We shall do it again!

He had already made the decision, when everybody's body were tempered enough to absorb the Life Origin Essence, he would then implement a large scale special training.

Stretching his body, he knew that although he had not fully recovered, but his Origin Force had reached a substantial level. The most difficult phase was over, and recovery after that would be much easier. Thinking about Lu Tian Wen's last push, Tang Tian knew that the other party would not be able to recover so easily either.

But, I should teach the Heavy Demonic Execution to Ah Mo Li and the rest first.

Tang Tian reckoned that with Ah Mo Li's physique, he could learn two moves, while the others could learn one.

But, thinking about the scene where a group of them would roar and brandish out [Blade Devil Transformation], Tang Tian could not help but tremble. Even the Xue Family ancestor will never think that there would be a person could actually form a group of powerful bodies.

Too terrifying!

I have to provide them with big blades!

And Tang Tian firmly believed that with Nie Qiu, even if



everybody could only learn the first move, they would be able to unleash the potential of the slash.

Oh well, If they can't do well in quality, we will overcome that with quantity Tang Tian thought happily.

He was suddenly filled with anticipation towards Lu Tian Wen's second attack.

# Chapter 732 – Honorable Martial Invasion To The South

---

“These guys, I wonder where they went, to throw all this mess on me, why can’t they be a bit more responsible? As a leader, he is actually so absurd, I seem to fail in recognizing people, and sought this punishment myself....”

Bing mumbled to himself as he puffed out a smoke ring, complaining to himself. He and Tang Tian had a unique connection, and he knew that Tang Tian had not died, so he was not worried. As long as he was not dead it is fine, as for other things, how can I demand for more? That guy is never reliable.

In front of him, everyone stood straight without making a sound, they were all filled with respect towards Bing. Furthermore, they knew that although Bing was complaining, but the relationship between him and Tang Tian went beyond deep, if anyone were to agree with him at this time, they would truly not know the line between life and death.

Wu Ma Tian felt unnatural, it was his first time participating in such a large scale military conference. By his side, Aya stood extremely straight up, her eyes staring at her nose.

Speaking about Wu Ma Tian, it was Aya who ran to Bing and requested for someone. Facing the determined Aya, Bing thought for a bit before agreeing. Wu Ma Tian then became part of the Skull Unit, and what surprised everyone was that Aya immediately appointed him as her deputy commander.

Wu Ma Tian became the fastest promoted high-ranking officer, causing the envy of many.

The man who sold pig trotters faded away, causing many of the armies to howl in grief.

“Where is the big army of the Honorable Martial Continent?”

Bing focused, he was somewhat excited for the incoming war.

Handling Mei Chen Xiu and the small pirates did not require him to use so much effort, and made Bing who was accustomed to large wars deflate in interest. Only the Honorable Martial Continent’s Southern Expedition could make him excited.

The Honorable Martial Continent’s Southern Expedition was announced very suddenly, as the higher ups of Honorable Martial Continent decided at the last minute, and thus even the various continents of the Southern Region did not make any preparations. Although various logistics was mobilized, causing people to feel an immense pressure and anxiousness, but still, the majority of the Southern Region continents did not believe that the Honorable Martial Continent would attempt to invade the South.

As for the few continents on the borders of Honorable Martial Continent, the generals there were unbridledly invited for dinner at Honorable Martial Continent’s encampment, which happened many times. Honorable Martial Continent’s tyrannical strength put an end to the pirates around, and the borders of Honorable

Martial Continent had many ample businesses that maintained good relations with Honorable Martial Continent, but they have to do their own work. Both parties secretly maintained their good relations, and to the Continent Lords, both parties had joint interests, as they also had a share from the business profits.

At the banquet, the Continent Lords and the generals in the Honorable Martial Garrison army laughed and ridiculed about whether there would be a war, but the generals would laugh and explain that it was directed towards the armed rebellion inside Honorable Martial Continent, and thus convincing the Continent Lords.

While they indulged in their life of luxury under the pleasures and feasts, the Southern Expedition Great Army braved the rain and night, like an unstoppable flood. Disguised as caravans, they surged into these continents.

The news of war erupted only after the third day, that was when the world realised.

The Sacred Saint Galaxy was shocked!

The Honorable Martial Continent's Five Tiger Generals, other than Mu Zhi Xian who stayed to guard the Wei Ye Guan Continent and Jia Ya who stayed to defend the center, Mo Xin, Qiu Xu Hua and Gou Cheng WenDao moved out together.

Mo Xin's troops, in addition to his direct subordinated Mo Xin Army, Yuan Wei, Shui Dong Liu, Lu Guang, three great famed

generals commanded three big armies.

For Qin Xu Hua's troops, in addition to his direct subordinated Autumn Flower Army, Zi Che Jia Jing, Wei Yue, Feng Yun Man, three great famed generals commanded their own armies.

For Gou Cheng WenDao, in addition to his direct subordinated Sky Hook Army, Cliff, Ken, Zeke, three great famous generals moved out and commanded their own armies.

Other than that, for every one of main forces, they were matched with 15 standard Honorable Martial Armies, each of them commanded by silver grade military general with at least 10 years of experience.

The Honorable Martial Tiger Generals' personal armies numbered to a 100 thousand, while the famed generals' armies numbered to 8 thousand, the standard Honorable Martial Armies all had 5 thousand men each, every main force fighting strength reaching a total of 110 thousand people. Adding the logistics members, each main force human count reached a terrifying 150 thousand, totalling up to 450 thousand.

It was the largest scale army movement in the history of the Sacred Saint Galaxy.

For a moment, no one knew what to say.

The various continents in the Southern Region were panicked.

Three great armies, that were irresistible forces, advancing in three different paths, no one could stop them.

“Mo Xin has arrived at the front lines near the North Dragon Continent, Qiu Xu Hua has arrived at the front lines of the Small Growing Hill Continent, and Gou Cheng WenDao is reaching the Phantom Continent.” The adjutant who was responsible for updating the movements of the enemies spoke out: “Just yesterday, the Honorable Martial Continent announced, the reason for them moving their army is due to a dispute with Shang Continent, they only want to take over Shang Continent, and if the other continents allowed them to pass, they will not be harmed at all.”

“Hehe, so we have become public enemy number one.” Bing licked his lips and said.

“Yes, yesterday, seven families announced that they were leaving the Southern Alliance. When Gou Cheng WenDao broke through the Crow Sand Continent, they were met with intense resistance, and they suffered quite a bit. Gou Cheng WenDao was furious, he ordered for the massacre of the entire city, and no one survived.”

All the generals present revealed looks of resentment.

Bing flicked the cigarette in his hand, and said: “Acting so recklessly.”

Everyone knew that Bing was angry, and the tension rose.

Bing stood up expressionlessly: “Now, I will announce the orders for the various armies.”

He glanced at the generals around, looking at their faces, some of them were still unripe and young, but he knew that the scale of the incoming war would quickly make them grow. They were all the special seeds that he chose, every single one of them wielding outstanding potential.

This is going to be exciting.

\*\*\*\*\*

In the valley, Lu Tian Wen knew that he underestimated the enemy.

He did not return to Purple Cuckoo City, he felt that it was too shameful to let his own nephew see his own charred self. He found a cavity inside the mountains and started recuperating. In the past few days, he was reflecting on the battle.

Tang Tian’s final blade was extremely strange, it actually entered his spear aura before exploding.

He then thought about the swordswoman blade techniques that were exquisite, but knew that it was not a sword technique that belonged to the Sin Domain. But as for Tang Tian’s three slashes, Lu Tian Wen knew that it was a hundred percent a blade technique

from Sin Domain.

A blade technique from the Sin Domain, it is so powerful, how come I never heard about it before.....

Suddenly, Lu Tian Wen thought about a long lost blade technique, Heavy Demonic Execution!

~That's right, that was the most famous inheritance of Xue Family in the past, the Heavy Demonic Execution!

~For the Xue Family to rely on Ghost Face Mask, the inheritance must definitely come from them. The Xue Residence had such a consummate skill in the past that shook the entire Sin Domain, but a pity their descendants were not strong enough, and the power slowly diluted.

Lu Tian Wen frowned, he knew that his elder brother had always been scheming to obtain the Xue Family, but he was actually willing to exchange 200 prisoners, causing Lu Tian Wen to find it strange. He was thinking, what could Xue Family possibly have to be worth so much? Money? Is the Lu Family lacking money? That's a joke!

As for the Golden Steel Thread, although they are good stuff, but similar products are purchasable in the market.

Heavy Demonic Execution?



Is Elder brother going for the Heavy Demonic Execution? Lu Tian Wen who witnessed the might of the Heavy Demonic Execution personally felt that it was more probable.

Lu Tian Wen's attention focused back to Ghost Face Mask, he thought for a bit, Although that guy is strange, but his strength is still lacking compared to me. He is someone who has not even gain enlightenment on the Law Surface, even if he had ignited his Primordial Fire Origin, he was still being reckless.

On the top 50 rankings, only one person had ignited his Primordial Fire Origin.

But I was still too careless!

He was confused with his opponent being proficient in fist techniques, but to start off with using a blade, he felt that it was just a ruse. Bloody cunning peasant! Lu Tian Wen gritted his teeth, the so called being proficient in fist technique was just a fake.

Heavy Demonic Execution consumed a lot of power, thinking back to why the Ghost Face Mask did not chase him, it must be due to him being depleted of physical strength. Lu Tian Wen felt extremely remorseful, at that moment he looked extremely terrible, but in truth he was not severely injured, if he had continued attacking, he would had been able to kill Ghost Face Mask.

I cannot get tricked the next time round!

Lu Tian Wen clenched his teeth and swore secretly.

\*\*\*\*\*

Inside Echo Hill Castle.

Ah Mo Li and the rest were giving their all to train their Heavy Demonic Execution, compared to Law Threads, the destructive power was more suitable to their taste.

Their tensed muscles had perspiration dripping all over, their bronze skin looking as if they were cast in bronze, once in awhile revealing loud roars. Whenever the ladies of the Xue Residence passed by them, they hated to part their eyes away from the men, which looked to be extremely masculine.

Every person that unleashed the first slash would roar with rage and use all their strength.

By compressing their strength to the maximum and allowing the laws to refine their bodies, Tang Tian's teachings were executed a 100%.

“Our Golden Steel Clothes have extremely outstanding defensive capabilities, its most powerful aspect is its ability to endure power and impact, to dissipate it throughout the entire body.” Ming Zhu spoke with arrogance, the Golden Steel Clothes were the most famous product of the Xue Residence, known throughout Sin Domain.

Tang Tian's eye lit up: "I want it!"

He definitely knew the value of the Golden Steel Clothes, power focused at a spot was powerful, but dissipated power was weak, if they could dissipate the enemy's attack throughout their entire body, it was something that could save their lives.

"We have prepared one for each of you." Ming Zhu said: "We have found some of the blades that Master had asked for, Master, take a look to see if they are suitable."

Ming Zhu brought Tang Tian a weapons rack, where varying shapes of blades were hung onto. Heavy Demonic Execution was the unique technique passed down in the Xue Family, and naturally, blades were the most used weapon in the Xue Family.

Tang Tian looked through them, and was immediately attracted to a blade that was the size of a door, he walked over and picked it up.

"This is the Board Guillotine." Ming Zhu introduced: "It is currently the largest blade we have to date, weighing 450kg, it does not have edges, as such a blade no longer uses sharp edges. It was created from Black Iron Stone with Black Sand, it is extremely durable. But its demand for physical strength is extremely high...."

"It will be the Board Guillotine!" Tang Tian said without hesitation.

Ming Zhu was stunned for a moment, before speaking slowly: “Master, we only have two of them....”

The Board Guillotine was a rarely used blade, the Xue Family only used it for display, and thus prepared only two.

“So few?” Tang Tian frowned: “I wanted to give one to each person.”

Ming Zhu turned to look at the masculine men training vigorously, and thought of the scene where every single one of them wielded a Board Guillotine, and immediately quivered and said: “Master, if you need it, it is very easy to manufacture this Board Guillotine, the castle has sufficient Black Iron Stones and Black Sand, we can immediately start production.”

“Yes yes yes!” Tang Tian nodded his head: “I just want this, the faster the better, can we prepare all of it before Lu Tian Wen comes again?”

Upon hearing that he wanted the Board Guillotine to fight against Lu Tian Wen, Ming Zhu immediately replied: “I will begin now!”

She rushed off.

Manly men wielding manly blades!

Tang Tian was imagining the entire Null Division holding onto the tyrannical large Board Guillotines, it was extremely imposing, causing him to be excited.

Tang Tian waved the Board Guillotine around, and even threw it, This is suitable for Ah Mo Li and the rest, but not for me. He did not feel good wielding the blade, when a brazen idea suddenly flashed past his mind.

Can I change this Heavy Demonic Execution into a hand blade technique?

# Chapter 733 – Xu An Zhong’s Bedevilment

---

Xu Ye kept quiet.

“That was what I saw.”

Xu An Zhong was sitting down and taking food from the table, and gobbling it down. After standing guard outside the city for the past few days, he hid himself in the mountains, just to shadow Echo Hill Castle, he slept and ate outdoors, and if not for him having trained bitterly before, he might not had been able to take it.

After a long while, Xu Ye opened his mouth: “You’re saying, that was Lu Tian Wen?”

This information had greatly spooked him, to the point that he had difficulty swallowing it down.

“Yes.” Xu An Zhong replied ambiguously. He was somewhat pleased as he admired to shock on his older brother. Till date, his brother had always been the smartest, almost as if he could foresee the future, and he never ever thought that he would ever witness his older brother revealing a strange and shocked face. His brother always smiled faintly and was unfathomable, as well as being extremely profound.

Xu An Zhong had long digested the shock in his mind.

He sipped on a glass of water and stopped for a moment, then said: “That was Thunder Wind Spear Lu Tian Wen, I definitely saw it! Only that Thunder Wind Spear can be so destructive, to the point that even I dare not go close, and could only watch from afar. Rank 39 on the List of Powerhouse, truly ferocious!”

When Xu An Zhong said the two words ‘truly ferocious’, he spoke it through gritted teeth.

The battle had greatly affected him, regardless if it was Lu Tian Wen or Ghost Face Mask, both their strengths far surpassed his.

After his recent closed door training, his strength had took a qualitative leap, although on the surface he remained calm without revealing anything, but in his heart, he was filled with unprecedented self confidence. In the past, he always thought that he would never be unable to catch up with his brother, but currently, he could see his back view.

After he witnessed the powerful battle between the two, all of his self confidence instantly disappeared into smoke. He thought that his sword heart was as tough as steel, but now he could only laugh bitterly at it, so when he saw the shock on his brother’s face, he felt that his already broken sword heart had recovered slightly.

As expected, happiness came from comparison.

“Tell me everything in detail.” Xu Ye’s expression was extremely serious, as though a calamity was about to strike.

Xu An Zhong thought about it in another way, if Lu Tian Wen were to rush up their doors, Purple Cuckoo City, other than the Qin Family, no one would not be able to escape his grasp.

“When Lu Tian Wen appeared, he did not have any intention to hide himself, and attacked the Echo Hill Castle directly. The first one to stop him was Han Bing Ning. Han Bing Ning exchanged around 10 moves with him before sustaining an injury.’

Upon thinking of Han Bing Ning, Xu An Zhong was immediately filled with respect towards her, under that immense pressure, yet she was able to persist for so long, although the other party was a lady, but she had the heart of a swordsman.

“She exchanged more than 10 moves with Lu Tian Wen?” Xu Ye’s expression was strange.

“Yes.” Xu An Zhong squinted and thought about it carefully, before confirming: “16 moves.”

‘16? Are you sure he is Lu Tian Wen?’

“Yes!”

Xu Ye’s expression could no longer be expressed with the word weird.

At that moment, Xu An Zhong understood how his older brother felt, Yes, a random person jumped out and fought off 16 attacks



coming from Lu Tian Wen, that was something people would find it hard to accept.

After being quiet for a long time, Xu Ye then asked again with difficulty: “After that?”

“After that, it was Ghost Face Mask’s turn.” Xu An Zhong recalled the scene of that day, and his voice involuntarily trembled slightly: “He wielded a blade. At that time, I felt that it was strange, because Ghost Face Mask never used a blade. He suddenly appeared beside Han Bing Ning and took over, and then slashed towards Lu Tian Wen’s spear. The attack was balanced, and then Ghost Face Mask threw Han Bing Ning to safety. He suddenly turned and appeared in front of Lu Tian Wen and threw another blade. That blade was extremely strange, as though it was held high up naturally and then dropped without any additional force, almost like a, almost like a guillotine.”

Xu An Zhong’s fingers, which were on his knees, trembled slightly, which even he did not realise.

Xu Ye listened extremely attentively, he was able to imagine the fight scene, and within Xu An Zhong’s trembling voice, he could sense an indescribable fear and anxiousness.

Xu An Zhong stopped, he kept quiet, and the vein at his forehead and hand would twitch once in awhile, one could see that his heart was thumping quickly. He tried his best to control his emotions, but he was unable to struggle free from the impact of watching the fight.

Xu Ye did not make a sound, he could see Xu An Zhong's struggle, and he himself was overwhelmed by shock.

After maintaining silence for five minutes, Xu An Zhong's dry voice came out: "Lu Tian Wen was sent flying."

Xu Ye was startled, and then opened his eyes wide: "Lu Tian Wen was sent flying?"

"Yes." Xu An Zhong took a deep breath and continued: "He flew all the way out. Ghost Face Mask's body appeared to take a step back, but he suddenly shot forward, not fly, remember, but shot forward! His strange footwork, the air beneath his feet compressed into something like a bowl, and when he stepped on them, he would borrow the momentum to rush forward. It was extremely fast! To the point that I could not see him! He shot forward to Lu Tian Wen and slashed out the second time."

At this time, Xu An Zhong's voice was no longer trembling, he stood up, his face flushed slightly red, his voice filled with some excitement: "The blade came from bottom up, as though it could even slice through the sky. Lu Tian Wen's reaction was extremely fast, his second spear was also very ferocious, along with a vortex, the blade and spear collided. This time, Ghost Face Mask was at the disadvantage and was sent flying out, Lu Tian Wen was even more miserable, he was drilled directly into a mountain."

Xu Ye was dumbstruck, drilled directly into a mountain....

“At that time, Lu Tian Went went berserk, he rushed out, and all around him, there was wind and thunder, and at his spear tip, he released ripples, causing all the wind and thunder to condense, and then he thrust out. Ghost Face Mask raised his blade, but he had a very strange aura around him....”

Xu An Zhong spoke very quickly, along with his red face and hands flying wildly, he looked like a lunatic.

“Lu Tian Wen’s spear, seemed to fly towards Ghost Face Mask’s blade, the blade shattered, but Lu Tian Wen’s spear aura suddenly swelled up like a balloon. Bang, it exploded! Lu Tian Wen was instantly charred black, while half of Ghost Face Mask’s body was also almost destroyed. Then did you know what I saw? I saw Ghost Face Mask’s wounds quickly healing and growing....”

“Life Laws!” Xu Ye was beyond shock this time, his face was so distorted that his face would have permanently become disfigured if it went any further. He himself trained in the Life and Death Laws, so he was not unfamiliar towards Life Laws.

How is that possible.....

“That’s right, he used Life Laws, hahahaha.....”

Xu An Zhong laughed like a lunatic, his face was completely red now, he suddenly spat out blood and fell to the ground, his face as white as paper.

Xu Ye's face changed, he placed his hand on Xu An Zhong's forehead and sent in a bit of Life laws into Xu An Zhong. After that, he heaved a sigh of relief, Xu An Zhong was safe, and it was better for him to have spat out the blood than not.

But, the battle actually made an expert like Xu An Zhong to be bedevilled.....

(TN: I think people would come to know 心魔 as a heart demon in other novels, but I would use bedevilled as it means that he is being tormented by it.)

Xu Ye was completely shocked.

After a long while, the shock gradually disappeared, and he went into deep thoughts.

Seems like, many things have to be re-planned again.

\*\*\*\*\*

Echo Hill Castle was burning hot.

Scarlet red molten steel poured out of the furnace, following an aqueduct that was dug prior, it flowed into many molds.

Whoosh, water was poured onto them, the blood red blade body calmed down, and the water sizzled.

“There is no need to polish it or grind the edges, we need to hurry, get another furnace.”

Ming Zhu rolled up her sleeves, her face was covered in soot, all the Xue Family were females, and she had no other choice but to get them to smelt the weapons. Everyone knew that they were in a predicament, and without complaining or whining, all of these delicate ladies buried their head in the work.

Luckily for them, it was the simplest method of smelting, otherwise, Ming Zhu and the girls would not have the ability to do so.

Although it was rather tough work, but fortunately, the group of delicate ladies used large carriages to carry the Board Guillotine Blades to the training grounds, and could speak with confidence: “These are made by us working hard and painfully, you guys cannot lose, ok!”

When have the group of powerful men ever received such treatment, the flirtatious words of the ladies instantly aroused a layer of goosebumps on their bodies, and their fighting intent soared all over, like raging flames. All of them picked up the door sized Board Guillotine Blades and patted their chests, sounding like metal striking metal, their domineering and lofty nonsenses all started coming up, all the weird punishments, all the slicing and dicing, all the beating the enemies to a pulp, their morale were greatly boosted.

Of course, Tang Tian was not so vulgar, he only had Qian Hui in mind.

He was thinking on how to bring the Heavy Demonic Execution into a hand blade technique.

Although it would lack the advantage of a weapon, but a fist and a palm's movements were much more intimate and smooth, and Tang Tian felt that his own body was stronger than any average weapon.

As for mimicking blades with his hands, Tang Tian was extremely familiar with it, in the past, there was an old man who said he was suitable to become a Close Quarters Combat Expert, although he still had not realised it yet, but his skills at close quarters combat had truly gotten much stronger.

Finger techniques, palm techniques, kicking techniques, consecutive and connecting attacks, these were martial techniques that he was the best at.

After trying it out for a couple of times, Tang Tian found a knack to doing it.

But there was a great difference between a real blade and a hand blade technique, after testing it out many times, he could completely use his hand as a blade, but Tang Tian still felt that there was an awkward feeling.

Why do I feel like this?

Tang Tian pondered extremely hard, he quickly found the problem, it was the final variation.

A real blade's final variation would be the locking of the wrist, while the final variation of a hand blade was the fingers. That meant that, using a real blade to use Heavy Demonic Execution was perfect. But using his hand blade to use Heavy Demonic Execution, there was still space for variations.

It was Tang Tian's first time encountering such a situation, additional space for variations would cause people to be at a loss.

It was the problem of having a bowl too big that one will never be able to fill it up completely with rice.

But Tang Tian did not want to waste the additional space for additional variations, because it meant that there was still leeway. Fights between experts usually depended on a slight line of mistakes.

A hand blade was much more suitable to unleash the Heavy Demonic Execution than a real blade, but only Tang Tian could do it, because of his extremely strong physique, his hand was able to utilize the Origin Force in his body, but if it was another person using his hand to unleash the technique, his hand would be like a balloon that over expanded, and exploded.

Tang Tian became immersed in it.

He still had not gain any enlightenment towards [Sacrificial Execution] and [Demonic Desolate Execution]. He realised, by starting from [Devil, I, execution], every slash would no longer require just technique, but required conforming the focus to correspond with the technique.

He was able to use [Devil, I, Execution], which was by experiencing the blank state of mind that was void of struggle and entanglement, by conforming his state of mind to the technique, he was able to allow the Origin Force in his body to reach a strange state of equilibrium, which was like the sunlight piercing through the dark clouds after a storm, revealing the calm after the storm.

That was why the power of his blade was able to enter Lu Tian Wen's spear aura before exploding.

Tang Tian did not know how to describe it, but he was able to experience his Origin Force conforming with his state of mind, which allowed the Heavy Demonic Execution to attain its brilliance.

The Heavy Demonic Execution was not as simple as he thought, as even the descendants of the Xue Family also lost the way to use it. Simply look, Tang Tian could only speculate on the last two techniques, he knew that their power was not small either, and that the power that he could currently unleash still paled in comparison to the two techniques.



What is Sacrificial? What is Demonic Desolation? I can't understand them.

Tang Tian firmly believed in practising over and over again, to him, geniuses practised their thoughts and their mind, but the godlike young lad always used his muscles to learn.

Perspiration will never lie, yes, the body will always be truthful!

# Chapter 734 – Prepare for Battle

---

A group of people walked out of the city, no one dared to fly, and followed the small mountain path and walked. If they were seen by Lu Tian Wen, his spear would be unleashed on all of them, and they would die even before they could scream.

“I don’t believe it.”

Black Ben Sen remained expressionless.

“I do not believe it either.” Victor agreed.

“I fought with him before, no one is able to become so powerful in such a short frame of time.” Black Ben Sen maintained his expressionless face, his tone was low and powerful, naturally giving off a convincing tone. And his words were equally trustworthy.

The opponent was Lu Tian Wen, not anyone else, ranked 39 on the List of Powerhouses, in other words, he was someone who was able to stand at the 39th position in the entire Sin Domain, what kind of existence was that? Even if they were all major figures in Purple Cuckoo City, but in front of Lu Tian Wen, they were just trash.

No one believed that Ghost Face Mask was able to fight against such a fearsome man.

“We will know in two days.” Xu Ye had recovered from the shock from the previous day, and recovered his indifference: “Lu Tian Wen suffered greatly, he will not let it rest.”

“So we will stand guard in the wilderness for the next few days?” Roland Su, who acted as if she never listened to any of their words, suddenly spoke up.

It was definitely not something worth celebrating, to stay in the wilderness, there was the Rainbow Drift, wild beasts etc, all sorts of innumerable dangers, no chance for showers, to a lady, if it was possible, they would never be willing to stay in the wilderness. And from Xu Ye’s tone, it was not only for a day.

“I don’t know.” Xu Ye replied honestly: “No one knows when Lu Tian Wen will recover and come back.”

Roland Su’s face became extremely ugly, but she did not say a word, for she knew the severity of the matter. Thinking about her own bet, she became happy again, Ghost Face Mask would be able to defend against Lu Tian Wen, if Ghost Face Mask did not die, then this favor towards the Roland Family would be worth cities.

Now, she was praying for Ghost Face Mask to not die, it was a definite that he would be unable to defeat Lu Tian Wen, as long as he survived from Lu Tian Wen’s attacks, he would definitely have the qualifications to be on the List of Powerhouses.

In the entire Purple Cuckoo City, only Qin Zhen was able to enter the List of Powerhouses.

To have a favor with a martial artist on the List of Powerhouses, was definitely the most successful investment the Roland Family would have made after so many years. She could not help but glance at Victor, thinking in her heart, that he was somewhat sharp with his eyes, to be able to think for himself at such a crucial moment,.

Her mood instantly became much better.

Victor was smiling bitterly, thinking that the elders in his family were all idiots. If Ghost Face Mask was killed by Lu Tian Wen, that would be fine, but if he was not killed.....

Ghost Face Mask's strength has to be reevaluated.

“To take up a few days of your time, It would delay the matters that you all have at hand, but always, seeing is believing.” Xu Ye said.

The rest did not say a word, and all became pensive.

Qin Zhen was an extremely ambitious man, causing the other families to be under immense pressure. The Thiopiate Family was willing to rely on the Qin Family, but the rest were not willing to. Under that pressure, everyone had to look for other variables.

Victor looked at the young twins by Ben Sen's side, and could not help but smiled: “Old Black, your eyes are truly good, where did

you find this pair of beauties?”

Ben Sen remained expressionless: “You better not provoke them, they were just refined from the death trials.”

Everyone’s faces towards the two young ladies immediately changed.

“The new generation’s Steel Guards?” Roland Su could not help but ask. Everyone was close, and they knew of the Death Trials, it was the most brutal trial for the Mu’er Steel Guards.

With their tall statures and fine battle robes, they had delicate oval faces with their hair tied up in a ponytail, their big eyes were very bright, and the two looked so identical that no one could differentiate between the two.

“Yes, I brought them along to gain experience.” Ben Sen replied indifferently.

“Greetings seniors.” The two young ladies spoke up at the same time.

“I am Xiao Yu.” “I Am Xiao Ye.”

“Please take care of us!” The two of them said in unison.

Everyone was dumbstruck, the two dynamic young ladies had

melodious voices, no one could ever link them to the Mu'er Steel Guards.

But very quickly, everyone reacted, the Ben Sen was still the most shrewd! Right, why didn't we think of it! Everyone revealed regretful faces, a battle that involved Lu Tian Wen, a martial artist of a different standing could only be discovered and not sought, to be able to witness his battle, it would definitely bring great benefits.

Even if Ghost Face Mask won or lost, Ben Sen would gain from it!

Even Xu Ye revealed a rare look of regret. To any family, the grooming of the future generations was never enough. I place so much emphasis on the benefits and future of the family, why didn't I think of this?

That was everyone's thoughts, all of their moods instantly dampened.

"We're here." Xu An Zhong who had kept quiet the entire journey suddenly spoke up, his face was pale white, but his aura was much better, after experiencing the torment from the bedevilment, although his internal injuries were not light, but it would not hurt him in the long run. As long as he overcame his bedevilment, his strength would transform once again.

They were where he stood to watch the previous battle.

Everyone was shocked, from where they were, Echo Hill Castle was just a small black dot.

“This is a bit too far.” Victor muttered.

Xu An Zhong said sullenly: “Any closer and they will notice us.”

Everyone’s faces changed, is this the strength of the martial artists on the List of Powerhouses?

“Now we just have to wait.” Xu Ye laughed, although the Roland Family took the first move, but he had even more bargaining chips. With the Null Division prisoners in his hands, he had the qualifications to wager.

They all wanted to see, if Ghost Face Mask was able to survive from Lu Tian Wen’s hands.

\*\*\*\*\*

Echo Hill Castle.

“Is Master Ghost Face Mask fine.” Xiao Yao asked with worry: “He hasn’t made any sound in the past few days.”

“We should just do our work well.” Ming Zhu remained calm, as though she was not affected at all. Only her tightening of her grip on her sleeves revealed the same worry she had. The Master had

stayed in his room for three full days without appearing.

If not for occasionally hearing some shouts from inside, they would have long rushed in to check up on him.

Ming Zhu was in a daze, the future of the Xue Family was completely in Master Ghost Face Mask's hands.

On the empty and dark training ground, only Tang Tian's figure that had a faint light aura around, would continue training with perspiration dripping down.

Tang Tian seemed to be in a trance, repeating again and again with his hand blade, training the Heavy Demonic Execution.

Perspiration trickled down his forehead and cheeks, his body looked as though he was pulled out from water, hot mist faintly visible under the rays of light. He remained completely focused throughout the three days and three nights, practising the Heavy Demonic Execution countless of times.

All the Life Origin Essence that he had absorbed were currently being activated, boundless of Origin Force continued to replenish his strength.

Disassembling the parts, joining them up again, practise and practise....

The familiar process of training came back to him.



Perspiration will never lie, this would forever be engraved in Tang Tian's mind. He did not know many principles, but he would never dare forget this.

He himself did not know how many times he had trained, it had been a long time since he trained like that.

The blowing of wind in the air around disappeared, he stood still, all the droplets of perspiration covered his face, his eyes twinkling like the stars.

Creaaaak, the training door opened.

Tang Tian walked out without saying a word.

All of the Null Division members who were training bitterly all stopped, but no one made a sound. Tang Tian's expression was extremely solemn, his entire body emitted an extremely cold fighting intent. He walked through the training grounds and walked out of the castle doors, he sat on the wall cross legged and closed his eyes to meditate.

He was waiting for Lu Tian Wen.

The figure sat stably like a statue against the strong winds that passed through the doors, the scene seen by everybody.

Every single Null Division members who were perspiring, eyes lit up with excitement, the fighting intent in their bodies ignited silently. Tang Tian's movements indicated one thing: Master is already ready!

Ah Mo Li stood up and grabbed his Board Guillotine Blade and rested it on his shoulder, whoosh, the gray Tiny Null Flames soared along the blade's body, and flowed along the entire blade.

“Everyone, get ready for battle!” Ah Mo Li cheered.

One after another, every figure that were drenched with perspiration placed their Board Guillotine Blades on their shoulders, all of their faces, were high spirited and filled with fighting intent.

“Move to your battle positions.”

Nie Qiu who sat cross legged in the corner suddenly spoke up.

On the stone flooring, there were horizontal line markings, all of them were the battle positions meticulously planned out by Nie Qiu. Every position were derived after surveying the entire place.

Everyone quickly rushed over to their respective positions.

“Enter your passive breathing.”

Nie Qiu's voice that was usually calm and gentle had become extremely stern and cold. An expert from the List of Powerhouse? I can't wait to test you out!

Ah Mo Li and everyone else placed down their Board Guillotine Blades and closed their eyes to breathe, all of their breathing was unison, and sounded like a low hum across the entire castle.

Ming Zhu covered her mouth, her expression was one of shock, she had never seen such a thing before. A group of people were actually breathing in unison. In that shock, the group of people in front of her seemed to have become a gigantic ferocious beast, preserving and honing its strength.

Their perspiration slowly dried out, their bronze skin became like metal, the 64 figures in the field sat down unmoving, like 64 bronze statues.

Nie Qiu who sat quietly in the shadows was like an ancient monk, his gray eyes extremely dim.

In the mountain valleys, Lu Tian Wen gradually opened his eyes, at the moment, there were no more rage and anger in his eyes, only a state of calmness.

All the wounds on his body had recovered, but he was not in a rush to fight his way to Echo Hill Castle, but taking his time to hone his senses. This was his usual state, he knew that rushing in would cause more mistakes. He spent a few days nurturing his state of mind, until the last day, where his state of mind had

reached its pinnacle.

In the previous setback, the majority of it stemmed from him underestimating the enemy, but this time, regardless of anything, he would never underestimate them.

In his heart, he had already placed Ghost Face Mask Tang Tian in the same rank as him.

He stood up, grabbed Thunder Wind Spear, and slowly walked out of the mountain valley.

In the sky, he saw the Rainbow Drift quickly approaching.

Let me resolve this battle before the Rainbow Drift comes.

Lu Tian Wen's body flickered with the green Wind and Thunder, and his figure disappeared into the sky.

“Lu Tian Wen is coming!”

Xu Ye who had his eyes closed and meditating suddenly spoke out, instantly causing the rest to be alert. All of them looked out.

A green figure flashed out like lightning, whistling towards them.

The green scar flashed past, causing the sky to rumble with

thunder sounds. From the distance, it sounded like a tide rushing in.

The imposing might shocked everyone!

Is that Lu Tian Wen? Is that the expert on the List of Powerhouse?

On the wall, Tang Tian opened his eyes.

Behind the big door, all the breathing stopped.

In the corner, the hair on Nie Qiu's forehead moved despite having no wind.

## Chapter 735 – Maniac

---

When Lu Tian Wen saw Tang Tian, his eyes immediately flushed red, his power suddenly erupted, as countless of green wind and thunder threads quickly formed around him. The continuous threads of wind and thunder rose and disappeared, they were like a wave that undulated continuously.

The low and resounding roar brought a trembling into people's hearts, as well as the air that started trembling.

Tang Tian stood up, the Origin Force in his body surged out, the roaring of the wind and thunder caused his fighting intent to soar.

Without anything else, Tang Tian's body flickered, he disappeared.

He appeared right in front of Lu Tian Wen, his palm maintained a blade posture, and with an imposing power, he slashed down.

Blade Devil Transformation!

A dazzling spear aura lit up right in front of him and collided ferociously with his hand blade.

Bang!

A circular shock wave exploded out and swept through

everything.

The two of them had stored up their power long enough, and the collision was much more intense than the previous time. A sickle shaped blade shock wave struck the mountain top, and the peak that spanned over 30 m was instantly cut through like tofu, and started to slowly slide down the mountain.

Tang Tian did not use a blade, but unleashed the technique with his hand, but the power released was much stronger than the last time.

Lu Tian Wen was once again forced backwards, he had numerous thoughts in his mind, one of them in which the other party had noticed the problem with the blade. But, to actually think of using his hand to replace the blade, that was too absurd, no matter how tyrannical a body could be, could it be compared to a treasure?

My spear, it shouldn't be nice to taste it right.

Lu Tian Wen sneered in his heart.

Lu Tian Wen was always so imposing, his spear that contained wind and thunder, was much denser, more powerful and tyrannical as compared to the last time. The last time, Tang Tian was only pushed backwards, but this time, Tang Tian was flung over 20m before stabilizing himself. The dense and rich wind and thunder spear caused Tang Tian's entire arm to be numb. Tang Tian was not surprised, but instead extremely happy. The Origin Force revolved around his body, causing the numbness in his hand

to disappear. The more important thing was that from the collision, he could tell that unleashing the Heavy Demonic Execution with his hand was much more outstanding.

His self confidence grew.

Roaring out, Tang Tian shot forward again.

Dense vacuum plates formed beneath his feet like a bridge, and like a ghost, he suddenly appeared a distance away, in a split second he appeared before Lu Tian Wen, his hand slashing upwards.

Executing the Heavens!

Lu Tian Wen was enraged, he had imagined all sorts of reaction his spear, but he never expected that the battle would be exactly the same as the past.

He felt ashamed of himself, Ghost Face Mask had even unleashed the same order of slashes, exactly the same as the previous round.

You have shamed me!

I was actually humiliated!

Lu Tian Wen felt the blood boiling to his head. Without thinking, the spear in his hand trembled, he shot forth again.



Buzzzz!!!!

Countless of wind and thunder threads, formed light auras that entered his spear tip, without any flickering of wind and lightning, his spear tip became transparent like a crystal.

Wind and Thunder Crystal Strike!

There were no wind sounds, but the transparent spear tip gave Tang Tian an unprecedented sense of danger. Without thinking, Tang Tian's hand that had slashed out, suddenly turned into a palm that slapped beneath Lu Tian Wen's legs.

Bang!

An surprise shockwave suddenly exploded beneath Lu Tian Wen's feet.

Lu Tian Wen never thought that Tang Tian would be able to change his moves at such a time! All of his focus was fixated on his spear tip, he was unable to defend, and only felt a huge burst of power from beneath, causing his eyes to be dazzled. He was unable to react, and his entire being was flung straight up into the sky like a rocket.

Seeing Lu Tian Wen flying up into the sky, Tang Tian wiped away the cold sweat dripping down, It was a close save. He himself never thought that the problem that had been hindering him for

days would occur at such a time.

By using his hand to unleash the Heavy Demonic Execution, compared to using a real blade, there was space for an additional variation of movement. For this additional variation, Tang Tian never thought about how he should use it, and only managed to think of something in that urgent situation.

Tang Tian gained a thread of understanding, by leaving this space for variations, it was better than fixing a movement to it. With an additional variation, he had more leeway, more choices, and in such an intense battle, with the additional choice and margin to move, he had an additional shot at victory, for example when he smacked Lu Tian Wen up into the sky.

He had never seen the Wind and Thunder Crystal spear, but the transparent spear tip made his hair stand.

As expected of someone ranked 39 on the List of Powerhouse....

Tang Tian did not give chase, but instead retreated, till he was 10m away from the stone walls.

He was bitterly struggling to hold on, until now.

His trembling body suddenly calmed down, he blurted out two words, which were clear like jade, and coarse like smoke.

“Bring up your blades!”

The breathing that resembled an ancient fearsome beast suddenly stopped, 64 bronze statues suddenly came to life, they opened their eyes at the same time, the broad guillotine blades that were as tall as a full grown man was raised and carried on their shoulders.

Pa, they stepped half a step out with their left leg in unison, their bodies lowering down, the Broad Guillotine Blades still on their shoulder, their right palms firmly holding the blade hilt, their bodies bent forward.

Whoosh, regiments of gray Tiny Null Flames surged onto the blade body, enveloping the entire blade.

Every single one of them raised their heads, and looked at the back standing outside the gates.

Ah Mo Li's eyes were blazing, Fundamental Tang, Ah Mo Li can finally fight with you!

The Lupus Men were even more excited, they clenched their teeth, the veins on their arms holding onto the blade all protruded out from their arms, their zealotry that burned seem to be able to burn them to ashes, We are fighting with our King!

The battle occurred so quickly that Ming Zhu was unable to hide inside the castle, she watched all the masculine figures quietly, Do they not know who they are facing? Do they not know that the enemy outside can use one finger to squash them like ants?

Why is their fighting intent blazing so much?

The scene before her eyes had completely overturned Ming Zhu's knowledge. Even the most elite disciples of the Qin Family, if they knew that a ranked martial artist was standing outside their doors, they would never dare to fight him, and would all escape in different directions, that was already considered loyal.

But.....

This is the Null Division?

Ming Zhu was caught in a daze.

Lu Tian Wen once again felt that he was toyed with, completely toyed with. He did not feel that Tang Tian's last variation was extremely powerful, he only felt that it was done for the sake of doing so! That guy actually used all the same techniques, to try and trick me!

Once and then twice, twice and then thrice, I am completely being played with, I am being humiliated here!

Lu Tian Wen exploded with surging anger.

Every single vein and artery of Lu Tian Wen exploded in size, he felt as though he was about to go crazy, You, a mosquito, want to

toy and humiliate me.

I will never forgive you!

Never!

Go and die!

Lu Tian Wen's hair floated upwards, the surrounding wind and thunder formed a ball. It was the size of a wicker basket, the dazzling green lightning released a terrifying aura.

Lu Tian Wen looked to be in a berserk state, he wanted to kill Ghost Face Mask, he wanted to kill them all.

He was already not thinking about what technique or what style, he just wanted to kill all of them.

One after another, more wind and lightning balls floated with him towards Echo Hill Castle.

Xu Ye and the rest who were watching from the distance all had terrible expressions on their faces, they knew that Lu Tian Wen was strong, but they never thought that the martial artists on the List of Powerhouses would be even stronger than what they had imagined.

They had seen the wind and thunder before, but to use the wind

and thunder to form such balls was a first for them. If the wind and lightning balls were to explode, it could instantly destroy a mountain.

And to have 100 of these such balls appearing at the same time, fear was no longer in their bodies, even their last thought to resist had disappeared.

He wants to use that to exterminate a family?

No, the 100 balls was enough to devastate the Purple Cuckoo City into rubble, and less than a 100 people can survive from it.

So this is the ability of a martial artist ranked in the List of Powerhouses.....

All of their faces were pale white.

“What a pity....” Xu Ye muttered, there was actually fear in his eyes.

Everyone knew what Xu Ye meant, Ghost Face Mask was determined to die, no one was able to survive under the explosions of the hundred odd wind and lightning balls. Even Roland Su’s face was one of defeat, she knew that she had failed. But surprisingly, she did not feel remorseful. How could one feel remorseful losing to someone like Lu Tian Wen?

Shock, her mind only had shock.

“Hahahahaha, all of you must die!”

Lu Tian Wen bellowed while laughing fanatically, and even Xu Ye and the rest could hear his fanatical laughter from afar.

His spear revolved, bringing forth an attractive power that enveloped the sky, and in the blink of an eye, the revolving spear became a vortex, and the wicker basket sized wind and lightning balls all flew towards his spear.

*Zzzzi!*

The balls were absorbed by the spear, and Lu Tian Wen's surrounding lit up with a halo of green wind and lightning light.

*Zzzzi zzzzzi.*

The spear was like an insatiable beast, continuously absorbing the balls, the light halo around him became denser and denser, to the point that his figure could not be clearly seen.

“Hahahahaha, not one of you will escape from this!”

Lu Tian Wen laughed like a maniac, his mind was no longer in a clear state, he ignored all consequences as he powered up his Law Surface with everything he had, the power had already surpassed the limit that he could control. He could no longer see Ghost Face

Mask anymore, he did not care, they were all ants to him.

Bang bang bang!

Every step he took, the air would tremble, the destructive pressure was like Mt. Tai falling down onto them.

The smile on Tang Tian's face had disappeared.

Behind the gates, all the Null Division Members who were ready to attack all had ashen expressions, they clenched their jaws as they withstood the imposing might.

Tang Tian never thought that Lu Tian Wen would go crazy and forsake everything.

But at the moment, thinking further was pointless.

Tang Tian's eyes flashed with a look of fervent, a sneer coming out on his face.

Hehh!

Tang Tian slowly pulled his fist, the Godfist that he had never fully unleashed, the vast variation marks, frantically swept past his mind, the sky full of flickering lights and passing shadows past his eyes, the Origin Force in his body quickly being exhausted.



Tang Tian stood there, with stars appearing all around him, every star representing one variation mark.

The sparkling star lights, grew as they flew from all different directions, 10 strands combining to become one. The newly formed light would continue growing, tens into ones, tens into ones.

The lights in the sky got smaller and smaller, thicker and thicker.

An indescribable aura pervaded out.

## Chapter 736 – Come, Fundamental Tang

---

Nie Qiu was the first to sense the strange change, beneath the violent and city destroying wind and thunder might, a weaker but extremely stable aura was slowly growing. The entire space was trembling, but in that space, it was strangely stable, and continuously growing.

Nie Qiu was bitterly struggling under the pressure emitted by Lu Tian Wen, he was considered a crippled, having his True Power depleted, but what remained was extraordinary heightened senses. These senses made him extremely astute, and also made the pressure emitted by others to be multiple folds stronger than what others would feel.

His state of mind already had signs of breaking down, but right at that moment, he sensed something strange, causing his mind to tremble.

This is....master's preparation for his counterattack....

He was slightly in disbelief and in shock. His senses were extremely sharp, so he knew how terrifying Lu Tian Wen's attack would be, and even the space that the Master had made would collapse.

Counterattack.....

Nie Qiu could not think of any possible counterattack that could be of use against the enemy's incoming attack. Is it a struggle for

the impending doom?

Everything is useless, there's no meaning anymore.

Is this the end?

Nie Qiu was at a loss, he had just shifted from Leo Constellation to Ursa Major Constellation, he was filled with great ambitions, but unexpectedly, before even building up his achievements, he was going to die, Is this fate?

Huh?

He suddenly raised his head, a sense of emotion birthed in his mind.

Bang bang bang!

Lu Tian Wen who was completely layered with a powerful green light stepped forward imposingly, every step would cause the ground to shake and the space to tremble. Everything in sight would tremble incessantly. Crevices started to form along the mountains, pa, one strong boulder shattered, and all the smashed pieces of rocks all started to float in the air, the plants all died and shrivelled, the green all turning into powder.

The fanatical laughter caused the trembling air to distort and refract, making the laughter sound like ghost wails and wolves howling.

Outside the stone walls, Tang Tian slowly pulled his fist back, the air around him was quickly freezing, as though an invisible freezer was blowing freezing air that expanded quickly.

30m, 45m.....

Dazzling light beams continued to surge into Tang Tian's right fist.

The multi-colored light auras were too dazzling, becoming a pure white light, to the point that looking at it would hurt the eyes.

It was as though a sun had blossomed in Tang Tian's right fist.

The fist was pulled back extremely slowly, at the speed of a turtle crawling. Despite its slow speed, the speed of the air freezing was extremely fast. The air froze at a speed which was equal to the speed of the Law Threads entering Tang Tian's right fist.

The two extremes formed a very strong contrast.

Chi chi chi, blood mist and lines started to appear on Tang Tian's body, but Tang Tian ignored all of them, his fist was not influenced at all, remaining slow and stable.

Tang Tian's pupils had lost its focal length, as though he had become emotionless.

From an outsider's perspective, he looked as though he was under a layer of stars, frantically combusting the Origin Force in his body, resulting in the power flowing outwards in the form of petals that entered the stars.

The light beams that were shooting towards him continued to grow.

The Origin Force flying out of Tang Tian's body grew less and less, the light beams growth became slower and slower, Tang Tian became muddled, he felt his body becoming empty.

Is it still not possible.....

Whispers seemed to float past his mind, he could not distinguish if it was him whispering, or the stars that were whispering. He felt as if his body had lost all strength, and was floating slowly.

Am I at my limit....am i going to give it up like this....what joke am I saying.... I am the godlike young lad....

The fuzziness gradually grew weaker.

Suddenly, footsteps sounded out in Tang Tian's ears, shocking him like a sudden thunder.

Ah Mo Li carried his Broad Guillotine Blade, every muscle of his

was stretched tense, his veins protruding out, he was like an enraged bull, blocking the immense pressure. Lu Tian Wen's killing intent enveloped the entire field, while he was already in a berserk state, his killing intent automatically locking onto targets. If Ah Mo Li did not move, he would be fine, but upon moving, the killing intent would immediately be locked onto him.

A pressure multiple times more intense than the previous one struck Ah Mo Li.

In an instant, Ah Mo Li started to perspire in buckets.

Ka ka ka!

All of the bones in Ah Mo Li's body made sounds, his entire body trembled incessantly, he clenched his jaws as his muscles trembled, his eyes becoming bloodshot.

Fundamental Tang, let us fight side by side....

That was the only thought running through Ah Mo Li's mind, it was the simplest of the simplest of thoughts.

Let us fight side by side....

Ah Mo Li's eyes turned round in rage, he grabbed his blade hilt tightly, every muscle in his body was giving their all, he bent his waist and gradually pushed upwards, ignoring the bones that kept on cracking.

Come!

Ah Mo Li roared in his mind, his mouth did not make any sound at all, How can I forever stay behind Fundamental Tang's back!

The immense pressure caused his entire body to sway, as though he was bearing the weight of a mountain, he fervently used all the power in his body, his legs, his arms, his back, everything that he could use, he pushed it all!

All the bones in his body cracked, all the muscles trembled, all of the blood boiling.

His left feet gradually lifted off the ground, even raising up an inch required all of his strength. He opened his eyes wide with a distorted expression, he pushed and pushed, pushing every ounce of strength in him.

Come on!

He screamed in his mind, screaming at the top of his imaginary lungs.

His cheeks were trembling like a sieve, perspiration trickling down his face, suddenly, blood seeped out from his skin, and his perspiration was dyed red, trickling down his forehead down to his cheeks to his chin.

His distorted face made him look sinister, and adding the blood, it was horrifying.

His trembling left feet touched the ground, and all of the weight on his body instantly transmitted down onto the ground, bang, the rocks beneath him shattered.

The pressure on his body instantly increased, blood seeped out from every inch of his body, he looked like a blood man, but Ah Mo Li felt an indescribable pleasure, every inch of his body was burning, and the fervent fighting intent seemed to have devoured him.

Just like that!

Just like that!

Ah Mo Li's entire body was covered in blood. He suddenly raised his head, his sinister face overflowing with blood made him look like a berserk beast on the counterattack, howling for its companion, he roared: "Come, Fundamental Tang!"

"Come, Fundamental Tang!"

The thunderous footsteps and the beast like roar shook Tang Tian's consciousness, like being called awake from dozing off.

Come, Fundamental Tang!



Ah Mo Li's struggling and bloodied body appeared in the corner of Tang Tian's consciousness.

Ah Mo Li.....

Tang Tian was startled, all of the memories from long ago flashed before his eyes like a rolling tape.

"Tang Tian, come out and fight me!"

"Fundamental Tang, i have long seen through you, you can't lie to me!"

"He is the martial artist that I respect the most, he is the one who has the heart of the strongest martial artist, the resolve to pave his own martial dao, the one nicknamed Fundamental Tang, Tang Tian, the godlike man!"

.....

Tang Tian's mouth curved into a shallow smile, feeling a sense of warmth as though it came from the sun.

Ah Mo Li....

A warm emotion surged from his heart.

It feels good to be with everyone.

It feels good to be trusted by everyone, to have everyone's hopes with me.

It feels good to fight with everyone.

~So, regardless of anything, you have no reason to give up, you have no reason to retreat, no reason to cower in fear, they are everything that you cherish, everything you want to protect, everything you want to be with!

~Come, Fundamental Tang.~

Rush forward, that's what you like to do best.

Even if you are afraid to die, you should die at the front.

Tang Tian did not have any grief in his mind, but instead felt strangely warm, that was his conviction, his determination, and he had never seen it so clearly before.

To die fighting in hopes to protect my companions that I cherish, that is something to be happy about.

For some reason, the Heavy Demonic Execution [Sacrificial Execution] swept past his mind. That name that was hard to

understand, suddenly became as clear as day, that indescribable enlightenment, moistened Tang Tian's heart.

So this is what Sacrificial Execution is.....

There is no bitterness, no ruthlessness, no struggle, only determination, conviction, and happiness.

His originally dried up body started to bubble up with strands of power, following the variations of the Sacrificial Execution, they flowed inside Tang Tian's body.

Beneath the sky full of stars, a gigantic demonic figure appeared behind Tang Tian, it had three heads and six arms, releasing a faint gold light, golden light rays slowly shot out into the sky full of stars.

The light beams that stopped growing started to grow quickly again.

A hundred million variations into a million, a million variations into a hundred thousand, the hundred thousand variations into a thousand, a thousand into a hundred, a hundred into tens....

The last ten light beams were all 30m thick, shooting down from the sky, their growth became slower, while the demonic figure at his back dimmed down.

Tang Tian knew, he had reached the maximum.

The final change occurred, the ten light beams merged into one, it dropped down and transformed into a gigantic tree of light, which comprised of all the variations in the fist technique system.

Although the demonic figure behind him was no longer releasing any gold light, but its existence was able to allow him to control the tree of light.

Tang Tian opened his eyes, his vision was dyed red, blood mist surrounded him, causing the entire frozen space around him to be dyed like a bloodied glass, which brought forth an impeccable beauty. The light aura in his right fist looked like a red lamp that had lampshade on.

One side of the sky which was blood red and the other green, collided perfectly.

Come, Fundamental Tang!

Tang Tian shouted at himself in his mind, and punched out.

The light ball that looked like the sun, shot out a dazzling light beam straight into Lu Tian Wen who resembled a fiend god in the sky.

Sensing the danger, Lu Tian Wen regained a bit of clarity, he roared and thrust his spear out.

Bang!

The dazzling light aura brightened up the entire area into a blank white.

The snow white light aura shot through the gates, causing Nie Qiu to be covered in light, his body trembled and he spat out blood. The moment his blood flew out, he roared with all his might: “Kill!”

Ah Mo Li felt his body becoming lighter. He then heard Nie Qiu’s shout, immediately, all of his fighting intent surged, he swung his Broad Guillotine Blade and rushed out.

“Kill!” The men behind all roared out in unison and sprinted forward.

Every step they took was like a deep and heavy bass drum, the unity in their steps caused the Xue Family members to be greatly shaken.

The bloodied big sized man, along with 63 other bronze masculine men, roared at the top of their lungs, with fury in their eyes, they tensed their muscles, like 64 wild beasts, they rushed towards the big gates.

Upon stepping out, they jumped on the stone walls, and figure after figure shot up into the sky.

In the dazzling light, the 64 bronze figures swung their Broad Guillotine Blades up high.

With no turning back, they gave it their all and slashed with all their might!

# Chapter 737 – Victory

---

When the light aura blossomed out from the spear tip, Lu Tian Wen's vision turned blank, but he became clear-headed again.

He was shocked to realise that the trembling in the surrounding air had disappeared, the intense wind and thunder had disappeared, the power he had projected into his Law Surface, had actually disappeared without a trace.

He started perspiring cold sweat.

Before he could react, a powerful wind pounced towards him inside the white light.

Almost subconsciously, Lu Tian Wen brought his Thunder Wind Spear to his chest.

Clang!

A powerful blade slashed onto the Thunder Wind Spear, the surprising force caused Lu Tian Wen's palm to turn hot and almost lost control of his spear, as though it wanted to fly out. Why does Ghost Face Mask still have strength? This technique was the one he used before.

Impossible!

Lu Tian Wen was shocked, he still did not understand how Tang Tian's technique had broke through his technique. All of the power in his Law Surface had shot back into his body, unless the opponent had enlighten on a Law Domain, there was no way it could break through his technique.~

Clang clang clang!

The sound of consecutive strikes came out, along with the powerful wind, striking onto his spear, causing him to tremble like a sieve.

What....what the hell is going on.....

The blood on his face slowly retreated away, causing him to become pale white, in normal circumstances, he would never ever put such a slash in his eyes. But at the moment, he was already an arrow at the end of its flight, with the consecutive slashes, he no longer had time to take a breath, and his arms were numb.

He held in one breath in his chest, but he never had the chance to exhale and inhale again.

Clang clang clang clang!

His arm was extremely numb, but he did not dare make any reckless moves, he continued to hold onto the same breath, if he were to make a careless mistake, he would waste this single breath, and that would be when he die.



His face was distorted, his entire body trembling, but he held on.

He no longer remembered how many slashes he had taken.

Ah Mo Li was the first to slash out, and by borrowing the recoil of the spear, he once again landed at the big gates. Seeing that his brothers were all rushing towards Lu Tian Wen, he smiled, his bloodied face revealing his pure white teeth.

He retreated back towards the big gates, every step he took would leave behind a bloodied footprint.

He retreated back to his original position.

There were times that we have to be pushed back to our starting point, and only then would we be able to see thoughts from then.

With the Broad Guillotine Blade by his side, the warm viscous blood flowed along the blade and dropped on the ground.

Despite being bloodied all over, the pair of eyes never shed any tear or anger, only a look of determination and seriousness.

He dragged the Board Guillotine Blade and started sprinting, towards the stone castle's gates. Towards the sky outside, towards the light of the battle, towards his dreams and conviction, he ran with all of his might, the wind whistled past his ear, the blood

stench all over him, the wounds all over him burned, every step he took was his scream to the world

I have never given up, come on, Ah Mo Li.

Passing through the big gates, he ran towards the light, stepping up the stone walls, he used all of his might and threw himself out.

Come on, Ah Mo Li!

Seeing Lu Tian Wen in front of him who kept on becoming larger, Ah Mo Li screamed in his heart, all of his muscles tensed up, pulling the blood stained Broad Guillotine Blade from bottom up, he suddenly slashed out.

Executing the Heavens

Lu Tian Wen who was struggling bitterly, had vision extremely blurry, when a blood red figure suddenly rushed towards him like a wild bull.

The spear in his hands no longer had any slashes towards him.

This....

Lu Tian Wen's eyes was filled with fear, a blood red line cut along dead center of his body, splitting him in half. Chi, blood spurted all over, and the fear in Lu Tian Wen's eyes grew denser.

No.....

Ah Mo Li did not hold back when he flew straight towards Lu Tian Wen, exhausting every last bit of strength in him. He struck the mountain behind, and rolled into the distance like a boulder, all the way until he was stopped by a real boulder before truly stopping.

He laid on the ground, and could not even lift his finger.

He stared blankly at the sky, his face a blank and filled with disbelief.

I did it.....I did it.....did I do it?

Tang Tian who was floating in the eye finally calmed down, his eyes went black, and he dropped.

A sword concept flew into the sky, and in the next moment, a figure that emitted the aura of an ice mountain appeared, and grabbed onto Tang Tian. It was Han Bing Ning who had just came out from closed door training.

Han Bing Ning was currently as sharp as a cold sword, her entire being emitted an extremely sharp and cold aura, completely different from her reserved past. After sustaining injuries, she kept herself in closed door training, while everyone was fighting with their lives at stake, her heart brimmed with unhappiness and

regret, as she was unable to fight alongside everyone else, and could not come out earlier and stop her progress.

Sssssi, her figure flashed, and immediately appeared beside Ah Mo Li, and picked him up as well.

Although it was just a slash, but all the Null Division Members had completely exhausted their physical strength, they sat down on the floor and gasped for breath.

Ming Zhu was stunned, it was not only her, the entire Echo Hill Castle was in a strange state of silence.

After a long time, cheers shook the entire sky.

They won!

The group of people who were spectating the battle, after hearing the cheers from Echo Hill Castle, were filled with shock and disbelief.

“They.....they actually killed Lu Tian Wen?” Victor’s words sounded like nonsense.

The rest were nowhere better.

“Impossible....Lu Tian Wen’s technique, how can they break.....” Xu Ye’s currently looked like a maniac. Out of all of them, he was

the strongest, and thus was impacted the most.

Xu Ye's mumbles were buried deep in everyone's minds.

Lu Tian Wen's last technique, was another grade technique, something they had never seen before, how could it be broken?

Roland Su was stunned, the entire fight seemed like a dream. 65 Null Division Prisoners was definitely not a small number, and this bet, to the Roland Family, would never come again. If she had not taken the position of the Patriarch for a very long time and had powerful authority, she would never have had the authority to make such a decision.

Lu Tian Wen's fanatical display made her believe that her position had been usurped from her wrong decision, even she did not believe that Ghost Face Mask could hold on.

She knew that she had lost.

But no one had thought that, it was totally the opposite, not only was Ghost Face Mask not killed by Lu Tian Wen, but he even killed Lu Tian Wen. Roland Su who initially thought that she had gambled everything she had away, was suddenly struck by a rainbow when she realised the reality, and in that time, she just felt as if she was in a dream.

Ben Sen was the first to recover from his shock, he did not hope to achieve anything, but for the sake of the two young ladies to see

and witness a powerful battle, but who knew that he was able to witness such a heaven defying battle.

The twins were void of blood as their faces as white as paper, their expressions stuck.

Ben Sen suddenly spoke out: “Xiao Yu, Xiao Ye.”

The two ladies stared at Ben Sen in a daze.

“The two of you no longer need to return to the residence.” Ben Sen said gravely: “Miss Han has suffered a lot in the Mu’er family, Young Miss has always feeling ashamed and uneasy, the two of you will go to Echo Hill Castle now, and follow Miss Han from now on, and assist her. Service Miss Han, like you have serviced the young miss.”

The two young ladies could not understand Ben Sen’s instructions at all, but as they had been groomed by him since young, they listened and executed his orders through and through.

Ben Sen did not explain, and said: “Go. Their great battle have ended, they are lacking in manpower, the earlier you go, the more you can help.”

The two young ladies ‘oh’ in puzzlement, and turned to fly towards Echo Hill Castle.

The rest then recovered from their shock, they never expected

for Ben Sen to snatch the first move again, and were all scolding him in their hearts, the Black face looked like a fool, but was sharper than the most intelligent person. He brought his future generation out to see the world, and then gifted the Steel Guards over to Han Bing Ning, the moves he made were all ingenious.

Although Lu Tian Wen's defeat was due to a gang up of Ghost Face Mask and his subordinates, but Ghost Face Mask's strength was just slightly weaker than Lu Tian Wen, Furthermore, the Null Division Prisoner's display of battle power had shocked everyone.

If Ghost Face Mask could assemble the entire Null Division, he would definitely sweep the entire Sin Domain and be invincible.

At this time, everyone knew that Ghost Face Mask was the biggest and fattest backer they could go for, and those who did not jump onto him were pure dumb.

Ben Sen's move to gift the two young ladies to Han Bing Ning was an ingenious move, as Han Bing Ning had been in a bad position in the Mu'er family. In truth, no one knew of the relationship between Han Bing Ning and Ghost Face Mask, and if Han Bing Ning were to be enraged by the two young ladies, it would not be good. Gifting them to her could be considered a misfortune as well. Furthermore, Han Bing Ning was definitely an important figure in Ghost Face Mask's Null Division, and even if they were unable to obtain the favor of Ghost Face Mask, obtaining the favor from Han Bing Ning was good as well.

It could be said that Ben Sen's play was done perfectly, causing the others to be furious and jealous.

Roland Su was the most calm, she had shown her position the earliest, and faced the greatest risk and danger, and was not like the rest to bet after the event. She looked at Victor's bitter face, Xu Ye had no worries as well, as long as he gift the Null Division Prisoners in his hands, naturally that would be a favor as well.

The Thiopiate Family is truly stupid.

She sighed in her mind, she knew of the reason why Victor sought her, as he already had thought well in his own plans. He hoped that Ghost Face Mask would be able to see his advice towards Roland Su and his heartfelt actions, so that the Thiopiate family would not be in too bad a situation.

She secretly promised herself, if she was able to help Victor at that time, she would.

Xu Ye suddenly laughed: "I am truly curious, when this news reached the ears of the Lu Family, and reach Qin Zhen's ears, how would they look."

"They will definitely think that it is fake." Ben Sen who was feeling glad joked, something that was rare.

Victor suddenly said: "Say, what if we were to suddenly ambush the Qin Family now?"

Everyone had just calmed down, but were shocked by Victor's



suggestion.

Victor's eyes flashed with a look of ferocity: "Once we choose to side with Ghost Face Mask, we will be going against Qin Zhen. Do you think that Qin Zhen will let us go? So why not just break of all ties, take the opportunity that Qin Zhen is not here, and rescue all the Null Division Prisoners out from the Qin Family. With the additional Null Division members, Ghost Face Mask will be even stronger, our deeds will be even bigger, and even if Qin Zhen comes back, so what?"

Seeing everyone's hesitations, Victor's face flushed red, and spoke excitedly: "Don't tell me you guys still wish to have some sort of leeway? Will Qin Zhen give that to us? Never! If he knows that you guys gave the prisoners to Ghost Face Mask, and knows that you, Ben Sen, gave your Steel Guards to Han Bing Ning, he will definitely not let us off. We will not stand a chance against the powerful martial artists on the List of Powerhouses. Only Ghost Face Mask can handle Qin Zhen!"

Ben Sen stood up: "Count me in."

Roland Su stood up as well: "Count me in as well."

Xu Ye revealed a bitter laugh: "This time, we are all boarding the pirate ship."

Everyone looked at each other, and laughed out loud.

# Chapter 738 – The Meeting Of The Simas

---

Tang Tian had no time to bask in the joy of victory, he had many thoughts that required sorting out. Enlightening on the Sacrificial Execution at the last crucial moment caused the demon figure to form, allowing the might of his fist to increase. Tang Tian always had sharp intuition with regards to battle related things. He had the faint feeling that the demon figure formed from the Heavy Demonic Execution was much more valuable than the Heavy Demonic Execution itself.

And he needed time to comprehend everything in silence.

It was not only him, everyone in the Null Division had benefitted from the battle.

The blood in Ah Mo Li's body had seeped out from his skin, showing how much load he had to bear. His body was already extremely tyrannical and strong, and the load was was like the most intense of flames that ferociously refined the blood and the muscles in his body. His Tiny Null Flames had completely transformed into Null Flames, and he ignited his Primordial Fire Origin.

What was even more worth celebrating was that his state of mind had a breakthrough, the aura he gave off was even more stable and heavy, the initial reckless vibe he gave off actually became reserved. Because of this breakthrough, he actually had a miraculous achievement in the third slash of the Heavy Demonic Execution, [Devil, I, Execution].

And the other person who had the greatest benefits was Nie Qiu. his senses were far stronger than everyone else, and under the immense pressure of Lu Tian Wen, he actually projected his senses out like a spiderweb across the entire field, completely observing everything. When he roared out at the last moment decisively, it caused internal injuries, but also caused his state of mind to metamorphose. What no one could ever expect was that the law he had gained enlightenment one was an extremely unique law, [Yin Yang Formation].

This unique law did not require him to use any power of the physique, but it could not form a Law Exposure, and was unable to give him power. Upon enlightenment, it was instantly a Law Surface, and was like an invisible net that floated around Nie Qiu's body.

Nie Qiu's initially heightened senses and astuteness became even more terrifying.

Most importantly, Nie Qiu saw hope in his path towards war formations, and to a military general, nothing could make him even more excited.

Han Bing Ning needed time to retract the sword concept she had unleashed, the current her was, although she was showing off her ability, but she was still far from perfectly controlling it.

And as for the other members of the Null Divisions, all of them gained different degrees of tempering, none of them had retreated, but they had struck out into the light aura with everything they had. Not fearing death even in that moment, it caused them to

improve greatly. The Old Null Division was just an experimental group, they had never experienced real wars or battles.

Experienced soldiers and new recruits would always have very obvious differences, furthermore, after going through such an intense, terrifying and difficult life and death battle, all of them went through heaven shocking transformations.

The after battle period was extremely crucial for them. As long as they could digest everything well, their overall strength would take a qualitative leap.

So the first thing that Tang Tian did when he woke up was to order the entire Echo Hill Castle to be closed.

Pitiful Ping Xiao Shan began his large scale special training. This time, it was truly a large scale special training, other than Tang Tian, every single Null Division member were all crying piteously for food.

All of them knew that time was precious, and thus no one wasted a second.

A human's life is the same as going through a battle, while fighting, one would be fighting for himself, fighting against the enemy, and fighting against oneself. Maybe one will never truly win against oneself, but if one never go through any battles, he would have no qualifications to even call himself a failure. Because only people who have truly lost in a battle are called a failure.

They were an entire group of fighting zealots.

\*\*\*\*\*

Bright Light City.

“I never thought that we would meet under such circumstances.” Sima Xiao was filled with emotions, and revealed a pensive look: “If I remember right, you are called Sima Xiang Shan?”

The two of them were of vastly different positions, if not for Sima Xiang Shan having the same last name as him, he would never take note of such a minor figure.

Sima Xiao laughed: “How am I the Scorpio King now? We are all just lowly prisoners. I am curious, how did you obtain the trust of the Mo Family.”

“Nothing much.” Sima Xiang Shan said coldly and eerily: “A wise man submits to his circumstances.”

Sima Xiao laughed: “Don’t try and probe me. I know of you. You, Ah Mo Li, Han Bing Ning and Liang Qiu, all of you were together with Tang Tian in Star Wind City. Others might betray Tang Tian, but you guys will never do it.”

How could the person who became Scorpio King be any ordinary person? He had obtained all the information on Sima Xiang Shan quickly.

Sima Xiang Shan squinted his eyes, his mind trembling slightly, he had never thought that Sima Xiao would know everything about a minor figure like him, but he remained unfazed: “This is not a betrayal, who knows if he is already dead, I can’t follow him into the grave.”

Sima Xiao chuckled: “You think that Tang Tian will die?”

“Who won’t die?” Sima Xiang Shan declined to speak further.

“No one knows, for you to do this, aren’t you afraid of being too anxious.” Sima Xiao spoke with a bit of mockery, and asked suddenly: “What rumors have you heard?”

Sima Xiang Shan’s heart was shocked, but he was extremely shrewd, and smiled insincerely: “Did Scorpio King obtain any rumors?”

Sima Xiao could not help but once again reevaluate the crafty man standing in front of him, to be able to talk so frankly with assurance in front of him and not reveal anything, even though he was not known, but he was not one to be underestimated. I never thought that Tang Tian would have such a subordinate, they all have their own respective strengths.

Sima Xiao knew that he would never be a part of Ursa Major Constellation, and wanting to obtain their trust was extremely difficult, and the more he beat about the bush with the other party, the harder it would be for the other party to trust him. He

decided to talk bluntly: “I am the Scorpio King, and am not planning to stay on this sideline. I believe that we both agree to this point. I don’t believe that I alone can break out of this Sin Domain, and without Tang Tian, none of us will be able to leave. And now that I have lost my strength, how am I a threat to you guys?”

“The danger about you has never been about your martial abilities.” Sima Xiang Shan laughed sinisterly, Sima Xiang Shan knew of the difference between them, the plans and trickeries implemented, Sima Xiao was able to shoot to the position of Scorpio King with the help of the Clan Union power.

Sima Xiao laughed, he knew that his words was of some use.

“Crazy Tang is not dead.” Sima Xiang Shan suddenly said.

Sima Xiao’s attention was roused: “That is for sure, I have never thought that he would die so easily here. But where is he now?”

Sima Xiang Shan looked at him: “This, I cannot say.”

Sima Xiao did not get angry, but continued to pursue: “What are your plans?”

“Save ourselves.” Sima Xiang Shan waved his hand at Sima Xiao and said sneakily: “We are all crude people, and none of us are good at tricks, I never expected to meet you, who is an expert at this, so help us plot something.”

Sima Xiao did not know whether to laugh or cry, he had not met anyone for a long time who would dare use such a frivolous tone to talk to him.

But he was a realistic man, he knew that squabbling over all the petty things and not think of the big picture was a definite way to die. As an ambitious and ruthless man, he knew how to judge the hours and gauge the situation extremely well, and was always more outstanding than others.

He knew it was time for him to perform. If he did not show his usefulness, he would not be valuable at all, and he suspected that Sima Xiang Shan might kill him.

During the period of being imprisoned, he had obtained the trust of the Li Family, and was rather familiar with the situation in Bright Light City. As to how to take advantage of a crisis and obtaining personal gain, it was something he did routinely and was an expert. If it was only him, it would be difficult to achieve much, but matching with Sima Xiang Shan, the situation could be said to be different. The Li Family who was supporting him, along with the Mo Family who was supporting Sima Xiang Shan, were the number one and number two families of Bright Light City.

“Since you want to play, we should play it big.” Sima Xiao revealed a smile, his smile was extremely harmless, and he started to reveal his plans.

The more Sima Xiang Shan listened, the more surprised he was,



This man is truly crafty.

He had to admit, it was an ingenious plan, there were no flaws in it at all. Sima Xiao had used the borrowed strength to defeat others, driving a wedge between ties, and had used his tools to their maximum. Sima Xiang Shan believed that as long as the plan was implemented, the entire Bright Light City would plunge into chaos. No one would have ever thought that the hands in the shadows would actually be the two of them.

At that time....

Sima Xiang Shan squinted his eyes, Bright Light City has 700 Null Division Members.

He licked his lips.

\*\*\*\*\*

Qin Zhen sent off his guests with a face of smile, he had a huge stature, a skinny face and a sharp gaze, although he was smiling, but it would still make others tremble.

After he returned, the smile on his face disappeared, all the servants and maids around did not dare to make a sound.

Qin Zi Zhen was dead, the entire Archer Unit was destroyed, Wei Han and Mu Ze was dead, The Xue Family had chosen to rely on Ghost Face Mask and escaped to Echo Hill Castle, these consecutive

news had plunged his face into darkness. Ghost Face Mask's strength far exceeded his expectations.

The Qin Family had suffered greatly, if he did not know that the Lu Family had already sent Lu Tian Wen, Qin Zhen himself would already have returned back to Purple Cuckoo City.

He calmed down, knowing Lu Tian Wen had made his move, and focused on forming relationships and engaging with others. The Lu Family did not seem to care about him purchasing the Null Division Prisoners from them, if not, he would never have had the chance. He knew that the Lu Family's focus was on the Xue Family, and knew that they saw something in the Xue Family, but after so many years, he had never found the secret of the Xu Family, and thus decided to sell them off.

This price ain't bad, to still be able to attract the attention of the Lu Family.

He had to grasp the time, the moment the Lu Family reconsidered, he himself would not be able to obtain the Null Division Prisoners from the other families, and that was the reason for him not returning to the Qin Family.

But, the other families were no fools either, all of them were clearly aware of the Null Division prisoners' value, and before he made a reasonable offer, no one would sell them. That made all the negotiations extremely difficult, but Qin Zhen still made quite a harvest.

He had negotiated with three families, although the price he had to pay would hollow out the Qin Family's properties, but to Qin Zhen, it was all worth it.

Many people were secretly mocking him, and think that his fervent purchase of Null Division Members was useless, as he would not be able to absorb them.

All the Null Division Members were known for being untameable and rampant, and other than the extreme minority that chose to defect themselves, no one else were able to subdue them.

Everyone thought that the Qin Family did not have the ability to absorb the Null Division Members, and would only explode in his own face.

Thinking about that, Qin Zhen's face revealed a sneer.

No one knew that he had a unique method to allow the prisoners to listen to him obediently, and he was not worried about them being rampant. He had not touched any one of the prisoners yet, because he wanted to give off a false impression that he was a gambler and did not care about the consequences. Only from that will others think that he was crazy, and sell the prisoners to him.

Right at that moment, an outburst came from the outside.

Zong Zheng Yan Mei, who was bruised and tattered and torn, barged in: "Master, the Four families have formed an alliance and

ambushed us....”

Before he could even finish speaking, his pale face fell flat on the floor, and ceased to breath anymore.

Clang, Qin Zhen’s face was blank white as he dropped the teacup in his hand.

## Chapter 739 – The Dark Blue Spot

---

“The Qin Family was ambushed?”

Lu Sheng Xiang’s face revealed a look of ridicule, he had seen how Qin Zhen had been running up and down for the past few days. He could immediately tell that Qin Zhen was an ambitious man. Although he did not stop it, but he was affected by it. The connotation of the Qin Family could not be compared to the Lu Family, and the Lu Family would never be so brash, they thought that Qin Zhen was overestimating himself.

Lu Sheng Xiang looked nothing special, resembling an old farmer, even the clothes on him were extremely simple. The Lu Family became an extremely simple family ever since he took on the position as the Patriarch, and only Lu Tian Wen continued living lavishly in the entire family, which was something that Lu Sheng Xian was helpless about it.

“That’s right, it is said that the other four families of Purple Cuckoo City have joined forces, and suddenly launched an ambush on the Qin Family, completely destroying the Qin Family.” The butler reported respectfully: “Zong Zheng Yan Mei was able to escape, but he suffered from serious injuries, and was only able to speak a sentence when he saw Qin Zhen before dying.”

“Qin Zhen has become the sole survivor.” Lu Sheng Xiang’s words had a thread of joy despite the calamity.

“Yes.” The Butler smiled.

“Any news on Lu Tian Wen?” Lu Sheng Xiang casually asked.

“Not yet.” The butler continued to smile.

“Humph, who knows where he ran off to.” Lu Sheng Xian said unhappily: “Not even doing his work right.”

The butler did not speak this time, it was not something he could speak on.

Lu Sheng Xiang had always adored his young brother since young. He was different from the old fashioned Lu Sheng Xian, Lu Tian Wen had always been unbridled and wild since young, his behavior was always absurd, going into fights before even completing sentences, which caused a lot of trouble.

But although he was very rebellious, Lu Tian Wen’s talent was extremely high. Lu Sheng Xiang did not say it just once, but if not for Lu Tian Wen’s late awakening, he would not only stop at rank 39 on the List of Powerhouses.

But even so, it was sufficient enough for the Lu Family to show disdain towards the others, as they had two powerful martial artists on the List of Powerhouses.

Lu Sheng Xiang never worried about Lu Tian Wen’s safety, and was also not worried about being unable to obtain the Xue Family.

Although Lu Tian Wen was overly excessive with his desire to fight and kill, but in any place, the number of people able to kill him could be counted with one's fingers, and furthermore, he had the protection of the Lu Family. Purple Cuckoo City's families might dare to ambush the Qin Family, but would they dare do anything to the Lu Family?

This was the so called difference in connotation, and why Lu Sheng Xiang did not place Qin Zhen in his eyes. He felt that Qin Zhen's ambitions far surpassed his own strength.

Lu Sheng Xiang shook his head, and then threw the matter to the back of his mind.

\*\*\*\*\*

Inside Echo Hill Castle, there was no celebration for the victory, every single person was strained and busy. After killing Lu Tian Wen, the sense of victory was still far away, with Qin Zhen and Lu Sheng Xiang, another two powerful martial artists on the List of Powerhouses, bringing a heavy pressure on every single person.

In truth, killing Lu Tian Wen had considerable luck and things that could not be replicated. If they were to redo it once again, their chances of failing was far higher than the chance of winning.

At the moment, it was as though everyone were stimulated by some drug, all of them training fervently.

The battle had allowed them to experience the cruelty of wars, and also showed them hope, even if they were not as strong as Lu Tian Wen, but their attacks were still able to be of substantial effect and they were not ants.

Everyone could clearly feel themselves improving, which made them even more excited.

In the training grounds, every member of the Null Division was seated cross legged, their bodies emitting the Tiny Null Flames.

Seated right in the center was Nie Qiu, inside his void vision, there were thin gray lines and many bright spots. The gray lines represented yin, while the bright spots represented yang.

The closer it was to him, the more stable and congealed the bright spots and gray lines became.

On the closest light spots, there would be a Null Division member seated, he was carefully experiencing the undulations brought by the gray lines. They were the undulations of Laws, and Nie Qiu realised that the gray lines were extremely sensitive to the Law undulations. As for the Null Division members, as they had the Tiny Null Flames, they quickly grasped onto the Law Threads.

As a military general from Heaven's Road, Nie Qiu's control aura was extremely outstanding, although he was blind, he was extremely sensitive towards the undulation of energy, and this caused his control aura to be extremely meticulous.



The undulations of the gray lines immediately made him think about control aura.

He started to test it.

As for the Null Division Members, they were all going through Law Refinement on their bodies, as long as they had sufficient Power of the physiques, they could learn the second slash of the Heavy Demonic Execution. After experiencing the might of the first slash, everyone was eagerly looking forward towards the second slash.

Matching with Nie Qiu did not affect their training, and naturally they allowed him to move around them.

Ah Mo Li who had ignited his Primordial Fire Origin meant that he was at a higher level, but there were problems too. He needed to once again become comfortable with his own body, the use of Origin Force had a great difference as compared to using the power of the physique.

Furthermore, he needed to absorb a specific amount of Life Origin Essence daily. It was easy to absorb them, but digesting them was not easy, in which he had to continuously slash and wave the Broad Guillotine Blade and continued to practise the Heavy Demonic Execution.

Other than that, he needed to practise utilising the Vacuum Plates.

Created by Tang Tian, it did not require the use of Laws or energy, and only required a strong enough physical force. By learning the Vacuum Plates, they would be able to soar into the sky, which was extremely important to them, as it would increase their mobility and agility.

It was not only Ah Mo Li that was required to learn it, all of the Null Division Members had to learn it as well.

Heavy Demonic Execution and Vacuum Plates were in essence extremely compatible.

Han Bing Ning sat cross legged quietly in a room, which was extremely cold, the ground and the surrounding walls were covered with layers of frost. All around Han Bing Ning, there were rays of sword concepts that formed a cyclone that revolved around her.

Sword Tempest Cyclone.

When her sword concept was released, it was difficult to control, and she just used her sword concept to temper her body.

Many pieces of transparent sword aura glistened with cold intents that vibrated in the room. Gradually, the sword auras all started to shatter, the large pieces of sword auras became many small pieces of sword auras, and then became the size of fingernails, they continued to shatter, until they were fine as granules.

The dense ice granules gathered around Han Bing Ning, and slowly spiralled.

The bone chilling cold intent and the biting cold sword concept were like countless tiny blades flying around.

Han Bing Ning bore the pain without making a sound, the entire process of tempering the body was always painful. Not only did she not stop, but continued to release the sword concept, shattering them and adding them into the ice granules.

The ice granules became thicker and thicker, the intensity of the pain rose, it was like torture.

Han Bing Ning did not make any sound, her entire body trembled non stop like a sieve, but she kept her lips closed, and did not make a sound. After the battle with Lu Tian Wen, she had been recuperating in closed door training, and she did not rush out, causing her to feel regret.

But she also knew that her strength was insufficient, and if she were to join the battle, she would only be a burden. When she thought that the one to kill Lu Tian Wen was actually Ah Mo Li, she was unreconciled to it.

Only by becoming stronger, can I fight alongside Tang Tian.

She wanted to ignite her Primordial Fire Origin!

The biting cold and fine sword concept slowly and steadily grinded her flesh and her willpower, she was fearless.

For Tang Tian who had always been progressing differently from others, he encountered problems.

It was reasonable to say that he had gained a lot from the battle. Although the Godfist was not complete, but its distance to completion was no longer far. More importantly, he had gained enlightenment on the Demon Figure from the [Sacrificial Execution].

If not for the enlightenment of the Demon Figure, Tang Tian's punch would not had been able to progress.

The Demon Figure was without a doubt extremely powerful, and Tang Tian guessed that the last slash of the Heavy Demonic execution, [Demonic Desolate Execution] should be related to the Demon Figure. After the experience from the last time, Tang Tian quickly grasped how to congeal the Demon Figure, but the congealed Demon Figure was actually extremely thin and faint, and then shattered.

Tang Tian thought that he had missed something, and after thinking for a short moment, he tried it again.

The Demon Figure appeared again, but very quickly, it shattered as well.

Tang Tian who did not believe in external influences quickly tried again and again, but every time, the demon figure would shatter.

Tang Tian felt that he had done something wrong, so he calmed down and tested it a few more times, and finally found the reason. The reason for the shattering of the Demon Figure was actually a dark blue spot in his heart.

He then thought about it, it was Qin Zi Zhen's arrow when he was rushing out of the city gates.

The dark blue law imprint, was able to enter his body through his fist. Because it had not impeded him before, other than having an additional dark blue imprint on him, it did not affect him otherwise, so Tang Tian did not care.

Until now.

The might of the Demon Figure was extremely formidable, but for it to get affected, it made Tang Tian see the dark blue law imprint as something that could not be underestimated.

The Demon Figure was a crucial technique to increase Tang Tian's fighting capabilities, and Tang Tian was unable to tolerate having such a terrifying danger concealed in him.

What is this dark blue Law Imprint? Tang Tian was curious, to be able to disrupt the laws of the Demon Figure, it was definitely not

something weak.

Tang Tian congealed the Demon Figure again, but this time, he placed his attention on the dark blue spot, to see that it would release a strange blue light and cause the Demon Figure to shatter.

But why didn't it shatter my Demon Figure that time?

Tang Tian thought about that question but did not have any answers, and decided to use the simplest method to test it out.

He pulled his Origin Force and attacked the blue imprint. At the start, there were no changes to the spot, as though it was harmless as usual. But when Tang Tian continued to pour in a lot of Origin Force, the spot started to change.

It lit up with a faint blue light, causing his heart to have a blue light spot, it was extremely bizarre.

Tang Tian did not want to leave it to luck, it was absolutely dangerous, and if he did not remove it, it would strike him at any moment. He took a deep breath, and started to instigate all of his Origin Force towards the blue spot.

The blue spot became brighter and brighter, causing Tang Tian to suddenly groan, his face instantly pale white.

Tang Tian felt a thread of dangerous aura that shot from the blue spot into his heart, causing him to be inflicted with a heavy

internal strike, causing the Origin Force in his body to become chaotic. The duration lasted for over 10 minutes before Tang Tian recovered.

His eyes flashed with a hint of fierceness, even if he had to cut out the piece of blue spot from his heart, he needed to get rid of it.

He started to recuperate to allow him to once again reach his peak state.

After two hours, he opened his eyes and took a deep breath, he activated all of his Origin Force, but did not attack the spot first, and instead allowed it to gain momentum as it swirled in his body. The origin force churned and churned, accumulating more and more, until he was controlling over 80% of all the Origin Force together.

Now!

The surging Origin Force gushed in like a raging tide and struck the spot.

Bang, the dazzling blue light seemed to be forced out of his body, causing Tang Tian's mind to tremble.

# Chapter 740 – The Sound Mist And Blue Flame

---

A thread that was like a gentle whisper quietly sounded out from the dazzling blue light, causing Tang Tian's expression to become distracted.

But he quickly reacted, he was overwhelmed with shock, he realized that he could not control his body, the vivacious blood in his body was quickly boiling, and was throbbing at a strange rhythm.

The blue light shot out from Tang Tian's body, revealing his veins, arteries, muscles, bones, which had become translucent.

The singing whisper was faintly discernible, and the world around Tang Tian started to sway with the song.

Tang Tian forced himself to be composed, the dazzling blue light in his body made him unable to see anything. He closed his eyes and calmed himself down. The singing stop, but would come back again, and at that moment, Tang Tian's nose tip dripped with perspiration. The song was extremely strange, as though it could affect his state of mind, no matter how Tang Tian remained cautious, he would become affected.

Tang Tian was furious, he simply ignored the song, which gradually got louder, from a whisper to being loud and clear, Tang Tian's world was revolving, distorting in weird contortions. Tang Tian was like a quiet and trained hunter, ignoring everything



around him.

After going through the most difficult part, Tang Tian finally sensed a Law Thread. This Law was extremely faint and hidden, hidden in the blue light and the song, if not for Tang Tian treating it as his greatest enemy and focusing on it, he would have never sensed it.

Law!

Tang Tian heaved a sigh of relief, seeing that it was something related to law, he could do something about it.

Tang Tian stood up and postured his punching stance, his face extremely gloomy. He slowly started to pull his punch, causing countless of Law Threads to converge at his fist. But what he did not expect was that the thread of law hidden in the blue light was not influenced at all!

Tang Tian's heart dropped, his Godfist was able to attract all the surrounding Law Threads, but was unable to attract this particular Law Thread.

What law is that?

Tang Tian suddenly remembered, when he was fighting against Lu Tian Wen, the Demon Figure that helped improve the Godfist did not shatter.

Could it be.....

Tang Tian thought about something, not only did he not stop the fist, he started to fervently activate the Origin Force in his body.

The light aura converging on Tang Tian's right fist became more brilliant and dazzling, the surging Origin Force continued to deplete, until all of his Origin Force was completely exhausted. But Tang Tian continued to pull his punch.

Bang!

Tang Tian's heart shook, the gigantic Demon Figure appeared behind him. This time, the Demon Figure was much more congealed than before, with three heads and six arms, other than its face being blurred, all six of its arms were extremely clear.

Tang Tian finally saw the Law Thread clearly.

It was a bizarre blue flame that quietly burned in Tang Tian's body. Inside the transparent blue flame, there was a faint mist that would gather and separate, and that was where the humming came from. But at the moment, it was extremely quiet, and facing the Demon Figure, it kept on trembling.

Tang Tian immediately understood that the strange Law needed Origin Force to work. Without Origin Force, it was like a harmless grass that had no use at all.

What Tang Tian was suspicious of and did not understand was that the mist inside the blue flames gave him a strange feeling. He could sense an aura coming from the mist that was similar to the Demon Figure.

With a thought, the demon figure extended one hand and suddenly reached out to the blue flames, like plucking a flower.

The Blue Flames entered the Demon Figure's finger, and started to dissipate, and in the blink of the eye, the Demon Figure's hands had two objects, one hand had blue flames that slowly danced, while another hand had a thread of mist that was like an arrow, dancing along the markings on the palm.

Tang Tian was startled, and an indescribable enlightenment flashed past his mind. The flames was actually composed of two objects, the blue flames that was separated from the mist had an aura similar to the Blue Sea of Light, Is that something from the Blue Sea? While the mist that produced the strange sound was even more complicated, and able to distort the senses.

The Demon Figure became quiet again and did not move.

Releasing the light aura in his hand slowly, Tang Tian carefully maintained the Demon Figure, but what made him feel more relieved was that this time, the Demon Figure did not shatter. The blue flames and the sound mist, was able to shatter the Demon Figure in the presence of Origin Force, indicating that they were formidable things.

Tang Tian gained comprehension of the Demon Figure from the Heavy Demonic Execution, and if it was to be compared, Tang Tian's incomplete [Godfist] was the highest grade martial technique that Tang Tian had gained, then the Demon Figure would definitely be the second highest. And with its immense potential, Tang Tian suspected that if he were to gain enlightenment on Demonic Desolate Execution, its might would definitely not be inferior to the [Godfist].

The sound mist and blue flames were able to interrupt and disrupt the Demon Figure from forming, thus its grade would definitely be not much lower than the Demon Figure.

These objects were proficient in confusing a person's state of mind, with Qin Zi Zhen's strength, if he were to be affected by it, he would definitely be lost in the sound mist and blue flames.

Tang Tian shook his head, not wanting to think about it any further. The world was huge, and there were many strange things, it was normal for him to not know everything.

He focused back onto the Demon Figure. The Demon Figure had one hand that was in blue flames, another hand with the sound mist, while the other four hands were empty, looking rather irksome. Tang Tian then thought, Could the Four hands absorb any other laws to be used?

What a pity I don't know anything about it, what It can do, if not I will definitely help it.

Tang Tian then noticed that on the palms of the Demon Figure, all of them had different hand prints.

Tang Tian felt that they were extremely familiar. He frowned and thought about it, Where did I see those before?

Suddenly, Tang Tian remembered, the Golem Five Gestures!

Back on the Humble Forest Planet, Tang Tian obtained Red Eyed Golem, and gained enlightenment on the grasping flower gesture, weeping sword gesture, angry fist gesture, formless spirit gesture and imposing gesture. The Golem Five Gestures had a striking resemblance to the hand seals on the Demon Figure in front of him.

He looked at each of the hand seals, and realised that five of the seals were similar to the Golem Five Gestures, but there were some differences as well, and after comparing them, Tang Tian understood that the Golem Five Gestures most likely came from the Demon Figure. It was very probable that one of the gestures had disappeared from the passing down of inheritance, and the other five were passed down, but they had a few differences, and thus was unable to portray the full beauty of the Demon Figure Seal.

Demon Six Seals, seemed to be made by the Heavens, it was profound and deep, mysterious and unfathomable, he became completely attracted to them, and became immersed.

Although the Zero Energy Body allowed him to become

extremely compatible with Laws, but the enlightenment of Laws was still difficult for him. Other than the Spatial Law Threads that he had gained enlightenment from, he had not grasped the Law Surface yet.

His future enemies would be stronger and stronger, and merely relying on Law Threads to do battle was a joke. Other than his Godfist, Tang Tian's other proficient offensive techniques would be the Heavy Demonic Execution.

Although the Demon Six Seals originated from the Heavy Demonic Execution, but it was completely different. The Heavy Demonic Execution was unmatched in power, but it had simple variations, and relied heavily on momentum. The Demon Six Seals had uncountable variations, and could be said to be the perfect complement for the Heavy Demonic Execution weaknesses.

More importantly, the Demon Six Seals was created perfectly for close quarter battles, especially for Tang Tian.

\*\*\*\*\*

Nie Qiu raised his head, his mind was completely shocked.

He was extremely sensitive to changes in aura and fluctuations in power, just now, Tang Tian's training room had emitted a terrifying amount of aura, equal to which when he fought with Lu Tian Wen. He initially thought that Tang Tian was training the fist again, but he did not expect that after ten breaths of time later, the vast amount of power suddenly transformed into something

unfathomable, like a sea of mist churning.

That.....

Is Master gaining enlightenment on something new again?

Nie Qiu laughed bitterly. When he was in Leo Constellation, the group of them enjoyed researching and studying the big influences in Heaven's Road, and Tang Tian of Ursa Major Constellation naturally became the biggest research topic. The Godlike young man, or could be called the miracle man, was like an unkillable cockroach, every danger that he met, not only would he turn the peril into a miracle, but he could use the momentum to improve.

In the end, they came up with two conclusions, that Tang Tian was a scheming man with the ability to borrow power from others to defeat even more people, or that he held outstanding talent.

Nie Qiu himself had outstanding talent, and although he was born blind, he was able to prove himself amongst the number of fierce generals in Leo Constellation, and there was no doubt to his astonishing talent. Since young, he mixed with the other geniuses, and with the astonishing number of powerful geniuses around him, there were times that it made him feel inferior.

But Nie Qiu felt that not one of them could compare to Tang Tian.

It was not because he was Tang Tian's subordinate, that he saw

his superior in a different light. In terms of being unbiased, Tang Tian did not have any outstanding features, he was extremely ordinary and no different from the average crowd. Other than being diligent to the point that people would praise him for it, he was limited to just that.

But once he entered a battle mode, the simple Tang Tian seemed to transform into a completely different person, his battle instincts far surpassed anyone else, and his desire to win was unlike others, his determination was far stronger than steel, and regardless of how powerful his opponent was, he would be fearless and never retreat. His enlightenment and comprehension from battles was the same as eating rice.

Nie Qiu slowly understood that Tang Tian's immersion into a battle was something he had never seen before.

His potential was limitless, regardless of how dangerous it was, how powerful the enemy was, as long as he could dig up the potential hidden inside him, he would live to see the day.

Following such a superior, is not a bad thing too.

Nie Qiu laughed bitterly again, being by Tang Tian's side gave him a lot of pressure. Although Tang Tian never urged them at all, but no one was willing for the distance between themselves and others to become bigger and bigger, even if it was their own superior.

If they wanted to catch up to him, they had to work hard, and the



pressure was given by themselves. Thinking about back when he was at Leo Constellation, Nie Qiu then realized how lazy he had been.

He felt fortunate, fortunate that he made this choice.

The life before him now was filled with danger, and he could die at anytime, but it was extremely exhilarating. Furthermore, Tang Tian was not suspicious or jealous of him because of his identity coming from Leo Constellation, but instead, gave him trust, which was one of the two things that any military general desired, the other of which was respect.

This, this should be the reason why we are all willing to give him our all.

Nie Qiu was emotional, and only when he was close did he realise that Tang Tian was so much different from what the rumors spreading outside had said. And that was why this humble man was able to gain the approval of everyone, making him even more valuable.

Suddenly, he sensed something, and turned towards the direction where Han Bing Ning was in closed door training.

# Chapter 741 – Returning To Purple Cuckoo City

---

“Echo Hill Castle is still closed?”

Xue Ye's tone was one of anxiousness, it was not only him, the other people's faces were filled with worry. The result in front of them was not what they had expected.

Ambushing the Qin Family did not take much of out them, without Qin Zhen, and with only two generals out of the Four Great Generals surviving, and the absence of Qin Zi Zhen's Archer unit, the Qin Family was at its weakest, so how could they stop the attacks from the four families?

The Qin Family was completely wiped out by them, they even obtained the Null Division Prisoners, and immediately sent people to Echo Hill Castle pleading for Ghost Face Mask to return to Purple Cuckoo City. The Qin Family members were all plucked out, and the four families were relying on Ghost Face Mask, meaning that Purple Cuckoo City was changing Masters.

But what they did not expect was that Echo Hill Castle would close their doors, and even after their men shouted outside the castle for half a day, they did not open the gates. Only Ming Zhu replied them once, saying that Master Ghost Face Mask was in closed door training and they would not open the castle until he came out.

When their subordinates returned, everyone looked at each

other, at a loss of what to do.

The situation had quickly become subtle. Qin Zheng would definitely be rushing back to Purple Cuckoo City, and if Ghost Face Mask were to return first, they would no longer need to be worried for their safety. Ghost Face Mask was able to kill Lu Tian Wen, meaning Qin Zhen would not be able to do anything to him.

But who would have known that in such a crucial period, Ghost Face Mask would go into closed door training!

Without the protection of Ghost Face Mask, they did not have any confidence in fighting against Qin Zhen. In the past, they had never truly witnessed any experts on the list of Powerhouses fighting, although they knew that Qin Zhen was much stronger than them, but they never felt pressured.

Until they witnessed The battle between Lu Tian Wen and Ghost Face Mask. They finally understood how powerful those on the List of Powerhouses was. Lu Tian Wen was ranked 39 on the list, Qin Zhen was ranked 43, with a difference of only 4 rankings, their standard would not differ much.

If Qin Zhen was to rush back, their four families would be helpless against him, and their four families would end up like the Qin Family, every single member pulled out and killed, their entire family eradicated.

Everyone turned to look towards Victor.

Victor waved his hand and spoke with a look of innocence: “Although I was the one to come up with the idea, but you guys agreed to it willingly. Furthermore, even if we failed, will my family be spared? My family will not be able to escape his hands.”

Roland Su was the first to stand up for Victor: “That’s right! It isn’t the time to find someone to shirk the responsibility to, everyone chose this willingly, we should now be sticking together and finding out how to survive this.”

Ben Sen nodded his head and replied: “We best get prepared.”

Everyone calmed down and kept quiet, they knew what Ben Sen meant by “getting prepared”.

Just at that moment, a scout suddenly flew in to report with an excited expression: “There are people coming from the Echo Hill Castle!”

Everyone was immediately roused, the boulder of pressure finally lifted off their chests. At this time, everyone was feeling alive again. The feeling of having a powerful expert from the list of Powerhouses coming to kill them at anytime was extremely pressurizing, that formless pressure choked everyone, causing them to be unable to eat and rest well.

Ming Zhu looked at the newly repaired city gates and the people outside welcoming them, feeling extremely emotional.

On the day where Tang Tian had destroyed the city gates with one punch, she had brought her family out of the rubbles with heavy emotions. On that day, she was filled with fear and was in a state of lost, the future in her eyes extremely bleak. At that time, they were all fugitives not knowing whether they would see the light of a new day.

But in the next few days, they had actually returned as victors, and were being welcomed with grandeur back to their Xue Residence.

Ming Zhu could not help but turn to look at Ghost Face Mask.

It was him who changed everything.

Looking at Xu Ye and the other's respectful smiles towards them, Ming Zhu was filled with even more complex feelings. She had never thought that there would be such a day, and she believed they did not either. Ben Sen never thought that after fighting with Ghost Face Mask, he would now be welcoming him back by standing outside the city. When Xu Ye and the rest talked about Ghost Face Mask in the past, they too would have never imagined that they would become his subordinates.

This man, is very powerful.

Not only was he powerful, even his progress was so fast, in the blink of the eye, they had already been thrown far behind

Upon finishing his training, Tang Tian was dumbstruck when he heard Ming Zhu's report, and was instantly excited. He was thinking about how to save the Null Division Prisoners out from the Qin Family, but did not expect that Xu Ye and the rest would have already done it for him.

Without further ado, Tang Tian immediately decided to return to Purple Cuckoo City.

He did not care about what the families were thinking of, but as long as he could save all of his brothers, even if they wanted to use him, he did not care.

The change in Purple Cuckoo City had shocked everyone as well, and the first to react was naturally Nie Qiu. Right on the spot, he immediately understood what had happened, and had judged and gauged the situation

But in the considerations of safety, the entire Null Division was mobilized.

The Null Division members all had a great increase in strength.

Han Bing Ning had ignited her Primordial Fire Origin, becoming the only member of the Null Division to have done so, and also the only one who had enlightened on the Law Surface. In the entire Sin Domain, it was extremely rare for a person to have both.

Ah Mo Ali's strength had increased as well, he had taken full

control over the Null Flames released all around his body and became reserved, even his aura had completely changed, from the initial recklessness, he had become even more reserved, and had the bearing of a great general.

Nie Qiu's Yin Yang Formation had already reached preliminary achievements, his formation already possessed an embryonic form. As for the Null Division Members, all of them were all high spirited and were extremely fierce.

Xu Ye and the rest who were at the entrance waiting for Tang Tian were all shaken by the scene of them approaching.

They could not grasp Ghost Face Mask's depth, but they were able to sense the difference of the rest. When Xu An Zhong saw Han Bing Ning, he almost could not believe his eyes, since when had a swordsman ignited their Primordial Fire Origin? A swordsman who has ignited their Primordial Fire Origin, t-t-this.....

Ah Mo Li's change also shocked Roland Su. She had a very deep impression of him amongst the Prisoners, one reason being obviously the leader of the group, the other was that he was very straightforward and blunt, whenever his companion was being bullied, he was the first to rush over.

Although he was an impulsive person, but as someone who cared deeply for his friends, Roland Su admired.

But after the few days of not seeing him, Ah Mo Li seemed to

have changed into a completely different person, he was very steady and reserved, not emitting any power at all, obviously he had gone through a huge transformation and increase in strength.

Xu Ye and Victor looked at each other, they could see the shock in each other's eyes.

Army formation and tactics have long disappeared in Sin Domain. The current Sin Domain was extremely foreign towards the so called army. But, Xu Ye and Victor were people who came from strong families, and although they were unfamiliar with armies, they still had the knowledge of such.

Over 60 men with a powerful unified aura formed one whole body.

Their breathing tempo were in sync, and if the patriarchs of each families were to close their eyes, they would mistake them to be an ancient desolate beast taking in breaths.

When has such an imposing aura appear in the Sin Domain before?

“Where are they?” Tang Tian turned his head and asked.

Xu Ye and the rest immediately awoke from their daydream. Xu Ye immediately said: “Master, please follow me.”

When Tang Tian appeared at the barracks which held the



prisoners, the dense mass of prisoners became silent for a moment, before erupting into a thunderous roar, shaking the entire city.

Ah Mo Li rushed in excitedly and started patting them here and there. Even the ice cold Han Bing Ning was excited. Even more of them rushed in and started helping their companions remove the light needles from their bodies.

There were many prisoners coming from the Qin Family, other than their original 227 men, the Thiopiate Family had 42, the Lu Family had another 200, totalling up to 469 men.

The Xu Family had 92 prisoners, adding Tang Tian's subordinates of 65 men, they had a total of 626 men.

Tang Tian's subordinate's strength immediately swelled, their numbers multiplying by a full 10 times. Nie Qiu's confidence swelled by the same amount, to any military general, 60 men and 600 men was totally different figures.

In Heaven's Road, an ordinary standard army had roughly 2000 men, thus 600 could be considered a third of a full army. Of course, for Leo Constellation, their armies usually held more people, but kept it within the thousands.

Nie Qiu finally had the feeling that he could be of use, the scale of 600 men was where he could design war tactics, and the power he could mobilize was much greater.

After probing around the Yin Yang Formation for the past few days, he had some new breakthroughs.

All war tactics principles were identical, and that was to be more efficient in using power. For Nie Qiu, an outstanding military general, he had some profound achievements in this, although the form of his power had transformed, but the principles of tactics had never changed.

Without any hesitation, he brought out a few training requests.

Just like the past, there were no problems, his suggestions were all accepted.

Immediately, Ah Mo Li and Han Bing Ning began to walk into the field, and split the large group into two, each of them taking one. They were not not embarrassed at all, unwilling to pass on their own responsibilities to others. The two immediately ordered the members to do thorough check ups with each other, and then to form their ranks.

10 Minutes later, two neat square formations appeared before everybody.

In another two minutes, the two of them brought their own subordinates to choose their own encampments.

The entire process was extremely smooth, there was no noise, no talking, no push and pulling, other than Han Bing Ning and Ah Mo

Li's voice, no one in the barracks made a sound, they lowered their heads and inspected themselves, and occasionally there would be a few who would raise their hands to report their own injuries.

Other than that, there was no other hoorah, if they did not personally witness it, none of them would have thought that there was actually 600 people in the barracks.

Their swift and decisive reactions, coupled with their spontaneous yet silent movements, revealed their discipline and power, causing Xu Ye and the rest to feel a tightness in their chests. They did not know what an army was, but the quiet and disciplined scene in front of them had greatly shocked them.

Compared to the elites that they have seen before, the people in front of them were weaker. But if they were to be lined up in a row, they would be quarreling and squabbling with each other, finding faults amongst each other. And unlike the army in front of them, the elites that were stronger usually needed reason and monetary rewards to be propelled to do something.

But the troops in front of them, did not even make a sound, they were calm and quiet, and every movement was straightforward and clear.

Han Bing Ning and Ah Mo Li brought their men and left, they needed to grasp every second that they could. Seeing the two groups leaving quietly, Xu Ye and the rest could not help but remain silent.

Maybe this group of people can truly change the Sin Domain.

## Chapter 742 – Old Friend

---

Tang Tian's subordinates formed their own system, and thus there was no need for him to worry about the matters of the Null Division, and as for the matters of Purple Cuckoo City, Tang Tian left it to the Four Families. To him, Purple Cuckoo City was just a temporary holding which he would not stay long. The Four Families were locals and were much more experienced in handling the affairs than him.

In the blink of the eye, Tang Tian realized that he had time for himself again, and he could train again.

“Roland Su stepped forward and spoke respectfully: “Master, we have another captive.”

Tang Tian was startled: “Captive? Is he one of us?”

Roland Su shook her head: “No, he is the Second General under Qin Zhen. When we attacked the Qin Family, she was always in a coma. Furthermore, her situation seems to be even stranger, does Master want to take a look?”

Xu Ye was helpless against Roland Su's perseverance, to him, the Second General should be killed. Since they were the arms and legs of Qin Zhen, recruiting them would have no meaning, and thus killing them would be the right choice. But Roland Su was a kind person at heart, and seeing that the Second General was also a lady, she wanted to protect her.

It was a pity that despite trying different methods, Roland Su could not wake the girl up.

“Even stranger?” Tang Tian became somewhat interested.

Roland Su heaved a sigh of relief, she was afraid that Ghost Face Mask was actually a ferocious and murderous person, and might be extremely impatient, but he was instead very different from the rumors, and was much kinder, so she immediately replied: “Yes, this subordinate feels that the lady was confused by others, and killing her would be a pity.”

Victor was standing by the side, and said: “Her background is mysterious, she is not from Purple Cuckoo City, why not take a look at her, Master.”

Without hesitation, Tang Tian nodded his head: “Let’s go take a look.”

Roland Su took the lead, and Tang Tian followed them and arrived deeper in the City Master’s home. At that time, only Zong Zheng Yan Mei was left out of the entire Qin Family, and the resistance the four families met was weak, so they did not afflict too much damage on the City Master’s home, and it was rather well maintained.

Although she was in a coma, but Roland Su dared not be careless, and got many people to stand guard for her.

Upon entering the room, Tang Tian frowned, the air had a unique aura emitting from it.

On the bed lay a lady donning a silver mask, and a blue mist coiled around her entire body.

As expected, when Tang Tian entered the room, he immediately sensed the aura belonging to that of the sound mist and blue flames. Compared to the thread of law imprint in him, the mist on the lady was much heavier, to the point that her entire body was enveloped with the blue mist.

The strange blue mist was coming out from the lady's body, it swirled around like a living thing, and then returned into her body.

Everyone's face turned serious, Xu Ye gave a glance at Roland Su. He trained in the Life and Death Laws, and was extremely sensitive towards the aura of death, but he had never seen or felt the blue mist before, and had difficulty judging what it truly was.

That was why he would rather kill her, the blue mist was strange and not stable, it had the probability of affecting others, and for the sake of this captive, it was not worth it. He had his worries, and was not happy with Roland Su and Victor, if something were to happen to the Master, who would be able to bear the consequences?

Xu Ye remained silent.

Tang Tian's eyes lit up, although the blue mist was like poison to others, but it was a huge nourishment for him. The blue flames and the sound mist on the Demon Figure's hands were too little.

He walked to the bed, the Demon Figure congealed in his mind, and at the same time, his hands formed the Grasping Flower Seal.

Everyone was experts, and immediately sensed the aura around Tang Tian immediately changing. With the completion of the hand seal, a warm, gentle, and still aura emitted out from Tang Tian, making it as though he was a completely different person without any killing intent.

What technique is that? Everyone was spooked, they did not sense any undulation of Laws. Without the undulation of Laws, how could his aura change? And they had never seen such a warm and gentle aura before, suddenly, they felt as if they were basking under the sun. They were all strong seniors with powerful willpower, they were startled for a moment before regaining their consciousness, but their hearts were overwhelmed with shock, immediately thinking that Tang Tian was unfathomable.

Xu Ye heaved a sigh of relief, although he did not know what inheritance Tang Tian had obtained, but for it to be able to unravel the blue mist in front of them, then it was good.

Chi!

A sound came out, everyone watched as the swirling blue mist was being attracted by something, and transformed into a slender



smoke arrow that entered Tang Tian's fingertip.

Tang Tian was immersed in the Grasping Flower Seal, his expression was gentle, his face revealing a smile.

In his mind, the gigantic Demon Figure appeared behind him, with the same posture. The Blue Mist entered his body and flew onto the Demon Figure's Grasping Flower Seal fingertip. The blue flames became ablaze, and the initial bean sized small blue flames gradually became the size of a candlelight, quietly floating on its finger. The sound mist on the other hand also swelled quickly, its size becoming multiple times larger, and the thread of music also became much louder.

For an hour, Tang Tian sat there unmoving like a statue.

The blue mist curling around grew lesser and lesser, and the figure of the lady on the bed became clearer, the silver mask being an eyesore.

When the last trace of blue mist entered Tang Tian's fingertips, he opened his eyes, a faint look of joy flashing past. The blue flames on the Demon Figure's palm was already close to the size of a fist, while the sound mist on the other palm was around the thickness of a finger.

Even the dumb Tang Tian knew that these were useful to the Demon Figure.

After releasing the Grasping Flower Seal, he got out of the strange state of mind, and his gaze landed on the lady on the bed. Mask? Thinking about his own Ghost Face Mask, Tang Tian became pleased, Seems like everyone likes to wear a mask now.

Since she was a captive, Tang Tian was not polite at all, without saying a word, he took the mask off, revealing a beautiful face.

Tang Tian was startled, but in the next second, he blurted out: “Gu Xue!”

Xu Ye and the rest were dumbstruck, but in the next moment, everyone could not help but look at each other, with fear in their eyes. Master recognizes.....Master actually recognizes the lady!

Xu Ye subconsciously wiped the perspiration off his forehead, unknowingly, there were droplets there. His heart jumped, Lucky for me, I did not stop them, If I had killed this girl....

Thinking about the consequence, his heart trembled.

The young lady on the bed could vaguely hear someone shouting for her, she slowly opened her eyes, and what entered her vision was the face that she had thought of for days and nights.

I’m dreaming again.

She chuckled, then closed her eyes.

“Hey hey hey, Gu Xue, wake up!”

She then felt as someone pulled her up, shaking her vigorously.

This dream is a bit too intense.

Gu Xue continued to smile, and continued to brew over her sleepiness, she wanted to sleep.

Tang Tian saw the smile on Gu Xue’s face, and sensed something wrong, Is Gu Xue injured somewhere? Or did I not remove the Law Imprint properly? In the anxiousness, Tang Tian’s eyes became furious, he roared out: “Gu Xue!”

His roar exploded suddenly, causing the air inside the room to be lifted and churned endlessly.

Xu Ye and the rest felt their eardrums buzzing, their brains stupefied.

Gu Xie was completely awakened by the furious roar, she opened her eyes in a daze, but the face in front of her did not disappear, but looked at her anxiously, she was stunned, and after a moment, she muttered with uncertainty: “Tang Tian?”

Tang Tian was immediately ecstatic, he laughed out loud: “Hahahaha, Gu Xue, It’s me! You finally recognize me! That’s

great!”

How can I not recognize you.....even if you became ash, I will still recognize you....

Gu Xue’s face suddenly blossomed out an enchanting smile, and her pupils became two bright vortices, like rainbows suddenly twirling, the room was suddenly filled with rainbows, and Gu Xue who was on the bed started to float in the air.

Everyone were stunned by the scene before them, Roland Su subconsciously reached for the rainbow in front of her, but grabbed nothing.

“Let us retreat.”

Tang Tian kept his smiles, his tone of speech was filled with joy, he never thought that he would be able to meet Gu Xue, and furthermore, after saving her, he also did not expect her to actually break through at such a time.

Xu An Zhong’s face was overwhelmed with shock, sword concept!

Inside these rainbows, there is actually sword concept!

It isn’t cold at all, but illusory and warm, what kind of sword concept is this?

After leaving the room, Tang Tian noticed a gigantic rainbow appearing in the sky above Purple Cuckoo City, causing the surprise of countless of people. Sin Domain did not have a sun, so naturally they could not have rainbows, and only heard of such an event from their ancestors, about the beautiful rainbows.

Every citizen of Purple Cuckoo City walked to the streets and raised their heads, to look at the unprecedented beautiful rainbow.

Tang Tian looked at the rainbow above him, the warm and illusory sword concept, made him reminisce.

Monarch Yearning Strike Sword!

Gu Xue looked as though she was basking in the sun, being cleansed by the blue sky, rainbows after rainbows appeared in the sky, her face maintained a satisfied smile.

Monarch Yearning Strike, my yearnings will never be destroyed.

The rainbows are my yearnings.

Inside the blue mist imprisonment that confused her state of mind, she was in a half lucid state, dreaming and having illusions. But she had never given up, she had personally experienced the destruction of her family, and had to personally build her family back up from scraps, so she was not one with a weak personality.

She knew that she was lacking far behind Tang Tian, she knew of the minute help that she could provide him. He was like the hero that could subdue Heaven's Road, and she was just part of a small family in a small planet.

But like what Tang Tian said, so what?

If I am weak, then I just have to become strong, strong enough to help him, just like how he helped me. She arranged everything in her family until they were stable and safe, before leaving on a journey without hesitation.

She had unintentionally wandered to Sin Domain, and was controlled by Qin Zhen's blue mist, but her state of mind that was imprisoned never gave up. For herself, for the figure that she was chasing, for the rainbows, for the many more.

If it's him, he will definitely not give up.

That was how she encouraged herself countless of times.

The resistance in her mind was extremely difficult, because in a person's mind, nothing could be hidden, nothing could be covered up, nothing could be avoided. Like how a bayonet could easily draw blood, she was beaten black and blue, but she never gave up, and never subdued to it.

I am the young lady of rainbows, How can I ever yield to them?  
How can I give up?

The illusions from the blue mist, and the confusing riddling music, made Gu Xue feel extreme pain, but at the same time it benefited her.

The Monarch Yearning Strike was an extremely unique martial technique, it embodies thoughts, emotions, conviction, trust, and thus her state of mind was being sharpened, causing her enlightenment and understanding of Monarch Yearning Strike to become even more unfathomable.

She had unknowingly surpassed the Demon Slayer Wang Yong a long time ago.

Until finally, when she opened her eyes and saw Tang Tian, all the accumulations from the sharpening, all the scars and wounds in her mind, and all the rainbows that never disappeared, finally found the perfect converging point, and fused together, allowing her to step into a new realm.

The rainbows are my yearnings.

# Chapter 743 – Bird Startled By The Mere Twang Of A Bow

---

Qin Zhen looked at the rainbows in the Purple Cuckoo City from afar, his face was extremely cold, Who knew she could struggle free from my Bewitching Jade Illusion.

Furthermore, her strength seems to have broken through....

Qin Zhen calmed down, and suddenly realised that he was oblivious to everything that was happening in Purple Cuckoo City. What truly happened, to let Xu Ye and the rest to dare and ambush my Qin Family?

Qin Zhen knew his opponents in the city extremely well. Ben Sen was someone who looked crude but was extremely scrupulous, Victor was extremely fickle, Roland Su was the most firm, and Xu Ye was extremely brilliant, but at the same time, he knew of their weaknesses. Even if Wei Han, Mu Ze and Qin Zi Zhen's Archer Unit were destroyed, he knew that they would not dare to do anything to the Qin Family.

And just as he understood them, they also knew the Qin Family well, they knew that the Qin Family was supported by the existence of Qin Zhen. as long as Qin Zhen was not dead, they would never dare to do anything to the Qin Family.

Although the four families had always been unhappy towards the Qin Family, but Qin Zhen never cared about them, in any case, would they dare to do anything?



They finally dared to.

That was what Qin Zhen could not understand, unless they were not afraid of him taking revenge. Maybe they have someone supporting them, or they know that their own situation isn't doing too well. Qin Zhen spent the past few days thinking about it, it was the biggest suspicion in his heart.

His own situation did not change much, he knew the depth of the Lu Family, and never challenged their bottom line. Qin Zhen then thought about the Qin Family, and knew that they did not have many enemies.

That only leaves one possibility, they have someone supporting them.

The first thought that came to Qin Zhen was Ghost Face Mask, but he very quickly rejected the idea. Ghost Face Mask is not strong enough, he is only just that, he surprised everyone by killing Wei Han, Mu Ze and the Archer Unit, but he is still far from comparing to me.

The people on the List of Powerhouses of the Sin Domain were the peak existences of Sin Domain.

Ghost Face Mask is still far from the List of Powerhouses.

To allow Xu Ye and the rest to have such confidence, it must

definitely be an expert from the List of Powerhouses, and must be ranked higher than me, and only will those cowards be able to do such a vicious thing.

Who can it be?

Lu Tian Wen?

Qin Zhen's face became gloomy, Are they colluding with the Lu Family? Qin Zhen then shook his head again, Purple Cuckoo City is nothing to the Lu Family, they are not even neighbours, separated by Sharp Wind City. Furthermore, if the Lu Family was truly hostile towards the Qin Family, they would not allow me to return.

Lu Sheng Xiang's strength is even more terrifying.

Then who can it be?

Qin Zhen racked his brains but could not think of anyone, what dependance Xu Ye and the rest had. But he was clear as well, the Four Families would not be rash and impulsive towards the Qin Family, one of them might be probable, but for the four of them to do it together, he did not believe them to be so stupid.

The Rainbows above Purple Cuckoo City made Qin Zhen became even more unsure. After going through the initial anger, Qin Zhen was filled with a lot of suspicion, the hands in the shadows brought a shiver down his spine.

They are definitely accumulating their power and waiting, who knows, they might have already prepared their ambush and are waiting for me.

The Purple Cuckoo City in the distance had become a strange beast that could easily devour anyone, and was filled with dangers. He was the only one left in the Qin Family, and could not act without careful considerations!

I am the most important of the Qin Family, as long as I still exist, the Qin Family will continue existing.

A look of ferocity flashed past Qin Zhen's eyes, he suddenly thought about Lu Tian Wen, and felt that it was strange. Such a huge commotion occurred in Purple Cuckoo City, but why isn't Lu Tian Wen reacting to it?

Ghost Face Mask is definitely weaker than Lu Tian Wen, and must have been killed.

He thought about it, and quietly flew towards Echo Hill Castle.

He vaguely recalled the location of Echo Hill Castle, and went in that direction to investigate. When he arrived at Echo Hill Castle, it was empty. But his gaze did not linger on the castle, but at its vicinity.

A broken mountain top, shattered boulders, big pits caused by explosions, everything points to a big battle here.

Lu Tian Wen did make his move.

The remnant Law undulations in the air and the emptied Echo Hill Castle that was in perfect condition, Qin Zhen guessed that Lu Tian Wen had already brought the Xue Family away. Thinking that it was Ghost Face mask that was killed, although he could find the corpse, but it was the most reasonable ending.

I could not see any traces of Lu Tian Wen bringing the Xue Family away.

Could it be.....that it is truly Lu Tian Wen in Purple Cuckoo City?

Qin Zhen suddenly felt the possibility of it, the Lu Family did not see him as an enemy, but Lu Tian Wen was a completely different case. Lu Tian Wen had an unreasonable personality and was extremely ruthless, and could do anything. If Xu Ye that crafty man joins Lu Tian Wen's side, it will definitely be much more difficult to handle.

~The Null Division Prisoners under my Qin Family, might not make the Lu Family jealous. Lu Sheng Xiang might not be, but can they assure that Lu Tian Wen isn't?

~If Lu Tian Wen was truly the one who did everything, what would the Lu Family do?~

They will definitely not blame Lu Tian Wen, and will take the

chance to swallow me up The more Qin Zhen thought about it, the more afraid he became. ~That's right, Lu Tian Wen is waiting for me, waiting for me to be caught in his trap.

Filled with all those emotions, Qin Zhen ran away like a bird startled by the mere twang of a bow, disappearing into the night.

\*\*\*\*\*

Lu Ling Nan quietly left the tavern, planning to use the night as cover to leave.

When the four families destroyed the Qin Family, he just stood there watching and rejoicing in their misfortune. Regardless of anything, Purple Cuckoo City had no connection to the Lu Family, and Lu Ling Nan wanted to watch them kill each other. But still, he was surprised by the courage of the Four Families. Qin Zhen was still a martial artist on the List of Powerhouses.

And when the four families actually went out of the city to welcome Ghost Face Mask and the Xue Family back into Purple Cuckoo City, Lu Ling Nan faintly sensed that something was wrong. But, he did not think too much into it, ~You want to rely on Ghost Face Mask to kill Lu Tian Wen? What joke is that!~ But he thought, who knows if Lu Tian Wen was just playing around. Everyone always had a headache when it came to his uncle, and only because his strength was outstanding, everyone could only hold themselves back and recognize Lu Tian Wen.

But following the changing of sides of the four families, it made

Lu Ling Nan sense an uneasy feeling. There is no reason for them to rely on Ghost Face Mask now, it is definitely not a good chance. He then suddenly thought about the Four Families killing the Qin Family, and his previous suspicion as to who the backer of the four families were. After slowly thinking about it, it became even more strange, Why do the four families think that Ghost Face Mask can be their backer?

Can Ghost Face Mask fight against Qin Zhen?

Impossible!

But he quickly changed his thoughts, Why is that impossible? What if Ghost Face Mask is even stronger than Qin Zhen? What if he is truly more powerful, then Uncle Tian Wen.....

The sudden conjecture caused him to shudder.

If that's the case, then Uncle Tian Wen he.....

If that's the case, then everything can be explained.....

This absurd conjecture kept on biting at Lu Ling Nan's mind, caused him to be even more fearful.

I can't wait any longer, I need to return to report to the family, if it's a false alarm, it would be good, but such a huge matter will sooner or later be a huge loss to us.

He had just sneaked out of the tavern, when a figure appeared right in front of him.

Lu Ling Nan's face changed, Tie Xie!

\*\*\*\*\*

“What we need now is more time.”

When Xu Ye and the rest appeared, Nie Qiu said straightforwardly.

“The newly freed soldiers need the time to learn the Vacuum Plates and Heavy Demonic Execution, gain enlightenment on laws, and familiarize themselves with the war formations. All of that needs time. If we can finish all of that, we will become much more powerful.”

“Gain Enlightenment on Laws? All of them? That's not realistic.” Xu Ye could not resist but to interrupt, the others all had gloomy faces.

What joke are they talking about, although gaining enlightenment to produce Law Threads is not difficult, but how are they going to get everyone to form Law Threads in such a short time? If not for Master Ghost Face Mask's absolute trust in Nie Qiu, they would have all suspected that the blind man was an amateur.

“That is the easiest out of them all.” Nie Qiu’s tone remained calm, without getting angry. Everyone’s look at him made him inform them of even more concrete evidences: “Previously, our 65 soldiers all gained enlightenment and produced Law Threads in less than two days.”

Everyone kept quiet, but their faces were still of disbelief, they were still not convinced. But seeing that Tang Tian did not refute, everyone became skeptical, Could they truly have such high talents?

“

“Vacuum Plate is relatively easy as well, but considering that we might have to fight in the air, air battle formations are even more difficult, so the training time will increase.” Nie Qiu’s tone was indifferent: “The first slash of Heavy Demonic Execution is much easier to handle. Although the war formation trainings will be brand new, but as we have already gone through drilled formations and trainings on them, it will be easy for them to get used to it. But to be adept at all of them, it will take a while.”

“How long do we need?” Tang Tian asked.

“A conservative estimate, one month.” Nie Qiu replied.

Everyone were in complete disbelief, there was so much to learn, and even they felt that it was unrealistic to achieve, but one month to learn them all? It was truly a joke!



“We do not have so much time.” Victor spoke up:” Qin Zhen is a man that harbors a lot of suspicion, without gaining clarity of the happenings in the city, he will definitely not appear. But, he will definitely be hiding in the shadows, or maybe have other ideas. There is also the Lu Family, the death of Lu Tian Wen cannot be concealed much longer, I think that in another 10 days, if the Lu Family does not have any information of Lu Tian Wen, they will start questioning. Even if we consider this period of time, it will not exceed 20 days.”

Tang Tian thought for a moment and asked Nie Qiu: “If they have one month, how powerful can they be?”

“They can fight against Lu Tian Wen.” Nie Qiu’s tone was still calm without any fluctuations, as though everything he said was normal.

Xu Ye and the rest did not believe him even more.

Tang Tian asked: “What idea do you have?”

Nie Qiu’s suggestion of a month was definitely not one that was recklessly calculated, but he most likely already had a full fledged plan.

“With Master Gu Xue’s breakthrough, adding Han Bing Ning and Ah Mo Li, they can be included in the battle formations. Adding the Four Family elites, if we are to defend our position strongly, even if Lu Tian Wen comes again, we will no longer be at the

disadvantage. Although we do not know whether Qin Zhen is stronger or weaker than Lu Tian Wen, but if they are of the same standard, we shouldn't have too many problems.”

Nie Qiu said openly.

Tang Tian sort of understood him: “Then how do we delay the Lu Family?”

“We initiate an attack and confuse the situation, increasing the time for the Lu Family to react.”

Nie Qiu replied calmly.

# Chapter 744 – Ancestor Li's Inheritor

---

A carriage flew past in the sky. The driver was a veteran, allowing the carriage to be extremely stable, with Wind Law Threads forming countless of small gusts that pushed the carriage onwards. Wind related laws were the most commonly seen laws, and its biggest usage was for flying. Drivers were Wind Law user martial artists, which was extremely common, and every trading firm required many of such drivers.

This driver was an old veteran with 20 years of experience, he had limited talent, but had strong control with his Wind Laws, and thus his carriage was not shaky at all, and if not for the strong whistling sounds of the wind, no one would be able to sense it flying.

But this carriage's simple exterior was a disguise, inside was extremely luxurious, the body of the carriage were not made by ordinary materials, it was extremely sturdy, and its soundproofing effect was exceptionally strong, and there were no worries of the driver overhearing the conversation going on in the inside.

Tang Tian curiously observed everything for a little while, before retracting his gaze. He was still comparing the differences, regardless if it was Heaven's Road, Sacred Saint Galaxy or Sin Domain, the martial technique systems had their differences, but their interactions extended into various professions in the normal citizen lives. That was why martial techniques would never fade into history.

To any ordinary person, fighting was something they did not

need, and it was life that they were struggling with.

On the road, Xu Ye was constantly observing Tang Tian, he was still rather unfamiliar with the so called Master Ghost Face Mask.

Xu Ye did not know why Tang Tian agreed to Nie Qiu's dangerous proposition. He felt that such a dangerous suggestion should never come out from a subordinate's mouth, and such a dangerous matter should be handed over to a subordinate, and not a leader to execute it.

What he did not expect was for Tang Tian to actually agree without hesitation, and what's more, his name was suggested to proceed with the plan. Of course, on the surface, it looked like a suggestion, Nie Qiu's suggestion, but it did not have any difference in being chosen, so how could he reject?

The moment the Master turned his head, he agreed without hesitation. The current Xu Family was already being used as the Master's war carriage, and if the war carriage were to be successful, the Xu Family would have its merits, but if the Master were to fail, then the Xu Family would be unable to escape from being decimated.

According to Nie Qiu, the Master needed someone familiar with the environment to be the guide, Victor was also a good choice, but he was injured by Qin Zhen and had not recovered, so the astute Xu Ye became the next best candidate.

Xu Ye looked at Nie Qiu in surprise, This blind man, although he

can't see anything, but he is powerful.

“Where will we be starting at?” Tang Tian asked languidly.

Before leaving, he had absorbed a great quantity of Life Origin Essence. Although the Life Origin Essence could not be directly transformed into Origin Force, but it could greatly strengthen his flesh body, and a greatly strengthened flesh body could continuously produce a large amount of Origin Force. The Origin Force continued to accumulate in his body, but there was no way for him to drain it out, so the surging power that seemed to want to spill out had compelled him to be extremely careful with his every action, it looked like a lion that had just feasted and was moving lazily.

Xu Ye was prepared for the question: “The Lu Family sold all of their Null Division Prisoners to the Qin Family, Qin Zhen was previously at Galloping Horse City wantonly purchasing Null Division Prisoners, but the Lu Family did not stop him, which shows that they do not have any ambitions towards the Prisoners. Although I do not know why, but we can act as another powerhouse.”

“Another powerhouse?” Tang Tian asked with puzzlement.

“Yes.” Xu Ye's gaze flashed with a bright light: “Currently, the news of the Qin Family being destroyed has been spread far and wide, the Lu Family will definitely know of it, but they will not think that it was us, and suspect a third party. We just have to feign as this third party, run over to Galloping Horse City, and purchase the Null Division Prisoners.”

Tang Tian started to perspire when he heard that.

Xu Ye then continued to explain: “We will send out news that it was because of the Null Division Prisoners, that’s why we attacked the Qin Family. And we have already taken charge of Purple Cuckoo City. Most likely, the Galloping Horse City will wait for a good offer. As to why we need these prisoners, it is because we are building up a city.”

“Building up a city?” Tang Tian perspired even more profusely.

“Yes.” Xu Ye sighed: “We managed to find some records when we searched the Qin Family, and realised that they have always been looking for something. To explain this, I need to tell you about everything from the start. On that year where the families were banished to Sin Domain, it was extremely terrible. But it was all the inheritances from their long-established line that allowed them an edge for laws. The first to completely change their inheritances were five families. The five families were families with longest histories behind them out of all that were banished. Four of them built up a city, and occupied the most fertile lands, which is the current four main cities. The last family, only had one man as his entire family died, so he became the target to be recruited by the other four families. His name is Li Zhi Gong. Not only was he the earliest to gain enlightenment on laws, but his strength is publicly known as number one.”

“The Qin Family has always eyed the Xue Family, was mainly for Li Zhi Gong’s inheritance. Earlier on, Li Zhi Gong had stayed in the Xue Residence for a period of time, he had no heirs, and

disappeared after that.” Xu Ye said: “But the Qin Family never found his legacy. The Heavy Demonic Execution was also turned over and over again by them, but they could not find anything relating to Li Zhi Gong. I suspect that the Lu Family are also trying to find Li Zhi Gong’s inheritance, and thus wants to buy the Xue Family.”

Tang Tian suddenly became extremely excited over the story and asked: “What happened next, what happened next?”

“Master, you can disguise yourself as Li Zhi Gong’s descendant.” Xu Ye’s eyes flickered with a bright light: “Master does not know, but in Sin Domain, inheritances and legacies usually means position and resource. Qin Zhen is the most talented martial artist in the Qin Family’s history, but his rank in the List of Powerhouses is just 42. Purple Cuckoo City, in the 17 cities of Sin Domain, is also at the bottom. The Lu Family has their eyes on the Xue Family, most likely for Li Zhi Gong’s inheritance. Galloping Horse City is near the Four Main Cities, but its position and prestige is far weaker than the four cities. Lu Sheng Xiang looks to be an ordinary man, but he has a big heart, and wants to bring the Lu Family to greater heights.”

“That sounds interesting.” Tang Tian felt that the matter was rather interesting, as expected, with a knowledgeable man like Xu Ye, he could save a lot of time. If it was him by himself, he would never be able to think of such ideas.

That’s right, to Tang Tian’s understanding, it was complicated. With his standard, he did not know how to consider elaborate plans, and only knew to run to the Lu Family, burn the house

down, and sneak onto the important elders.

“If the Lu Family are really going for Li Zhi Gong’s inheritance, then they will react.” Xu Ye said: “Compared to Master, the descendant of Li Zhi Gong, the unknown Xue Family’s importance will lessen greatly. With that, along with Lu Tian Wen’s news, we can delay them. Furthermore, Master can use the descendant statues to lure the Lu Family out and purchase your Null Division prisoners.”

“That’s good too!” Tang Tian’s eyes lit up, but he immediately felt suspicious: “But I do not know what is Li Zhi Gong’s inheritance, how can I act as him?”

“Master’s hand seals.” Xu Ye said: “Master does not know, but in the past, Li Zhi Gong relied on six bizarre and unfathomable hand seals to become the top. This subordinate saw Master’s hand seals when you saved Master Gu Xue, and therefore thought of this idea.”

After breaking through, Gu Xue’s strength amplified multiple folds, and in Sin Domain where power is king, although everyone looked towards families as well, but in the face of power, families were nothing but passing clouds. Xu Ye was even convinced to call out Master Gu Xue.

Tang Tian then realised something, and his face turned weird: “Wait, you said that Li Zhi Gong used hand seals in the past?”

“Yes.” Xu Ye’s face was filled with reveration when he talked



about Li Zhi Gong: “Ancestor Li was the first distinguished man to gain enlightenment on Laws. At that time, the families which entered Sin Domain were crippled, and many died horrible deaths. It was said that Ancestor Li watched as the various families flowed with rivers of blood, seeing how everyone became predators preying on each other, he was filled with grief, he travelled alone up a mountain peak and meditated for three days, and finally gained enlightenment on Sin Domain Dao of Laws. On that day, he stepped down the mountain, and brought the families to a canyon, and he alone guarded the canyon entrance, and killed all of the murderers. After that he walked back to the various families and passed down the dao of laws. It was said that Ancestor Li did not use any weapon, with his hand seals, he faced his opponents, even smiling when he did battle, some even called him crazy.”

Hearing that, Tang Tian almost blurted out the name of Demon Six Seals!

Could it be that inside the Heavy Demonic Execution contained the consummate skills of Li Zhi Gong? Why didn't Qin Zhen and the rest find it?

Xu Ye looked at Tang Tian's strange expression, and could not help but ask: “Master??

Tang Tian rubbed his nose and said with embarrassment: “My Demon Six Seals was enlightened from the Xue Family's Heavy Demonic Execution.”

It was as though Xu Ye was struck by some restriction technique he was suddenly stunned, after ten breaths of time, he became

flushed red with excitement, the red appearing visible to the naked eye, as though he was drunk on alcohol.

“Master, you must never mention this to another person from today on! You cannot!”

Xu Ye’s voice was trembling, as he was in a state of indescribable excitement.

No wonder Master is so powerful! NO wonder he was able to defeat Lu Tian Wen!

All of his doubts converged together and flushed away. He did not know how powerful the Ursa Major Null Division was, but the name of Ancestor Li’s Inheritor, that was definitely a bright and dazzling gold title.

Xu Ye dared to confirm, as long as this identity was publicized, it would definitely stir the entire Sin Domain, and countless people would start acting.

He forced himself to calm down. He had initially planned for Master to disguise as a descendant of Ancestor Li, and thus started making preparations with that plan in mind. But to obtain the knowledge that the Master was truly the inheritor to Ancestor Li, the situation took a qualitative change.

Regardless if it was something Master had learned himself, or it was imparted by someone else, he has gained everything of

Ancestor Li's inheritance, that means he is the Inheritor of Ancestor Li.

Although the situation had changed completely, but he only needed to change a small part of the entire plan. In his previous plan, it was to ensure that his Master's inherited identity of Ancestor Li was ambiguous, where no one could expose. But now, he needed to ensure that his Master's identity was publicly known.

Xu Ye who had calmed down started thinking quickly.

To prove Master's Identity, it is extremely simple, it is to show off the Demon Six Seals to Sin Domain.

How do we show it off?

To visit families and challenge them!

By winning, it will be enough to bring the Demon Six Seals into everyone's minds.

And what if he keeps on winning?

Xu Ye could hardly control his excitement, he took a deep breath, and shouted out to the driver outside: "Change of plans, we are going to East Immortal City!"

# Chapter 745 – Military Flag

---

The current expanded Sin Domain was a narrow crescent shaped region. On one side of the crescent was an endless mountain range, while on the other side, an endless blue sea.

The seventeen cities of the Sin Domain were scattered within here. The Four Main Cities were located right dead center of the crescent, where the land was prosperous, fertile, and had vast fields. As they were the first to break new grounds, the flat plains where no wild beasts could be hidden, was very safe.

Purple Cuckoo City was located at the eastern tip of the crescent, not only were they next to mountains, but they were also by the sea, and which was in fact a dangerous place.

Nearest to Purple Cuckoo City was East Immortal City and Sharp Wind City; where East Immortal City was located west of Purple Cuckoo City, while Sharp Wind City was located southwest of Purple Cuckoo City.

If one wanted to travel from Purple Cuckoo City, they had to first pass through Sharp Wind City, following the shoreline and head further west. Xu Ye's change of path to East Immortal City was after considerations.

“This subordinate has thought about it the past two days, and require changes to our previous plan. Master, since you have inherited Ancestor Li's inheritance, Master Ghost Face Mask's identity can be preserved. Furthermore, you can go towards the

other families to request for your troops.”

Xu Ye’s words surprised Tang Tian, who asked: “They will give them to me?”

“I am afraid not.” Xu Ye laughed: “Although Ancestor Li saved the Sin Domain that year, but that was history, reckon no one will ever bother returning the debt. But do not worry, because right from the start, we have proper reason to do so. Ancestor Li’s inheritor had gone out to travel and met with misfortune, his subordinates were taken and split by everyone, to go and demand them back from the families is a natural course of action.”

“But what use does that have?” Tang Tian was clueless.

“That is the first step.” Xu Ye said cheekily, after two days of careful consideration, his planning could be considered robust and foolproof: “At this time, everyone will be ignoring Master. But no matter, we will start building our prestige.”

“Building our prestige?” Tang Tian was startled.

“Yes, Master, by calling yourself the successor of Ancestor Li, everyone will naturally not believe you. So what can we do? We have to make everyone believe us, we need to continuously challenge famous experts, as long as Master wins, Master’s Demon Six Seals will become more and more famous, and everyone’s view on your demands will change. Master is Ancestor Li’s Inheritor, that is a name that shoots to the sky, in the future you will be hailed as a hero, and many eyes will be on you. Even if they do not

wish to join your side, they will not make it difficult with the prisoners, Master will just have to trade them with things that will benefit them, and you will be able to redeem every single one of your subordinate.”

“We can do that!” Tang Tian’s eyes went round, he had a look of astonishment, Xu Ye’s words had opened a new window in his mind.

“Master’s identity is revered, and yet you are willing to put yourself in danger for your subordinates, as a lord, you will definitely be supported by others. But there will be people who will disapprove of your actions, at that time, you just have to send out your army, with that pressure, they will obediently hand your subordinates over.”

Xu Ye’s pale white face revealed an unnatural red, his eyes sparkling like the stars in the sky.

After days of consideration, he suddenly realised that there was a new opportunity for the Sin Domain. If not for Ancestor Li’s Inheritor, the Master and the Null Division would be seen as outsiders to the entire Sin Domain, and the majority of the families would never trust them. But since the Master was the inheritor of Ancestor Li, the situation has completely changed, Tang Tian would have a deep connection with the Sin Domain, and would greatly demolish the hostility by the other families.

The gold title of Ancestor Li’s Inheritor, was definitely the sturdiest title, and more important, Tang Tian’s Null Division. On the Null Division members, Xu Ye saw another strength, as long as

Tang Tian obtained his Null Division back, no one would be stronger than him.

And in that, Xu Ye saw hope for Sin Domain.

Master is young and has outstanding talent, and with the top grade inheritance, Lu Tian Wen is definitely not Master's endgame. A strong leader, a powerful army, in terms of power and prestige, who can stop Master?

Xu Ye became extremely excited, and had been racking his brain juice for the past two days, formulating a plan for Tang Tian.

He controlled the excitement in him and maintained a calm stance: "As long as Master fights a few times and wins, no one in the Sin Domain will go against Master's orders. Master's troops will quickly be back in your arms."

Tang Tian listened till his eyes were bright, he could hear that Xu Ye's plan had a high possibility of succeeding. Compared to fighting family to family, Xu Ye's plan was much stronger.

"We will do as you say." Tang Tian said without hesitation.

Xu Ye hesitated for a moment, then looked at Tang Tian: "But this plan has a flaw."

"What flaw?" Tang Tian immediately asked.

“Master will have to bear an immense risk.” Xu Ye explained: “Because once your identity as Ancestor Li’s Inheritor is revealed, it will attract jealous parties. They will definitely think of ways to obtain Ancestor Li’s inheritance. Master will always be in danger, and with the rise of your name, there is the chance of attracting the peak martial artists. If you want to raise your popularity, you can just announce the death of Lu Tian Wen. but by doing so, Lu Sheng Xiang will definitely do everything he can to kill you. So, Master, in this period of time, your strength will definitely soar, but since you need some time for buffer, it is better that you find a few people to fight with and warm up, to increase your chances to win against Lu Sheng Xiang.”

Xu Ye finally understood how Nie Qiu felt, it was not that they did not want to formulate a safer plan, but the Master was too strong, and in everything that they could think of, the Master would automatically become the core of it all.

Such a plan always had an irresistible lure. If it was in the past, he would definitely not make such a plan. Because in the plan, it completely relied on the wager of the Master alone. Wagering that the Master could bear such a burden, wagering that the Master will get stronger through the challenges.

Lu Tian Wen’s rank would only make the title of Ancestor Li’s Inheritor a joke. Only by obtaining a higher rank, an even more eye catching existence, could they get the entire Sin Domain to curry under the Master’s feet.

He did not know whether what he thought was right, but it was



the best plan he could think of.

Tang Tian snorted: “Attract their attention? No matter, even if they do not come to find me, I want to find them! They will definitely be beaten by me until they kneel in front of me.”

Ever since he stepped into Sin Domain, Tang Tian always had a raging fire in his stomach. My own subordinates are held as prisoners, you guys want to just hand them back? Naive! Did they suffer for nothing? Tang Tian had already planned to repay the huge debt.

Just at that moment, a carriage appeared behind them, and the driver sent over the Blood Bear Black Flag and the Ghost Face Mask.

“The flag and the mask, this subordinate specially got them to send it over, this time, Master’s movements must be impressive, to be able to make an impact.” Xu Ye said: “Since we have decided to build our prestige, we must make it big, make it huge.”

Tang Tian looked at the blood bear black flag that was embroidered on, his face twitched, Don’t you guys know how to redraw it?

The blood bear black flag was drawn exactly to what Tang Tian had done the previous time, but it was just embroidered on, and the flagpole swapped for a sturdier and stronger metal pole, it looked to be much more imposing.

“Master, you can go for your closed door training for the next few days.” Xu Ye chuckled: “I am afraid when we arrive at East Immortal City, you will be faced with consecutive battles.”

Tang Tian laughed, his fighting spirit roused: “Hahah, don’t worry about me!”

-----

Purple Cuckoo City.

“Is my drawing good.” Ah Mo Li was pleased: “It’s much better than Crazy Tang’s.”

His drawing was truly better looking than Tang Tian’s, at least it looked like an ordinary bear.

Han Bing Ning ignored him, and handed down the duplicated copy of the blood bear: “We will go according with this.”

Ah Mo Li could not take it: “Don’t tell me you truly want to use this ugly bear to be the military flag of our Null Division?”

A sword was instantly drawn at his neck, the cold sword tip caused the hairs on his entire body to stand, Han Bing Ning who stood beside him spoke out with a cold voice: “You say it’s ugly?”

Ah Mo Li’s skin went numb, he could tell that Han Bing Ning was

angry!

This ice girl can truly do anything when she's angry!

Ah Mo Li raised his hands up immediately: "We will listen to you!"

After that, he felt that he was too weak, so he asked: "Did you ask for the opinions from the others?"

Han Bing Ning turned, and Nie Qiu seemed to be know that Han Bing Ning was looking at him. He chuckled: "I have no objections."

He truly did not have any objections, he completely had no care about such minute details. Furthermore, in Leo Constellation, the Lion King's personally grafted flag was filled with honor and glory, furthermore, the ugly flag was personally done by the Master.

With the Xue Family's exquisite skills in weaving, they quickly finished the Blood Bear Black Flags,

Han Bing Ning looked at the new Blood Bear Black Flags, and the battle at the west street surfaced in her mind, the man in the Ghost Face Mask carrying the flag and shouting out "Ursa Major Null Division Han Bing Ning, report!

Seemed to be right at her ears.

She clearly remembered her state of mind, if not for her forcibly suppressing herself and not wishing for Da Lin and the rest to see her weakness, her tears would have already dropped down.

In the second battle, she followed behind Tang Tian, behind the flag, and seeing the ugly blood bear on the black flag swaying with the wind, she had already made a pledge to herself, to keep the flag and use it for the Null Division Military Flag.

In that difficult times, in the dangerous times, in the times of despair, it was the figure with the flag, the pride and disdain in his eyes that let her hope.

When everyone knew about how the ugly flag was what Master brought to save Han Bing Ning, when they heard about how Master walked into the battlefield by himself, when they heard of how tyrannical and arrogant he was, the entire Null Division's blood boiled.

Until Han Bing Ning said this.

“We must take this time to become even stronger, we should not let Master save us. In the capacity of Master's direct subordinates, this is humiliation! The time we have to train now, is obtained from Master risking his life for us. This is humiliation!”

The Null Division became silent, all of their faces were mixed with green and red, the upright Lupus Men all had their veins on their necks twitching. That's right, we are Master's subordinates, we actually needed him to save us, we actually need our Master to

risk his life to obtain more time for us to train.

This is the greatest disgrace!

The Lupus Men were all willing to die for Tang Tian, and such a disgrace cut their hearts to the point that they were bleeding inside.

Without needing to say a second word, the Null Division trained crazily, all of them giving it their all.

Nie Qiu who could subtly sense the changes, realised that he needed to reevaluate the Null Division.

Watching the exact same scene, Roland Su and the rest all inhaled in cold air, What kind of subordinates are they!

“If you guys are able to, it’s best for you guys to participate in the training as well.” Ah Mo Li suddenly spoke to them, with a serious expression: “We will definitely leave Sin Domain, the earlier that you guys can assimilate with us, the more benefits it will bring you guys in the future.”

Everyone looked at each other.

“I will participate.” Gu Xue was the first to stand out, she could clearly feel the support that they had for Tang Tian.

Seeing that, the others also stood out.

Nie Qiu laughed, his confidence soaring up high.

What Ah Mo Li did not know was that, he would be pleased for many years for saying that.

## Chapter 746 – Infamous He Xin

---

“How many families received this letter?”

Xu Xiang Dong, who had his robes opened up and lying on the rattan chair, with a bitter fruit in his mouth.... The bitter fruit came from a sort of plant, its skin was extremely thick and chewy, but its taste was extremely bitter, the juice was as black as ink, thus it was called the bitter fruit. Xu Xiang Dong's addiction to the bitter fruit was well known in East Immortal City.

Old He stood respectfully by the side: “Three Families. Our family, the Yu and the Song Family. Our family has 66 Prisoners, the Yu Family has 32, and the Song Family has 23.”

East Immortal City was by the side of the mountains and not near the ocean, thus the number of prisoners they had obtained were much fewer than Purple Cuckoo City.

Xu Xiang Dong bit the bitter fruit, the black juice staining his teeth black, but he did not seem to care, and asked: “What about the news from Purple Cuckoo City?”

“The Qin Family is gone.” Old He said with confirmation: “The Four Families had joined forces and levelled the Qin Family.”

Xu Xiang Dong's hand that was holding the bitter fruit close to his mouth suddenly stopped, he had a look of surprise: “Where's Qin Zhen?”

“He is currently at Galloping Horse City.” Old He replied: “It is said that he is doing some transaction with the Lu Family, the Lu Family are giving Qin Zhen 200 of Null Division Prisoners, and the Qin Family will sell the Xue Family to the Lu Family. This matter has shaken the Purple Cuckoo City, the Xue Family sought help from the various families, but no one dared to help them. Qin Zhen flew over to Galloping Horse City to visit Lu Sheng Xiang. But he had always been interacting with the other families, wanting to purchase even more Null Division Prisoners, and have already obtained the consent of a few families. The Lu Family did not object to that.”

“Hahahaha, Qin Zhen is definitely crying now. How can he bear that?” Xu Xiang Dong’s tone had a hint of delight over the disaster: “No matter what, he should destroy the Four Families. Xu Ye might be strong, but he is still lacking when compared to Qin Zhen. That’s not right, I’ve met that brat Xu Ye before, he doesn’t look like a foolish man, why would he do such a foolish thing? Is he not afraid of Qin Zhen coming back to kill them?”

“We do not know much details regarding the internal affairs, but many people saw Ghost Face Mask and the Xue Family entering the city, and Xu Ye and the other major figures were extremely respectful towards them.” Old He said.

“This Ghost Face Mask is something huh, I wonder what did they do, to make the group of people go crazy.” Xu Xiang Dong said languidly: “He is most probably a cheater, the inheritor of Ancestor Li, could it be that that made Xu Ye scared? Wasn’t it said that he is a very shrewd man?”



“Even a shrewd man can be fooled.” Old He laughed.

“That’s true, the more shrewd the person, the easier it is for him to be fooled, and doesn’t that mean that the Purple Cuckoo City belongs to Ghost Face Mask now?” Xu Xiang Dong thought.

“Yes.” Old He answered respectfully: “But there were rumors, Purple Cuckoo City was covered in rainbows that day, and it lasted for a long time. Everyone said it was the awakening of a powerful martial artist. Qin Zhen left Galloping Horse City, but at the moment he has not revealed himself. Qin Zhen is a man full of doubts, without clarifying the situation, he will definitely not act, and will most likely observe in the shadows.”

“Old He, do you think that that guy’s identity as Ancestor Li’s Inheritor is real or fake? Xu Xiang Dong suddenly asked.

“Hard to say.” Old He thought for a bit: “Ancestor Li’s grace towards the various families in the past have caused many frauds to run out once in awhile, trying to use his grace to benefit themselves. Previously, we did not hear of any relation between Ghost Face Mask and Ancestor Li, only knowing that he is the leader of the Ursa Major Null Division. This shouldn’t be fake, just that this old one has never heard of this Ursa Major Null Division, after investigating around, I still got nothing. For the Inheritor of Ancestor Li, that is too sudden and strange. I presume that this man knows that it will be difficult obtaining his subordinates back, and is donning on tiger skin to scare the others.”

“These prisoners have good qualities, and even rarer loyalty.” Xu Xiang Dong said leisurely: “Although I have no interest in that Ghost Face Mask, but the prisoners are good stuff. Qin Zhen spent so much efforts, I presume that Purple Cuckoo City has many of those prisoners?”

“An impressive number, as Purple Cuckoo City is near the ocean, they picked up more than 400 prisoners, adding the Lu Family’s supply of 200, they have 600 odd of them.” Old He seemed to know what the Patriarch was thinking, but he had to admit, it was truly something difficult to refuse.

All of the Null Division Prisoners had outstanding qualities, as long as they could be groomed and absorbed, the Xu Family’s strength would definitely soar. Qin Zhen’s planning was done well, but it was a pity that he overreached, and overestimated his own control over Purple Cuckoo City, thus resulting in such consequences.

If he was instead extremely stable in his own city, the Qin Family would definitely be different.

“Go and investigate on this Ghost Face Mask tonight.” Xu Xiang Dong said: “Who knows, we might be able to swallow Purple Cuckoo City up as well.”

“This old one will find out about him tonight.” Old He complied.

Xu Xiang Dong waved his hand, and Old He bowed and retreated. On his rattan chair, Xu Xiang Dong squinted his eyes as he started

to doze off, with a sneer on his face. He was different from Qin Zhen, Xu Xiang Dong was extremely good at concealing his strength and biding his time. East Immortal City was just a small city, and the Xu Family was just a mediocre family. Xu Xiang Dong barely managed to fight his way into the List of Powerhouses, and was a few positions behind Qin Zhen at rank 48.

But Xu Xiang Dong's mind seemed to have never placed Qin Zhen in his eyes.

\*\*\*\*\*

In an inn.

“They should have received the letter already, right.” Tang Tian was excited and eager.

Xu Ye smiled: “Yes, I am afraid that our background have already been checked by the families. East Immortal City has three families, the Xu Family, Yu Family, and the Song Family. The strongest will be the Xu Family, Xu Xiang Dong is a reserved and low profile man, he rarely steps out of Easy Immortal City, is currently ranked 48 on the List of Powerhouses, I suspect that he wants people to underestimate him.”

“When do we fight them?” Tang Tian asked eagerly.

He felt that although Xu Ye's idea was good, but there was still something missing, the straightforwardness and joy in directly

killing their way up the enemy's doors. It was a pity, if it was Ursa Major Constellation, they would use their great armies to apply pressure, and see who dared to not hand over the Null Division Prisoners.

“I don't think we need to take the initiative.” Xu Ye's gaze suddenly turned cold.

Tang Tian was startled, but he immediately reacted, sensing a faintly discernable aura. His body flickered and appeared in the corner of the room like a ghost, his hand blade stabbing into the wall, cutting through it like tofu.

A biting cold aura collided with Tang Tian's hand blade, bang, the wall in front of Tang Tian instantly exploded, causing countless of rocks to fly. If it were any ordinary person, their first instinct would be to retract their bodies and retreat, as the exploding rocks were like arrows, and their vision would be clouded by the dust, unable to see their opponents, retreating was usually the most ideal option.

But not only did Tang Tian not retreat, he instead lowered his head, and like a bull, he shot into the cloud of dust.

His body was extremely tyrannical, and was his best weapon.

Inside the cloud of dust, a cold strike launched forward.

Tang Tian was not afraid, he slashed upwards, [Executing the

Heavens] swept forward silently, colliding with the cold strike, the tyrannical power from Executing the Heavens erupted immediately.

The assassin did not expect that Tang Tian's hand blade would have such power, and lost in the collision.

Tang Tian body followed the blade, wanting to strike again to cut the enemy in half.

But a feeling of clogging came from his hand, causing his body to turn sluggish, he then rushed out of the cloud of dust, realising that he had actually fallen into the enemy's trap.

The black cloud of dust had a dense layer of wires, crossing each other in front of him like a spiderweb. The extremely fine black wires had coiled around his hand to his wrist like vines, and were locking him down tightly. Tang Tian pulled and pulled, but realised that he could not break them, the black wires were extremely sturdy, and they seemed to be tied in a unique manner that dissolved Tang Tian's strength.

Xu Ye finally saw everything clearly, his face changing: "Death Wires!"

He immediately understood why he had sensed the opponent faster than Master, it was because the enemy trained in Life and Death Laws, the dense death law aura caused him sensed the enemy. Death Wires was the most famous technique used in the Life and Death Laws, formed from the most dense death law aura,

it could corrode a person's vitality without the person knowing.

## Death Wires?

Tang Tian heard Xu Ye's exclamation, but he had no time to think, the net in front of him was extremely strange, Executing the Heavens' power was extremely vigorous, but when he slashed at the black net, it was actually dissipated. Furthermore, the black mist emitted by the black wires were like worms drilling into his skin.

The big net suddenly released a ripple, the chaotic death wires distorted around, turning into a terrifying man's face. The man's face was ugly and sinister, it opened its mouth and released a large amount of black mist, that was like countless of grieving spirits.

“Death Puppet! Infamous He Xin!”

Xu Ye's face became ugly, the dense death aura pounced forward. The moment the Death Puppet appeared, it shouted out the identity of the assassin. Death Puppet Master He Xin! An A Grade Infamous Man from 10 years ago!

He was so infamous that his name could cause infants to stop crying at night!

Life and Death Laws were one of the three Great Laws, and the number of people who trained in it were the most few amongst the three. Life and Death was unpredictable, Life and Death Laws'

variations were the most difficult to comprehend. And there were even lesser people who solely trained in Death Laws, because the dense law aura would unknowingly corrode the person's body, and even the martial artist training in it was incapable of escaping from it. So the majority of martial artists would train in both Life and Death Laws, to use the Life Laws to resist the corrosion of the Death Laws, which was like Xu Ye's [Life and Death Seal].

But if one were to meet a martial artist who specialized in Life and Death Laws, they have to be careful, because such an enemy usually indicated that they were powerful, furthermore, He Xin's Infamous name, was definitely at the top in the circle of those who trained in Life and Death Laws.

If it were a B Grade Infamous man, they were rising top grade martial artists, but the A Grade Martial artists were all powerful martial artists able to fight with martial artists on the List of Powerhouses.

Xu Ye did not hesitate and urged the Life Laws in his body, his palm becoming transparent like crystal, and struck towards the Death Wire Net. A transparent palm print suddenly pressed onto the net.

Countless of the black wires churned like black worms, fervently devouring the transparent palm print.

Xu Ye's face turned, Life and Death subdued each other, but the extremely pure Life Hand print was actually unable to cause harm to the Death Wires. The death aura was too dense and furious, and both techniques were of different grades.

Just at that moment, the human face illusion suddenly moved, and opened its mouth to bite towards Tang Tian's hands.

All the hair on Tang Tian's body erected, the intense sense of danger clouding his mind, Heavy Demonic Execution was useless against Life and Death Laws, and his own palm was firmly locked down, unable to be moved an inch.

In that anxiousness, he ignored everything else and used his left hand to form the Grasping Flowers Seal.

The aura around Tang Tian instantly changed.



# Chapter 747 – Death Puppet Master

---

Grasping Flower Seal, the most familiar seal Tang Tian knew of amongst the Demon Six Seals.

The Seal made it look as if he was picking flowers.

Tang Tian's aura suddenly changed. If it were to be compared, previously, Tang Tian was like a heavy and powerful axe, but now, he had become extremely calm and still, as though he was picking flowers with a gentle smile, his fingers aimed straight towards the sinister face pouncing onto him.

Chi!

Like a pricked balloon, the face started to deflate and disappear.

A groan sounded out from the distance.

Tang Tian felt the death wires coiling around his right hand loosen, and without hesitation, he shook it, causing an immense power to suddenly erupt, and the many of the death wires snapped.

The Death Wires were extremely hard to be break free from, upon being snapped, they became alarm like snakes and coiled even more fervently around Tang Tian.

But in the blink of the eye, Tang Tian had finished forming another seal.

Weeping Sword Seal.

An indescribable grief aura surged out from Tang Tian's body, the seal forming out like a sword. Inside Tang Tian's mind, the Demon Figure appeared, the sound mist flying around the palm that had formed the Weeping Sword Seal, and all of the grief and sorrow in the world seemed to have seeped into his bones.

A human has seven emotional states and six desires, all of which could form a demon.

The seal in Tang Tian's right palm emitted a strange mist, inside the mist were countless of grieving sounds, which coiled around the Death Net on Tang Tian, immediately shattering them into black mist which retreated back into the Death Wire Net.

Tang Tian immediately pulled out his right hand.

The Death Wire Net retreated like ink, and disappeared into the darkness.

The commotion was too huge, immediately stirring the entire inn.

Tang Tian and the rest did not stay in an ordinary inn, the Xu Family was also a big family, and paid particular attention towards

high quality of living, so there were no low end inns in the city. Furthermore, Xu Ye had long anticipated for such a matter, since they could not guard against any assassin's sneak attack, why not be clear cut and open.

But what Xu Ye did not expect was that they would actually meet the Death Puppet Master, He Xin.

Xu Ye trained in Life and Death Laws, thus he knew the variations of Life and Death, which were abstruse and unfathomable. Life came from death, and vice versa. The denser the death aura, the more flesh it required, He Xin's Law Surface was actually extremely dense with Death Aura, who knew how much bodies he had consumed.

Xu Ye trembled at the thought of it.

Martial artists who trained purely in Death Laws were not generally welcomed, and the majority of them would be Infamous people. Without the balance with Life Laws, not only would Death Laws corrode the martial artist's body, but it would even corrode the state of mind, causing them to be ruthless and brutal.

Shouts could be heard from the outside, fires were ignited, obviously the guards of the inn had heard the commotion and were rushing over.

Xu Ye carefully checked the place, and finally calmed down, he could not sense He Xin's aura.

“He left.”

Xu Ye’s heart was beating hard.

Tang Tian did not move at all, not relaxing himself one bit.

Seeing that, Xu Ye once again probed around extremely carefully, and then opened his eyes and confirmed: “He’s gone.”

He trained in Life and Death Laws, and was extremely sensitive towards Life and Death aura, if He Xin was still around, he would definitely be able to sense him, like how he found out about He Xin at the start.

Tang Tian did not speak, his eyes gradually sweeping across all corners in the courtyard, his movements extremely slow.

A group of bodyguards barged in.

The leader of the bodyguards looked at the big hole in the wall and asked: “What happened?”

Xu Ye snorted: “I never expected that the East Immortal Pavilion would not be safe. But it’s fine, I doubt that you can guard against Death Puppet Master He Xin.”

The leader’s voice changed upon hearing that: “What, Death Puppet Master He Xin!”

Xu Ye could not be bothered by him, the bodyguards only had strength to deal with ordinary experts, but against someone like He Xin, they were like ants.

The leader bowed: “Do you mind if we check the place?”

“There’s no need for that .” Xu Ye said impatiently.

The leader of the bodyguard bowed: “We have a responsibility, we hope customer understands.’

Xu Ye looked at Tang Tian, seeing Tang Tian nodding slightly, he said: “Alright, go take a look.”

The leader immediately replied: “Thank you!”

With that, he lowered his head and headed towards the hole in the wall, which was behind Tang Tian. The leader bowed and wanted to walk past Tang Tian. Just at that moment, a burst of light aura shot forth from Tang Tian’s eyes, and his hand blade suddenly slashed out.

Chi!

His hand struck the leader’s body, as though he wanted to kill him. Pa, the man’s body flew out like a sandbag and struck the wall straight on, causing countless of cracks to form.

Xu Ye and the other guards were startled, and immediately all of the guards revealed looks of anger.

But right at that moment, a strange change occurred.

Black Death Aura suddenly emitted out of the leader. The black death aura quickly transformed into lines of Death Wires, in the blink of an eye, all of these Death Wires formed a large net, coiling around the man.

The Death Wires intercrossed each other, making the leader's eyes to become pitch black.

“How did you find out?”

A low and hoarse voice came out from the man's body.

Tang Tian's left hand secretly formed the Formless Spirit seal, but he did not release the change in aura, causing him to be clear of the situation around him. His intuition was originally extremely sharp, other than Nie Qiu with his extreme senses, Tang Tian did not find anyone who surpassed him in this aspect.

The Formless Spirit Seal heightened his intuition, and he could sense every changes in a person.

Tang Tian's Blade Devil Transformation was powerful, enough to

shatter the bones in a person's body and destroy the entire chest bone, but at the moment, the man's chest was completely normal, all of his bones were as before, and only his skin was a death gray color.

Xu Ye's face turned pale white, he was overwhelmed with shock. In that moment, the vitality of the bodyguard was quickly removed, and the dense death aura surged out from his body.

That is.....

Xu Ye muttered subconsciously: "Dead Heart Seed...."

The Death Law Surface was the most evil and terrifying ability. Upon reaching the complete state of enlightenment for the Death Law Surface, one would begin to produce life from death, and able to produce a bizarre grayish white seed, which was the Dead Heart Seed.

Dead Heart Seeds are produced from the most dense of death aura, but it did not have any aura of death. Many people who were inflicted by the Dead Heart Seed would never know it. The most terrifying thing about the Dead Heart Seed was that upon being implanted, as long as the target's state of mind slackened, it would quietly slip into the mind of the victim and take root in the victim's consciousness.

Once the Dead Heart Seed were to germinate, it would start extracting the victim's vitality and transform it into death aura. It uses the target's most fundamental life force, transforming it into

an equally dense death aura. As it takes roots in the person's consciousness, it would never give the victim the time to react.

“Hhehehehe, I knew that I can't escape from Patriarch Xu's sharp eyes.”

The dry and hoarse voice came out, the leader was like a puppet, every movement he made was extremely stiff, causing the rest to tremble.

All the guards' faces had turned white, they did not realise that their leader was strange. Everyone looked at each other, seeing the fear in each other's eyes, they all ran away.

Death aura shot out from all of their bodies.

In the blink of the eye, they all became the same dead puppets like the leader.

Tang Tian stared at them, feeling a rarely felt anxiousness. Regardless if it was Heaven's Road or Sacred Saint Galaxy, they all adhered to norm, but in Sin Domain where laws were unique, everything was extremely strange and unfathomable.

The leader's arms started to swing and shoot towards Tang Tian like an arrow.

Tang Tian snorted, he did not fear at all, and unleashed Executing the Heavens!



Bang!

Tang Tian's hand turned numb, the other party's fist was strangely powerful. And in that few seconds, a few shadows pounced forward like lightning.

Bang bang bang!

Every strike caused Tang Tian's arm to feel numb, all of these ordinary looking guards were releasing dense death aura, causing them to be as tough as steel. All of the death puppets would not stop, and continued to pounce at Tang Tian like maniacs.

The torrent of attacks caused Tang Tian to be forced backwards, and he did not even have time to catch a breath.

All of them looked like machines, but were moving extremely quickly, as though they were not limited by the constraints of a human being, all of their joints were moving at all sorts of angles.

The rage in Tang Tian's chest grew accumulated more and more, the enemy's methods were extremely strange, it made him feel as if he was fighting a pile of cotton, which made him even more infuriated.

He was becoming more ferocious too, So your death aura cannot be slashed? Your stupid puppets are as strong as steel? You think you can beat me because of your numbers?

What joke are you playing at!

If your death aura cannot be sliced, I will destroy your puppets! Your puppets are as strong as steel right, even if they are steel, I will shatter them to powder!

Tang Tian roared out loud, he stopped retreating, and started counterattacking and pounced onto one of the puppets.

His left palm formed into a fist, whoosh, the temperature around him suddenly escalated, Tang Tian's fist seemed to form a layer of red light, as though his fist caught fire.

Angry Fist Seal!

With the fist as a seal, it coincided with Tang Tian's current state of mind, the unspeakable contentment surged in as a raging tide that churned his blood. It was as though he was being boiled up by a deep fryer, the rage moved endlessly.

Roar!

The flow went to his fist, the anger made Tang Tian's figure become slightly blurred, like the blazing heat wave distorting the air.

Two fists collided head on.

A powerful force erupted from Tang Tian's fist, the puppet recoiled and struck a wall.

Bang bang bang!

The entire wall suddenly crumbled.

Inside the rubble, the puppet's body continued to twitch, but it could no longer stand up.

An indescribable fulfilment flushed his body, Tang Tian's red eyes regained a bit of clarity. But the few black figures pounced towards him again. He roared once, and released his fist multiple times, the Angry Fist Seal was able to increase his power by a few folds, which was initially already powerful enough, after the increase, it had become extremely terrifying.

One punch that felt like ten, there was no technique to his punches, as there was no need for any, every punch of his was extremely heavy.

Every puppet received a punch.

Under the furious power strikes, the dense death qi continued to crumble. The bodies of the puppets were completely destroyed, and as too much death qi was shattered, the puppets were no longer able to move.

In the shadows, He Xin spat out blood, his eyes revealing a look of shock.

Xu Ye stared blankly at Tang Tian who was the only one left standing, his eyes were scarlet red, but his expression ice cold, his entire body was emitting a very high temperature, as though he was a demon that walked out from the depths of hell.

Just at that moment, Tang Tian did something that Xu Ye would have never thought of.

# Chapter 748 – Point Break

---

He Xin looked at his laws that was damaged, his heart was overwhelmed with shock.

The red color was not flames, and he could not feel any undulation from laws. Thinking about the report he had just received from his subordinate, He Xin immediately thought about killing the man. What fist that could attract Law Threads, his fist technique did not even release any undulations.

To purely use brute force to destroy his own puppets, it was He Xin's first time witnessing such a thing.

This guy.....is not simple!

He Xin who was hidden in the shadows carefully observed Ghost Face Mask, the temperature around the man was also strange. Clearly it gives off a hot temperature, but it also seems to be an ice cold aura. And what is with that red light around his body, what is that?

Wait a minute, what is he doing?

He Xin opened his eyes wide, his expression becoming stunned.

Tang Tian's expression was ice cold, the space around him seemed to become blurry as the space turned red.

## Angry Fist Seal.

He had never thought that the first seal that he would gain complete enlightenment on was not the Grasping Flower Seal that he was most familiar with, but the rarely used Angry Fist Seal. The Demon Figure in his body had one hand that was in the Angry Fist Seal, and the gigantic Demon emitted a dim red light, it's empty face seemed to reveal angry eyes.

The red light permeated into Tang Tian's body, his muscles and flesh were affected by the red light, and the originally already surging Origin Force became even more wild, and Tang Tian felt as if he had endless of power.

But strangely, his expression was indifferent, his cold eyes looking at the corners, his mind ice cold.

He walked out of the courtyard.

The huge commotion and powerful ripples had long startled many people.

In the eyes of everybody, Tang Tian was fearless.

His entire body emitted a blood red light, as though he had walked out of a sea of blood, causing people's heart to palpitate. And the eyes revealed from beneath the mask, was so cold that it seemed to have no temperature, and continued walking while ignoring everyone else.

His Angry Fist Seal was definitely not ordinary, the Demon Figure in him was congealed and did not disappear, releasing a boundless might.

Outside of the courtyard was a plateau mountain, which the owner of the inn had made by inviting a powerful martial artist, who cut off the mountain top, spending a huge amount of power, thus the owner of the inn called it Point Break. Point Break's highest point was 60m high, it was steep with its entire body greenish black, 12 pillar thick chains dropped down from the top, which the inn owner had adopted and kept it, even growing hanging plants, a cold spring that babbled down from the top of the mountain, releasing a cool and refreshing mist, making the scenery very beautiful.

The entire inn's layout was built surrounding the tall Point Break, and Point Break was located at the center, every courtyard's exit would face Point Break. The 12 top grade courtyards were called Point Break 12 Yards.

For the sake of a better view, any spectators jumped up Point Break.

When they saw Tang Tian walking towards the Plateau, they immediately jumped aside, to the surrounding walls, seeing the badly damaged courtyard, they could see the intensity of the battle.

Tang Tian walked in front of the Plateau, pa pa pa, he broke the

large iron chains.

Whooosh, he got hold of a few iron chains.

Tang Tian tensed up his entire body, his muscles stretched taut, the iron chains pulled straight. The gigantic Point Break started trembling incessantly.

All of the spectators were dumbstruck, What the hell...

Boom, a loud sound came out from the top of the plateau, all of the chains broke, and the plants on the chains started dropping like rain.

The red light around Tang Tian became even more intense, and the Ghost Face Mask became even more sinister.

Rumble rumble!

The 60m tall Point Break was actually being moved by Tang Tian.

W-w-what....

Everyone's expression turned sour, everyone knew how immense the weight of Point Break was. On the grand occasion of bringing Point Break into the city, many of them still clearly remembered the hundreds of people that were like ants pulling Point Break, all of them spent their energy just to move it into the city.



There was actually a person, by relying on himself, could move the entire Point Break!

Is this guy a human?

He Xin's face was pale, he was overwhelmed by the shock. Point Break's entire body was made up of deep black rocks, its essence was extremely compacted and sturdy, the 60m tall mountain had a weight not lesser than 300 thousand kg. A powerful martial artist on the list of powerhouses could use one sword to cut off the peak, that was reasonable, but to purely use brute force and pull the 300 thousand kg mountain, that was unheard of.

Are my Death Puppets going to be destroyed....

In the face of the immense power, all of his techniques and variations were like paper.

But...how is that possible?

How can someone wield such strength?

Just as everyone were shocked by the scene, Tang Tian had already gathered all the power in his body and pulled the mountain, moving one step at a time.

Rumble, rumble.

The immense Point Break, every time it moved, the ground would tremble.

Tang Tian's muscles were burning, the huge Demon figure in his mind was releasing an immense amount of red light, the red light was not hot, Tang Tian's mental state remained ice cold, but his body seemed to be burning.

His entire body was burning.

Tang Tian no longer cared about He Xin, he could no longer be bothered with an injured person. The current him only had one thought in mind, Xu Xiang Dong!

Tang Tian had already forgotten about Xu Ye's carefully crafted plan.

In his cold mental state, he only had one thought, and that was to get rid of Xu Xiang Dong!

He no longer remembered the reason for wanting to do so, to save everyone, to build his prestige, all of them were gone, he only had the simplest and purest thought, to get rid of Xu Xiang Dong.

To win!

Keep moving forward!

Behind the mask, a roar that sounded like a wild beast came out.

Rumble rumble.

The speed of moving Point Break gradually increased, leaving a large deep scar on the surface of the ground.

Rumble rumble.

The speed of Point Break continued to increase, it was already nearing the speed of a normal walking pace, Tang Tian's each step was strangely firm.

Rumble rumble.

Tang Tian started to jog, the long chains were pulled straight, the sounds of the friction between the metals sounded out as the speed of the moving Point Break increased.

Tang Tian became faster and faster, Point Break was already causing sparks to ignite due to the friction with the ground, the rumbling sound was overwhelming, the resounding low rumble caused people's hearts to palpitate, as every corner of East Immortal City were affected.

All of the citizens stopped what they were doing, Earthquake?

Xu Ye finally recovered from his shock, he also ignored He Xin, bringing along the Blood Bear Black Flag, he anxiously chased after Tang Tian. What shocked him was Master's speed was continuously increasing, How is that possible....

His heart was trembling, but as an astute person, he immediately realized that it was an exceptionally good opportunity. The scene was extremely shocking, and anyone who witnessed it would definitely be shocked.

Such a godly strength was something that was never seen before!

Xu Ye quickly chased after Tang Tian, the closer he got, the stronger the vibrations, the more overwhelming the sound. Xu Ye had a thought, that regardless of what enemies came, facing the current state Master was in, would all be trampled into powder.

With the overwhelming vibrations, an indescribable feeling surfaced in his mind, he leapt up and jumped into the sky, he waved his hands, the Blood Bear Black Flag shot through the air like an arrow and stabbed onto the peak of the plateau.

“Ghost Face Mask!” Null Division!”

“Ursa Major Null Division!”

Everyone exclaimed out at the same time, Purple Cuckoo City and East Immortal City were neighbours, both cities interacted frequently, and thus the events of Ghost Face Mask in Purple

Cuckoo City had spread very quickly, and many people in East Immortal City had heard of him. As for the events of the Four Families destroying the Qin Family and locking down Purple Cuckoo City, it had not been spread as of yet.

The battle on west street had many spectators, and many of the spectators who personally witnessed the battle, had immediately rushed over after hearing the commotion, seeing Ghost Face Mask's bear flag, they all became excited.

In Purple Cuckoo City, Ghost Face Mask was a legend.

And when they saw how Ghost Face Mask was running with Point Break behind him, all of them revealed looks of shock, What kind of godlike strength is that?

But very quickly, they all became excited.

What is Ghost Face Mask doing?

Regardless of what Ghost Face Mask is doing, his movements are definitely not a small matter.

The group of people looked as though they were on drugs, chasing after him excitedly.

Ahead of Tang Tian was a shop, but Tang Tian had no intent of dodging it, continuing to drag Point Break as he rushed forward. The shopkeeper and assistants in the shop were long stunned in

place, all of them had dumbstruck expressions on their face. But when they saw Tang Tian rushing straight to them, their faces turned pale white, and all of them started to scatter in panic.

Tang Tian barged into the shop, Point Break bringing along sparks, crushing into the shop.

Bang!

The shop was instantly destroyed like paper, forming countless of planks and broken pieces, the upper portion of the shop was directly flung into the sky, and spun in midair.

Sssssi!

Everyone inhaled in cold air, their faces pale white.

The moving Point Break was no longer something that could be stopped, even if it a city wall was in front of it, it would not be able to stop Point Break, and would shatter into nothing.

A few quick witted people immediately flew into the air and looked down from above, and the scene was as though a wild beast was running wantonly, all the shops were nothing in front of it, encountering any walls, it would destroy the walls, encountering any houses, it would level the houses, bang bang bang, clouds of dust rose into the air, revealing a straight path down on the ground.

This directio.....

It's towards the Xu Family!

The first to react was Xu Ye, he was stunned for a moment, and found it difficult to swallow his saliva, Is Master trying to force himself onto the Xu Family?

The second to react was He Xin.

He Xin's mind buzzed in a state of blankness for a moment. He never thought that Tang Tian's initial plan was to go straight for the Xu Family, he himself thought that it was his probing, that infuriated Ghost Face Mask, thus making him go straight for the Xu Family.

He wanted to cry, We just wanted to investigate you....

But he knew that if Ghost Face Mask were to rush up their front doors, the Xu Family's face would be gone. A look of ferocity flashed past his eyes, hidden in the darkness, he once again released the Dead Heart Seeds quietly.

His actions were not noticed by anyone, and that was where whether they lived or die, it was right at this heartbeat.

Hu hu hu!

The sudden burst of death aura caused the crowd to be shocked.

In the blink of the eye, the martial artists who lost their vitality all had their eyes turned pitch black, they shot forward like arrows, the surging death aura leaking out of their bodies and transformed into pitch black death wires that coiled around them.

The Death Wires became extremely dense, coiling round and round, making them look like black mummies with only their eyes revealed.

He Xin's Law Surface was like a piece of paper being burnt, the pale death flames slowly eating away this black paper, the Law Surface burned, releasing more death aura to become even denser.

Regardless of victory or defeat, his strength would drop greatly, but at that moment, he could not care about it.

“Death Wire King Puppet!”

A roar came out, causing the rowdy spectators to become silent.



# Chapter 749 – Death Wire King Puppet

---

Death Wire King Puppet.

Xu Ye could not believe his own eyes, Is that old man insane? Has He Xin gone mad? Death Wire King Puppet was not something a Law Surface could activate, Death Wire King Puppet's formation required many harsh conditions, and one of it was a higher level of power.

It consumed an entirely different grade of power than that of the Death Wires and Death Puppets. Death Puppets merely required the Death Wires to go around the main joints of the body, and one could freely control the Death Puppet to be used. But a Death Wire King Puppet was completely made up of Death Wires.

In reality, it was the Puppet Master that controlled the Death Puppets to fight through the use of Death Wires. As for the Death Wire King Puppet, it was able to fight by itself, the dense and powerful death aura emitted from the Puppet's body had already transformed the human's composition that was inside the puppet.

Other than being able to produce a dense amount of death qi from burning the Law Surface, it could also form a state between a Law Surface and a Law Space, allowing the user to borrow the power of the Law Space.

If a Puppet Master gained enlightenment on his Law Space, the Death King Puppet would transform into the greatest form of a puppet, a [Death God].

(TN: In Sin Domain, there is four levels in using Laws, Law Exposure, Law Surface, Law Domain, and ultimately Law Space.)

The Death Law Space was called [Hell], and [Death God] was one of the strongest powers in Hell. A Death Puppet Master's power could never be doubted, but it had a steep learning curve, demanding a high requirement in enlightenment and temperament.

In the history of Sin Domain, no one had ever gained enlightenment on [Death God], although Sin Domain's history was rather short.

He Xin's attainment in the Death Puppet could be said as the strongest amongst the martial artists who chased the same dao. For the sake of stopping Ghost Face mask, he ignited his own Law Surface without second thoughts, allowing himself to summon the Death King Puppet, which was only second to the Death God, it was extremely powerful, and hailed as the only puppet closest to the power of Death God.

When Xu Ye saw the Death King Puppet, he was stupefied, Does He Xin have some hatred against Master?

But when he looked on, he then understood, Xu Residence, He Xin was part of the Xu Residence!

Xu Ye was a sharp man, and immediately connected the dots.

The present battle had reached its climax.

Tang Tian finally stopped, five black figures had brought forth countless of shadows that whistled and circled around Tang Tian. Their movements were extremely fast, faster than the Death Puppets, with a rise in their strength. The most terrifying thing was their consciousness had been raised, and comparing them, the previous death puppets looked like mere toys.

The Five Death King Puppets knew how to use battle formations, thus increasing the pressure on Tang Tian.

But Tang Tian was not afraid, he was immersed in the Angry Fist Seal, and his body that was boiling up had formed a strange balance with his ice cold consciousness. The iron chains gripped by him felt weightless, and when he pulled on them, it brought forth extremely low resounding screeches, as though there was an ancient beast howling from the distance. Countless of ripples permeated out.

Ssssi!

A smear of a shadow was flung away by the iron chains, it was a Death King Puppet that was planning on sneaking an attack on Tang Tian. Its bone shattering voice was drowned by the sounds from the iron chains, thus no one could hear its wail. This Death King Puppet was flung out like a ball, the black figure flashed and shot out like an arrow, fiercely clashing into a courtyard.

Bang!

The courtyard was transformed into smithereens.

But due to the huge commotion, all of the experienced citizens nearby had long escaped out of the area.

After a few seconds, the pitch black Death King Puppet crawled out from the pit, as though nothing had happened to it, it shot into the sky once again to battle.

One of the Death King Puppet took the chance when Tang Tian was tangled up with three of its companions, and broke through the blockade Tang Tian made with the chains, sticking close to the ground, it quietly snuck up on Tang Tian.

Both parties quickly got closer, its pitch black eyes flickered and its body disappeared, in the next moment, it appeared right Behind Tang Tian, and what no one expected was that its blink technique did not release any ripple of laws.

But.....

A palm had suddenly appeared in its vision unknowingly.

The palm formed the shape of a blade and slashed. It had no aura, and the air around fluctuated.

Devil, I, Execution!

This blade slashed right straight into the Death King Puppet's face. The surging power erupting suddenly.

Ssssi!

The Death King Puppet's head suddenly bent backwards, the Death Wires that coiled around the head tightly were all slashed apart and scattered out in a mess, revealing a pale white face.

“Ah Xiang! No!”

Someone from the crowd suddenly screamed, the lady covered her mouth as her face turned pale white and her body started swaying. The man was her younger brother, who was actually turned into a Death King Puppet. That familiar face that had not one thread of blood left was already dead.

The heartbreaking scream enveloped the entire street.

The crowd were in an uproar, a few ran over to console her with faces of rage.

“Death Puppet Master! Find him! He must be near!”

“That's right, he is definitely here somewhere! He actually turned Ah Xiang....”

He Xin who was hidden in the shadows was bleeding from his nose, mouth and eyes, it was a horrific sight. All these ants, they think they can find me, truly overestimating themselves. A sinister look flashed past his eyes.

It is your honor to be able to become my puppet.

He squinted his eyes, and retracted all of his aura, and like a dead tree, he camouflaged himself into the surroundings. Many people had died as his puppets, ever since he gained enlightenment on the Dead Heart Seeds, he became fearless and reckless. All of the normal humans were used by him when and where he liked, to him, it should be their most prideful thing to be able to be his puppet.

Many people walked past him, but no one sensed his existence. He had killed countless of people and was extremely crafty, how could he be affected by the normal citizens around him?

But he could sense that Xu Ye was looking for him.

To him, Xu Ye was bright but was too soft, and he was not liberal in how he trained the Life and Death Laws, So train for what? As a man who drew blood, he was filled with disdain towards Xu Ye, whom he thought was a beautiful flower that was groomed and kept in the safety of a greenhouse.

He retracted his aura perfectly.

Ghost Face Mask's strength far surpassed his expectations, and he somewhat believed that Ghost Face Mask was the inheritor of Ancestor Li. When he crossed techniques with Ghost Face Mask, he could clearly feel the changes behind the mask. Previously, Ghost Face Mask's strength was surprising, but now, it was of a different level.

Everything started from when his fist changed, when that strange red light appeared.

He Xin Carefully recalled the punch, suddenly, his heart pounded, he finally realised. Ghost Face Mask's fist, no, it was not a fist, it was an illusion, the fist was not real.

That's not a fist, that's a hand seal!

That finger technique he used against my Death Wire Net that looked as though he was plucking flowers, that is also definitely a seal.

Could he....really be...the inheritor of Ancestor Li....

He Xin was overwhelmed with shock, because if it was real, it would truly be a shocking revelation to Sin Domain. Everyone knows of Ancestor Li's strength and grace to Sin Domain, and for his inheritor to be so powerful as well, I'm afraid....

He did not dare consider further.

I should only think about it after I get through this His eyes became even more ferocious. If Ghost Face Mask is truly Ancestor Li's Inheritor, I cannot let him live. If he lives, the Xu Family will be destroyed in a night.

He Xin was extremely loyal to the Xu Family, and at the moment, he had no regards for his own life.

Regardless of anything, we have to kill Ghost Face Mask!

Looking at his Law Surface that was 30% burnt, He Xin had confidence. With this life, I must pull Ghost Face Mask into hell with me. He is obviously weakened as well, the red light around him had dimmed greatly, the intense battle had taken a toll on him.

The Death King Puppet with Ah Xiang as the medium wriggled once more, the Death Wires on his body once again enveloping his head.

Ghost Face Mask's movements were slow, his fatigue apparent.

Just at that moment, a Death King Puppet once again arrived behind Tang Tian.

The exact same thing occurred again, another "Devil, i, Execution' came out, as though Tang Tian was prepared for him.



Ssssi!

Death Wires snapped and flew everywhere, and a pale face was revealed once more.

The group wailed out, a middle aged man knelt on the ground, his entire body trembling like a sieve, he cried out loud.

He Xin sneered, if the first slash caused the Demon King Puppet's true face to be revealed was a coincidence, then, it made him understand what Ghost Face Mask was trying to do. You want to use this ant to fight against me?

Naive!

Clearly understanding Ghost Face Mask's idea, He Xin consciously controlled the other Death King Puppets to rush towards Tang Tian.

Bang bang bang!

The consecutive attacks from the three other King Puppets inflicted more wounds on Tang Tian.

The heart wrenching cries drilled into everybody's hearts.

The crowd's uproar became louder and louder, the initially spectating martial artists all revealed rage on their faces. To use

live humans as puppets was too cruel, too ruthless, and it was actually happening right in front of them in East Immortal City.

“That fucker! Even If it will take my life away, I will find this scoundrel out!” A built man roared.

“Find him now!”

“This is too cruel!”

The uproar of the crowd became louder and louder, everyone had a common enemy.

Seeing that, Xu Ye’s eyes lit up, he shouted out loud for everyone to hear: “I too train in life and Death Laws, to control the Death King Puppet, he must be within a distance of 300m.”

“300m, everyone scatter, do not even leave a speck of dust unturned, dig 1m into the ground, I don’t believe we can’t find him!” The built man roared.

At that moment, all the martial artists scattered, they hated the Puppet Master to the bones.

He Xin’s face finally changed, regardless of how perfectly hidden he was, if they were to search inch by inch, he would not be able to escape.

If his position was revealed, he would be in danger.

No, I can't let them find me!

An unprecedented fear rose in his heart, These damn ants, to dare go against me, I want to kill all of you! All of you!

He Xin was filled with killing intent and fear. One of the Death King Puppet suddenly retreated and rushed towards the crowd.

I can just use one of my puppet to kill everyone here. You want to instigate something? Look at the people around you, every single person is going to die, you guys still want to act as heroes?

He Xin's face was sinister and blood red, he knew of the ugly side of human nature, as long as the people were in danger, he knew what all of them would do.

Whoosh!

A skin numbing whistling sound swept across everybody's head.

The arm thick iron chain struck onto the Death King Puppet that was rushing for the crowd, but this time, it was not flung out, but locked tightly within the chains.

Tang Tian moved his hand, recalling the Death King Puppet back towards his side.

Seeing that, He Xin's face changed, Damn it!

But, you think you can just lock down my Death King Puppet?

The other three Death King Puppets pounced towards Tang Tian, sou sou sou, countless of black Death Wires shot out from their bodies, aimed straight for Tang Tian's arms, legs, and waists, the Death Wires locked tightly onto him.

Go and die!

The Death King Puppet that was pulled back by the chains revealed a black light in its eyes, it raised its arm that transformed into a black mist, and suddenly slashed towards Tang Tian.

The arm disappeared and transformed into a black scythe, the dead cold death aura aimed towards Tang Tian's neck!

King Puppet Scythe!

The dim pupils beneath the Ghost Face Mask suddenly lit up with a red light.

# Chapter 750 – Scythe

---

The black death wires locked Tang Tian firmly down. He could clearly feel the power released from the wires, and the skin numbing corrosive feeling felt like countless worms digging into his body.

Under the immense pressure of the Death Wires, Tang Tian felt as if his bones were about to be broken off.

In front of him, the Death Aura was so condensed that it congealed into a scythe, releasing an extremely biting cold death feeling, as though it was the scythe specially used by the Death God to claim lives. The strength of the King Puppets were forever incomparable to Death God, for him to unleash that technique, he had to give up an arm.

With the broken arm, the King Puppet's death aura all over its body quickly dropped, becoming extremely dim, like a mist dissipating.

Suicidal attack?

Tang Tian's ice cold mental state did not jump at all, his eyes like molten iron releasing a palpitating feeling.

Time seemed to stop to a crawl.

The surging red light continued to emit out from the Demon

Figure, as though the Demon Figure itself was fire. The muscles and flesh in Tang Tian's body burned quietly, the red light was like the furnace for steelmaking, and his body was like the materials being refined, continuously being burnt and reformed.

Strange changes occurred extremely quickly inside Tang Tian.

The Death Aura that infiltrated Tang Tian's body was destroyed upon touching the red light.

An indescribable power was quietly being formed inside his body. Origin Force formed when the power of the physique was ignited, and Tang Tian's strength came from between the muscles and flesh, upon layers and layers of overlapping, and although the power moved at lightning speed, it still needed time to be formed.

But it was different now, Tang Tian felt that the inside his body contained a majestic ocean that waved whenever he wished for it, and he could hear the endless power churning from its vastness.

It was like a churning ocean, no, it was like a blazing ocean, it stirred endlessly, and any small movements would cause a tsunami.

Is this the true essence of the Angry Fist Seal?

Tang Tian's ice cold mental state finally had a change, suddenly, a thread of understanding rose in his mind, The Demon Six Seals is not a martial technique used to fight, but methods to refine the

body?

This thought flashed past his mind, but it was not the time to ponder about it.

Without doing anything, the powerful ocean in his body suddenly screamed, Tang Tian's eyes blossomed with dazzling red light, his arms stopped moving, his waist suddenly erupted with a large amount of power as he turned.

The tight death wires were extremely sturdy, and the powerful force passed through the death wires, caused the King Puppet's body to immediately lose balance.

They felt as if they became light, their bodies soaring into the sky and subconsciously held onto the death wires tightly.

The four Death King Puppets were actually spun into the air by Tang Tian.

Bang!

One of the flying Death King Puppet was flung like a short put, and smashed onto the King Puppet Scythe.

Sssi!

The tough and durable Death King Puppet was easily sliced into

two. It did not reveal a drop of blood, the black scythe seemed to have eaten a meal and became even more dense and pitch black, and continued to fly towards Tang Tian.

Tang Tian's heart trembled, he did not stop his spin, and he started tiptoeing.

Bang!

The ground beneath his feet crumbled, Tang Tian who was still spinning looked as though he was skating on ice, and suddenly slid a few meters to the side.

Ssssi!

Another Death King Puppet was sliced by the King Puppet Scythe easily like paper, splitting into two. The King Puppet Scythe continued to absorb the death aura, becoming even more dense and black, and strangely revealing a strand of metal gloss.

It flew in a strange arc in the air, producing a whistling sound and continuing to shoot towards Tang Tian.

Tang Tian did not expect the scythe to be so bizarre.

Without thinking, he tiptoed again, and slid further away.

Halfway in the air, his hands suddenly shot out, his palms moved



like lightning as he grabbed onto the throats of two Death King Puppets, crack, their necks were instantly broken. But the Death King Puppets were like cockroaches, despite their necks being broken, but they still moved to attack him.

The sense of danger surged in Tang Tian's mind.

Without thinking, he grabbed onto their palms and swung them, and then throwing them far out.

Bang, bang!

The two of them exploded into black mists in the sky, strangely, the two regiment of mist did not dissipate, and squirmed around like living things, it was bizarre and horrifying.

Xiu, the scythe was like a shark that caught the scent of blood, it swerved and swept through the two black mists. The two clouds of mist immediately disappeared without a trace left. The black scythe suddenly stopped and floated in the air quietly, completely changing its form, the broad blade body revealed many sinister and distorted faces, in an order of smallest to biggest. The scythe's edge was even more terrifying, it was a row of teeth with blood dripping. The broad blade body was not compatible with its look at all, with its extremely long handle, it made people suspect that it would break when coming into contact with force.

He Xin who was in the dark had his vision full red, two blood streaks falling from his eyes. Blood also flowed from his nose and mouth.

But his face revealed a strange smile.

[Death God's Scythe]!

Who would have known that I would be able to unleash this technique before I die.

He Xin laughed bitterly, at this point of time, he no longer had any chance of living. But his mental state was already at the brink of craziness, his expression was one of a maniac, the consecutive death aura of the five Death King Puppets and the combustion of  $\frac{4}{5}$  of his Law Surface allowed him to unleash this technique. It was an undisputed ultimate technique for the Martial Artists who trained in Death Laws, and was one of the strongest killing technique in the Death Laws system.

It's beautiful.

At least I can die in content, you ants....

To die from this technique, be glad.

How fortunate am I, to be able to die for this technique.

Hahahaha.....

He laughed crazily, he no longer concealed himself, all his entire

life, he worked hard, he hid in the darkness, all his life he remained extreme viewed other people's life as grass, at this moment, he finally stepped out to a thought that he never would have considered, a place where he never thought he would step to.

All living things were meant to die, like all the ants in his eyes, he himself was not excused from it, he was just a speck in the world, the eternal darkness in his mind, had always been his path and his reason for living.

Burn my body, return me back to the soil.

His entire body kept on flowing with blood, suddenly, the drops of blood all lit up with strands of black flames, his fanatical face regained tranquility, the current him looked extremely at peace.

He wanted to embrace death, the biggest and everlasting final destination of the world.

The black flames engulfed his body.

This happened extremely quickly, to the point that when everyone heard his fanatical laughter, they could not react in time before He Xin was engulfed by the flames. He Xin's body dissolved in the flames, but his face maintained a peaceful smile all the way.

The strange scene caused everybody's hairs all over their bodies to stand.

The black flames burned quietly in the air, squirming and wiggling like it was living, suddenly, it transformed into a black fiery light, and entered the Death God Scythe.

The scythe remained unmoved.

Just at that moment, a hand formed at a speed visible to the naked eye, when it reached its peak, it stopped.

In the air, this single arm grabbed onto Death God Scythe.

The arm was not bulky, but instead was extremely skinny, with pale skin, its five long and slender fingers grabbed onto the Scythe's hilt.

Ssssi!

The air around suddenly turned extremely cold, causing everyone's face to turn white.

The single arm grabbed onto the scythe, looking as though the arm and scythe was cut off from somebody's body, and was continuously leaking with blood. The scythe's blade had many many spirit faces that seemed to demand for vengeance, wailing out on and off, no matter how one tried to stuff their ears, they would not be able to stop hearing the voices. The teeth on the edge of the scythe were moving slowly like a ravenous wild beast, somewhat impatient to draw blood.

Tang Tian's face finally changed expressions.

He could feel that when the broken arm became complete, the death aura emitting from the scythe suddenly disappeared.

If he did not have his eyes on the arm and scythe, he would think that it did not exist.

In his mind, the Demon Figure that always remained indifferent had also sensed the immense threat.

In the distance, Xu Dong Xiang quietly looked on, lightly biting on the bitter fruit, where the black juice was extremely bitter.

Uncle He....

He kept quiet, he could have made a move, but he did not. Uncle He has already become a public enemy, the entire East Immortal City wants him dead, If I were to go out, the entire Xu Family will be deemed as the enemy too.

He could not do that.

He watched as his Uncle He burnt his own Law Surface, watched as his Uncle He burnt himself, and watched the arm of the Death God.

He knew what it was, the arm of the Death God, when He Xin

burnt himself, he finally glanced onto the figure behind [Hell]. Although it was just an arm, but although it was incomplete, the Death God's Arm represented a higher power.

Ghost Face Mask will definitely die.

He did not have much hatred for people, and felt no sense in hating a person who was about to die.

But.....

He reminisced about the past as images flashed past his eyes, from him being a toddler and learning how to walk, crying out and calling for his Uncle He, to when he was a young child looking at the man who always hugged him and laughed.

When he was 12, Uncle He left.

20 years later, the Uncle He who had killed countless of people brought the Infamous name back, brought his view of other people's lives as grass back, brought the angry spirits back, he concealed his identity and became the Uncle He who smiled once again.

He is the devil, while I am the Angel.

I can't make any move....

Xu Xiang Dong looked up into the sky, two tears rolled down his cheeks, and mixed into the juice of the bitter fruit.

After a few moments, he wiped the tears away, and ignoring the stains formed from the bitter fruit juice, his gaze turned sinister and emotionless, reinstating his indifferent expressions. He glanced at Ghost Face Mask, who to him, was already a dead man.

I can't let Uncle He's sacrifice go to waste.

Purple Cuckoo City!

Before others could do it, he wanted to take down Purple Cuckoo City.

Only by taking Purple Cuckoo City and taking all the Null Division Prisoners will the Xu Family become stronger. Purple Cuckoo City that does not have Ghost Face Mask protecting it, to him, it was like a beauty who had no guards, an extremely enticing and alluring meat.

His eyes immediately blazed up.

# Chapter 751 – Death God Arm Vs Sacrificial Execution

---

Xu Ye's face was pale white, the emotions in his eyes were sluggish and lifeless.

Is that the power of an A Grade Infamous Man?

The rumored 24 A Grade Infamous People were all powerful martial artists able to obtain a ranking in the List of Powerhouses. But compared to the powerful martial artists on the list of powerhouses, they were even more mysterious, all of their hands were stained with blood, and had countless of families wanting their heads. With such tyrannical strength, some had powerful backings, and regardless of how many people tried to investigate them, no one knew where to find them. Only when they themselves chose to appear in their sights, would the wind be tainted with blood, and would people remember them.

He Xin had disappeared for more than a decade, but the moment he appeared, his ruthlessness and tyrannical power was sufficient to shake Sin Domain.

That Scythe and that arm....

He Xin had already opened the door, the door to the highest level palace of Laws, and the highest realm that all the martial artists dreamt and pursued for. No one had ever been in that palace, and no one knew how it looked like.



Suddenly, Xu Ye became somewhat jealous. To be able to glimpse the highest level palace of Laws just before dying, how blessed that person was. He knew that with his talent and standard, he would never be able to reach He Xin's realm in his life.

The right arm of the Death God and the Scythe of the Death God.

The most terrifying existence that hailed from the highest realm of the Death Laws, had entered this world.

To Xu Ye who trained in the Life and Death Laws, it represented a completely different meaning. All the Life in East Immortal City had quietly drained away. This drain was extremely slow, and people who have not reached a certain realm of power would be unable to sense the drainage of their own vitality.

Strands of vitality converged from all directions and entered the Death God's Scythe. A gloomy and melodious tune came out from inside the Scythe, and the distorted and struggling faces on the Scythe's body became calm.

Subduing Spirit Tune.

Xu Ye could not dare believe what was happening in front of him, and was overwhelmed with shock. It was just a Death God's arm and its Scythe, but it was able to extract the vitality of the entire city. If the true Death God were to appear, wouldn't all the vitality in East Immortal City be extracted completely and cleanly?

A massacre!

That would only require the Death God to lift its arm. No, not even that, just by standing there, it would kill everything.

If all the vitality were extracted from the city, the city would truly become a dead city, a city of Death Laws. The pure Death Laws would continue to grow and be nourished, and the land would become hell.

All of this knowledge was just rumors and legends, from the very first day that he started learning Life and Death Laws, Xu Ye never thought that there would be a day that he would personally see it.

Despair crept in Xu Ye's mind, he stared at Master who was fighting the arm and scythe, as though he was waiting for his Master to die.

Failure and death, is the ultimate outcome, the only outcome.

Xu Ye's ashen face started to spread across his body. He trained in the Life and Death Law, and thus the Life and Death Laws in his body were in equilibrium, but at the moment, the intense despair had caused his body and mental state to lose the equilibrium, the power of Death started to occupy a stronger position.

Tang Tian stared at the arm and scythe, he squinted, but he was not afraid at all.

He could also feel that the vitality of the city was constantly being pulled and devoured by the scythe. The deep melodious Subduing Spirit Tune was dissolved by the red light when it approached Tang Tian, disappearing into nothing.

The Six Armed Demon in his body was like a dignified jewel figure, releasing a dense red light around its entire body. The palm that had the Angry Fist Seal released red flames jumped sporadically. The undulations of the red light followed the jumps of the red flames, and continued to emit outwards.

The red light around Tang Tian swept through Tang Tian's body again and again, the majestic power converged and dissipated at a regular pattern.

Just at that moment, the arm slowly raised the scythe.

Tang Tian was like a frightened cat that sensed an intense danger, causing his mind to stretch taut. The movement of the arm did not release any aura, it looked to be an extremely ordinary action, but Tang Tian who was extremely sharp could sense the danger that was so dense to the point that it was almost solid.

He took a deep breath, his strong gut feeling told him that the next attack was the strongest attack he had ever faced!

He closed his eyes, his body leaning forward with his arms drooped down.

The dense red light surged from his blood, Tang Tian was determined and not anxious, he breathed normally, as though he was falling asleep. There were no killing intent from him at all, and the red light converged at his arms.

Since this is going to be your strongest attack, then, let me give you my strongest attack as well.

He opened his eyes, the unswerving determination revealed in his eyes showed that nothing could shake him. Sensing his determination, the Demon Figure's six arms started to form seals, just that the other seals on its five arms were all blurred.

Tang Tian's aura started to surge.

The air around him started to become chaotic, the powerful aura from him caused the space around to become unstable, he was like the eye of the storm, the wind around quickly gained speed, and blew to the point that his clothes were fluttering noisily.

Xu Ye suddenly raised his head and looked at Master with astonishment, the ashen face of defeat suddenly arose a trace of vitality.

Master Ghost Face Mask's aura is so powerful....

The two of them formed an extremely strong contrast, the scythe and the arm were extremely reserved, and if one was not looking at

it, he would not even know of its presence. Master Ghost Face Mask was completely the opposite, he had released all of his aura and was like a blazing bonfire, becoming more and more intense.

The ocean of power in Tang Tian's body made him feel restless.

The space around him started to tremble incessantly, ripples that could be seen with the naked eye continued to dissipate into the air.

Crack, crack.

Light popping sounds came out, Tang Tian's aura continued to surge more and more, he remained unmoved like a statue, the only difference was that the light in his eyes became brighter and brighter.

He had gained enlightenment of the Demon Figure from [Sacrificial Execution], and at the moment the Demon Figure was reacting to Sacrificial Execution, both came from the same origin and could be combined perfectly, and thus he immediately became very different. This time, Tang Tian was forced to a corner, and had to resort to it.

Although he did not know of the scythe and the arm's history, but he had been through many battles, and had made many judgements in the crisis of battles almost on instincts. The strange arm and scythe in front of him had broken all common knowledge, and exceeded all of what he knew.

Tang Tian who was forced to a corner used all of the power he could summon. He used the Demon Six Seals to strengthen the Sacrificial Execution, although the other five seals were dim and faint without light, appearing only for appearance. He had thought about it when he was fighting with the Death King Puppets, that the Demon Six Seals were to be used for battle or for refining the body.

But at the moment, Tang Tian who was about to lose was unhappy, and threw out everything that he had, all that he knew.

If only the Godfist was completed....

That thought flashed past Tang Tian's mind, but he then threw this thought to the back of the mind.

The Demon Six Seals were completed at the same time, and inside the dense red light, fragmented petals came out from nowhere, dropping slowly, upon landing on the Demon Figure's body, they disappeared.

Tang Tian did not know what they were for, but he did not have time to think about it.

Bang bang bang!

Ripples dissipated out through the entire East Immortal City with Tang Tian as the center. They were like spatial ripples formed from attacks, causing the air in East Immortal City to become

extremely unstable. Pa, a light crack sound came out, the pavement formed minute cracks, and rocks the size of rice grains slowly floated upwards.

More cracks after cracks could be seen on the ground.

The faces of the spectators changed, Xu Ye's eyes lit up, he suddenly thought about Thunder Wind Spear Lu Tian Wen, how powerful and unfathomable his last spear was. But Master's aura was even more astonishing as compared to his spear.

That's right, Master is a powerful martial artist capable of killing Lu Tian Wen!

Excitement bore in Xu Ye's mind, he who saw hope managed to subdue the gray in his body, and his vitality became more vigorous.

He suddenly reacted, and shouted to all the spectators: "Everyone, get away! Scatter now! Move away from here!"

All the East Immortal City citizens were awoken from their stupor, and ran away in all directions.

The arm and the scythe was coated with a bizarre coldness, and the weird faces caused every person's hairs to stand. But Ghost Face Mask was completely different, he released his tyrannical aura, causing others to see him as though he was a gigantic beast, emitting an ancient and inextinguishable aura.

The huge movements shocked the entire East Immortal City.

Tang Tian's pupils did not have any traces of undulation, as though he was in a strange state of calmness. Sacrificial Execution's greatest taboo was to be rattled, but Tang Tian was not the least bit rattled.

I will save everybody, and then all of us can fight alongside each other, and win!

That is the reason why I am standing here, that is the reason why I must win!

No one can stop me!

You broken Scythe!

A light aura erupted out of Tang Tian's eyes, causing the space encompassing East Immortal City to tremble.

Tang Tian started to move towards the scythe and arm, with the unswerving determination in his pupils, which was burning red, The wind whistled and screamed in his ears, the wind that moved extremely quickly caused the air to tremble, seemingly causing the flames in his eyes to burn even brighter.

Every step he took, the space in East Immortal City shook.



Every step he took, the ground beneath East Immortal City trembled.

Every step he took, countless of rocks would lift off from the ground and float into the sky.

Every step he took, his aura would rise.

Every step he took, the red light in his body would dim slightly, but the red light in his arms would become denser slightly.

In his trembling vision, there was only that lonesome scythe, that skinny and frail arm, that thin and frail fingers, that blade covered with teeth, and those distorted spirit faces.....

Come, you broken scythe!

Tang Tian roared in his heart as all of the power in his body converged into his arms, causing his arms to feel heavier than Point Break, every step he took required everything that he had in him. His arms seemed to be at the point of exploding, as though something was going to break out from within.

In his vision, the frail and skinny arm gently slashed down with the Scythe.

Tang Tian faintly saw that along with the arm moving, a faint

illusion of the scythe followed along, it was a black blade aura that quietly cut through the air.

Come, you broken scythe!

At that moment, Tang Tian could feel that the explosive feeling in his arms had reached its maximum, borrowing the heavy inertia, he swung his arms out and slashed upwards!

Two blood red blade auras crossed in an 'x' fashion in front of Tang Tian, transforming into a blood red '十' blade aura.

The pitch black scythe blade aura struck onto the '十' blade aura.

# Chapter 752 – Breakthrough In The Mental State

---

Time seemed to stop at this moment.

The red ‘+’ blade aura and the black blade aura collided in midair.

An indescribable light aura blossomed right at this moment, the red and black lights covered the entire sky, colliding intensely, clearly differentiated from each other. The entire sky and ground were split into the red and black, and in the center was a seemingly thin and unbreakable wall of light.

Bang bang bang.

Like two unrelenting storms, they struck each other, the intensity of it causing the air to churn. A painful sound screamed out from the clash, causing everyone to become temporarily deaf, and made it like the entire East Immortal City was in the dead center of the worst storm in history.

As far as anyone could see, everything was trembling, the throbbing air caused everything to look distorted.

Countless rocks were floating in the air, and at the same time, the citizens who were flying in East Immortal City were all shocked, all of their faces were void of blood, they realized that they were unable to control their own bodies. Their law threads were not

responding to their summons, they were like docile sheep waiting to be slaughtered, none of them had any ability to resist.

There were a few martial artists who had Law Surfaces, but it was just a few. The power projected out on their Law Surface was suppressed to 1/10 of their usual level.

From a bird's eye view, East Immortal City looked to be split in two, one in red light aura while the other in black, each occupying an area, and inside the light aura, the chaotic air and intense flow of powers raged and roared.

Tang Tian remained in the stance that he released the Sacrificial Execution, his body bent low, extending his body out like a leopard, it was filled with encroachment, ready to pounce at anytime. His hands were in a cross position in front of him, and the Ghost Face Mask that was looking upwards was covered with cracks that had stains of blood, forming a blood red spider web. The eyes behind the mask had its redness subsiding, and recovered the ice cold determination as before.

He remained unmoved like a statue, the space around him continued to tremble, the chaotic power flowed erratically, and even the fervent winds could not move him.

In front of him, behind the wall of light between the red and white light auras, the arm holding onto the scythe also remained still.

The black flow continued to surge forward, while an illusory

figure stood there quietly.

The both of them stood stationary, but did not have any intention of giving in or retreating.

Suddenly, the illusory figure in the black flow moved slightly, the scythe and arm raised up and pointed at Tang Tian, and did the action of cutting the throat.

Tang Tian's eyes twitched, his face behind the mask smiled, the hands that were crossed in front suddenly formed fists, he extended his thumbs out, and pointed them downwards.

Humph! You haven't beaten me, and you still dare to be arrogant?

Just wait for me, the next time we meet, I will beat you until you cry!

Tang Tian thought furiously, he was completely oblivious to the fact that the illusory figure in front of him was a Death God. Of course, even if he knew, he would still not care, he would still beat a Death God up.

The black figure seemed to be taken aback by Tang Tian's action, its figure turned sluggish.

Whoosh, the black figure was like dust flying in the sky, and dissipated into the black chaos.

The broken arm and scythe released threads of black smoke, and at a speed visible to the naked eye, gradually dissipated into the black chaos.

Idiot!

Tang Tian kept jabbing his thumb downwards, if not for the mask, everyone would be able to clearly see his unhappiness and provocation on his face. I can lose to a man, but not to a technique, pei pei pei, I have not even lost to any man, how can I lose to a technique!

When the last trace of smoke disappeared, the black chaos suddenly disappeared without a trace, the sky full of screams and screeches, the chaotic air, all disappeared.

As though it was reacting to it, Tang Tian's red light also suddenly disappeared.

All the rocks that were floating in the air, all the people who were floating in the air, all fell down like dumplings. Exclamations came out from everywhere, all of them had lost control and were in a state of panic. They were still absorbed in the terrifying scene, and did not expect the danger to suddenly disappear without any warning, as though everything they had experienced was just but an illusion.

If not for them still being in the air, they would have definitely thought that it was all an illusion.

But when they saw the ground beneath getting closer at a rapid speed, they immediately got out of their daze and immediately positioned themselves. Bang bang bang, many people fell in all sorts of strange postures.

Only when their feet had touched the ground did they truly awaken from their daydreams, but the fear and shock still remained on their faces.

Everything that had happened would stick with them all their life.

Tang Tian's body swayed, bang, he sat down on his butt. He had left the state of excitement, and what remained was sensation of getting rid of all the burden of the battle, his tensed Mental State also relaxed, and fatigue flooded into his body.

Hu hu hu.

Perspiration continued to fall from his entire body, in the blink of the eye, the perspiration formed a small stream that trickled on the ground.

Tang Tian stared at the ground in a daze, his mind completely in a blank.

He just sat in front of Point Break in a daze. Point Break which was black and coarse, was covered in scars, like a gigantic warrior,

protecting Tang Tian by his side.

No one dared to come close.

Everyone watched the ordinary man gasp for breath while sitting beside Point Break in a daze. There was nothing about him, he was not valiant and straight like a spear, he just sat there without any bearing, without any air to him, he had his hands on the ground, perspiration trickling down his chin and onto the ground, looking as though he was in a difficult position.

But the crowd was in silence, no one dared to speak.

All of them could hear the heavy gasp for breaths even from a distance, and no one spoke.

The silence was for the shocking and heart stopping battle.

Everyone's eyes towards Ghost Face Mask was of respect.

Suddenly, hurried footsteps broke the silence.

An old man, led a group of people, and the old man suddenly broke out in a small run, the old man's face was covered in perspiration, he seemed to be moving in a polite stance, and stepped forward and knelt down.

“The Yu Family begs for forgiveness, we plead for Master to spare



us!”

His voice was trembling, his face was covered in perspiration, his entire body shaking like a sieve.

He did not have the time to provide clothes for the Null Division Prisoners, he was just afraid that he would be too late, afraid that Ghost Face Mask would be enraged and destroy the Yu Family. When he had just received the request from Ghost Face Mask asking for his subordinates, he too laughed in ridicule. Ancestor Li's Inheritor? Ha, just another crazy fellow trying to take advantage of the name! Return your subordinates? What joke are you talking about, each one of these Null Division Prisoners are worth plenty, you think we will return just because you asked for it?

But now, he felt that he was blind and without foresight, the terrifying battle had spooked him completely.

He immediately brought out the Null Division Prisoners, and not daring to delay, he rushed over.

“The Song Family is here to return the 23 members of the Null Division, I hope Master will forgive us.”

Another set of frantic footsteps came out.

All the Null Division members who were covered in dirt all stared blankly at the familiar figure sitting down, although the

Master was wearing a mask, but who could not recognize him?

After the many days of despair, sufferings, the difficult situation they were in, at this time, when they saw the man gasping for breath seated on the ground with perspiration dripping all over, he who looked to be in a sorry figure, the mask that was cracked all over with bloodied lines, the eyes that were in a daze because of the loss of strength.

All 55 of the steel and stubborn strong men all felt their eyes tearing up.

The only King of Ursa Major Constellation, the only King of the Lupus People, had come to save them!

They all stood up extremely straight as per normal. All of their clothes were torn and tattered, they were covered in dirt and in a mess, their hair and face were in a mess, but they still stood still, all of their eyes red with tears, their hearts feeling extremely excited.

They all believed in him, he had used his actions to obtain their loyalty, and never disappointed their belief.

Hu!

After taking a long and deep breath, Tang Tian composed himself, and finally felt as though he had returned to the world of the living, his aching and pained body had regained some strength.

He pushed himself up and struggled to stand.

His eyes that regained their focal distance looked at the 55 Null Division Members who stood straight and still in front of him, all of their familiar faces and how they were trying to contain their excitement, the young man was extremely happy that he grinned from ear to ear.

Well done, Tang Tian!

“Now we are only left with the Xu Family.”

Tang Tian muttered to himself, laughing bitterly in his mind, he never thought that Xu Xiang Dong would not hand the prisoners over, and was surprised to meet such a crafty man.

But after fighting to this point, Tang Tian no longer had any hesitations. After crossing hands with the bizarre scythe, he felt extremely fatigue, but not only was his Mental State not tired at all, but it had a peculiar excitement.

He could feel that although the power of the scythe was not complete, but it was another type of power, something that he could have never thought of in the past. And he was able to fight with it and be on equal grounds against it, it was something he did not dare imagine in the past.

Have I grown so strong unknowingly?

Tang Tian had some disbelief, but what grew even more was the intense self confidence.

And after saving the 55 Null Division Members, he was filled with joy, he was more confident, more assured of himself, after going through the baptism of difficult battles, his Mental State had quietly transformed.

The more intense the battle, the easier it was for the participant to grow, and the experience of Life and Death Battles would incite the growth in potential. And once a person have grown through such a baptism and refinement, the person's Mental State would become even stronger.

And after reaching a certain standard in strength, the strengthening of the mental state would become more and more important.

When many powerful martial artists reached a certain level of strength where they found it hard to improve, it would usually be because of the inability to break through in their mental state. Outside the body, there were laws, while cycling inside the body were the seven emotional states and six desires, if one were to be fearful and cowardice, one cannot understand a greater form of power, and only with a true and powerful Mental state would one be able to have the capability to understand greater power, and be matched with it.

Tang Tian who had a breakthrough in his mental state felt that his body was in pain, but his consciousness at his peak.

His body was recovering at a rapid rate, the initial withered power was once again filling up. Threads of power quietly grew from deep within his muscles and blood. Especially the large amounts of Life Origin Essence that he had taken in, part of it that he had not absorbed were set within his muscles and blood were all being awakened. He did not think that through the battle, he would obtain a breakthrough in his mental state, and would summon the Life Origin Essence.

He took a deep breath, and was about to pull Point Break.

“Master, please allow us to join you!” A Null Division member shouted out loudly.

The 55 Null Division Prisoners all got up, they were all strong men, and started to move Point Break.

Rumbling sounds came out again, Point Break trembled, and started to move.

Seeing the Blood Bear Black Flag stabbed onto Point Break, Tang Tian could not help but feel pleased, he pointed in the direction of the Xu Family: “Go! Let us go there!”

Rumble rumble, like a large tide, it was unstoppable.

# Chapter 753 – Mu Zhi Xia

---

It was winter in the Wei Ye Guan Continent. The snow and gales caused the entire sky and ground to be white, looking across the horizon, it was difficult to differentiate the directions.

The Wei Ye Guan Continent was well known for its bitter cold land, its wind and snow was extremely powerful. It was a wild land located on the border of the Savage Continent, and due to its extreme cold, the Wei Ye Guan Continent only had one season. The one guarding over this place was the first of the Five Honorable Martial Tigers, Mu Zhi Xia.

Mu Zhi Xia had always been guarding over the Wei Ye Guan Continent and rarely left, compared to the other four's achievements and military deeds, he had nothing to write about. But his identity as one of the Five Honorable Martial Tigers had never swayed.

His body released a pure white light aura, as he strolled around under the frantic snow and gales.

He donned the most ordinary armor, which was covered with many cuts and scars, it was obviously very old, but one could tell that it was maintained very regularly and carefully. Other than the pure white light around him, Mu Zhi Xia was no different from any of the ordinary soldiers. His face was covered with frost, his moustache was frozen, he has some white hair on his head, and his gaze was abstruse.

The bodyguards maintained a distance around him and looked around cautiously.

They walked into a large canyon and walked further in, where the wind was even bigger.

Bang bang bang, light barriers formed around the soldiers' bodies. The wind in the canyon had already formed wind blades, where there were lines all over the walls of the canyons cut by the wind blades, formed through the passing of time.

But inside the canyon, there was not a speck of snow. The winds were too strong, and snow could not land inside.

The bigger the winds, the more condensed the wind blades, which shot out like a powerful martial artist who trained in Wind Laws.

The light barriers around the soldiers had sparks periodically, and their progression inwards became slower. But that was not the most painful thing, most of the pain came from the cold intent contained within the wind. The Ice Wind Canyon was the place of origin of where all the cold air came from in Wei Ye Guan Continent, causing the continent to have winter all year round.

The bone chilling cold intent caused the energy in their bodies to plummet quickly.

Mu Zhi Xia's target was the entrance of the Ice Wind Gap, which

was in the deepest region of the Ice Wind Canyon.

“You guys just stay here.”

Mu Zhi Xia continued to walk inwards without turning back, the white light around him became more congealed, like a sun inside strong winds. The soldiers behind watched their Master who strolled in leisurely, their eyes filled with reverence.

Mu Zhi Xia walked further in for another 10 minutes before reaching the location, where the power of the wind was extremely strong, and even he had a serious look on his face. The light aura around him was extremely bright, and his speed of advancing had slowed down greatly, every step he took was extremely stable. The powerful wind blades were extremely cold, but the white light continued to rise, causing the speed of exhaustion on Mu Zhi Xia to increase greatly.

He walked in step by step as though it had no effect on him, until he reached the Ice Wind Gap.

The Gigantic Ice Wind Gap appeared in front of him. It was an Ice Wind Gap that spanned across 60km, as though it was the entrance to Hell. In front of it, human beings were so minute. At this point, the strength of the winds had reached its peak, but there were no sounds, because in here, the speed of the wind had surpass that of sound. Endless gales and cold intent surged out from the Wind Gap. The high speed winds shot out lines of light, which distorted in the Ice Wind Gap, making it look like a Star Door.



Mu Zhi Xia unsheathed the steel sword on his waist, which was enveloped with a dense layer of light.

The powerful winds blew out a trail of light from the white light.

The trail of light reached a length of 1m.

Mu Zhi Xia recorded, he sheathed back his sword and stared at the gigantic Ice Wind Gap in front of him. He had been here countless times, but everytime he looked at the endless wind gap, he would still gasp and admire at its natural state and the immense power it wielded.

He turned to leave.

Ever since he was assigned to guard Wei Ye Guan Continent and found out about the existence of the gigantic wind gap, he would visit it personally once a month. He would use his sword aura to test the wind speed, an idea that he came up with. For a full 20 years, he recorded the fluctuations of the wind gap speed.

After the long years and observations, he realized that the fluctuations of the wind speed from the wind gap followed a unique pattern.

The gigantic Ice Wind Gap was a gigantic Star Door.

And he had a few guesses on what was on the other side. From the first time he laid his eyes on the Ice Wind Gap, he had a feeling

that the Star Door could be used. It was just from this feeling, that he spent 20 years of time to continuously record and observe. His guesses were gradually narrowed down.

Outstanding military generals were uncommon, but for someone with 20 years of determination, that was extremely rare.

It was also because of his conscientious attitude that made him well trusted by many of his generals and higher ups of Honorable Martial Continent. Very few people knew that Mu Zhi Xia's station at Wei Ye Guan Continent had an important mission.

## Savage Continent!

The Honorable Martial Continent had eyed the Savage Continent for very long, as it was completely different from other continents, and thus they wanted to understand them. Although the living environment of the Savage Continent was harsh and cruel, but it was not as barren and infertile as what others said. Instead, the Savage Continent had a unique product, which was able to make Honorable Martial Continent become even stronger if they were to take over the Savage Continent.

But, the Honorable Martial Continent did not make any reckless moves. There was a reason why the Savage Continent was mysterious to the other people, and that was because no one had ever successfully campaigned over Savage Continent. In history, countless of ambitious heroes had tried to subdue the Savage Continent, but no one had had ever succeeded.

Although the Savage Continent was occupied by various different tribes who fought against each other every day, but upon encountering intruders from the outside, they would band together and show off their tremendous might.

Mu Zhi Xia's deployment to Wei Ye Guan Continent was to continuously mend the relationship between the outsiders and the Savage Continent, doing trades and business with them. Although Honorable Martial Continent's trade was not as prosperous as the Southern Domain, but compared to the old fashioned Savage Continent, they were rather flourished.

In pursuit of the Honorable Martial Continent's persistent embezzling strategy, his influence on the Savage Continent continued to grow more and more. Mu Zhi Xia's infiltration to Savage Continent continued to deepen, reports and information flowed like a river to Mu Zhi Xia's table.

The mysterious Savage Continent was being read page by page by Mu Zhi Xia, revealing the chaos, the brutality and their true strength.

20 years of persistence was a terrifying power.

He was not the most quick-witted leader, and did not have absolute genius ideas, but he held the persistence and patience to act step by step.

Returning to his camp, Mu Zhi Xia received a report: "The Black Water Tribe's Shang Bei is waiting for you!"

He nodded his head and took large strides towards the main hall. Inside the hall was a half naked large statured man who was eating greedily.

“Have you been starving for a few days?” Mu Zhi Xia laughed, without any arrogance, he casually walked over to the other side of the table and took up the knife on the table, he cut out the leg of the goat and started eating.

The Black Water Tribe was a small tribe near them, and was one of the earliest tribes that started trading with the Wei Ye Guan Continent, and the two of them were familiar with each other. The Honorable Martial Continent’s influence continued to grow, and even started to extend towards the bigger tribes. But Mu Zhi Xia still treated Shang Bei the same, and did not mistreat him just because the Black Water Tribe was weak.

“For 12 days.” Shang Bei spoke with food in his mouth: “I almost could not make it back.”

Mu Zhi Xia carefully ate the goat meat, and after a moment, he asked: “What? Could it be that your journey was not peaceful?”

After finishing his food, Shang Bei drank down a cup of wine, before raising his head satisfyingly and sigh. He said: “We engaged in battle.”

Mu Zhi Xia smiled: “Battle? Tell me, where are there no battles? Furthermore in the Savage Continent, isn’t it normal to battle?”

Mu Zhi Xia's words were not exaggerated, the Savage Continent was the most chaotic place, and there were always battles between tribes, it was extremely normal. That was why the trade routes in Savage Continent were all broken, any trade caravans on the road would all be plundered, and all the goods would always go missing.

But high profits came with high risks, the Honorable Martial Continent's one caravan journey was able to give the Black Water Tribe one month of rations for the winter.

Shang Bei was in a daze, and after a moment, he revealed a strange expression.

Mu Zhi Xia immediately sensed it: "What?"

"The West Water Tribe was destroyed, I saw it myself." Shang Bei was in a daze, his words extremely light.

"The West Water Tribe!" Mu Zhi Xia stopped whatever he was doing, his face turned gloomy. The West Water Tribe and the Black Water Tribe both have the word water in their names, but their strengths were on two different levels. The West Water Tribe was one of the large tribes in the Savage Continent, they were powerful and their Tribe Chieftain Chi Tu was ambitious.

The West Water Tribe was a tribe with the potential to become a King Court, but it was destroyed just like that?

Shang Bei was not himself, he spoke as if he was talking about a nightmare: “It was the Steel Mountain King Court and North Blizzard King Court, they formed an alliance to destroy the West Water Tribe.”

Mu Zhi Xia’s expression became extremely strange, he knew of both King Courts, they were the two strongest King Courts in Savage Continent’s Northern Parts. Mu Zhi Xia knew of all the powers at the back of his hand, and knew that they were mortal enemies with many years of hatred and desire for revenge against each other, How could they form an alliance?

His first reaction to it was the notion being ridiculous, but he knew that Shang Bei was an earnest man and would not speak without thinking.

“How did they form the alliance?” Mu Zhi Xia’s tone became serious.

Shang Bei finally regained his senses, the battle had shook him greatly. The powerful West Water Tribe that flowed blood was imprinted deeply in his mind.

He shook his head: “I do not know. But I heard of a rumor, they say there is a woman, a godlike woman. Tie Ji and Ah Si Ming have pledged themselves to be her surbordinates. She took a great army south, they were unstoppable, they say she is like a goddess of war, every battle she engaged in, she won, and she kept on moving. The Gold Forest King Court was not willing to join them, so she beat them down, their prestige fell, and they were so afraid that they shifted west. When I was returning back, I heard that the Gold

Forest King Court is no more, his subordinates turned coat, and brought the Sovereign's head to the Goddess of War. All the people in Gold Forest King Court were swallowed by her."

"They moved south, and no one was able to stop them." Shang Bei licked his lips, his tone becoming excited: "She is a Goddess of War, a true Goddess, wherever she goes, no one can stop her. People say....."

He swallowed his saliva and looked at Mu Zhi Xia, there was anticipation mixed with fear in his eyes, a light that no darkness could stop.

"That the Savage Continent will be unified, there is going to be a true King from within us."

Pa, the knife in Mu Zhi Xia's hand was broken.

## Chapter 754 – In Training

---

Shang Bei's information brought a great shock to Mu Zhi Xia, but what truly provoked Mu Zhi Xia was when Shang Bei was speaking, his gaze was like daggers, piercing straight into Mu Zhi Xia's heart.

At that moment, Mu Zhi Xia completely understood, to the entire Savage Continent, he would forever be an outsider. Regardless of what he gave the Savagers, no matter how much resources he gave them, how much food, as long as he attempted to advance into the internal affairs of the Savage Continent, he would receive an intense resistance from the entire Savage Continent. Even the Black Water Tribe in front of him would definitely fight him to the death at that time.

They were more willing to follow a Goddess of War from their side than accept the Honorable Martial Continent.

In fact, Mu Zhi Xia already knew it from the bottom of his heart, but after going through the 20 years, he felt some kinship with the Savagers. As such, it was difficult to stop the hopes and dreams, but upon seeing Shang Bei's gaze, he was completely awakened from that wishful thinking.

To be able to persevere for 20 years quietly, he was not one whose determination could be swayed so easily.

He noticed Shang Bei staring at the broken knife in his hand, he sighed out loud: "Your news has greatly shocked me."



Shang Bei revealed a look of understanding and was equally moved: “Yes, if I were to hear such news like that, I myself would definitely not believe it.”

“Yes, to be able to destroy the West Water Tribe and the even stronger Gold Forest King Court, they are truly too powerful.” Mu Zhi Xia had a look of surprise, but then he changed the subject: “What will the Southern Tribes do with the alliance between the two Northern Heroes?”

Shang Bei was affected by those words, and his face immediately became ugly.

Mu Zhi Xia’s question was not without reason, since a long time ago, the South and North of Savage Continent had great differences, and thus there was always friction between both sides.

“The two Northern Heroes are now her left and right arms.” Mu Zhi Xia’s expression remained indifferent: “We shall not talk about whether this Goddess of War is a puppet produced by them, but if the entire Savage were to be unified, then will the North side be in control, or the South?”

Shang Bei’s face became uglier.

“Now, I can say that although you guys are not living well, but you guys are free.” Mu Zhi Xia sighed: “These past few years, I have seen it all, the Honorable Martial Continent and Savage Continent have benefited each other for 20 years, and the current

Black Water Tribe is living much better than before. If you guys are truly unified, will you guys live better than you are now?”

Mu Zhi Xia patted Shang Bei’s shoulder, laughed but did not say anything else.

Shang Bei left the Honorable Martial Continent’s camp with low spirits, along the way, all the soldiers familiar with Shang Bei tried to talk to him, but he only shook his head and did not utter a word.

After Shang Bei left, Mu Zhi Xia’s face became gloomy.

The sudden appearance of the Goddess of War had broken his plans. He would definitely not sit by and watch the Savage Continent be unified as one, as it meant that all his plans would fail, and that meant that the Honorable Martial Continent would lose its chance to obtain the Savage Continent.

What Honorable Martial Continent needed was the chaotic and constantly fighting Savage Continent, one that Honorable Martial Continent could plot against.

A stern look flashed past Mu Zhi Xia’s eyes. He suddenly said: “Mobilize all of our scouts, I want to know everything about this woman.”

“Yes.” a voice suddenly sounded out from the corner, and a figure disappeared.

Shang Bei left the Honorable Martial Continent's camp, and in the snow, his panicked look had disappeared, he looked back towards the Honorable Martial Continent's camp that was blurred out by the snow, where did the panic in his eyes go?

He hurried back to Black Water Tribe and found his son, he spoke softly: "Get everyone to prepare, throw away the things that you do not need, we will leave with everyone tonight."

His son was surprised: "Father, what happened?"

"We don't have time to talk about it. Shang Bei said gravely: "Go and inform everyone now!"

In the darkness, the Black Water Tribe was in a hubbub, everyone lost themselves to the fear, but luckily, Shang Bei held a powerful position in the tribe. It was because of Shang Bei who suggested and persisted to form communication with Honorable Martial Continent, that allowed them to achieve and gain to where they were now.

As they did not have many people, they finished packing quickly.

"We are heading to the North."

Shang Bei sent down the order, and did not explain why. The tribesmen who believed in him followed him. In the cover of the darkness, Shang Bei's eyes were as bright as the stars, desiring for the sun to rise.

\*\*\*\*\*

Purple Cuckoo City.

“Once more!” Gu Xue wiped away the perspiration on her forehead, her expression was determined.

All around her, the people were swaying, all of them looked to be in sorry figures. Victor was the most mournful, he was ill disciplined and not strict, causing him to feel to be unable to tolerate the loss. Roland Su was equally in a bad situation, she looked at Gu Xue with respect, they were both women, but Gu Xue was much more outstanding than her. Even the physically fit Ben Sen had suffered. Xu An Zhong was only slightly better, he was a battle fanatic, his willpower was extremely strong, although he was tired, but he gritted his teeth and persevered.

The Sin Domain had already separated itself from the army system for over a few hundred years, and were extremely foreign to the notion of an army.

The greatest improvements came from the people who no one had expected.

Two were the twin sisters, Xiao Yu and Xiao Ye, they learned extremely quickly, and protected Han Bing Ning at her flanks, the three of them formed a triangle offense formation.

The other person who improved tremendously was Ping Xiao Shan, his improvements came from continuously using his spatial laws to cut the Golden Steel Gravel daily. Victor and Ben Sen's injuries require a great amount of Life Origin Essence to recover from, and many people who trained daily required a lot of Life Origin Essence as well. Every day, he worked to the point that he became a tired dog, but it was because of such high intensity and precise grinding that his Laws improvement was astonishing.

Although he did not breakthrough to his Law Surface, but his Law Threads were already close to perfection.

And Nie Qiu had given Ping Xiao Shan a position in his war formation, making Ping Xiao Shan extremely excited. And what caused others to become flabbergasted was that they did not know if it was because he trained in spatial laws, but Ping Xiao Shan's positioning was extremely good, as though he did not need any lessons, but he could perfectly assimilate into Nie Qiu's formation.

"Everyone, let us rest for abit, we will continue in four hours."

Gu Xue still had strength, but the others were all drained, training further would prove to be pointless, Nie Qiu's Mind State was equally drained and needed time to recuperate.

Hearing that, everyone heaved a sigh of relief and laid down everywhere.

Nie Qiu closed his eyes and rested.

Nie Qiu recovered to his peak state even before the four hours was up. Although he could not see, but he could sense all the minute changes and fluctuations in his war formation. At this time, everyone had already recovered, but he did not rush for them to begin.

He was tying up the loose ends of the experience gained from the training.

The Null Division's adaptability for the new formation was the best, since they were used to such daily trainings, to them, it was just learning a new tactic. For the rest like Gu Xue, although they were extremely hardworking, they still needed time.

Ah Mo Li and Han Bing Ning's command over the Null Division was the foundation of the formation. If Gu Xue and the others could adapt well with the formation, they could greatly increase the might of the formation, but the foundation of the formation did not revolve around them, thus it was not totally dependent on them.

Suddenly, a faint ripple touched onto Nie Qiu.

Nie Qiu lowered his head, allowing his hair to droop down, preventing others from seeing his face. No one could see it, but Nie Qu's face flashed with killing intent.

Previously, the ripple came from Tie Xie, it was their designated call sign indicating that there was an enemy intrusion.

Tie Xie's reconnaissance ability was outstanding, especially because his scouting abilities were completely different from ordinary sentries, he did not rely on the undulation coming from laws, but the movements in the air. Nie Qiu had specially made an undetectable line in his formation, connecting straight to Tie Xie.

Enemy.

Blind, Nie Qiu suddenly sneered. His senses were extremely sharp, but he did not sense the intruder, meaning that the intruder was powerful.

With such a strength, the most probable person to return to Purple Cuckoo City was Qin Zhen.

It must definitely be him!

Nie Qiu remained unmoved, and did not inform the rest.

Qin Zhen was powerful, and even the slightest hint of movement would shake him.

Another ripple quietly came through.

Tie Xie had grasped the location of the infiltrator, but because he was worried that the intruder might sense it, he did not dare lock onto the position.

Nie Qiu allowed Tie Xie to remain stationary, to him, knowing the location of the enemy was sufficient.

Nie Qiu laughed silently.

He acted as if nothing had happened and raised his head: “Rest time is over, everyone, let us begin the next round of training.”

Everyone stood up. Training required 120% effort from them. Especially for Victor and the others, they had never gone through such high intensity collective training. Like Xu An Zhong, his own training intensity was always higher than what they were going through, but he did not need to split his concentration onto others, he did not need to be afraid of being not in sync with his mates and break the training.

Their individual strengths were stronger than the Null Division members, and the movements of the tactics were not a problem for them, but the problem they had was rhythm. They needed to perfectly match with everybody’s rhythm, and not get everyone to match with theirs.

Gu Xue, Xu An Zhong, Roland Su, Victor, Ben Sen, all of them were facing their most difficult enemy as of yet.

Every training session, they would give it their all, and not dare to be a second distracted. They were much stronger than the rest, and their foresight was much more outstanding, thus they could see that when they have truly assimilated into the formation, the formation would explode with power.



They were able to rise above others regardless of determination or talent.

Being serious, they improved quickly.

“We are going to train the Tri-Yin Yang Transfiguration tactic, everyone try to recall the best you can first.”

Nie Qiu said calmly.

Everyone was bewildered, they were just training in the [Yin Yang Loop], which was a defensive tactic. Why did they suddenly change to the [Tri-Yin Yang Transfiguration]? It was an offensive type tactic which they had spent the entire yesterday to train.

They reckoned that Nie Qiu was afraid that they would forget, and thus wanted them to review the old tactic, so no one suspected anything.

Nie Qiu then said: “Everyone trained in it yesterday, but it was not too good, yesterday, all of you did restraint training, today, you will all perform release training, perform well.”

Everyone nodded their heads, they found it reasonable.

The so called restraint training was a language they used, it meant that they trained with restraint and not utilized their full

force. For the release training, it meant that they were to utilize everything they had as though they were truly attacking.

Following the demands of the formation, everyone stood in formation.

Nie Qiu whose eyes could not see anything had a smile that was not a smile, his robes moved without any wind, and the Yin Yan Formation quietly activated.

He was like a blind pianist, gently tapping on a black line.

# Chapter 755 – Yin Yang Formation

---

Yin Yang Formation comprised of the yin as the formation lines and the yang as the formation points.

The Yin Yang Formation comprehended by Nie Qiu was a unique set of laws that even Victor, a man with extensive knowledge, had never seen before. It did not consume any power of the physique, and this itself made others find it interesting.

The process whereby the Null Division Members gained enlightenment on the law threads caused Victor and the rest to be dumbstruck. Gaining enlightenment on Law Threads was not something overly difficult, but it was their first time witnessing the entire group performing it relaxingly without putting any effort.

But after that, they were no longer surprised. What kind of people are they? They are all a group of human shaped beasts! The power of the physique in the Null Division Members surged like beasts, and out of all of them, only Ben Sen was able to match with the Null Division Members.

Ben Sen's sturdiness and tanned skin was always famous in Purple Cuckoo City, but amongst the crowd, he was not eye catching at all. Ben Sen himself did not know how Ah Mo Li grew his monstrous beast grade body. Every ordinary member of Null Division had tyrannical bodies, all of which were not inferior to his. All of their bodies seemed to be cast from metal, and accumulated a powerful force.

To have a group of men that had bodies comparable to Black Ben Sen, what kind of power would that hold.

Victor and the rest were celebrating in their minds, that they did not bark up the wrong tree. Seeing Ben Sen being defeated again and again, all of them were filled with sympathy. Every single person was a mini Ben Sens.

But, how old were they?

Looking at all of their adolescent faces that still had a tinge of childishness, all of them were speechless. Youth, meant that they had boundless potential, their bottom line was already so solid, their future was limitless. A group of young men with solid foundations, given enough time, would become unthinkable.

After staring for a few days, the last bit of arrogance in their hearts disappeared.

Compared to Ah Mo Li and Han Bing Ning, they were much weaker in terms of strength, and far weaker than Gu Xue, their experience in tactics were nil, so where would they be placed in the group?

That intense stress made them work extremely hard. They were strangers to war formations and tactics, but they were all outstanding figures, and gained an understanding quickly.

The Yin line's undulations caused the entire formation to look as

if they have come alive.

“Watch your position! Watch your left and right, the distance should not be more than five steps, watch for wrong positioning!”

“Troops to the left, control your steps!”

“Troops to the right, watch out, curve, curve slightly, don’t move so straight!”

“Well done!”

Ah Mo Li roared at the formation frequently, he glared with them with his enthusiasm, invading every inch of their private spaces.

Compared to them, Han Bing Ning’s side was much quieter.

In any unit, the temperament of the leader would influence the entire unit, Han Bing Ning’s ice cold demeanour made her unit to reveal a similar temperament. They were usually very quiet and reserved, and would spontaneously adjust themselves.

Every time when the formation changed, when it came to Victor and the rest, there would be a slight delay.

Nie Qiu was not happy or sad, it was a problem regarding rapport and mutual understanding. But at least the latest situation was

better than the start. At the beginning, the few of them were like confused mosquitos colliding with others inside the formation, causing the entire for

mation to become chaotic. But Nie Qiu never gave up, his Yin Yang Formation was already able to activate with Ah Mo Li and Han Bing Ning.

Han Bing Ning and Ah Mo Li were the most important people involved in the formation, situated at the two Yang positions. Yang positions, were the vital positions for the formation. But, the two Yang positions, were still weak for the formation. He required more Yang Positions, which was Gu Xue and the rest, for the formation to become stronger.

Gu Xue was the strongest, and her ability was extremely unique, thus her position could be considered equal to Han Bing Ning and Ah Mo Li. Xu An Zhong, Victor, Roland Su and Ben Sen, were a grade lower, but with the four additional Yang Positions, it could allow the formation to be more robust, and become more variable. Ping Xiao Shan who had the greatest improvements was the most ordinary looking Yang Point.

The more Yang Points there were, the stronger the formation, but at the same time, the war formation would become even more complicated, and the training difficulty would increase.

Groups of Null Division Members followed along the Yin Lines of the formation, alternating by interweaving, advancing forward, swapping positions, the aura of the formation kept on changing.

Their breathing was constantly adjusted.

Ah Mo Li had also become reserved, he no longer shouted, and adjusted his breathing accordingly. If they were consistent, they would immediately be able to synchronize their breathing. But at the present they were clearly unable to achieve this, and thus required to constantly adjust themselves.

They followed the changes in the formation, and the frequency of their breathing gradually formed into one.

The formation was like a strange beast that had just awoken and was stretching its body.

Xu Xiang Dong hid in the shadows in the corner and quietly watched the people training, his heart trembling but with admiration.

Is this what they call an army?

The rumors of the Null Division Prisoners had long spread across the entire Sin Domain, that this group of people all had the same temperament. Many people guessed that they were in one army, although armies had long disappeared in Sin Domain, but the knowledge of it had been passed down.

Guesses are ultimately still guesses, knowledge was ultimately just knowledge, but in the end, no one had seen what an army was,

and no one knew what a real army was like.

At that time when Ghost Face Mask was attacking East Immortal City, Xu Xiang Dong rushed towards Purple Cuckoo City without hesitation. The terrifying power from East Immortal City had caused his heart and mind to tremble, it had shook him completely. That is the true highest level of power! Even with just the arm of the Death God holding the Death God Scythe, it was more than enough!

The undulations formed had scared him, and he believed that if he were inside it, it would be difficult for him to escape.

He would never expect that Ghost Face Mask was able to survive from that terrifying technique, much less fight against it. It was a higher level of power, although it was not complete, but it was enough to crush Ghost Face Mask.

If Ghost Face Mask was dead, then Purple Cuckoo City was basically defenseless to him.

He travelled through the day and night without resting, cherishing every second he had. Whoever took the first move, even if it was a split second, would change the entire story.

When he arrived in Purple Cuckoo City, he quickly realised that they were heavily guarded.

But he did not care, such a defense was only a small trouble for



him. He quietly snuck into the Purple Cuckoo City, and very quickly found the important people of Purple Cuckoo City, who were all training in the training grounds.

Xu Xiang Dong was a cautious man, he did not immediately take action, and only watched in the shadows.

He recognized Victor and a few others, but did not recognize the rest, but their temperament were very similar to the prisoners. When he saw so many Null Division Prisoners, it made his heart pound if excitement.

The Null Division Prisoners all had outstanding discipline. This point was not shown when they were prisoners, who only showed off their wild and arrogant sides, but in the training grounds, they were extremely hardworking and completed each order word for word.

Such subordinates were a dream come true for any Patriarch!

Hidden in the shadows, Xu Xiang Dong had set his mind to obtain the prisoners. With so many of them, he believed that he could sweep the entire Sin Domain.

His gaze landed on Nie Qiu who was in the middle of the troops, the blind man was the one giving the orders. Xu Xiang Dong sensed that the laws on the blind man was unique, but he did not give much thought into it, in Sin Domain, there were all sorts of unique laws, it was not strange at all.

He is blind and weak, his strength will not suffice.

He considered for a moment, and realised that most probably, the blind man was the true leader of the Null Division. If I obtain that blind man, maybe I can make these Null Division Prisoners more obedient.

This thought made him excited, and felt that his choice to come to Purple Cuckoo City was right.

The disobedience of the Null Division Prisoners was the biggest problems to the various families, and until now, there were no news of any family being able to tame them. Seems like the key to this problem is that blind man.

Xu Xiang Dong wandered, and looked at the complicated and chaotic changes in the training grounds, he did not understand what they were doing. He could not be bothered either, he was thinking of how he could rush in and seize the blind man.

Or maybe I should just oppress them with my power?

That is considerable, their strength are just so so, I can also leave a huge mark in their minds, and I can be feared by them....

Suddenly, he seemed to have sensed something.

Eh?

This sound.....it's breathing?

He suddenly raised his head and looked into the field, his pupils immediately constricted.

All of the figures moved without stopping at all, resembling molten silver flowing all around. But what truly shook him was the unified breathing, all of them were breathing in unison.

Hu.....hee.....hu.....hee.....

The few hundreds of people breathing at the same time, arose like a dragon breathing, they could be heard across the entire field.

Xu Xiang Dong's heart was pounding, it was as if he could sense the formation of a terrifying power.

Suddenly, his eyes pierced through the layers of humans, and landed on the blind man seated in the center.

The blind man seemed to have sensed his gaze, and suddenly smiled at him.

Xu Xiang Dong's heart instantly tensed up.

Right at that moment, the blind youth seated cross legged on the ground suddenly waved his hand downwards.

The Null Division members shuttling to and fro were like springs compressed to their maximum, they suddenly released forward.

Many high speed after images of the figures all leapt forward like a tide. They raised their Board Guillotine Blades, enveloped with various colors of light auras, all of their muscles tensed to their maximum.

Forward, slash down!

Looking from a bird's eye view, it looked like two rainbow colored blade auras that poured down like snakes, superimposing on each other.

The blade lights converged, Han Bing Ning and Ah Mo Li's aura reached the maximum, they unleashed their attacks at the same time, and two multi-colored blade auras that spanned more than 100m swept forward.

The terrifying blade auras caused the air to tremble, and everything else in vision dimmed in color.

Xu Xiang Dong's face finally changed.

# Chapter 756 – Crossing of Swords

---

The 100m long blade auras swept forward like walls of light, the multi-colored brilliance drew out dazzling and beautiful light scars in the air. The two blade auras also released an intimidating sound.

Everything occurred too suddenly, and both parties were too close to each other.

When Xu Xiang Dong reacted, the blade aura was less than 15m away from him, allowing him to clearly see the countless small blade auras in them, and ripples formed in the air.

Xu Xiang Dong groaned, his body flickered with a light aura, the space beneath his feet distorted, the ground started to dissolve and he dived into the ground.

Bang!

The two blade auras swept above his head, it was as though two sawblades with tyrannical aura had swept past him, causing his scalp to turn numb. Cold intent swept from the tail of the light, Xu Xiang Dong's heart was plummeting, Since when did they found out about me?

How did they discover me?

The suspicions swept across his heart, but at the moment, he had no time to consider about them. The enemy had sensed him, but

feigned as though they knew nothing, and suddenly launched an attack, it was a premeditated ambush!

Xu Xiang Dong sensed something amiss, in the blink of the eye, he had turned from predator to prey, and without any warnings. He did not know how the enemy had sensed him, and what kind of offensive plans they had. Such factors made him feel uneasy.

I need to counterattack!

In the blink of an eye, Xu Xiang Dong regained his composure and made his decision. When a person is ambushed, if they were to blindly dodge, they would only allow themselves to be more agitated. But instead, by counterattacking, one could break the rhythm of the opponent, giving him the chance to survive or escape.

The light aura flickered on his body, he suddenly disappeared, and appeared in the sky at the next moment.

That is....

He had not stabilized himself, but felt an indescribable an aura locking down on him. His pupils suddenly constricted, the enemy was above him.

What?

Xu Xiang DONG's heart trembled, his vision was a myriad of

colors, and his mind was in pain.

A faint sorrow, like a faint mist started diffusing from his insides, causing his state of mind to be distracted.

A familiar yet unfamiliar image of a woman surfaced in his mind, she was the woman he never thought he would remember, he thought that he had long thrown away all the pain and suffering he had from her, he had already let go of the past, and thought that she would no longer affect him.

But when her image appeared, his mind immediately stopped temporarily.

Gu Xue flew in the sky calmly.

Her Yearning Law Surface's projected power made her feel an unprecedented power, she did not have any killing intent on her face, just gentleness.

The Monarch Yearning Strike Broadsword was a large sword with a broad and long sword hilt, while Gu Xue's hands were petite and small and required both hands to hold the sword firmly. The sword hilt was wrapped with seven different colored ropes, and at the end was a strand of red beans, the sword edge resembled the wings of a swallow, the sword's broad body was colored with seven different colors lined extremely straight beside one another.

She raised Monarch Yearning Strike Broadsword with both of

her hands, countless rainbow swords spewed out like colored ribbons spewing out in a holiday, surging downwards from the sky, they had long rainbow colored tails of light, all of it transforming into a gigantic rainbow light screen that enveloped the entire field.

It was her newly enlightened technique, Screen of Yearning Strikes.

Gu Xue was naturally born to be compatible with

In the Monarch Yearning Strike, as she possessed Snow Rainbow Blood Meridians. Under Qin Zhen's control, her willpower and determination was sharpened, and her understanding of the Monarch Yearning Strike had long surpassed Wang Yong of the past. And when she broke out of the control and saw Tang Tian, all the accumulation gathered and she immediately gained enlightenment on the Yearning Law. As the accumulation was great, her enlightenment broke through so far that she directly gained enlightenment on her Law Surface.

Screen of Yearning Strikes could not be resisted with brute force, a blade could not cut through yearnings of the mind, the beautiful and warm sword rainbows were not meant to harm lives, but to awaken all the deeply concealed yearnings in the heart.

Gu Xu's Screen of Yearning Strikes was extremely novel, but as she only gained enlightenment on it for a short time, she could only sustain it for about 20 breaths of time.



In any one against one battle, even if Gu Xue was able to lock Xu Xiang Dong down for 20 breaths of time but lack the methods to take his life, she would still be the one defeated. Luckily, Gu Xue was not alone.

Xu An Zhong and the other three were in four separate corners, and in Nie Qiu's gray world, they were all emitting dazzling light auras, their Yang Points had become brighter.

Strands of red light leaked out from all the Null Division Members inside the formation, following the intercrossing Yin Lines, it entered the Four People's bodies, it was the purest form of power of the physique.

The four of them were roused, even if they had trained in Law Surfaces, but the power of the physique was useful for any martial artists. The four of them activated their own Laws in unison, the four bright Yang Points suddenly resonated along with Gu Xue who was dazzling in the sky.

Inside the Screen of Yearning Strikes, it was suddenly filled with wind, fire, water and sword concept.

Wind Laws were from Ben Sen, Fire from Victor, Water from Roland Su, Sword Concept Laws from Xu An Zhong.

Xu Xiang Dong immediately felt the pressure, the dazzling rainbow swords had entered his mental state, he was unable to defend against it, but it did not have any wounding capabilities. you want me to die from the emotions of my heart? Xu Xiang Dong

sneered.

Just at that moment, countless of water streams like water snakes shot out of the Screen of Yearning Strikes. Xu Xiang Dong snorted in his mind, it was the Roland Family' [Gentle Water Sleeves]. This was a relatively good technique, but it was a pity that Roland Su's strength was not robust enough, and unable to unleash its true might.

His body suddenly turned in the air, causing all the water sleeves to only sweep around him and slide past him, unable to even affect his clothes.

His pupils constricted, what came next were regiments of fires that resembled flowers, that floated between the water sleeves and sword rainbow.

[Phoenix Fire]!

Compared to Roland Family's [Gentle Water Sleeves], Xu Xiang Dong had a higher evaluation towards [Phoenix Fire]. It was said that the Thiopiate Family Ancestor gained enlightenment on 500 types of fire related laws, and chose the strongest 13 and combined them to become the Phoenix Fire.

But it was a pity that the Thiopiate Family had withered, Victor had good talent, but it was a pity he enjoyed playing more, he was frivolous and rash, it was hard for him to become a capable person.

He reached out his fingers, causing the air in front of him to distort suddenly, all the flames floating towards him seemed to be pushed away by an invisible hand, and floated away.

Just then, wind suddenly came and blew the Phoenix Fire back towards Xu Xiang Dong.

Xu Xiang Dong immediately knew that it was Ben Sen. He admired Ben Sen, compared to the other two, he was stronger, and people able to gain enlightenment on Gust and Gale from the wind blade were all powerful figures. But it was a pity, he was old.

His wind techniques were outstanding, the water sleeves and the phoenix fire that were pushed away from him were actually pulled back and surrounded him tightly.

If you think this can take me down, you're still too narrow-minded.

He laughed in his mind.

From the panicked and unease at the start to his composed self was only one to two breaths of time. All the attacks looked formidable, but in his eyes, they were unable to shake him as much as the rainbow swords. He was familiar with all of the laws, they were also powerful, but they were not on the same level as him, and the threat they posed were pitiful.

Just at that moment, a black and white sword aura suddenly flew

out from within the water sleeves and phoenix fire.

Life and Death Laws?

Xu Xiang Dong frowned, the sword aura emitted a faint life and death aura, but he heard that there was a man who betrayed the Xu Family and went to learn swords instead of Life and Death Seals.

He secretly nodded in his mind, This sword is rather strong.

But still, it is just that.

Xu Xiang Dong sneered, This had been fun!

He pointed his finger out at the sword aura, feeling complacent, Life and death sword, so what? Can it break through my spatial barrier?

Just at that moment, the black and white sword aura slanted.

Xu Xiang Dong was surprised, and suddenly, his eyes constricted, the sword's target was not me at all!

The sword aura shot forth like an arrow and penetrated through the phoenix fire and water sleeves.

Water and Fire are polar opposite laws, and thus the collision

blossomed out a dazzling light regiment. At the same time, the initially weak wind suddenly became as hard as steel.

Xu Xiang Dong's face changed, he ignored everything and projected out all of his Law Surface, causing the space around him to distort.

Bang bang bang!

The explosion formed by the sword aura was like throwing a bucket of gunpowder into fire, the initially peaceful phoenix fire and water sleeves inside the wall of wind clashed, causing an ear piercing explosion that lit up together!

The dazzling light aura formed from the explosion caused Xu Xiang Dong's vision to turn white.

The opposing laws collision produced a considerably powerful explosion, furthermore with the wall of wind to seal them.

Even with the protection of the spatial barrier, Xu Xiang Dong still sustained injuries, his body was shaking and blood came out from the corner of his mouth. This explosion exhausted exactly a third of Xu Xiang Dong's Law Surface power.

Xu Xiang Dong's hair was in a mess, killing intent pervading from his body. He did not place the strength of the four of them in his eyes, but he did not expect himself to have suffered so much against the four of them.

Let me see how long you guys can hold on for!

Their coordination was spectacularly perfect, but it also exhausted all of their power. The strange rainbow light barrier was indeed powerful, but Xu Xiang Dong knew that such great power also had a huge exertion, and thus they would not be able to last for long.

Suddenly, the ground trembled, footsteps sounded out in his ears, like a horde of beasts sprinting towards him.

Gu Xue who was in the air could see clearly, all the Null Division members had raised their Board Guillotine Blades and like a tide, they sprinted towards Xu Xiang Dong from all directions. They had the statures of beasts, and adding the door sized Board Guillotine Blades, each step they took would cause the ground to shake.

A few hundred men sprinting definitely had the momentum not inferior to that of hordes of beasts.

When the closest Null Division member was 100m away from Xu Xiang Dong, he leapt up into the air with their Board Guillotine Blades raised high above him.

“Kill!”

A roar came out, tensing all the muscles in his body, the thin Golden Steel Cloth looked as though it was about to be ripped

apart. With his glaring eyes fixated on their target, he slashed down.

He slashed downwards, which cut into Xu Xiang Dong who went beneath the ground.

Bang, rocks flew everywhere!

Damn it! Missed!

One of the member wailed in his mind, but he knew it was not the time to be upset, discarding the blade, he anxiously rolled to the side.

“Kill!”

His members above him roared, five steps behind him, they leapt up and slashed down as well.

“Kill!” “Kill!” “Kill!” .....

One after another, the beastlike figures all poured in from all directions like the waves of a sea rising and receding at the beach, every single slash from them were Blade Devil Transformation!

Regardless of whether they hit their target or not, they would roll away to make space.

The distance between each member was calculated to precision, and it was what Nie Qiu desired for, the greatest offensive efficiency. Xu Xiang Dong was immensely affected, the torrential attacks from above did not have any flaws, it was so condensed that it made him feel despair.

Xu Xiang Dong was completely stupefied, although the power in each blade was not fatal, but they were still consuming the power in his spatial barrier.

The consecutive blade attacks caused him to not have the ability to think of a counterattack, his strength was constantly depleted, his spatial barrier revealed cracks, some of the blades struck right at the same spot, the terrifying power made him feel as if he was under the attack of a wild beast.

Aside from the torrents of attacks, there were two groups at the left and right, completely reorganized, they were the first that moved out, Han Bing Ning and Ah Mo Li.

The two of them looked at each other, and moved at the exact same moment.

Beneath their feet, two yin lines had extended out and surrounded Xu Xiang Dong!



# Chapter 757 – The Last Attack

---

Nie Qiu sat steadily in the center.

Inside his gray world, the intercrossing Yin Lines and the Yang Points that resembled the stars formed an abundant and layered world.

The members that charged towards Xu Xiang Dong like torrents were the tools of the layers in his world. He calmly observed everything, the rhythm of the offense still had flaws, but was rather skillful.

Nie Qiu remained calm and composed, the majority of all tactics would always have an allowance for unpredictable circumstances. No matter how outstanding an elite was, he could not assure absolutely zero mistakes, or to perform to perfection. Furthermore, there were always changes in the battlefield, all sorts of unanticipated events would occur, and tactics that did not give an allowance would become riddled with problems.

Although Nie Qiu hoped that Tang Tian was able to obtain an extended period of time for the Null Division to grow, but as an outstanding military leader himself, he was not willing to burden Tang Tian with all the hopes, even if he had confidence in him.

If an accident or situation occurs, are we not to fight even if we have not trained sufficiently?

Nie Qiu had thought about that, and had long made a plan for it,

for what they should do if such a situation were to occur. Nie Qiu's plan was simple, if they had not trained sufficiently, they would make it up with numbers. In his calculation, he left a great margin of surplus power, and did not pursue efficiency blindly. The margin he left was great, at 20%, which meant that if 20% of the members were to make a mistake, the formation would not lose shape.

Of course, such a huge margin naturally affected the might of the formation. But with the current situation, maintaining the form of the formation was far more important than seeking the strongest power.

The first two heavy strikes released by Han Bing Ning and Ah Mo Li looked to be scary, but half of it was just a bluff. Borrowing the power of the Yin Yang Formation, the attack was formed by gathering all the power in the laws of the members. In Sin Domain, it could be considered a top grade technique.

But Nie Qiu only used it as a bluff, to him, the Law Threads were recently enlightened by the members, and their power would be considered extremely low level in Sin Domain, even if they had the advantage in numbers, but it was still difficult to achieve a huge qualitative change.

Since they could not achieve a huge qualitative change, they would not be able to threaten true powerful martial artists. Nie Qiu looked warm and gentle on the outside, but he was prideful inside, if not, why would he be willing to leave Leo Constellation and join Tang Tian? Since they entered Sin Domain, his target was always towards the top grade martial artists, because they represented the

peak strength in the Sin Domain.

His true focus on the attack was in the slashes.

The Null Division Members all had powerful bodies, and their pure power of the physique were perfect for Heavy Demonic Execution, as they were able to produce powerful attacks. Such power naturally had its flaws, for example it needed the user to engage in close combat battle, or it did not have any sustainability, and was difficult to produce attacks to follow up.

Not only did Nie Qiu not demand for the members to control their power, but instead, his request was even more extreme. He requested for every member to put all of their power of the physique into their one slash.

Undoubtedly, their slashes were powerful. Even for Ben Sen, in that head on collision situation would be unable to bear three consecutive slashes. The fearsome power had a strong feedback as well, but they had the Golden Steel Clothes from the Xue Family, and it could dissipate the power throughout

the entire body. That was how the Null Division Members were able to unleash such devastating attacks but not sustain too many injuries as well.

Ben Sen and the rest were speechless from shock, while Nie Qiu remained quiet.

His thoughts came from the battle with Lu Tian Wen. They were able to kill Lu Tian Wen largely due to Tang Tian, but in the end Lu Tian Wen was killed by Ah Mo Li's slash. That meant that their degree of attack, although it was unable to pose as a fatal threat to the powerful martial artists on the List of Powerhouses, but it still posed as a threat.

The crucial thing was that they had sufficient manpower. 629 members, gave Nie Qiu sufficient breathing space.

Many ants can kill an elephant, that was Nie Qiu's thought.

The capricious mule headed slash also had its benefits. By using force to meet force, one would lose to ten, and since they were unable to compete in terms of martial techniques, then it would be reasonable for them to use numbers. And with Gu Xue's Screen of Yearning Strikes, it allowed this seemingly dumb formation to be utilized perfectly. Coupled with the wall of wind that sealed the sword concept with the explosive water and fire, this formation clearly showed off Nie Qiu's brilliance.

The most difficult aspect of the formation was that they had to achieve a sufficient amount of slashes in a short ten breaths of time.

They were still far from Nie Qiu's expectations, there were half of them that were unable to complete their slashes.

But, that was sufficient.

The Yin Yang Formation was like a huge spiderweb, and Nie Qiu was the spider waiting for the opportunity. The fine changes of the formation followed along the Yin Yang Formation towards Nie Qiu who collected the information. He could clearly feel that Xu Xiang Dong's law was close to withering inside the formation.

He gave Han Bing Ning and Ah Mo Li three breaths of time to achieve their attacks.

In the past 13 breaths of time, Xu Xiang Dong suffered from 302 slashes, and even Nie Qiu respected him for that. As the creator of the formation, he was very clear of the might of every slash.

To be able to bear the attacks of 302 slashes consecutively and not fall, Xu Xiang Dong was truly powerful.

Ben Sen and the other three who had already completed their part were all aching and exhausted, and could only observe the battle from afar. Previously, they did not even sense the existence of the enemy, until when Gu Xue used her Screen of Yearning Strikes did they realise. Luckily, their training for the past few days was not in vain, they did not spoil their surprise attack and quickly reacted.

During training, they did not have many feelings to it, but when they truly used it in battle, they realised the power of the war formation. The gushing tides of Broad Guillotine Blades and the precision of attacks shook everybody.

Especially for Ben Sen, he had tried three slashes for himself, and

immediately cut out in a sorry figure.

But.....

Their gaze all landed on Xu Xiang Dong, all of them overwhelmed with shock. He was actually able to withstand 300 slashes, although the spatial barrier around him was already covered in cracks and was about to shatter and he himself was swaying, but he did not fall.

Too powerful!

But at that moment, they did not have the time to feel moved, their gazes landed on the two small units that had already moved, and could not help but feel excited.

The last attack is coming!

They had trained in the formation many times, but the last attack had never truly been used. The four of them were extremely excited to see the last attack, especially for Ben Sen, because the twins were closely following behind Han Bing Ning.

The two small groups had 50 men each, and shot forward like arrows.

Ah Mo Li sprinted on the Yin Line, his strides were large, each step extremely heavy. Every time he stepped out, there would be a strand of heat, that surged from his footprints. They were like

strands of flames that bore into his body, that were the pure power of the physique.

Every step would cause the Null Flames around his body to blaze more. The Null Flames swirled all around his body, and Ah Mo Li, inside the flames, single handedly wielded the Broad Guillotine Blade, his expression cold, like a God of War.

Behind him, each member had the Tiny Null Flames that flowed along their Broad Guillotine Blades, the Tiny Null Flames were becoming even more vigorous as well, with a tail of flames behind. They were like a horde of beasts with surging killing intent, sprinting forward together.

Han Bing Ning's small group had a completely different style.

Han Bing Ning's steps were small, but her frequency was extremely fast like lightning, she bent forward slightly and flashed forward. The twins behind her to the left and right were following closely behind. Further behind, the members all ran with small steps, their expressions solemn.

Bone chilling ice cold intent pervaded out of the entire group, their aura was completely sharp like a sword that had its blade polished to the point of revealing an ice cold blade edge.

On one side was a raging flame, on the other was an ice cold sharpness, two completely contrasting styles, two completely different auras, were equally fast, and equally determined.

Nie Qiu's face flushed a slight red, his body trembled slightly as he activated his Yin Yang Formation to its maximum. All the power of the physique in the formation converged from all directions, flowing through the Yin Lines and converging onto the two groups.

The two groups' aura continued rising, their distance towards Xu Xiang Dong was quickly closing.

The members all around Xu Xiang Dong scattered in all directions like birds startled by something.

In his vision, everything cleared up.

Xu Xiang Dong who had not recover from the attacks was in a daze. He was in a terrible situation, the spatial barrier around him was cracked, his robes were tattered and torn, his hair messy and blood at the corner of his mouth.

He had never experienced such an unreasonable offense, the torrential slashes did not allow him to catch any breath at all.

He could only hold onto the spatial barrier instinctively, and held onto his defense bitterly.

It had not been removed, for he was still afraid of the strange rainbow swords. Although he would struggle out of the thoughts quickly, but each time he had to pay a heavy price, and the spatial barrier was unable to block against all the slashes, causing some of



the power to transmit to his body.

Although he was in a different league, but his flesh body was not as strong. Although it was just a portion of the attack, it still caused severe injuries to him. It had also affected his Law Surface, and increased the consumption of his Laws.

Suddenly, he felt that the stress around him had lessened, the stifling and choking presence had disappeared.

Is it finally over?

He was in a daze, and a joy crept up in his heart, I finally got through it.

Since when did the pitiful Xu Xiang Dong ever been trampled on like that? That's right, he was completely trampled like grapes, from start to end ,he was completely suppressed.

A powerful martial artist on the List of Powerhouses was actually suppressed? By a group of weaklings?

Just at that moment, he heard rumblings, the ground beneath him trembled, causing him to come to his senses.

That....

Xu Xiang Dong who had just recovered had his pupils

constricting once again, the sky before him had many black figures.

They all leapt up into the sky, the rumblings was formed by them leaping off the ground.

“KILL!” Ah Mo Li roared like thunder, the power in his body erupted, the surging Demon Slash he executed was much stronger than all that Xu Xiang Dong had faced,

“Kill!” Han Bing Ning’s voice was as cold as ice, the cold intent around her blossomed to its maximum, the bone chilling cold blue sword aura erupted behind everybody, and their auras converged as one.

A blue sword aura and a Demon Slash, smashed straight into Xu Xiang Dong’s breaking spatial barrier.

The spatial barrier immediately shattered into dust, Xu Xiang Dong could not even lift his hand when his entire body was stuck. The ice cold sword aura had froze him like an ice statue, even freezing the disbelief look on his face, followed by the slash that shattered him into pieces!

When the dust dissipated, what remained was a large pit, that had nothing in it.

# Chapter 758 – Furious Zhong Li Bai

---

Tang Tian opened his eyes, the determined red eyes gradually receded and returned to normal. The Six Arm Demon inside him suddenly congealed, the flames on Angry Fist Seal continued to burn like a raging flame.

Hu.

He exhaled, which carried some heat. The vast Origin Force accumulated in his body made him feel like a time bomb. He had a feeling that if he were to make a wrong move, he would self destruct.

The Angry Fist Seal's red light that flushed through his entire body caused his Origin Force to become like that.

After probing for a few days, he confirmed that the Demon Six Seals was not techniques for battle, but secret techniques to refine and temper his body. But understanding it was just understanding, from the time that he realized it, he only gained enlightenment on the Angry Fist Seal.

Before and right after the battle ended, he did not have much feelings from it. During the battle, the raging Origin Force held even more destructive and offensive capabilities. After the battle ended, the Origin Force in his body was emptied, making him exhausted.

But when the Origin Force in his body started recovering, he

realised that the boundless sea of unstable OriginForce was an extremely painful matter. He spent a few days gradually getting used to the Origin Force in his body, and sorted it out smoothly.

But, he had to be extremely careful, and placed most of his focus on pacifying the restless Origin Force.

But with the stronger Origin Force, it allowed Tang Tian's Godfist to improve.

Tang Tian was extremely looking forward to the Godfist, he had the confidence that when the Godfist was truly completed, its power would definitely shock the world. But at the last phase, every small step he took required him to exhaust the boundless sea of Origin Force.

There were times that Tang Tian laughed bitterly, it took him so much to create such a powerful killing technique, but in the end its consumption was far more than his strength.

He shook his head and threw out the complicated thoughts and walked out of the room.

Inside the courtyard which was heavily guarded, the Null Division Members that were rescued took the initiative to guard the compound. A group of Null Division Members pulled on Point Break, and before they even arrived at the Xu Family home, the Xu Family had already sent out the Null Division Prisoners.

All of the Null Division Prisoners in East Immortal City were by Tang Tian's side, including Zhong Li Bai.

Tang Tian looked at Xu Ye and asked with concern: "How are you? Do you feel better?"

Xu Ye's face was pale white, as though he was stricken with a terminal illness, and occasionally his face would turn gray. The battle between Tang Tian and He Xin had impacted him immensely, he trained in the Life and Death Laws, but he lacked the sharpening of a life and death battle. He was like a flower in a greenhouse, he looked strong, but his Mental State was extremely weak, after witnessing the bitter life and death battle, it showed him their dedication for victory and disregard for everything else, for their own belief, they were willing to give everything they had.

Compared to them, I am a coward and a sham.

His mental state was trapped within the Life and Death, and his Law Surface was greatly affected, he no longer had control over the Life and Death auras in his body, which moved in him recklessly. So Xu Ye was unable to sort out the Life Aura and Death aura, causing his body to constantly be at the verge of death, and could die anytime.

Tang Tian could not help him, the Life and Death Laws were one of the Three Great Laws, it was extremely profound and abstruse, he was unable to do anything.

The only one who could save Xu Ye was he himself.

Xu Ye bowed respectfully: “Thank you master for the concern, it is not a big matter.”

His expression was calm, the surging and devastating life and death auras in his body had made his body turn into a terrible state, and even his voice seemed weak. When he spoke too much, he would feel exhausted and would cough incessantly.

Seeing that, Tang Tian immediately advised him: “You should rest up, you don’t have to worry here!”

Xu Ye did not reply to that, but continued to speak: “Two days ago, the Purple Cuckoo City sent information, someone infiltrated Purple Cuckoo City, but Master Nie Qiu caught him, and used the Null Division to destroy him. According to the investigations, it should be Xu Xiang Dong.”

“Xu Xiang Dong is dead? He got it easy!” Zhong Li Bai who was at the side could not help but speak up, his face was extremely black, his fists clenched tightly, hatred filled his eyes. They had suffered greatly in the Xu Family, and Zhong Li Bai was tortured the most. Xu Xiang Dong and the family saw that Zhong Li Bai was the leader, and wanted to make him submit to them first, and thus used a lot of methods on him. He Xin’s Death Laws and poison techniques were included.

Zhong Li Bai was extremely proud and untamed, and any hatred had to be repaid. Having lived pleasantly in Leo Constellation, when had he ever suffered such a life? He hated Xu Xiang Dong and

He Xin greatly, but never expected to be rescued, and He Xin was already killed by Tang Tian. He wanted to look for Xu Xiang Dong for revenge, but Xu Xiang Dong was also killed, and he was unable to unleash the hatred in his heart.

What he could not accept most was that his enemy was killed by the blind man. The two of them had the relationship of arch nemesis, and this was something Zhong Li Bai could not swallow.

“Xu Xiang Dong’s family is still alive....” Xu Ye reminded Zhong Li Bai, in Sin Domain, taking such revenge by killing the entire family was an ordinary thing.

Zhong Li Bai relaxed his fists and snorted, his nose pointed sky high: “I have not fallen to such a degenerate level!”

Tang Tian did not know how powerful Xu Xiang Dong was as well, thinking about the number of people in Purple Cuckoo City, along with Gu Xue, Nie Qiu, Ah Mo Li and Han Bing Ning, he did not find it strange that Xu Xiang Dong was killed.

He did not linger on this question, and turned to Xu Ye: “How do we go to Sharp Wind City?”

The battle of East Immortal City was admittedly thrilling, but it also caused his confidence to swell, by saving the Null Division members, their goal would be met, and he himself would be stronger than before. The fact that he could engage in Life and Death Battles and improve so quickly made Tang Tian extremely happy.

He felt that beating city by city was not bad a plan either.

Xu Ye's expression turned strange: "There are some unforeseen changes in the situation."

"Changes?" Tang Tian was startled, and he asked: "What changes?"

"Sharp Wind City's Fu Family said they found Ancestor Li's Inheritor."

To suddenly have Ancestor Li's Inheritor at such a time, it was too much of a coincidence, that was why Xu Ye's expression was weird. Even Zhong Li Bai's untamed face was startled.

Tang Tian was confused: "Ancestor Li's Inheritor?"

"Yes. It is said that the Fu Family had received the grace of Ancestor Li in the past, and they just found his Inheritor, so are celebrating it as an occasion. They have invited many powerful martial artists with the intention to hold a banquet." Xu Ye rubbed his nose.

Zhong Li Bai snorted: "Dog shit! They are just going against us!"

Xu Ye glanced at this young man who had a dangerous aura to him, with his hair tied up in a ponytail and frequently squinted his



eyes. Master's subordinates are truly outstanding people. In the past few days, he had already seen how Zhong Li Bai worked. He shouted like thunder, calling for a few of the family leaders, and without giving them a chance to meet, he met with them separately and scared and cheated them, causing the leaders to be filled with fear. After that, he made them point out each other's weaknesses, whoever dared to lie would be massacred, and thus East Immortal City various families obediently handed out all of their elites.

So when Xu Ye heard Zhong Li Bai saying that he would not seek for the Xu Family's children and wives, he was surprised.

He had suffered greatly in their hands, and hearing how Xu Xiang Dong and He Xin had tortured him, he was shocked to hear that he would not take revenge on the children and wives. But for the sake of establishing authority, he would not hesitate to massacre the families, and caused rivers of blood to flow.

He is a man who would do anything to win.

East Immortal City various elites were all managed by Zhong Li Bai, forming a group called the East Immortal Unit. East Immortal Unit was under harsh martial law, differentiated between the various families, in a short span of a few days, the East Immortal Unit's atmosphere was completely different.

Xu Ye preferred Zhong Li Bai's methods over Nie Qiu, as he was even more merciless and cunning.

"I think so too." Xu Ye continued: "Master's power has long been

known to others. If we were to say that everyone treated master as a joke previously, currently, many of them are half believing it already. I heard that the Patriarch of the Fu Family heard of Master's name as Ancestor Li's Inheritor, and was so furious that he accused Master as a fraud, and said that he would kill Master...."

"Could it be that that Ancestor Li's Inheritor is real?" Tang Tian was embarrassed, speaking about it, Tang Tian himself did not know if he was truly the Inheritor.

It was truly embarrassing, he had never experienced such a thing before.

Seeing the Master's naive look, Xu Ye's stared straight at him, Is this the Master that kills so decisively?

Zhong Li Bai glanced at Tang Tian in surprise. He had followed Tang Tian for a short period of time, and his understanding of Tang Tian stopped at where Leo Constellation had researched on him. To the eyes of the military generals of Leo Constellation, the Bear King was definitely an ambitious and ruthless character who planned far ahead. When they were summing up Tang Tian's battle system, they found a peculiar trait.

Whichever powerhouse that came into conflict with Tang Tian, would often send out a small group to investigate, but in the end they would always leave themselves open.

They might think that it was a small scale probing, but who knew it was the start of a huge war. They might think it was a small

gamble, but who knew that in the end, Tang Tian would take everything of theirs.

Lupus Constellation, Ursa Major Constellation, Draco Constellation, Cetus Constellation....

All of these constellations that fell into his hands were the proof of this conclusion.

If such a fearsome man was not considered ambitious and ruthless, then what was counted as ambitious and ruthless?

But Li Zong Bai quickly realised, Master's expression, was one that indicated trouble!

Anyone else who sees his expression will think that the Master is naive and pure, but they don't know that Master is acting as a pig to eat the tiger! Brilliant, truly brilliant!

Xu Ye coughed once: "Regardless of whether Master's identity is real or fake, the Null Division brothers are still in their hands."

After meeting Han Bing Ning, Ah Mo Li and Nie Qiu, then meeting Zhong Li Bai, Xu Ye's attitude towards the Null Division was no longer light. The power of the Null Division was far stronger than what he had thought.

"That's true." Tang Tian's awkwardness disappeared.

“They sent a messenger and gave Master a letter.” Xu Ye took out a letter, and hesitated for a moment before adding: “Their tone isn’t too good.”

Tang Tian took the letter and without even looking, he ripped it apart. He turned to look at Zhong Li Bai: “Can you battle?”

Zhong Li Bai’s sharp eye brows straightened up, he was infuriated by Tang Tian’s question: “Master, are you doubting this subordinate’s strength?”

Tang Tian immediately explained: “I am just afraid that you are not familiar with Sin Domain, Nie Qiu also spent a period of time before....”

Zhong Li Bai was already enraged by the fact that Xu Xiang Dong was killed by Nie Qiu, hearing Tang Tian speak his name, it was as though Tang Tian had touched his reverse scale: “Master, what do you mean by that? Does Master think that I am inferior to the blind man?”

Seeing that, Tang Tian immediately advised: “Don’t be impulsive, that wasn’t what I meant, but...”

“Master, you no longer need to speak! Watch Li Bai’s capabilities!” Without saying further, Zhong Li Bai turned in anger and left.

Tang Tian and Xu Ye looked at each other, How did this happen....

# Chapter 759 – Zhong Li Bai's Plan

---

Zhong Li Bai was furious.

He was truly furious, although the two of them had collaborated for a short time before, but he still did not like the blind man. The Raging Inferno Academy and the Lionheart Academy were the two highest institutions of the Leo Constellation, and Lei Ang had high hopes for them. It could even be told from their names, he had used the SaintSword Raging Lionheart's name to give it to the two institutions, showing his hope towards them, that they could be as powerful as the Raging Lionheart.

The two institutions did not let down Lion King's expectations, and groomed the most outstanding military generals. But between the two, it was extremely hostile, both parties were like water and fire, forever competing with each other.

When he was a prisoner, Nie Qiu had already started organizing the army, and even Xu Xiang Dong had died in his hands, that was why Zhong Li Bai was so furious, but he knew that Nie Qiu was already ahead of him.

Losing to the blind man made the prideful Zhong Li Bai infuriated.

But, do you think, that you're the only one who gained enlightenment on war formations?

Zhong Li Bai relaxed his hands, a flash of ferocity flashed past his

eyes, but he calmed down.

~This is just the beginning, although that damn blind man is ahead of me, but I still have my opportunities. Nie Qiu is stationed in Purple Cuckoo City, and has no way to leave, but I can make my own moves.

That's right, the four words of 'make his own moves', made Zhong Li Bai's blood boil.

He had a different style from Nie Qiu's balance tactics, Zhong Li Bai's fighting style was more suited for offense, and his most favourite and proficient tactics were also in offense. There were many reasons why he was not viewed much in Leo Constellation, one was because his style of fighting was too wild. This "wild" trait of his was displayed in many aspects, for example he would always throw everything he had into the fight, or he hardly

followed rules, or he did things unscrupulously.

The confident and powerful Leo Constellation naturally did not welcome such military generals, they won using right and just ways, why should they resort to such means? They clearly have control over all situations, why then need to go to such extremes?

On the road, Zhong Li Bai was helpless towards the Null Division. In terms of training the Null Division, his performance paled in comparison to Nie Qiu's. Now, he finally gained an opportunity, an unrestricted opportunity.

His anger previously encompassed anger and intention, a plan that he came up with.

He did not know if Tang Tian would support or refuse his plan, and what if he rejected it? He could not go against Tang Tian's orders, he still had the grooming of a professional military general. And he was not willing to let go of this opportunity, so before Tang Tian could even speak up, he made the initiative to move out.

The moment he left Tang Tian's side, he pulled the East Immortal Unit that had not completed their training out of the city, and did not bring any Null Division members. The Null Division were more experienced, but Zhong Li Bai knew that they were completely loyal only to Master, and to go past his command over the unit was impossible. Since that was so, he did not want to take them along. Furthermore, the Null Division was Master's favourite, if they suffered a huge loss, he would be in trouble.

As for the East Immortal Unit, Zhong Li Bai saw them as cannon fodder, whether or not they were killed, no one would say anything, and Zhong Li Bai did not have any kindness in his heart.

The unit was noisy and in a disarray, if it was Nie Qiu, he would definitely be frowning, but Zhong Li Bai did not care.

The East Immortal Unit was formed by gathering the elites of East Immortal City, and even the Xu Family elites were taken by him. With the death of Xu Xiang Dong and He Xin, the Xu Family was on the road to destruction. Zhong Li Bai just had to scare and cheat them, saying that only by being the Master's subordinates would they be able to survive, and thus making the Xu Family elites



become obedient.

Of course, this was related to the atmosphere of Sin Domain. In the Sin Domain, the massacre of an entire family was rare, but at the same time, powerful people were the most important resource. Unless the hatred was deep enough, no one would do such a thing. Usually. They would send their strongest martial artists to do battle until a winner comes out, and that was when relying on numbers usually helped. The winner would swallow the loser's family, while the losing family cannot retaliate at all.

Tang Tian's display of strength had shook the entire East Immortal City, and after experiencing the horrifying battle, The families in East Immortal City did not have any thought of going against Tang Tian.

Other than the Xu Family, there were two other big families, the Yu family and the Song Family. Although the two families did not have any martial artists like Xu Xiang Dong capable of being in the List of Powerhouse, but Yu Tao and Song Cheng Yu were definitely not inferior to Xu Ye.

Zhong Li Bai called them over, and without hiding anything, they told them of the news, then told them: "You guys know the situation now. This time, if we cannot even obtain something, we will not have any face to return. If you guys have any ideas, tell me."

The two of them remained quiet, absorbing what Zhong Li Bai had said. Zhong Li Bai did not have much expectation from them, but they were still locals and knew much more about the situation

in Sin Domain than him.

After thinking about it, he spoke up: “Master’s goal isn’t to take Sharp Wind City, but to save the Null Divisionmembers held captive there, that is the true goal.”

Song Cheng Yu was the first to speak up, he looked at Zhong Li Bai: “It’s not only Star Wind City, but all the othercities have martial artists in the List of Powerhouses as well....”

Zhong Li Bai did not express anything, his gaze landing on Yu Tao. Nie Qiu was able to bring a group of Null Divisionmembers and kill an expert on the List of Powerhouses, this had greatly impacted Zhong Li Bai. After being aprisoner for so long, he was still unclear of how powerful a martial artist on the List of Powerhouse was.

~That blind man was able to kill Xu Xiang Dong?~

Thinking about that, Zhong Li Bai felt threatened, Will the formation that I comprehend be able to fight against anexpert on the List of Powerhouses? But he quickly calmed down, Nie Qiu’s forces had included Gu Xue, Han BingNing and Ah Mo LI, the Null Division themselves had training, those were factors that allowed them to kill Xu XiangDong.

No matter how powerful the formation can be, without anyone, it is still useless, and the mob here?

If they lost, it would be a small matter, and even if they were all sacrificed, it would not amount to much, but the loss of his face was something he could not bear. Wouldn't that mean I have lost to Nie Qiu?

Yu Tao had a forthright appearance with a short stature, and only said one sentence: "We have too few people."

Zhong Li Bai's eyes lit up: "Details."

"We do not have sufficient powerful martial artists, so we should use our numbers." Yu Tao explained.

Zhong Li Bai felt as though he had gained a new enlightenment. That's right, since we can't compete in quality, we should fight in quantity. When comparing experienced martial artists fighting together, the East Immortal Unit cannot compete with those Null Division Members, so we might as well fight with numbers.

Once that thought path had been opened, Zhong Li Bai's thoughts were like a wild horse out of control, wanting only to run fast and wild.

"Where's the place with the most List of Powerhouses martial artists?" Zhong Li Bai suddenly asked.

"The four Main Cities." Song Cheng Yu explained it to him: "More than half of the martial artists on the List of Powerhouses are all situated in the Four Main Cities. There, the resources are

the most abundant, and information flows through there. The further you move towards the sides, there are fewer martial artists on the List of Powerhouses.”

“Do you have a map? Let me take a look.” Zhong Li Bai asked.

Song Cheng Yu immediately took out a map, revealing the location of the 17 cities in Sin Domain. The Sin Domain's area was revealed, its crescent shape and the 17 cities strewn at random inside it. On the map, the Four Main Cities were the most striking, they occupied the hinterlands of the crescent, which was the best place in the entire Sin Domain.

Zhong Li Bai then asked the two of them a few questions, which experts laid in which cities, after clarifying all of it, his brazen plan gradually took place in his mind.

“We need more people.” Zhong Li Bai licked his lips, he squinted his small eyes, with his stiff face, he looked extremely sinister: “It seems like we need to grab some people for this to work. Are there anyone around us where there isn't any powerful martial artists on the List of Powerhouses?”

“West Wind Camp!”

“West Wind Camp!”

The two of them said in unison.

“West Wind Camp?” Zhong Li Bai was surprised, he looked back at the map and asked curiously: “Why isn’t it marked in the map?”

“General is unaware.” Song Cheng Yu immediately explained: “But West Wind Camp is a Brigand Unit, and has a reputation in the region. Although they do not have any A Grade Infamous men, but there are seven B Grade Infamous men, so no families dare to provoke them. Although they have set up a checkpoint for tolls, but they are earning from it, thus they rarely take the initiative to plunder and kill people.”

Zhong Li Bai became somewhat interested: “How many men does the West Wind Camp have?”

“Around 10 thousand in the entire West Wind Camp.” Song Cheng Yu said.

Zhong Li Bai jumped in shock: “So many?”

Hearing that it was a Brigand, he estimated that they would have around two to three thousand, but he never expected a number of 10 thousand. It surprised him that such a huge Brigand actually existed.

“It isn’t considered much.” Song Cheng Yu explained: “The Majority of them are weak, and have difficulty living in the cities, thus they return to the mountains where they live in poverty. These brigand heads also require people to be used, so they recruit them and clear the land in the mountains for cultivation. In the 17 Sin Domain Cities, they can’t feed so many people. So all these

brigands are small scale cities, just that their resource production aren't as good as the 17 cities. They live terribly, but these brigand heads are unambitious for the most part, they just collect tolls and live as the mountain kings, rarely coming out. Adding that their produce are little, the families are lazy to take care of them, there isn't much to gain."

"Then trade caravans aren't affected?" Zhong Li Bai felt that he was finally understanding something of the world.

"They are very smart, as long as they see that the caravans are of the big families, they would not do anything, and only look for the middle or small scale caravans to collect tolls." Song Cheng Yu revealed a bitter smile: "Unless the A Grade Infamous people, who are all tyrannically strong, who will not give face to the big families. The big families are helpless against this, and thus pay the tolls to avoid calamities."

"Those big families are truly weak!" Zhong Li Bai's face was filled in disbelief, in Heaven's Road, all the aristocratic big families were all violent, arrogant and despotic.

"What plan do you have?" Song Cheng Yu shrugged: "All of those B Grade Infamous Men are all individually strong, and appear unpredictably, all of them are very good at escaping. The experts of the big families are also unable to waste too much time on this. Why not spend some money, since to the big families, money isn't much."

Zhong Li Bai thought for a moment, he nodded his head: "That's true, ultimately no one can handle those thieves. Are there many

brigands like West Wind Camp?”

“There are many.” Song Cheng Yu: “The Four Main Cities have the best resources, and are occupied by the Four Main Families. The remaining 13 cities have the next best resources, and basically every city has a main big family, while the remaining weaker families who split up the rest of the resources. The remaining people usually run in the mountains. Furthermore, the big families are waiting for them to expand the lands. Whichever Brigands that discovers any new resource and sells them to the Big Families would immediately earn a huge wealth. That was how the East Immortal City came about.”

Zhong Li Bai laughed, revealing his pure white teeth: “Then, let’s go to West Wind Camp!”

# Chapter 760 – Death Thumb Ring

---

“You must kill him.”

Those were Yin Wu Feng’s most familiar words, ever since he came out to the world, he had heard of those words countless of times. He indifferently accept the assassination mission, he was unable to reject the reward.

The reward was a sword, the Growing Yin Sword.

Out of the many treasures in the Sin Domain, the Growing Yin Sword was not very flashy. Its ranking could not be compared to the Thunder Wind Spear, which was ranked 24th, at which inside it was the laws of wind and thunder, matched with its sturdiness, the Lu Family had spent countless of efforts to obtain such a weapon.

The Growing Yin Sword was an extremely mysterious weapon in Sin Domain, for there was extremely few information on it. Everyone only knew of its characteristics, and that should be of Yin. No one knew anything else, and the most thought provoking thing was the ‘Growing’ word in the name, in which many people had different interpretations of it.

But its ranking had never dropped beyond 50, and stood firmly there.

Yin Wu Feng knew the Growing Yin Sword more than ordinary people. It was also because of this additional knowledge, which



made him look bitterly for the sword. He never expected that the sword would appear to him in such a manner.

He was an experienced man, and immediately knew that the customer who looked for him was definitely someone who came before. Only people who knew his circumstances would know what were things he would never refuse. The other party did not reveal their identity, and Yin Wu Feng did not have any interest in it.

What made him cautious was that the mission would definitely be dangerous.

His own bounty was extremely high, he ranked eighth Yin Wind Assassin on the A Grade Infamous Men, to employ him required an extremely high price. But the other party had specially looked for the Growing Yin Sword, showing that the mission's difficulty was extremely high and far from normal.

~Does he want me to kill an expert on the List of Powerhouses?&

nbsp;Or the Patriarch of some family?~

Yin Wu Feng was thinking, but he did not say anything, he quietly accepted the information given to him.

When he saw the target, he was surprised. He knew of the Null Division Prisoners, the Sin Domain had many outsiders that came in, and all of them had outstanding bodies, and caused quite a big

hoorah.

His target was the leader of the Null Division, Ghost Face Mask.

It was his first time hearing of the name, and was surprised, but it made him even more cautious. Any unfamiliar target was bad news for an assassin. He opened up the information, and his expression became serious.

He saw a familiar name, He Xin.

Once an A Grade Infamous Man like him. Hailed as the Death Puppet Master, he was not known to the public, but inside their circle, he was a fearsome man. Yin Wu Feng and He Xin had sparred before, and he knew how troublesome He Xin could be.

He Xin died in the hands of Ghost Face Mask.

That information had already shocked him extremely hard. But he never thought that he would be even more shocked with the information after. When he read it, like how He Xin summoned the Death God Scythe and the arm of the Death God but did not kill Ghost Face Mask, he almost jumped.

How is that possible!

The Death God Scythe was not too bad, its might had a huge difference between a real scythe and a fake, but the arm of the Death God, that was something that could never be faked.

Top grade Law power!

When he absorbed all the information, he only had one thought, Does this customer want me to die? He started to think about all of his contracts, whichever that made his customer have a grievance with him, he thought for half a day, and realized there were too many to count.

He then understood why the customer brought the Growing Yin Sword.

If not for it, no matter how high the other party gave as a reward, he would never accept it.

But, this is the Growing Yin Sword.....

It was his only chance of obtaining the Growing Yin Sword. If he were to miss it, he would truly be missing out on the great opportunity. He had spent so many years and effort, but never found out who had the Growing Yin Sword. If the great families wanted to hide such an object, no outsiders would be able to find out.

If I have the Growing Yin Sword, my strength would definitely increase by another level.

He lowered his head and went through the information again carefully, word by word, sentence by sentence. Slowly, his

eyebrows flattened out, he saw a glimmer of hope. On the information, it was written that Ghost Face Mask had clashed head on with the Death God's arm and scythe and was injured and bled.

From this sentence, he could gauge Ghost Face Mask's strength. He was stronger than He Xin, but the gap was very miniscule. If not for the spectators around trying to attack He Xin at the last moment, He Xin would not need to fight head on, and the winner and loser might have been very different.

More importantly was the fact that Ghost Face Mask was injured!

Yin Wu Feng immediately sensed it, opportunity!

The injury from such an attack would definitely not be easy to recover from, if I can rush for it, and take the chance where Ghost Face Mask is still recuperating, my chances of succeeding is very big.

Yin Wu Feng was not dumb either, he quickly raised his own request, to ensure a higher chance of victory, he required the customer to pass him the Growing Yin Sword for him to use. The customer quickly agreed to his terms, but at the same time, left a mark on the sword. If Yin Wu Feng dared to keep the treasure and escape without doing his task, he would be chased to the ends of the world to be killed.

Yin Wu Feng did not have that thought.

He knew how powerful the great families were. The great families had sought for him because it was not convenient for them to make a move, and not that they were not strong enough.

With the Growing Yin Sword, Yin Wu Feng's self confidence erupted.

With the Growing Yin Sword in hand, he also had the confidence of winning He Xin.

\*\*\*\*\*

East Immortal City.

Zhong Li Bai's departure with the East Immortal Unit made Tang Tian astonished, but it was merely limited to that. Everyone had their own way of fighting, like for Tang Tian, he was not someone proficient in fighting with armies, Zhong Li Bai himself was not proficient in fighting alone. Following Tang Tian would not allow him to show off his true strength.

The Null Division members that were rescued were ordered back to Purple Cuckoo City to receive the training and reorganization from Nie Qiu. These members were not confused by it, they knew for themselves that they were not strong enough to protect the master, and by following him, they would only be burdens.

Tang Tian felt that his surrounding had become much more quiet, and was happy about it. He did not leave East Immortal City

immediately, as he had benefited from the fight with He Xin, he needed time to digest, and there was the other thing.

Tang Tian played with the black thumb ring and asked Ye Xu: “What is this?”

When He Xin died, he became ashes, and only left one thing behind, which was the black thumb ring. The black thumb ring made Tang Tian think about Lu Tian Wen’s Thunder Wind Spear, but they were not the same.

Xu Ye stared at the black thumb ring for half a day, and suddenly his face took a huge change, he stammered: “Death.....Death Thumb Ring!”

“Death Thumb Ring?” Tang Tian was surprised, the black thumb ring was extremely simple, it looked ordinary, and he could not even feel any death aura from it.

Xu Ye muttered to himself: “No wonder! No wonder He Xin was able to summon the Death God Scythe! No wonder!”

Seeing Xu Ye talking to himself, Tang Tian knew that the toy was far from ordinary.

After a moment, Xu Ye regained himself, but his tone was filled with excitement: “Master might not know, but the Death Thumb Ring is a treasure ranked nine in all of the treasures in Sin Domain! It is a treasure related to Death! I never thought that it would be in

He Xin's hands!"

"It's that powerful?" Tang Tian was shocked.

"Yes it is!" Xu Ye's expression was one of excitement: "In the Sin Domain, there was ever only one Death Law martialartist that reached the apex, and because of that, he was hailed as the Forefather of Abyss! He gainedenlightenment on hell, and from the depths of the fires of hell, he found a nameless black rock that could not beburnt. He used 20 years to sculpt the black rock into a thumb ring, and imprinted his understanding on Death Lawsinto it, and it is this Death Thumb Ring!"

Tang Tian was shocked: "So powerful!"

"Yes, it is in the top ten treasures of the Sin Domain!" Xu Ye was extremely excited.

The black thumb ring was passed to him.

"For you, you train in the Life and Death Laws, see if it can help you control the Death Aura in your body." Tang Tiansaid casually.

Xu Ye was stunned.

For, for me.....

"Try it." Tang Tian saw Xu Ye being stunned, then casually

threw the black thumb ring into the air towards Xu Ye, and said: “I want to go and train.”

He turned, leaving Xu Ye who was dumbstruck like a chicken standing stationary on the spot like a statue.

This is the Death Thumb Ring.....

Xu Ye's mind was blank.

Tang Tian who returned to his room had submerged himself into training.

The sea of Origin Force in his body was a restless ocean.

Tang Tian's question to it now was how to tame it down. Although Tang Tian was feeling anxious about it, but at the same time, he was clear that only with power and victories could he save everyone. He suppressed the anxiousness in his heart and worked hard to calm down, and decided to tackle the problem.

Tang Tian had his suspicions, if the Demon Six Seals was truly created by Ancestor Li, then why was it completely different from the law system in Sin Domain? But after thinking about it, the Demon Six Seals was enlightened from the Heavy Demonic Execution, and the Heavy Demonic Execution was truly an inheritance of Sin Domain.

Could it be that the Demon is a type of law?



Tang Tian's heart jumped, he thought that his guess was rather interesting. When other people trained in laws, they started from Law Threads, then to Law Surface, and borrowed the power projected by the Law Surface to form a Law Space.

Wait a minute, projection of power....

Tang Tian's heart jumped, the power he gained from the Demon, wasn't that the Six Armed Demon projecting power?

That's right!

If the Six Armed Demon was treated as the Law Surface, then that would be possible. But, the Six Armed Demon was too different from other people's Law Surfaces, and was more similar to the Death God summoned by He Xin.

Tang Tian's gaze suddenly landed on the blue flames and sound mist on the Six Armed Demon's hands.

The Six Armed Demon had six arms, and three of them already had things on them, the raging red flames of the Angry Fist Seal, the blue flames of the Grasping Flower Seal, and the sound mist of the Weeping Sword Seal.

Tang Tian stared at the blue flames and the sound mist, the flames of the Angry Fist Seal released a red light that refined his body to another level, and because of that, the Origin Force in his

body had increased to a large size and surged restlessly, that was what was bestowed by the red flames.

But the blue flames and sound mist, what are they for?

Tang Tian did not believe that the things on the hands would be useless. ~The Demon Six Seals, if they were truly refinement inheritance, then would the Blue Flames and sound mist have the same use?

~If that's truly the case, then how do I form a connection with the blue flames?~

For example, by treating the Six Armed Demon as a Law Surface, if I required its projection of power, I require some sort of rites for it, what would it be?

Tang Tian's eyes lit up, Most probably, it would be forming seals!

He started to form the seals, his movements were extremely slow, and through the gradual process he experienced the changes, the changes of the Six Armed Demon, and the connection between him and the six arms.

Gradually, his seal formations started becoming faster and faster, faster and faster.

He looked as if he had gone berserk, continuously forming seals, releasing seals, forming seals again....

The Demon Six Seals were continuously produced in his hands, his ten fingers were moving like flowing water, strands after strands of faint mist kept on fluctuating between his ten fingers, suddenly swirling, suddenly flattening out.

Not long later, Tang Tian's body shook, his eyes lit up with bright light aura, his right palm had just formed the Grasping Flower Seal, and a weak blue flame danced on his fingertips.

Tang Tian witnessed a sudden change in his vision.

Endless sea of blue light, its vastness and boundlessness, it was.....the Blue Sea!

Tang Tian was startled.

# Chapter 761 – Movements

---

The Blue Sea was endless and boundless.

Tang Tian felt like a fish swimming for a long time in the water without seeing its end. He could not tell whether it was an illusion, as the surroundings around him were extremely lifelike, the unique energy of the Blue Sea was extremely familiar to Tang Tian.

But what made him feel strange was that the repulsion force of the Blue Sea had disappeared, and this time Tang Tian truly felt as though he was swimming naturally in the water.

This is wrong, I have a Zero Energy Body, why will it be like this?

Not long later, Tang Tian placed his gaze back on the strands of blue flames on the fingertips of the Demon. The blue flames kept on jumping, causing the repulsion of the Blue Sea on him to disappear.

Since he entered the Blue Sea, Tang Tian could feel the excitement of the blue flames. Faintly inside it, there seemed to be something calling out for it, Tang Tian started to head towards the direction completely through his feelings. Tang Tian did not know what the blue flames were, but he was sure that even if it did not come from the Blue Sea, it would have had some sort of relationship with it.

On the way, Tang Tian kept on thinking of how to break the illusion world if it was truly one.

He thought for a long time and tried out many methods, but did not obtain much information.

But Tang Tian continued swimming forward, he was never one to resign himself to fate. Although he did not know what was calling out to him, but it was better than staying in place.

After swimming for an unknown period of time, he felt that the flow of time inside the Blue Sea was also strange. But Tang Tian knew for sure that he swam for a long time, because he started to feel tired. It was not a physical fatigue, but a mental fatigue. He could not see his target, an end that he did not know where it was. He did not know how to leave and did not know if what he was doing was meaningful at all.

Su

Suddenly, a group of blue figures could be faintly seen far away, Tang Tian's mind was roused, he had not seen any living thing for a long time, the terrifying loneliness was a mental torture to any person. The blue figures seemed to have noticed Tang Tian as well, and were speeding towards him.

When they got closer, Tang Tian could see clearly what sort of creatures they were.

It was a pack of blue jellyfish, with a total of 70-80 of them, they dragged their long tentacles along with them, their transparent bodies seemed to make them one with the Blue Sea. The most eye

catching thing about them was that inside their transparent body were strands of blue flames, that were jumping in rhythm.

They look similar to the blue flames of the Grasping Flower Seals, Tang Tian thought.

Tang Tian did not realise that ever since the jellyfishes had appeared, the blue flames in his body had stopped jumping, and became extremely reserved.

But at the moment, Tang Tian could not care about it, because the jellyfishes were rushing to him. The flames inside the jellyfishes jumped very quickly, increasing the speed of the jellyfishes, like a group of blue spirits, they quickly surrounded him. The blue flames extended out along their long tentacles, and in the blink of the eye, all the jellyfish's tentacles were covered with a layer of blue flames.

Their imposing look made Tang Tian believe that they were not around him to play.

The first to make the move has the advantage!

Tang Tian who became alert took the chance when the Jellyfishes were not gathered to strike out, with a heavy slash. The surging power flowed through Tang Tian's palm and slashed out, forming a transparent blade in the water towards the jellyfishes.

The transparent water blade swept past the group of jellyfishes

and accurately struck one of the jellyfish, instantly splitting it into two.

The water ripple formed by the water blade instantly caused the jellyfishes to scatter.

Seeing that they were not difficult to handle, Tang Tian instantly relaxed. The Blue Sea that he was currently in had a much denser energy concentration than the previous time, and he had never seen the blue jellyfishes before. Everything was very strange, causing Tang Tian to be very cautious.

But quickly, his pupils constricted again.

The surviving jellyfish' bodies contracted back like springs, and then shot out suddenly, in the moment of the chaos, their speed reached an extreme, forming rays of strange silhouettes that shot towards Tang Tian.

So fast!

In that moment, a blue figure appeared right in front of Tang Tian, where he was only able to raise his arm to block it.

Pa!

The flash struck Tang Tian's arm.

Tang Tian groaned, he could feel that the power was not huge, but it was strangely painful, seemingly causing the blood in his body to halt. A strand of blue flames bore its way into Tang Tian's body, causing his face to change, he realised that the strand of blue flames was actually swimming towards his heart.

It moved extremely quickly, it was like an agile fish, and wherever it passed through, Tang Tian would feel a moment of numbness.

It was about to bore its way into Tang Tian's heart, when suddenly the blue flames in Tang Tian's heart appeared.

The blue flames that infiltrated Tang Tian's body was shocked, it suddenly stopped, somehow sensing the blue flames inside Tang Tian's heart. With the two blue flames facing each other, he could tell the difference, the blue flames that infiltrated his body was even more dense and had more killing intent. But the blue flames that surfaced from his heart was much dimmer in color, while its aura was weaker.

The blue flames that infiltrated no longer hesitated and pounced towards his heart, as though it had sensed some delicious food.

Like a blue arrow, it shot into Tang Tian's heart.

Tang Tian's body jolted, right at that moment, the demon in him formed the Grasping Flower Seal. Zzzzi, the blue flames' evil behavior that infiltrated his body was suddenly grasped by the Demon. The aggressive flames that rushed in looked like it was



being pulled out by its weakness and tamed down, and in the blink of the eye, it was absorbed cleanly by the blue flames surrounding his heart.

Tang Tian was stunned by what happened, and did not even make a reaction.

Pa pa pa.

The blue jellyfish' tentacles all started to slap him, the blue flames all surged into Tang Tian's body, and like a school of crazy fishes, they all started swimming towards Tang Tian's heart.

The blue flames that covered his heart emitted a charm that they could not resist.

Chi chi chi!

The blue flames entered Tang Tian's heart like rain.

The evil tendencies hidden in the blue flames were all transformed by the Grasping Flower Seal, and all of the external blue flames became food for the blue flames in him.

Tang Tian's body continued to spasm, wave after wave of blue flames took the chance to bore its way into Tang Tian's body, towards his heart.

Tang Tian watched on as a chill flitted past his heart, the strand of blue flames in his body was like a sneaky hunter, feigning itself as a delicious prey, it quietly set its trap. When the final strand of blue flame was devoured, the blueflames that had clinged onto Tang Tian's heart, became like a beast that had been satiated and lazily floated upwards, back to the Grasping Flower Seal.

At the moment, its size had already swelled up multiple times, and its color was much deeper than what it was previously.

Everything happened very quickly, to the point that Tang Tian could not even react. When he blinked his eyes, he realized that the scene before him was completely different, stunning him. All around him were floating corpses of the jellyfishes, not one of them had survived.

The transparent jellyfishes had no more blue flames in them.

The corpses of the jellyfishes looked frozen solid, and not long later, they completely dissolved into the Blue Sea, and there was no longer traces of battle.

Tang Tian felt an intimate relation between himself and the Blue Sea, and his speed of swimming became slightly faster.

The extremely short battle had completely spooked Tang Tian, and even left some lingering fear. The blue strand of flames had actually used his own heart to set a trap, it was truly devious and cunning, and if he weren't careful....

Tang Tian shivered, what made him feel helpless was that he could only watch it happen.

What the hell is this blue flame?

Tang Tian had a faint unease in his mind, he had a feeling that the blue flames were not simple. He had previously suspected that him being pulled into the Blue Sea was something done by the blue flames. But now he was sure that it was the blue flames that did it.

Furthermore, he realised that the blue flames seemed to have its own consciousness.

What made him feel inconceivable was that he had met many types of flames before, but he had never seen flames that had its own thoughts, what kind of flame would have its own mind?

Alright, regardless of if it's a bewitching spirit or not, I am already here, let me see what is truly going on.

Tang Tian threw out all of his suspicions and continued heading forward. The strand of blue flames became quiet and danced around on the Demon's Grasping Flower Seal.

Tang Tian met a few waves of blue jellyfishes, which were also devoured by the strand of flames.

The blue jellyfishes did not have high intellect, they only had the most basic function, which was to attack anything that got near

them with the blue flames.

With the blue flames and the Grasping Flower Seals, he handled the blue jellyfishes with ease, to the point that whenever Tang Tian saw any blue jellyfishes, he would swim towards them on his own accord. Whenever the blue jellyfishes whipped him, the blue flames in him would become stronger, to the point that it could instantly devour 100 of the blue jellyfishes.

The blue flames had swelled to the size of a fist, and its color was extremely dense.

Tang Tian had no idea on what to do with the blue flames absorbing the jellyfishes, but the continuous expulsion of the evil tendencies within the blue jellyfishes from the Grasping Flower Seal of the Demon had benefited Tang Tian. Out of the Demon Six Seals, Tang Tian first gained enlightenment on the Angry Fist Seal's true essence, which proved that he was truly more proficient in battles. Although the Angry Fist Seal could not be directly used for battle, but it resembled the thriving high spirits and unyielding emotions birthed from battle, which enabled him to gain enlightenment on it.

The Grasping Flower Seal was instead very gentle and tranquil, and did not coincide much with Tang Tian's lively character, thus he always had a problem finding the knack to doing it.

But nothing could fight against quantity, for the next few days, the blue flames had absorbed more than a thousand blue jellyfishes. Tang Tian watched how the Grasping Flower Seal removed the evil thoughts from the blue flames, and after watching it for a thousand

of times, Tang Tian gradually gained some enlightenment.

The expression on his face was extremely gentle.

Along the way, he never gave up practising the Grasping Flower Seal. He was once familiar with it, but through the road of training it continuously, it became extremely fluent to him. His speed of forming the seals was as quick as lightning, as though it was an instinct.

Along the way, his hands continued to form seals without him knowing.

Grasping Flower Seal, he only formed the Grasping Flower Seal, before he mastered it, he did not have any intention of training any other seals. He knew he was not intelligent, and could only use simple methods, like how he trained the Fire Scythe Ghost Claw.

Only when meeting the blue jellyfishes would Tang Tian stop forming seals and concentrate wholly on the Demon's every movement of activating the Grasping Flower Seal. He watched and practised, watched and practised without feeling annoyed, without finding it vexing.

A few hundred thousand times? Who cares, but I do know I have done it a lot.

He was completely immersed in the tranquil state, his body swam forward agilely like a fish, and continued forming the

Grasping Flower Seal.

Unknowingly, his expression became gentler and gentler, a trace of a smile appeared on his mouth.

Smiling while Grasping Flowers.

A unique thought entered his senses.

Right at that moment, the blue flames dancing on the Demon's Grasping Flower Seal suddenly turned sluggish.

Tang Tian's eyes suddenly opened up, his pupils dyed blue.

# Chapter 762 – Strange Fish

---

A strange consciousness barged into Tang Tian's mind.

Cowardice, unease, fear, this strand of consciousness transmitted into Tang Tian's dazed state of mind. It was unthinkable, how a strand of flame would actually personify a person's state of mind, it was truly mystical.

The Blue Flame's consciousness had already done an initial probing, and seemed to understand that Tang Tian did not have any bad thoughts on it, and thus immediately became intimate with him.

Tang Tian's thoughts were void of evil, and also felt that it was fun to play with, as the Blue Flames reminded him of Ya Ya. I wonder how Ya Ya is doing now? If Ya Ya's here, they will become good buddies.

Very quickly, the blue flames and Tang Tian became very familiar with each other, and was no longer strangers. The Blue Flames did not have very high intellect, and could only grasp the simplest of emotions, like happiness or unhappiness.

Tang Tian named it Xiao Lan (Little Blue).

After having Xiao Lan, his journey was no longer as boring. Although Xiao Lan only had the simplest of emotions, but it made Tang Tian felt as if he had a companion.

Upon seeing Xiao Lan as his own friend, Tang Tian became much more careful. Xiao Lan would become extremely joyous when feeding on other blue flames, like a puppy biting on bone, and Tang Tian suspected that if Xiao Lan had a tail, it would definitely be wagging with all of its might.

Tang Tian guessed that Xiao Lan was a lower grade flame than the blue jellyfish flames, as it was afraid of the blue jellyfishes. When the blue flames of the jellyfishes did not go through the Grasping Flower Seal of the Demon and continued to have its evil tendencies, Xiao Lan would immediately go into hiding.

The Demon was lofty and majestic, giving off a very solemn bearing that demanded respect.

Every day, Tang Tian would observe the Demon in him, which would make him feel slightly shock, as his innerself would become extremely calm and gentle.

After knowing Xiao Lan, Tang Tian's Grasping Flower Seal improved quickly, which made him extremely surprised. He realized that his own Grasping Flower Seals could form a connection with the Demon's Grasping Flower Seals through Xiao Lan.

The Angry Fist Seal's light aura was red, which tempered his power of the physique.

The Grasping Flower Seal had no light aura, and was tempered



with his state of mind.

Tang Tian felt that his state of mind had become more and more pure and sparkling like glass. This feeling made Tang Tian feel extremely weird, a state of mind was an intangible thing, how could it become like glass? For me to have this weird sensation, oh, it must be Xiao Lan that pulled down my intelligence.

Tang Tian's swimming speed was extremely fast, and he astutely realized that the blue jellyfish around had become lesser and lesser, as he had not met any of them for a long time.

Not only did Tang Tian not relax, but he became even more cautious.

He travelled from the south to north, and had passed through many strange places and the different inhabitants that stayed in each of them. But along the way, he had only met the blue jellyfish, and never met any other living beings. The blue jellyfish had very strong and violent tendencies, and throughout the journey, Tang Tian had killed off countless of them, no, it was Xiao Lan that had devoured countless of them.

But after travelling for a long time, he had not met any blue jellyfish, leading Tang Tian to guess that he had barged into the territory of a different organism.

The future will always be dangerous.

Right at that moment, Tang Tian suddenly sensed a dangerous aura approaching, from the corner of his eye he gla

nced a vague blue figure, which was actually less than 10m away from him, causing all the hairs on his body to stand immediately!

He did not even sensed it approaching!

The blue vague figure could not be seen if one did not carefully look out for it. Even when Tang Tian looked at it earnestly, he could only see the region of blue sea becoming slightly darker.

Without thinking, Tang Tian unleashed a Heavy Demonic Execution out.

He did not hold back at all.

His hand blade slashed out a transparent water blade which ferociously cut into the dark figure.

Jiiii!

A sharp shriek sound almost broke Tang Tian's ear drums, and ripples started releasing in the water around the dark figure. Tang Tian was caught off guard, and met it head on, the sound drilled into Tang Tian's mind, like awls drilling in.

Only after two to three seconds did Tang Tian regain his senses,

his mind filled with shock.

The dark figure had revealed its true appearance, it was a fish half the size of a man. The lower fish part of the mermaid resembled blue gemstones, and on its back were a row of spikes, the scales continuously releasing blue mist. All of this blue mist surrounded its body, flowing around the surface and never dispersed. Tentacles extended out of the flat fish head, where pulsating blue flames danced on them.

But Tang Tian's Heavy Demonic Execution was extremely powerful, and with their close proximity, the weird fish was not able to dodge. Caught head on, its body revealed a deep cut wound, where blue mist kept on leaking out.

The weird fish opened its fish mouth, revealing two rows of sharp teeth, but the most scary thing was its tongue, which was like a tuning fork that kept on trembling.

Xiao Lan was terrified, and did not dare to move.

Tang Tian had no time to think, as the weird fish's tuning fork tongue trembled and released a circular and invisible ripple that move towards him.

Tang Tian was previously spooked by the sharp shriek immediately moved out of the way like a fish. The circle ripple brushed past his body, which allowed him to take the opportunity to unleash a Devil, I, execution upwards.

The slash was released extremely close to the circular ripple.

The slash was silent, and looked to be extremely weak, but when it got near the weird fish, its might suddenly expanded, like a mountain toppling the sea.

The weird fish panicked and wanted to escape, but it was too late, Devil, I, Execution's slash ferociously cut its tail.

Chi!

Countless scales scattered out as blue mist spewed out. Its tail was completely cut off, and only a small piece of meat was left connected to it, which made it look pathetic.

The weird fish seemed to know that it had difficulty escaping, and suddenly, all the scales on its body trembled.

Ji!

A dense ripple was released with the weird fish at the center, scattering outwards.

Tang Tian did not expect for the weird beast to know such a technique, it encompassed all angles, causing Tang Tian to have no way to hide, and could only face it head on. Subconsciously, Tang Tian formed the Grasping Flower Seal.

He had control over his Grasping Flower Seal, and with the completion of the seals, his state of mind suddenly became tranquil and calm, coincidentally where the strange ripple struck.

Tang Tian's body felt slightly numb, he was pushed back a few inches, and the sharp scream continued relentlessly, but it was not as painful as before.

After the weird fish's attack, it's vitality was greatly injured, and was at its last breath.

So the Grasping Flower Seal could be used like that!

Tang Tian was immediately joyous, the Demon Six Seals was extremely profound, and after every new phase, he would experience something new. With a thought, he gained some understanding. The weird beast's attack did not rely on just sound, but contained a mental attack.

The Grasping Flower Seal could dispel mental attacks, that was Tang Tian's new finding.

Seeing the weird beast at its dying breath, Tang Tian did not go close, but sent another heavy slash.

The beast no longer had the strength to escape, its body was split into two, and the blue mist that originally congealed that originally did not dissipate, started dissipating into the surroundings.

Xiao Lan that was laying low jumped out right at this moment and prompted Tang Tian. Tang Tian saw the strand of blue flames on the tentacles of the fish head, and immediately understood its intent, and swam over.

Tang Tian extended his hand out and touched the blue flames, and Xiao Lan immediately came out from Tang Tian's fingertip.

When the two flames were next to each other, Tang Tian could tell the difference. The strange fish's blue flames was much denser than Xiao Lan, and had even more strength in jumping. When the two flames collided, the fish's blue flames was slowly devoured by Xiao Lan.

The entire meal took a full 10 minutes, causing Tang Tian to be puzzled. Xiao Lan was able to eat up the blue jellyfish blue flames without any effort. But Xiao Lan needed to slowly nibble at the weird fish's blue flames.

Xiao Lan became much smaller after finishing the blue flames, and once again became the size of a candle light, but it was much more congealed. Every time it jumped, it would emit a faint aura.

Xiao Lan became extremely languid, as though it was falling asleep.

Seeing that, Tang Tian did not disturb it. He could tell that Xiao Lan was evolving after devouring the flames. He was extremely curious at Xiao Lan's final state.

His eyes was suddenly attracted to something, which was the spikes on the weird fish's back.

The corpse of the strange fish dissolved into the blue sea like the blue jellyfish, but only the few bones did not. Tang Tian floated over and took them in his hands.

There were a total of six bones, the longest being a meter long while the shortest was half a meter, they were all extremely straight and sharp, resembling blue crystals. Tang Tian tested it for a while, they were extremely durable that he could not break them.

Good stuff!

Tang Tian immediately tied them up together, the longest bone resembled a sword, and in his hand, it felt extremely harmonious.

With a flick of his wrist, the fish bone arched across, unleashing Blade Devil Transformation!

Sssi!

The extremely fine water blade shot out suddenly, only after sweeping through over 150m did it disappear.

Tang Tian's eyes lit up, compared to his own hand blade, the

water blade formed was even sharper and could fly even further.

Tang Tian tested it out with other moves, and immediately fell for the fish bone. The imposing and tyrannical Heavy Demonic Execution, coupled with the fish bone, had formed a totally different taste, something sinister and sharp. Every slash was silent, the power unleashed was even more congealed without a trace of leakage, completely no repercussions from the attack, with only the sharp invisible water line visible.

And being concealed was the strongest point of Devil, I, execution, after being slashed out, there was not even a visible line, there were no trace of the slash.

Tang Tian who had obtained the new toy was eager to test it out on a few strange fishes.

Xiao Lan seemed to have devoured too much, and only recovered after a long time. This sense of time was Tang Tian's sensation of time. He realised that the time inside the water was strange, and he had difficulty grasping the speed of the flow. This was hard to imagine, he was a powerful martial artist, and had a grasp and control over time to a powerful extent.

Tang Tian suspected that time was being distorted.

Out of the time, spatial, life and death laws, the three great laws, the time laws were the most terrifying. If one was stuck in a chaotic flow of time, Tang Tian was afraid that he would not be able to get out.



A pity, being uneasy did not do anything.

Tang Tian wanted to find the crux of the problem, he wanted to see what was messing with him!

And, he had a sense, that thing was his way back.

Tang Tian could clearly feel Xiao Lan becoming stronger and stronger, it had even more emotions, and was able to communicate better with Tang Tian.

This exchange of consciousness was a ease in the park for Tang Tian, as Xiao Lan's intellect increased, it became even more fluent.

On one side, it said that the weird fish tastes extremely exquisite, and begged Tang Tian to find another.

On the other hand, the young man patted his own chest and promised it to have how many it wanted, under his hands, they would capture all the fishes.

Then, the young man accidentally looked ahead, and the hand that was patting his own shoulder froze.

Ahead, a school of the weird fishes were swimming fiercely over.

# Chapter 763

---

Tang Tian knew in his heart that showing off was not a good habit.

His mind became tense, the fish bone in his hand unleashed slashes at an astonishing frequency. Ray after ray of water blades shot out in all directions. There were endless amounts of the weird fish being sliced into two, the blue mist from their body leaked out and disrupted his vision.

His left hand was continuously forming the Grasping Flower Seal nonstop.

Xiao Lan knew that the situation was dire, and did not lay low this time, continuously helping Tang Tian to form a connection with the Demon, allowing Tang Tian's Grasping Flower Seal to become stronger.

His state of mind was like glass, unaffected and untainted by even one speck of dust.

The scene around him was reflected in his glass like mental state extremely clear, which was extremely unfamiliar to Tang Tian. He had always thrown himself into the battle, the surging and boiling fighting intent was the way he always fought. But now his mental state and emotions pulled him to a view of a spectator, although his efficiency of battle had increased greatly, but it was something he was not used to.

Pa, the fish bone in his hand shattered, despite being extremely sturdy, the continuous stress of the heavy Demonic Execution's powerful strike had made it brittle and it ultimately shattered.

This was the sixth fish bone Tang Tian had used, lucky for him, there were an endless supply of fish bones around him to be used.

Tang Tian's body flickered and arrived at the corpse of a fish, drawing out another fish bone, he threw himself back into battle.

The most troublesome part of the weird fish was its ability to conceal itself inside the blue mist, even with Tang Tian's Grasping Flower Seal dispelling the mental attacks, he still suffered under them.

Fortunately, Tang Tian's physique was outstanding, and the damage done purely from the sound waves were small. Relying on his thick and strong skin, Tang Tian started to take things with brute force, rushing in head on. This unreasonable head on clash actually increased Tang Tian's fatality. The weird fish suffered more wounds at a faster rate, and in half an hour, the entire place was littered with fish corpses.

Tang Tian gasped for breath, the continuous killing had consumed a lot of his physical strength.

He did not feel it during battle, but upon finishing, the fatigue would set in. The resistance inside the Blue Sea was much higher than air, and thus the consumption of his strength increased. Bruises formed all over his body, and although the sound waves of

the weird fish were unable to deal real harm to Tang Tian, it still left many contusions on him.

There was lingering fear in Tang Tian's heart, the sound waves were rather powerful, the vibration frequency was so high that it was something he could not achieve, but his body seemed to be refined to its best, and was able to survive through it. If it was another person facing such a high vibration frequency, their internal organs would have been injured. The harm brought from the vibration was always terrifying, but usually ending up to being shattered.

Furthermore, the sound waves had mental attacks in them.

Tang Tian who had the Grasping Flower Seal and his powerful body was sort of a natural enemy towards the weird fish.

All the lying corpses was a feast for Xiao Lan.

It cried out and pounced forward, with all of its might, it greedily absorbed all the blue flames on the weird fishes' tentacles. Its' absorption speed became faster and faster, and when the last blue flame was devoured, Xiao Lan's body was completely azure.

It flew into the Demon's Grasping Flower Seal and jumped about.

Tang Tian could clearly

feel the benefits Xiao Lan had obtained, its deep azure color was

extremely dense and reserved. Tang Tian regained some of his physical strength and heaved a sigh of relief, the corpses of the weird fish had dissolved into the Blue Sea, leaving the fish bones.

Tang Tian tied all of them up into a bundle.

All of the fish bones were extremely sharp and durable, making them natural weapons. Heavy Demonic Execution was not a technique that could be used by any weapons, and the fish bones were a rather good choice for the technique, other than its consumption being quite fast, it did not have other weaknesses.

The huge pile he had collected reached up to a 100, which he could use for a period of time.

Although using my hand to unleash the Demonic Heavy Execution is powerful and even more flexible, but its sharpness cannot be compared to using it with the fish bones.

Xiao Lan was extremely excited, no longer languid like how it was after eating, causing Tang Tian to be surprised. It's 'appetite' seemed to have increased, and seemed as though Xiao Lan had become stronger, but Tang Tian was still curious about Xiao Lan's final form.

Seemingly sensing Tang Tian's thoughts, Xiao Lan emitted an intimate emotion.

Tang Tian laughed, he dragged the pile of fish bones and

continued moving forward. The intense massacre had made him struggle free from his blank state of mind, I do not know what lies ahead, and I don't know what's awaiting me, but no matter what enemy or obstruction, I will personally destroy them.

Through the next few days, Tang Tian met more schools of weird fish, he repeated his head on attacks and wiped them out. The amount of fish bones he had gathered had already piled up to a small hill, and he had no choice but to wrap his clothes into bundles to tie the fish bones.

Xiao Lan did not let go of any of the blue flames, and Tang Tian felt that Xiao Lan was about to break through. Xiao Lan was extremely congealed, as though it was extremely viscous and liquid, jumping was not extremely slow for it.

Tang Tian also had great improvements, his Grasping Flower Seal had become extremely pure. Other people's mental state would be blurred, but his mental state was as clear and glossy like a crystal glass stage.

Tang Tian had a feeling that he was about to break through, and was just lacking in an opportunity.

He did not know what the opportunity was, and did not care about it as he continued swimming. He wanted to leave the sea as soon as possible, everyone was fighting, but yet he was stuck in this bizarre place.

He was unsure if it was because of killing too many weird fish,

but his body was emitting an aura that appeared and disappeared every once in awhile. Tang Tian knew his body very well, and he did not have such an aura in the past.

Xiao Lan seemed to be extremely fearful of the aura, and behaved obediently in front of Tang Tian.

At the last few times, that Tang Tian met a few weird fish, just as he was about to draw the fish bone, the weird fish escaped in fright. He watched dumbstruck, as it was the first time he had met the weird fish that ran away from him.

Could it be that I killed too many of them that I am infected with killing intent?

Tang Tian chuckled, he did not seem to care, for he didn't even know how many weird fish he had killed.

Following his senses, he rushed ahead.

The deep Blue Sea became brighter, making Tang Tian excited. In such a predicament, having any change was better than no change.

The further he swam, the brighter the the Blue Sea became.

Tang Tian's heart jumped, Could I be nearing the surface?

This guess made him extremely excited, he thought about Purple Cuckoo City, which was right beside the ocean, Am I returning to Purple Cuckoo City?

Tang Tian who was excited used even more strength and swam forward.

Although it was getting brighter and brighter, but it was further than he thought, making Tang Tian feel tired. When he finally saw the surface, he became joyous and gathered all of his strength, and got out of the water.

The gemstone blue like surface was extremely peaceful without any ripples, like an endless mirror extending out in all directions. The clouds in the sky seemed within reach, the white clouds were like soft cotton candy floating quietly.

Tang Tian was stunned, why was the scene in front of him so familiar?

After a while, he finally realized, it was the Indigo Mirror Ocean!

The Indigo Mirror Ocean of the Southern Cross Army!

The Southern Cross Army had four oceans.

The Ocean of Exile, an endless prison for sentenced prisoners.



The Indigo Mirror Ocean, a world between reality and illusion, a place to train.

The Prairie Fire Ocean, a place filled with energy, where millions of spirits were birthed.

The Ocean of Peace, where the dead went to, where spirits of war find eternal peace.

Tang Tian sat down on the mirror like water surface, and looked at the endless Indigo Mirror Ocean in a daze.

Why am I in the Indigo Mirror Ocean?

Indigo Mirror Ocean, it's part of the blue sea?

Suddenly, Tang Tian thought about the time where he trained the Thousand Cleave Demonic Hand inside the Indigo Mirror Ocean, and had a few doubts in which he gained enlightenment from. When he was inside the Blue Sea, he felt as if the time was flowing extremely strangely, and was unable to confirm how it flowed.

A world between reality and illusions.

No wonder!

I am trapped in an even bigger illusion!

The first reaction of Tang Tian was being relaxed. What he was most worried was being plunged into the real Blue Sea. Everyone was waiting for him to save them, but he was pulled into a completely different place, and thinking about them made him anxious.

If this is an illusion, I just have to break it and I can return to reality.

Tang Tian roused himself up, the most worrying question had been solved, all the grey clouds in his mind disappeared, and the young man's battle intent soared.

After resting for a short while, he recovered his physical strength, and allowed Xiao Lan to sense the direction again, and moved.

The mirror like water surface made it look as though Tang Tian was skiing on ice, pulling onto the pile of fishbones that was even taller than him, his speed much faster than how he was swimming inside the blue sea. He was like a bird finding its nest, not knowing what fatigue was.

The scenery of the indigo mirror did not change, and after moving for a long time, Tang Tian had the wrong perception that the clouds in the sky looked to be of drawings.

Tang Tian suddenly stopped in his tracks, he took out a fish bone and stared ahead of him.

He sensed an aura that flickered in and out, Ambush!

The mirror like water surface was perfectly still, with nothing in or on it. If it was any other person, they would think that it was their own thinking, but Tang Tian always had confidence and trust in his intuition. His heaven defying fighting intuition was extremely shocking, adding Bing's training and the changes that Grasping Flower Seal was doing to his mental state, his fighting intuition had reached an astronomical level.

Time crawled by slowly, but there were no fluctuations anywhere around him.

Tang Tian remained in battle stance like a statue, not moving an inch. Tang Tian in battle mode was extremely patient.

The water surface ahead of him suddenly revealed some bubbles.

Blue figures started to slowly surface out from the water.

Tang Tian's eyes focused, blue dwarves!

No, they are not blue dwarves, these blue dwarves are made from blue gemstones, their bodies are extremely crystallized, their gaze has no life in them, no anger or emotions. Tang Tian's gaze landed at the heart area of the blue dwarves, there, blue flames jumped rhythmically, like a heart.

All of these bizarre gemstone blue dwarves held spears in their hands, not short pikes.

They were like an army, arranged neatly in formation, their spears erecting straight up, making them look like a forest.

What made Tang Tian draw a breath was that behind the troops, endless blue dwarves continued to appear.

The army of gemstone blue dwarves took a step forward.

Rumble rumble.

The Indigo Mirror Ocean trembled, even the clouds in the sky trembled.

Xiao Lan felt an unprecedented danger from ahead, as though something was calling out for it.

The gemstone blue dwarves ahead did not look like they were good to be provoked, as the numbers were extremely despairing.

You think you can stop me just like that?

Heeeee, Tang Tian revealed a disdainful smile, he pulled out a few fish bones from the pile behind him and stuck them to his waist.

Come then!

# Chapter 764 – No Need for Protection, Rest in Peace

---

Tang Tian fought to the point where his eyes were bloodshot, he did not even need to differentiate to who was around him, as everyone around him were enemies. He just needed to continue slaughtering them, pull on the fish bones, and slash with all his might.

When a fish bone shattered, he would draw out another and continue killing.

At this point, strategy and techniques no longer mattered. The tides of gemstone blue dwarves did not allow him to have time to think, and could only slash around instinctively.

Other than his instinct to kill, there was still one thought.

One thought to move ahead.

He danced with the fish bone like a machine, killed like a machine, slashing countless of blue dwarves to death.

Bang, the fish bone in his hand shattered once again, Tang Tian subconsciously moved his hand towards the pile of fish bones, but touched nothing.

He was startled for a moment, but regained a trace of clarity, the

pile of fish bones that was taller than him was completely used up.

Tang Tian who awoke to his senses realized that he was covered in injuries, like a bloodied man. His legs weighed like lead, his arms were too heavy to be lifted, his entire body was in pain, he swayed left and right, but he did not sit down. The surrounding gemstone blue dwarves, their indifferent and lifeless faces actually had a trace of fear, and they did not advance towards Tang Tian. Tang Tian turned his head back with difficulty, behind him, the corpses of blue dwarves behind him formed somewhat like a wheat field, spreading till the ends to how far he could see.

Heh.....

Tang Tian wanted to laugh, but he didn't even have the strength to move his mouth.

A familiar ripple came from above him, Tang Tian did not raise his head to look, but he knew it was Xiao Lan.

He could not see Xiao Lan, but if he could, he would definitely be surprised. Xiao Lan's body had become crystal blue, and released terrifying ripples. Each ripple was like a rock skipping on the water surface, revealing layers and layers of movements.

The gemstone blue dwarves burst into an uproar, the fear on their faces becoming denser.

Wherever the ripple reached, strands of blue flames would rise

out from the corpses of the gemstone blue dwarves.

Tang Tian was startled, he looked as far out as he could see, many of the blue flames slowly floated up like blue fireflies, in that endlessness, it was extremely beautiful.

The blue flames that were the size of thumbs were being summoned, and gradually floated towards Xiao Lan.

The scene before him was extremely magical, causing Tang Tian to momentarily forget about his own fatigue. The blue flames entered Xiao Lan's body, at which Xiao Lan blossomed out a dazzling blue light, causing the endless gemstone blue dwarves to retreat backwards as though they were extremely afraid of the blue light.

The blue light became increasingly bright, Tang Tian felt as though there was a blue sun right above his head, the dazzling blue light made him unable to open his eyes.

He closed his eyes, and immersed in the dazzling blue light.

His fatigued body started to heal, the blue light was not warm, but it made Tang Tian feel at ease.

Unknowingly, he fell into a dreamstate.

His dream was extremely weird, deep inside the Blue Sea, grew a gigantic tree, it had millions and millions of blue leaves, and every



leaf was the size of a hill. In the middle of every tree leaf were vortices, the vortices spewing out endless blue energy, and the blue energy flowed out like water. (TN: Inception)

After every period of time, the gigantic blue tree would release countless of seeds like a dandelion. All of these seeds would fo

llow the flow of the energy and flow into all corners of the Blue Sea. But very quickly, these seeds would be eaten up by the countless living beings in the Blue Sea like snacks.

They emitted an extremely sweet aura, and were incapable of escaping the countless and numerous living beings.

Finally, there was one seed that met a middle aged man in the Blue Sea. The middle aged man found it unique, and transformed it into a unique blue aura. After the middle aged man died, he handed it over to his son. His son chanced upon a lady who had fainted, and Tang Tian immediately recognized the lady, she was Gu Xue.

The blue aura was then embedded into Gu Xue's body.

Tang Tian then realized that the seed was Xiao Lan.

This seed had absorbed a great amount of blue flames, and like a seed, it started to germinate inside the dazzling blue light, and in the blink of the eye it grew into a small tree. The blue tree grew out a flower bud, which kept on growing, until the last trace of blue

light disappeared, when the flower bud blossomed.

Tang Tian then woke up, and realized that unknowingly, his hands had actually formed the Grasping Flower Seal, and inside the seal, there was actually a blue flower.

The blue flower was extremely beautiful, as though it had just been plucked, it was gentle and brimming with life.

This is..... Xiao Lan!

Tang Tian was immediately stunned, That dream.....

He opened his eyes wide, and realized that the gemstone blue dwarves that were all around him had disappeared without a trace.

Suddenly, the flower in his palm floated up and flew towards a certain direction.

Tang Tian sensed something, and immediately gave chase.

The Blue Flower flew in an extremely straight line, obviously it was leading the way, and Tang Tian chased after it.

Tang Tian tried to communicate with the flower on the way, but ended up failing. If not for the fact that the Blue Flower was formed from Xiao Lan, he would definitely thought that it was some bewitching thing. It truly was very bewitching, and Tang

Tian never encountered any other beings on the journey. What Tang Tian felt was the most bewitching was that he had actually mastered the Grasping Flower Seal, his glass like mental state could not be broken, but inside the transparent crystal mental state, why was there a tree there?

His mental state actually had a small tree, and if this was not bewitching, Tang Tian did not know what was bewitching anymore.

If not for the fact that the small tree was exactly the same one as he saw in his dream, if not for his mentality being strong enough, he would have gone crazy. He tried many methods, but was unable to even shake the small tree in his mental state in the slightest.

After trying it out a couple of times, he did not know what to do with it, and thus no longer cared about it.

The Six Armed Demon in him did not have any reaction to the small tree that was beside it. But the Blue Tree would occasionally run up the Demon's Palm with the Grasping Flower Seal. The Demon also changed slightly, the hands with the Angry Fist Seal and the Grasping Flower Seal had congealed further.

The other four arms were still blurred.

Tang Tian could see that the Demon had become much stronger, which was good for him.

But what made Tang Tian feel depressed was his previous interactions with Xiao Lan, although it was vague, but at least there was interaction. But after becoming a flower, the connection was gone.

Without anyone to talk to inside the silent Indigo Mirror Ocean, it was an extremely painful and lonely thing to do.

Tang Tian focused all of his mind on training, and leaving on a bit of his mind to follow the Blue Flower.

Out of the Demon Six Seals, he had completed two, and left with four.

Tang Tian quickly experienced the benefits of his glasslike mental state. Previously after flying for a long period of time, although his body could endure it, but his state of mind would feel tired. But currently, he had flown for a long time, yet his mental state did not have any sense of fatigue.

Other than that, all the fluctuations around him were clearly sensed and reflected in his mental state. He immediately experienced it, in the past, he had to observe the seals of the Six Armed Demon countless of times, but this time, just with one observation, he had gained new knowledge from it. Many of the fine details that he had never grasped before were clearly reflected in his mind.

Although it could not instantly let him master the four remaining seals, but it still brought him great help, and he started to improve

quickly.

After flying for an unknown period of time, Xiao Lan suddenly stopped.

Tang Tian also stopped, and looked ahead.

There were two intercrossing lines, forming a large '十' that extended far out, causing the space to be split into four regions, and all the four different oceans were placed in each different region.

The endless raging Ocean of Exile, the smooth and mirror like Indigo Mirror Ocean, the fiery Prairie Fire Ocean, and the black and silent Ocean of Peace.

They were the four seas of the Southern Cross Army.

Tang Tian was startled.

He had never thought that the four oceans would be formed out like that. The invisible barrier had separated the four oceans, it was definitely not natural but man made!

Could Uncle BIng and them be so powerful?!

Tang Tian tilted his head and thought, it was impossible. The Southern Cross Army was a mechanical army, they were proficient

in mechanical techniques and warfare. Tang Tian could not imagine what kind of person would be able to perform such miracles!

That's right, Tang Tian felt that it was something that surpassed the limits of humans.

Suddenly, Xiao Lan flew up, startling Tang Tian. It flew towards the Ocean of Peace.

Ocean of Peace.....

Tang Tian hesitated for a moment, he gritted his teeth and followed Xiao Lan and stepped across the boundary. What surprised him was he did not feel any resistance when doing so, the lines separating the four worlds did not have any resistance, merely separating the oceans and not disturbing any of them. Tang Tian could not help but smile in marvel.

Upon stepping into Ocean of Peace, The scenery around Tang Tian changed.

The black Ocean of Peace was not as dead quiet as what Tang Tian thought, the black sea water was extremely warm, and was a place fit for birthing spirits.

Upon entering the Ocean of Peace, Xiao Lan quietly went into Tang Tian's body.

What's the meaning of this?

Tang Tian did not understand the situation, but he figured that Xiao Lan must definitely have a reason for doing so. He carefully inched his way forward, the dead silent Ocean of Peace had a faint warmth, thus it was not that unbearable. The black water had great buoyancy, and Tang Tian did not even need to exert force and could float on the water.

After walking for a long time, Tang Tian realized that something was floating in the distance.

His heart moved, with a few jumps, he picked it up.

It was a bronze plate, and on it was the logo of the Southern Cross Army, while on its back was a row of words.

“Southern Cross Army's Grade A Soldier Zhu Yong, died bravely in the battle of Mount Qing. No need for protection, rest in peace.”

Tang Tian stared at the bronze plate for a long time, an indescribable emotion surfaced in his heart.

To anyone who died, the living would pray for the dead to rest in peace and would seek blessing for themselves. But on this bronze plate, it wrote “No need for protection, rest in peace.”

He then seem to see Uncle Bing placing a bronze plate into the black waters, and pushed it gently and watched it float away, and

muttered to himself.

“We don’t need your protection, we will definitely work hard, you don’t need to have concerns for us, rest well, all these battle here and what not, leave it to us, the living.”

“We will definitely win.”

“Rest in peace.”



# Chapter 765 – How Can We Rest In Peace

---

Tang Tian heard a set of buzzing sounds, but before he could react, the bronze plate in his hand struggled free from his hand and flew into the sky.

Right at that moment, countless of bronze plates flew up from the Ocean of Peace, and flew into the sky.

All of the bronze plates flew into the sky and formed a silhouette spirit. In the blink of the eye, even more silhouette spirits flew out from every corner of the Ocean of Peace into the sky, it was extremely majestic.

“The army is in danger, requiring assistance!”

One of the spirits cried out.

Behind him, all the other heroic spirits shouted out: “Southern Cross Army, advance!”

Countless heroic spirits surged towards the sky like gushing tides. There was an invisible barrier in the sky that was like a steel wall, the heroic spirits collided into it but it did not move an inch, countless of the bronze plates shattered, and fell into the Ocean of Peace.

Pa pa pa.

Beneath Tang Tian, it looked like it was raining. He lowered his head to look, to see that the bronze plate pieces were falling down like rain.

But the heroic spirits continued to advance.

“The army is in danger, requiring assistance!”

“Southern Cross Army, advance!”

The furious roars resonated in the entire Ocean of Peace. Countless figures started to fervently smash onto the barrier, and even more bronze plates shattered. But even more spirits flew up and smashed into the sky.

“The army is in danger, requiring assistance!”

Another heroic spirit ordered, it roared and rushed forward like a furious lion.

What replied him was the same roar: “Southern Cross Army, advance!”

A large group of heroic spirits rushed into the barrier in the sky.

Their bones shattered and their bodies crumbled, and they fell into the ocean.

“The army is in danger, requiring assistance!”

A female spirit cried out, she was filled with determination as she collided into the barrier.

Countless figures gathered behind&

her: “Southern Cross Army, advance!”

“The army is in danger, requiring assistance!”

“Southern Cross Army, advance!”

.....

Tang Tian watched with shock and suspicion, watched as waves after waves of spirits collided into the barrier, he did not understand what they were trying to do.

After countless collisions, all of the heroic spirits crumbled and fell back into the ocean.

The Ocean of Peace regained its peacefulness.

The shattered bronze plates slowly converged, and formed bronze plates with cracks in them that floated above the waters.

One after another, the heroic spirits floated out of the bronze plates, their entire bodies were covered with cracks, as though they were porcelain dolls that were smashed but rebuilt, and when Tang Tian looked again, the spirits were endless once again.

Tang Tian recognized one of the heroic spirit that was covered with cracks. He was the first spirit to rush into the barrier. There were so many heroic spirits, but none of them could see Tang Tian.

All of the Heroic Spirits had their heads raised upwards.

“It’s been ten thousand years.” The heroic spirit’s voice sounded out from the Ocean of Peace: “A full ten thousand years, centuries after centuries, we still have not made it out. The war should have long been over, in this ten thousand years, there were no other new spirits, the army should be long dead, what we are doing now no longer has meaning.”

The heroic spirits became silent.

“But? What if? What if the army is still fighting? What if there are still people alive? What if they are awaiting our rise to prominence? To a group of already dead people, just this what if is enough!”

He suddenly roared: “Without knowing whether our army is alive or dead, how can we rest in peace!”

The reply he received was roars that could shatter mountains:

“FIGHT!”

He turned his body and looked upwards, towards the dome of sky, he opened up his arms, his cracked face that was filled with an indescribable determination: “One hundred years later, we can fight alongside our friends!”

The reply he obtained was other Heroic spirits floating beside him, and then roaring out so loud that it resonated above the black ocean: “Fight Fight Fight!”

“Southern Cross Army!”

The countless roars converged and formed a loud resonating roar above the Ocean of Peace.

“Advance!” “Advance!” “Advance!”

The sky full of Heroic Spirits flew upwards like moths attracted to flames, as though they were trying to reclaim their land, they frantically collided with the barrier in the sky.

Tang Tian was bawling with mucus drooping down his nose, something seemed to be stuck in his chest, and it was as though something was burning in him, making him feel extremely unhappy and proud.

But after the ten thousand years, in the Ocean of Peace that no one knew of, that everyone thought was peaceful and loving, there

would be an intense battle every century. All of the heroic spirits that had long passed away gave up resting in peace, struggling to fight every century, throwing everything they had into it.

Is this the Southern Cross Army? I'm the inheritor of the Southern Cross Army!

How can I sit still?

Even if it's an illusion, even if all this is fake, even if all of them are dead heroic spirits, even if they are doing the stupidest thing.

That faith, that conviction, that deep camaraderie, that bravery, that sacrifice, how can I not do anything?

Tang Tian did not even know that he was crying, or that he was roaring with them, he only had one thought, that was to fight!

He pulled out his fist, and the calm Ocean of Peace started to surge.

Only courageous people would put in their all despite all their failures. Only courageous people will continue persevering and believing and fight after death. Only courageous people would hold onto their hope despite life and death.

Only courageous people can win!

Tang Tian's eyes were filled with tears, countless light auras surged from every corner of the Ocean of Peace and gathered at his fist.

The dazzling light aura lit up at Tang Tian's fist, the black Ocean of Peace suddenly looked like it had a sun.

Countless Heroic Spirits looked at the rising sun, they transformed into black shadows and flew into the sun.

Can I break through the boundaries of this illusion?

Tang Tian did not know if he could, but he could feel the determination from the bones and spirits, their fervent fighting spirit, and the deep sense of hope and anticipation accumulated in them.

His eyes started tearing again.

Tang Tian's fist continued to pull back, the dazzling light aura in his right fist was so bright that his figure could no longer be seen.

The Ocean of Peace looked as though it was boiling, the waters started to churn, lightning and thunder flashing past.

All of this changes reflected in Tang Tian's glasslike mental state, the Demon's entire being erupted with light aura, the blue flower in the Grasping Flower Seal flew up and transformed into a bewitching and beautiful flower that illuminated the sky as it

danced and swirled. The Angry Fist Seal's raging flames burned with power as it became more fiery, and like a battle drum, everytime it jumped, it would release a blazing red light.

Tang Tian gave it his all, not holding anything back.

Godfist Light Tree, the last three pillars converged into one, transforming into one large thick pillar, it grew towards the ground, till it was three inches off the ground before stopping.

Just a bit more! Just a bit more....

Right at that moment, the roars came out beside his ears.

“Without knowing whether our army is alive or dead, how can we rest in peace!”

One after another, the heroic spirits flew into Tang Tian's body, entering his mental state and transforming into little light dots, advancing dauntlessly wave after wave, they cast themselves into the Godfist Light Tree, down to the main trunk.

Compared to the majestic Godfist Light Tree, they were the size of gravel.

But more and more of the light gravel came and continued to pour themselves into the trunk of the light tree.



The Godfist Light Tree's main trunk gradually grew downwards.

The moment the Light Tree touched Tang Tian's glass like mental state, Tang Tian's entire body shook, his entire face was covered with tears.

It was his first time completing the incomplete Godfist, the torrential Ocean of Peace suddenly became still, although there was an invisible hand pressuring down on the entire ocean.

“Break for me!”

Tang Tian launched his fist up to the barrier in the sky.

It broke.

The boundless and black Ocean of Peace shattered, broke down and disappeared.

Everything around him started breaking down like bubbles, continuously disappearing.

Tang Tian felt the world revolve around him, his consciousness was being pulled out, and right before he lost consciousness, he faintly heard the thunderous cheers.

His face that was covered with tears could not help but form a smile.

\*\*\*\*\*

It was nighttime in East Immortal City, the streets were quiet, it was a special period of time, and no one would leave home at night.

Yin Wu Feng looked at the house in front of him, and quietly snuck in.

He had been in his line of work for many years, and had assassinated countless famous people, and naturally was well versed in the skills of assassinations. He had arrived in East Immortal City a few days ago, but he did not make a move, but carefully collected information. Assassinating someone might not look difficult, but to launch an attack, one had to make sufficient preparations, the more information the assassin has, the more he could prepare.

Not only would that make it easier for him, but in the case of a failure, he could escape and preserve his life.

Everyone only had one life, the target had one, the assassin himself only had one. As long as he remained alive, he would have another chance. For the pursuit of taking the kill with one shot, and increase the danger on himself, Yin Wu Feng would not be stupid to do that.

He obtained valuable information, for example the various families of East Immortal City had pledged themselves to Ghost Face Mask, it was initially a huge problem, but his luck was not too

bad, and heard that the various elites of the families had been pulled out by Ghost Face Mask's subordinate and went out of the city.

Ghost Face Mask only had Xu Ye and the Null Division Members.

Xu Ye's strength was considered low, not enough for Yin Wu Feng to deem as a threat, and furthermore Xu Ye was still injured. The Null Division members might have good quality bodies, but in the eyes of a powerful martial artist, their fighting strength was almost negligible.

All of this was not important, Yin Wu Feng's purpose of probing was to find out if Ghost Face Mask was injured, that was the most crucial point.

A martial artist who could fight against the arm of the Death God and the Death God Scythe and not be injured was someone Yin Wu Feng would drop his head and run from, because that meant that the martial artist had already grasped the highest level of power.

There were less than five martial artists in the entire Sin Domain who had stepped into the Law Domain realm. Yin Wu Feng knew who could be provoked, who could not be provoked, and these martial artists were people never to be provoked.

If Ghost Face Mask was injured, it meant that he was at the peak of the Law Surface and ready to step into the next level only.

Although these types of martial artists brought some fear to Yin Wu Feng, but there was still the chance of success, and injuries sustained from the highest level of power was definitely not easily recovered from.

Yin Wu Feng clarified it, Ghost Face Mask was injured!

He quietly snuck into the house, all the Null Division Members were extremely cautious, but these bodyguards were nothing to Yin Wu Feng.

Very quickly, he found where Ghost Face Mask was staying.

With Growing Yin Sword in hand, he calmed himself down, the sword was filled with extreme evil, which was the most perfect weapon for assassins. With the sword, his strength could grow up another level!

At his level, to raise his strength further was something horrifying.

He squinted his eyes, and was about to make a move.

Suddenly, Ghost Face Mask's residence suddenly shone with a bizarre light aura.

# Chapter 766 – Undying Sword

---

The light aura that suddenly shot out from the room shocked Yin Wu Feng.

What's happening?

He retracted his aura, he did not dare reveal anything and remained hidden in the shadows. He trained in an extremely unorthodox law, called [Ghost Yin Mushroom]. His Law surface looked like a mushroom, and it was where it got its name, the power projected from the law surface was extremely gentle and reserved, and this concealing power was extremely suitable for concealing and retracting auras.

Tang Tian slowly opened his eyes, and realized that he had tears on his face.

Was that a dream?

But it is so clear, I remember every detail.

Suddenly, he lowered his head to glance down, but was immediately stunned. Between his fingers, a bizarre blue flower was grasped there!

Xiao Lan.....

Tang Tian's head was buzzing, he felt his hairs on his back standing, It was not a dream?

The blue flower in his finger suddenly lit up, and the dazzling blue light enveloped the entire room.

Damn it!

What are you trying to do?

Tang Tian was shocked, and subconsciously formed the Grasping Flower Seal, but the blue light continued to shine, but Tang Tian did not feel that it was glaring. Light swept through his glass mental state, and a blurred figure could be seen in the corner of the outer walls.

Tang Tian's heart moved, a blue light quietly shot towards the corner.

As though it could penetrate everything.

Yin Wu Feng was quietly waiting for the right time to ambush Ghost Face Mask outside, the blue light released from inside the house was extremely intense, causing him to feel uneasy. Right at that moment, a sense of danger rose in his heart. Assassins had astute intuition towards danger.

Without thinking, he immediately turned to escape, as his intuition on danger had saved him countless of times.

The wall in front of him suddenly lit up with a blue light, the blue light seemed to have a power that could capture a man's soul, and it was so bewitching it made his heart palpitate.

This....

The blue light flew out from the wall, it was extremely fast, and Yin Wu Feng who was overwhelmed with shock could only lift up the Growing Yin Sword.

The strange bewitching flower landed itself on the blade of the Growing Yin Sword.

Yin Wu Feng's eyes widened, in the next moment, the dazzling blue light erupted without any warnings.

He was caught off guard, causing his sight to go blind, he groaned, and ignoring everything else, he turned into smoke and escaped outside.

Even though he could not see, but Yin Wu Feng had already grasped the place well, and accurately carried out his escape plan, and did not fly into the sky. He was an experienced assassin, and was clear that the moment he flew into the sky, he would reveal himself to the enemies and become surrounded.

Yin Wu Feng knew that he had already failed, Ghost Face Mask's strength far surpassed his expectations.

To an assassin, that was undoubtedly the most fatal mistake.

There was only one thought in his mind, escape.

Yin Wu Feng who was escaping felt as though a beast was staring at him, causing the hairs all over his body to stand, he was shocked, without thinking, he threw himself to a corner, and unleashed the Growing Yin Sword in his robes to unleash a sword barrier to protect himself.

Whoosh, the grey sword barrier expanded out, countless of fine grey gravel flew into the surroundings.

The grey gravels instantly exploded.

Pa pa pa.

Hearing the familiar spore exploding sounds, Yin Wu Feng's uneasy heart settled down.

Every spore that exploded would release a clump of thin silk, and

in the blink of the eye, it revealed a dense silk barrier. All of these spores were extremely durable, and the crucial point was its numbers, although the blue flower was strange, but to break through the layers was not something easily done.



Yin Wu Feng who had calmed down moved even quicker, lining himself to the wall, he swept forward quickly.

Suddenly, his face changed.

The silk barrier behind him was broken through. How is that possible.....

He instinctively turned his waist to dodge, but he felt a pain in his chest, and his body froze.

How is this possible....

These were the last four words he could think of, the vision before him gradually recovered, he looked at the blue flower that had stopped right in front of him, blood dripping down from it, it was an extremely intoxicating blue.

It floated quietly in front of him.

When the last drop of blood fell, Yin Wu Feng fell.

His body had a minute blue wound. The blue color started to spread and very quickly, it spread through his entire body, Yin Wu Feng's corpse became a crystal.

The crystal corpse quickly disintegrated.

A gust of wind blew past, and the ground became empty, only leaving behind a grey sword.

The Blue Flower suddenly transformed into a rain of flowers, spiralling around the Growing Yin Sword, it flew back to Tang Tian's room.

At a very far distance, two men observed the entire thing with pale expressions.

“Yin Wu Feng lost....” The man who spoke was middle aged and fat, he was dressed luxuriously, like one of a merchant.

The other man was an old man with a face that had gone through hardships, his hands were covered with calluses, and looked no different than a coolie, just that his eyes faintly revealed a strange light, He thought for a long time, then spoke: “Does Boss Wen recognize that flower?”

The fat man retracted his bitter smile and said: “It was said that Ancestor Li's Demon Six Seals is a deluge of heavenly flowers.”

The old man's eye brow perked up: “Does Boss Wen truly think that kid is Ancestor Li's Inheritor?”

The fat man looked at the old man and said indifferently: “Old Man Zhu, please don't make a mistake, it doesn't matter of what I think, what is important is what other people will think.”

The old man did not reply.

He had thought of all possibilities, failure included. He had used Yin Wu Feng, as he believed that with Yin Wu Feng's strength, he could test the waters. If they could kill the other party, then whether or not he was the inheritor of Ancestor Li was not important, as dead people never were.

But out of all of his predicted outcomes, it did not include Yin Wu Feng being killed so easily. The bizarre and terrifying flower caused shivers to go down his back.

What kind of technique was that?

The legend of Ancestor Li had not been completely forgotten by people, the legends of the heavenly flowers had still been passed down by people.

“Let us see how Lu Sheng Xiang will react.” The old man said.

Boss Wen knew what Old Man Zhu meant. Lu Tian Wen had not shown himself for a long time, and various families had guessed that he must have met his demise. Many of them were questioning on how could Lu Sheng Xiang continue to sit and wait. Sharp Wind City currently had many experts, all of them waiting for Ghost Face Mask to walk right into the trap. But for some reason, Fat Boss Wen did not believe that the Sharp Wind City could stop Ghost Face Mask. But he did not refute the old man, as arguments were meaningless.

Furthermore, Ghost Face Mask's powerful abilities had made him more awake, as he could now see the situation more clearly.

The role of being Ancestor Li's inheritor looked important, but in truth it was not at all, the important factor being Ghost Face Mask's strength. Without his strength, using the name of Ancestor Li's Inheritor was just seeking death, and even without the name and being strong enough, he was able to sweep through the Sin Domain.

Old Man Zhu was affected by the name of Ancestor Li's Inheritor, but Fat Boss Wen was more alert, and could see that Ghost Face Mask's goal was not the Sin Domain.

No one would ever look at the poor Sin Domain.

But if Ghost Face Mask was able to return to the Sacred Saint Galaxy, thinking about that made Fat Boss Wen tremble.

Sacred Saint Galaxy, the name that was so far away, the fables of the ancestors. Fat Boss Wen, who was born and raised in the Sin Domain did not have any deep longing for the Sacred Saint Galaxy, but he knew of one thing, and that was that the Sacred Saint Galaxy was not as barren and poor as the Sin Domain.

Ghost Face Mask did not belong to the Honorable Martial Continent, otherwise he would have long left.

And if Ghost Face Mask were truly to return to the Sacred Saint

Galaxy, he would definitely fight with the Honorable Martial Continent.

Thinking about that, Fat Boss Wen had some hesitations. The power of the Honorable Martial Continent had been long been ingrained into the hearts of the people in the Sin Domain, could Ghost Face Mask defeat them?

Thinking about that, Fat Boss Wen felt that the success rate was very small, no, extremely small. ~Such a small rate of success doesn't hold any weight to it, but why is my heart palpitating?

Fat Boss Wen was in a daze.

Tang Tian did not know that there were two important figures observing him, as at the moment, he was completely shocked by Xiao Lan's ability. Yin Wu Feng's actions were unable to escape his glass mental state, but Tang Tian had to praise Yin Wu Feng for being crafty and experienced.

If he had personally taken action, he would not be able to do as well as Xiao Lan.

The fresh blood dripping down from the beautiful flower scene would make any person's heart go cold.

The Blue Flower pulled the Growing Yin Sword back to Tang Tian's room, and threw it to Tang Tian, and the petals that filled up the room instantly disappeared, merging back into Xiao Lan

who returned back into Tang Tian's body.

Tang Tian immediately checked on his body.

When he first saw Xiao Lan, he still suspected that he was still in an illusion. But if it truly was an illusion, then what was Xiao Lan?

After checking his body, he became even more bewildered.

The glass like mental state was crystallized and transparent without any speck of dust, with an eye catching sapling inside it.

~Ah, it's not an illusion.~

Tang Tian was spooked, If it was not an illusion, then everything that happened in the Ocean of Peace....

Suddenly, his gaze landed on the Six Armed Demon's body, and as though he was struck by lightning, he was instantly stupefied.

On the initial Weeping Sword Seal's palm where the sound mist was, was a tiny bronze sword that swam around like a fish.

That is....

Tang Tian moved his mind, and the tiny bronze sword flew to him. The tiny bronze sword had a strong Southern Cross Army

bearing, the sword blade were filled with cracks, causing Tang Tian to remember the Heroic Spirits that looked like porcelain dolls that were pieced up together again.

He subconsciously caressed the sword blade, and a familiar and intimate consciousness was passed to him.

The sword blade had a small line of words

“How can we rest in peace”.

When Tang Tian saw the words, all the resounding vigorous and coarse roars came out at his ears.

“Without knowing whether our army is alive or dead, how can we rest in peace!”

And “Southern Cross Army, advance!”

Tang Tian held onto the tiny bronze sword that was covered with cracks and muttered to himself: “From today onwards, you are called the Undying Sword. As long as my heart is still alive, heroic spirits, you all will never die. Senior Heroic Spirits, fight with me!”

As though it sensed Tang Tian’s words, the Undying Sword trembled incessantly, the vigorous and solemn roars had a melancholic feel to it, the fighting intent soaring out was like a raging inferno burning his body, making him feel liberated and heroic!

Faintly, The Ocean of Peace appeared before Tang Tian once more, the scene of the waves after waves of heroic spirits advancing dauntlessly towards the barrier in the sky with their tattered and torn figures, all of those porcelain like figures, all of those determined figures, all of those heart shaking roars.

The conviction of ten thousand years, the cycle of centuries, the heart for the army would never allow the Heroic Spirits to die.

Tang Tian who was crying finally understood, why he was summoned into the illusion, it was not Xiao Lan or the undying Heroic Spirits, it was because he was the true holder of the Southern Cross Army!

“No need for your protection, rest in peace.”

“Without knowing whether our army is alive or dead, how can we rest in peace!”



# Chapter 767 – I am Ghost Face Mask

---

Tang Tian took the opportunity when the sky was still dark to bring Xu Ye out of East Immortal City.

He no longer wanted to wait.

The heroic Spirits in the Ocean of Peace made him feel that he was in a hurry, a race against time.

The glory and faith of the Southern Cross Army that belonged to Bing, to Ah Xin, to Screw, to the undying Heroic Spirits, they had once fought alongside each other, they had once died for each other, under the same banner, they roared and burned with their conviction.

The dazzling glory was indeed touching, but it was the glory of the past, it was his precursor's honor and not his, even if he was the current possessor of Southern Cross Army.

He was deeply affected, despite being emotional for them, he was not envious at all.

Because he had his own glory, his own brothers who were willing to live and die with him, brothers whom he could leave his back to without worrying, they have gone through the fires of war, through life and death, they had the same beliefs, and fought alongside each other.

They were writing their own history, their own book, their own legend.

Only the courageous people would win.

How much can our current setback and predicament amount to?

What kind of failure could compare to fighting for themselves once every century? What kind of grief could be compared to the man sealed in the ice coffin for thousands of years crying out day and night?

Tang Tian moved ahead quickly, the ice cold wind were like blades that brushed past him, while his heart was like a raging fire burning wantonly.

Even if the entire world is against me, even if my body is tattered and torn, even if I do not have anything, I will not be afraid.

Seniors of Southern Cross Army, just wait and see, we are very powerful too!

Xu Ye was being lifted by Tang Tian, making him feel embarrassed, which subordinate would ever have their superior lifting them up and moving? He tried to think of ways to get Tang

Tian to put him down, but Tang Tian ignored everything.

Xu Ye was thinking “Was Master provoked or something?”

Tang Tian’s current strength had increased greatly, he had formed three seals out of the six on the Six Armed Demon, the Angry Fist Seal would allow his entire body to become extremely vigorous, the Grasping Flower Seal would make his mental state flawless, and yet the Weeping Sword Seal gave him a completely different feeling.

Before forming the Weeping Sword Seal, Tang Tian never expected the Weeping Sword Seal’s uniqueness to be on “Vibration”. The small Undying Sword quietly moved, slowly releasing waves after waves of strange undulations.

The undulations had extremely high frequency, which far exceeded that of what the human ear could catch.

The wounding ability of the high frequency vibrations was astonishing, Tang Tian knew of this, but he never expected that the vibrations to be produced from his body.

The sensation of all of his entire body vibrating made him feel numb. If not for the Angry Fist Seal’s red light that had refined his body, causing all of his organs and innards to be stronger, the vibrations would have injured him.

But, although he did not have any injury, Tang Tian still felt unpleasant.

Normally, sound attacks would have difficulty injuring Tang Tian's internal organs, Tang Tian's flesh and bones were too strong, and the vibrations that reach his body would be greatly reduced upon entering, thus weakening the attack.

But the vibrations came from inside his body, and directly affected his organs and innards, leaving Tang Tian with no choice. But very quickly, Tang Tian found the miracle of the Weeping Sword Seal, it could strengthen and temper his organs and innards through the continuous vibrations, which was usually extremely difficult to temper.

Tang Tian knew what that meant. His power of the physique was not without foundation, they originated from his organs and innards, them being strengthened was like the soil being fertile for the trees, which would naturally grow better.

Feeling the numbness from his body, Tang Tian pushed his way forward.

He swept through everything, invisible ripples undulating out like ripples on the water. Tang Tian could clearly feel the space around him that was being broken into parts by the fine vibrations.

My strength has improved again!

Tang Tian increased his speed to the point of quickly drawing a sword.

Xu Ye was shocked, he felt as though the Master was as fast as lightning, the wind blew on his face so hard that he could not open his eyes.

So fast! Isn't master injured? How is he....

Xu Ye was completely stunned.

In the darkness, Sharp Wind City's outline gradually grew clear, Xu Ye's eyes immediately widened. He suddenly felt even lighter, and the wind blowing against him suddenly became even stronger, his master was increasing his speed.

When Tang Tian saw the Sharp Wind City getting close, the fighting intent in his chest surged out. With a flick of his hand, he threw Xu Ye 300m away.

Xu Ye had to forcefully stabilize himself, his face was filled with shock, Master is.....

Tang Tian increased his speed fervently, like a wick of flame, he suddenly flew above Sharp Wind City.

Looking down at the Sharp Wind City beneath him in the night and feeling the fighting intent in his chest, the ghostface mask that had blood lines all over it was extremely creepy, his black and deep pupils seemed to be burning red making them an extremely eye catching thing in the darkness.

You are destined to be enemies with this world.

For some reason, this sentence surfaced in Tang Tian's mind, and the mouth beneath the mask kept on twitching.

Then let it begin.

Tang Tian raised his right arm and released an invisible ripple in all directions with his arm as the center. WeepingSword Seal's vibration was extremely unique, unless Tang Tian purposely released it, if not a person could only feelthe vibrations upon contact.

The arm that was raised up slashed down, and a terrifying slashing aura filled with countless of minute ripples shotinto the city walls.

Bang!

The slash embedded deeply into the city wall, the fine high frequency vibrations pervaded out along the walls,causing the sturdy walls to crumble like biscuit, causing countless clouds of dust to arise.

Tang Tian spectated, as though he was not the one who had unleashed the attack.

When the dust dissipated, only a third of the majestic wall remained standing, a large pit that spanned more than150m deep

and over 15m long had appeared, resembling a terrifying wound.

The dark and quiet Sharp Wind City was awakened in shock, all of the houses started lighting up. A loud and sharp warning signal was unleashed, and figures all flew out from every corner of the city into the air.

What's happening? Someone is attacking us?

Tang Tian remained unmoved in the darkness, he had no intention to hide.

“I am Ghost Face Mask.”

A deep voice that sounded like thunder resonated throughout the entire Sharp Wind City, there was no joy or anger, but it covered up all the other shouts.

The entire Sharp Wind City immediately fell silent.

The martial artists from Sharp Wind City that rushed over realized that there was a figure standing proudly above them, and their faces changed. When they saw the gigantic slash created beneath Ghost Face Mask, all of them sucked in cold air.

Ghost Face Mask!

It was no secret in Sharp Wind City that the Fu Family wanted to

get rid of Ghost Face Mask, there were many rumors of Ghost Face Mask spreading in the past few days, but most of them were on him being a bogus inheritor of Ancestor Li, and many more were the jokes and ridicule spoken by people in their leisure time.

To a majority of them, Ghost Face Mask was a liar.

A swindler that had a glib tongue, knew how to act, but upon meeting for real, he would definitely expose his true self.

The man must definitely bluff!

The Majority of the martial artists stared at the terrifying slash mark in the ground, and their faces became ugly. But there were some of them who looked at Tang Tian with fire in their eyes.

The Fu Family held authority in Sharp Wind City, and they were the true masters. If any one of them got rid of Ghost Face Mask, the Fu Family would definitely reward them heavily!

As long as there was hard work, the Fu Family would never be petty.

What kind of prey would be better than a pretentious cheater?

No one saw whether the large blade mark in the ground was made personally by Ghost Face Mask, and a few quickwitted people had already thought of a few feasible ways to cause such a deep mark. A few of them had already determined that Ghost Face Mask



was a liar, and merely wanted to make the large pit to scare everyone.

What a joke!

“We have the numbers.”

No one knew who shouted those words out, but it immediately increased everyone's courage, and even the people who were initially hesitating had thrown their worries to the back of their heads. That's right, we are in Sharp Wind City, we have the advantage in numbers, even if Ghost Face Mask is powerful, so what?

In that moment, over forty figures pounced towards Tang Tian from all directions.

The Ghost Face Mask that had blood marks all over remained silent, his red eyes stared at the incoming martial artists indifferently, all of their hands released dazzling light auras that converged together, preventing him from escaping.

Tang Tian never thought of escaping.

He formed the Weeping Sword Seal, and a tiny bronze sword floated in front of him.

He used one finger to move the sword.

Ding!

A fine and invisible ripple quietly spreaded out in all directions.

Wherever the ripple passed, the space seemed to shatter like glass.

The martial artists who were about to attack him turned sluggish, their roars disappeared, the light auras formed from their laws stopped, and their sinister expressions froze.

A tiny trace of blood appeared on the face of one of the martial artist, after that more and more blood traces appeared like red spiderwebs, all of them looked like broken porcelain dolls that had been put together again.

Chi.

A soft sound came out, and they exploded like watermelons.

Countless of the blood traces exploded at the same time, and the Laws that had lost control exploded, the dazzling balls of light engulfed Ghost Face Mask's figure, and amidst the light auras, blood spurted out, making it look like a blood sun.

Sharp Wind City was lit up as though it was day time.

Everyone was glued to their original positions from fear.

The forty odd martial artists did not even unleash a technique and had been transformed into dust.

But for those of the martial artists who were regretting that they were late in reacting were currently rejoicing in their fortune. Ghost Face Mask was actually so terrifying, in one move he had killed off forty martial artists.

What is that weird tiny sword, what kind of technique is that? It is so horrifying!

But, Ghost Face Mask should not be able to survive from that intense explosion right.....

The majority of the forty odd martial artists were all elites who had gained enlightenment on the Law Surface, for their laws to lose control and explode at the same time, the might of the explosion was extremely powerful, and even for they who were spectating from afar were fearful of the explosions.

The exploding balls of lights eventually dimmed down and dissipated.

The expression on everybody's faces froze, and immediately turned into fear.

The heat formed from the explosion had not dissipated, and

inside the distorted space, a figure with a mask could be vaguely seen.

He looked down at them indifferently.

“The people who imprisoned my subordinates shall die.”

His voice was completely monotonous, as though his declaration was an ordinary matter, he did not even bother hiding his killing intent, which spreaded out the entire city like a wind, causing chills to go down their spines.

The entire Sharp Wind City fell into a dead silence.

# Chapter 768 – It Will Be Me

---

Fu Zheng Zhi's face was a mix of green and white, which was anger and fear.

The anger stemmed from Ghost Face Mask killing his way up their doors. This was something he had not planned for, he had arranged everything prior, from building up their prestige and momentum, and using the opportunity to push the Fu Family up to the next level.

He had confidence of succeeding, because he had already obtained the support from the Four Main Cities, and also obtained the support of the Lu Family, so what was Ghost Face Mask considered?

He had no one else to blame but Ghost Face Mask, the name of "Ancestor Li's Inheritor" was worn out long ago, and was considered nothing much. But a powerful and tyrannical "Ancestor Li's Inheritor" would definitely become a thorn in the butt for the Four Main Cities. And if they added the mysterious Ursa Major Null Division, the Four Main Cities would no longer just fear him, as the power and prestige of it was enough to topple the entire power distribution in Sin Domain.

So how could the Four Main Cities take it?

The only thing that worried Fu Zheng Zhi was that Ghost Face Mask would disappear and hide away. That was why he had wantonly built up their own prestige, on one side it was that he

saw the definite victory, the other was to push Ghost Face Mask into a corner.

But he never expected that Ghost Face Mask would directly bring the fight to his doors.

It was a gain of upper hand by the show of strength.

Ghost Face Mask's one move had caused his heart to tense up, as it was the first time his plan had swayed.

He could clearly see the extremely high frequency vibrations inside the ripple. But vibrations isn't not some high level law, how could it possibly possess such might? The group of people who had rushed forward were all powerful martial artists, but they died under one move, that means that Ghost Face Mask's strength is even stronger than the rumors.

There were no problems with his layout, no problems with his plan, but all of his layouts and plans could not avoid the most crucial problem, and that was Ghost Face Mask's strength.

Fu Zheng Zhi was not an inflexible man, he was clear that in front of absolute strength, all the plots and plans were a joke.

Like how everything were in front of Ancestor Li in the past.

But Fu Zheng Zhi immediately broke out in laughter, I am truly thinking too much, Ancestor Li? There was only one Ancestor Li

after a few hundred years of time. All of those people who claim to be “Ancestor Li’s Inheritor”, not one of them were able to reach Ancestor Li’s level of strength, no, they could not even reach half of Ancestor Li’s strength.

Only when a person’s ambitions is high can they soar into the air.

“How high can this man’s ambition be, claiming to be ‘Ancestor Li’s Inheritor’?”

Fu Zheng Zhi regained his composure, he flew up into the air and stared at Ghost Face Mask, and said: “How impressive are you! Not only did you disrupt the rest of our various seniors, you dared to barge into our Sharp Wind City and slaughter people, Sire, you truly are audacious.”

A few figures appeared beside Fu Zheng Zhi, they surrounded Tang Tian with unkind expressions.

“Why the need to talk when handling such reckless murderers!” The one who spoke had a tall build with a deep set of eyes, an eagle sharp nose and thin lips, he looked extremely malicious.

Seeing them, Tang Tian’s eyes darkened, although he did not recognize the other party, but he could clearly feel the aura emitted by the other party, and he was far from ordinary. Of course, he did not know that the person in front of him was Ao Gu Man, fifth of the A Grade Infamous People, he had a terrifying reputation.

Ao Gu Man was crafty and sinister with unfathomable strength, he had made countless enemies, but they were all helpless against him. He was usually located in extreme heights, but for some reason he had quietly come down to Sharp Wind City.

Another man was roughly 20 years of age, he was extremely young and looked charismatic and handsome, he had a confident bearing as he chuckled: “Sire, you must be Ghost Face Mask? Previously, you were walking on your bright and limitless path while I walk my own, but I never thought that you would embezzle and use Master’s name to make a name for yourself, coming here to seek your own death, I can’t do anything about it.”

Although Xiao Han Guang was smiling, but a faint killing intent could be seen in his eyes, Although he had the title ‘Ancestor Li’s Inheritor’, but Ghost Face Mask was even more famous than him, and majority of the population knew Ghost Face Mask but not him Xiao Han Guang, and thus it was a battle for the title.

Many more people floated over, they were all outstanding heroes in their own ways that had been invited by Fu Zheng Zhi, although they were not on the List of Powerhouses, they were all known figures with immense strengths.

“Such a fierce and ruthless man, if he doesn’t fall today, how can the Sin Domain ever be peaceful?”

“Why not open your eyes wide and see where you are!”

“He is just a young man, thinking that with a bit of talent, he can



start showing off everywhere.”

.....

Fu Zheng Zhi's eyes revealed a trace of please. Ao Gu Man's strength was undisputed, if not for the Four Main Cities moving behind the scene, the Fu Family would not be able to employ Ao Gu Man. Xiao Han Guang was surprised and pleased, he did not know where the people were from, but they were extremely powerful, and definitely able to be in the List of Powerhouse.

Three List of Powerhouses martial artists, adding almost a 100 experts, this luxurious and extravagant ranks made it seem that Ghost Face Mask did not have any chance at all.

Ghost Face Mask who was caught inside the crowd was like a docile sheep waiting to be slaughtered in Fu Zheng Zhi's eyes, and it was time to enjoy the taste of victory.

Tang Tian remained unmoved, all of the ridicule and mockeries entered his ears, yet he remained aloof, the enemies had surrounded him to the point that not even a drop of water could pass through, yet he remained aloof.

He did not have any thoughts to talk, he had came up their door, and never had the intention of being kind.

Why should he be kind?

Only by throwing away all complicated thoughts and to battle everyone, and to win, could he give everyone a chance to live.

The fighting intent in Tang Tian's body burned intensely, the crowd around him did not make him afraid, but instead caused his fighting intent to increase. He did not need to consider friendly fire, and did not need to consider who was the enemy.

Everyone in his eyes were his enemies.

Only by winning, could he save his companions.

Then come.

They could talk and mock, but they could not shake him. The Ghost Face Mask that was covered with blood lines was extremely sinister, the pair of eyes beneath the mask looked like fireballs burning, and a deep voice came from behind the mask.

“There will only be one winner in this battle.”

Ghost Face Mask suddenly said, causing everyone to suddenly quieten down.

“And it will be me.”

Ghost Face Mask raised up his right fist that had his thumb stuck out that pointed to himself.

The group of people around immediately flew into uproars, they were all angered by Ghost Face Mask.

“Truly seeking death!”

“Extremely audacious!”

“Soon he will know what is powerful!”

.....

The crowd was enraged, everyone cracked their knuckles, wanting to give Ghost Face Mask a good beating.

Fu Zheng Zhi's face flashed a look of indignance, he already felt that everything was firmly in his control, but the other party was still so arrogant and aggressive! He quickly calmed down and said coldly: “If you give up and surrender, I will leave you....”

Before he could even finish speaking, Ghost Face Mask disappeared.

Not good!

Fu Zheng Zhi's heart jolted, but he immediately calmed down, if Ghost Face Mask can make a comeback despite the huge formation here, I might as well knock myself to death with tofu.

The scene before his eyes dazzled, a figure appeared right in front of him.

Ghost Face Mask was extremely fast.

But, to have an intention on me, hehe.....

Fu Zheng Zhi's eyes turned cold, unknowingly, there were two short wooden swords in his hands. The woodenswords released strange moss green colors, the light auras around the swords revolved, as though there was some sort of mist churning in them.

The Treasure of Fu Family, Green Chief Swords.

The sword in Fu Zheng Zhi's right hand thrust towards Ghost Face Mask, the green light of the short sword erupted out, countless of green threads surged out of the blade and coiled towards Ghost Face Mask.

Tang Tian was not afraid of the green threads.

There can only be one victor, and that will be me, it can only be me.

If I can't win, then I die!

The light aura in Tang Tian's eyes erupted, borrowing his

momentum, the Growing Yin Sword appeared in his hand. Although he was not used to it, but at the moment, Tang Tian could not feel anything else, he had never been so focused, his determination at its peak.

If I can't win, then I die, that's right. That's all there is.

Wu.

The Growing Yin Sword in his hand released a deep resounding whimper, followed by a black mist that surged out of the blade, but looked as though it was blocking the attack. The mist of the darkness surged with unrest under the slash, but Growing Yin Sword's body did not tremble the slightest, even under the powerful attack.

Blade Devil Transformation.

Blade Devil Transformation was the first move Tang Tian learnt, but he had never unleashed it with so much power.

Tang Tian was enlightened.

This is the Blade Devil Transformation, only with such resolute determination can one become a devil. To fight with the heavens, to fight with the earth, to fight with man, to fight with the whole world without fearing, without retreating, without swaying.

Even if one is afraid of death, he cannot sway, and only from that

can one truly become a devil.

Tang Tian did not know what a devil truly was, but he had his own understanding. That's right, it was determination, the determination to save everyone regardless of anything, and it was the disregard for everything, which required the determination to win.

His eyes released a strange light aura, which in turn unleashed a tremendous change in his entire bearing, as though he was an unshakeable majestic mountain range.

Upon seeing his move, Ao Gu Man and Xiao Han Guang's faces immediately changed.

The two of them were elites among elites, and wanted to watch before making a move. But upon witnessing GhostFace Mask's first move, the two of them acknowledged his power, and knew they could no longer spectate, and moved out at the same time.

Inside the whimper sounds, Growing Yin Sword slashed onto the dense green light threads.

All of the bizarre and crazy green light threads instantly shattered. Fu Zheng Zhi's face took a great change, the slash was so tyrannical that it caused him to choke. How can this man unleash such a powerful slash?

Borrowing the force brought by the light threads, the short

sword in his left hand trembled, and a green light halo appeared.

His body became a shadow that was pulled into the light halo.

Fu Zheng Zhi's figure had barely disappeared, when the whimpering black mist brought from the Growing YinSword slashed down.

Buzz!

The trembling buzz caused everyone's skin to turn numb, the slash formed by the convergence of the black mist was unleashed.

Fu Zheng Zhi was able to dodge, but the group of people behind him were not able to make it. All of the experts had revealed looks of despair and shock, but with their abundant experience, they knew that they were on the line between life and death, and all of them brought out the power they had from the head to toe, and unleashed their life saving techniques to escape.

In front of the black slash aura, all of the light auras were like bubbles that instantly popped and shattered. Too weak.

Wherever the black slash aura passed, it seemed to destroy everything, shattered auras flew everywhere like rain, body parts and flesh flew all around, and a huge line of blood was effortlessly carved out from the group of people.

Xiao Han Guang and Ao Gu Man had snuck up to Tang Tian's

side, but the both of them groaned at the same time, they felt their hands go numb when they realized that all around Ghost Face Mask, there was an extremely dense vibration.

Thinking about the scene where the martial artists had launched the attack previously and instantly died to a strange ripple, their hearts tensed up.

Suddenly, a green light halo lit up beside the two of them, a figure flashed and Fu Zheng Zhi appeared behind them. He was in a terrible shape, his robes were in a mess, especially his right hand, where his sleeves were gone, and half of his arm was revealed.

At that moment, the unstoppable slash aura fiercely smashed into the ground.

Bang!

Sharp Wind City trembled, a slash mark spanning over 210m long appeared on the ground, it was like an extremely ugly and terrifying wound that appeared before everyone.

Dead silence.



# Chapter 769 – The Eve Before Moving Out

---

High up on a mountain summit, the moonlight shone brightly.

Three men sat side by side and gazed at the lights in Sword Forest Stronghold.

“You guys will be moving out tomorrow.” Jing Hao sighed with emotions, he raised the wine cup in his hand and drained the cup with one gulp, he then muttered: “Don’t worry, I will definitely protect the Shang Continent.”

Ling Xu did not say anything, and also gulped down his cup.

Crane raised his wine cup with both hands, he toasted towards Jing Hao, and drank slowly. He placed his wine cup down, and his handsome face revealed a faint bit of red. His eyes were as bright as the stars in the sky. “With Brother Jing guarding our back, we have no fear of trouble in the rear.”

“I really envy you two, to be able to go to the frontlines to fight.” Jing Hao revealed a hint of self ridicule: “Sadly I am not intelligent enough, and do not know how to lead soldiers to fight.”

The Honorable Martial Continent’s armies were truly too big, and despite Bing sniping them layer after layer, the frontlines was still rather tense. The three of them had went through some simple trainings, and Crane performed the best, he was naturally intelligent, and was a jack of all trades, able to pick up everything quickly, he improved the fastest, and in the short period of time,

he had some form and substance. Ling Xu was not as intelligent as Crane, but his personality was perfect for battle, and being able to unleash a relatively strong war impact, he was naturally gifted for long range raids and harassment.

Jing Hao performed the worst, he had always been focused on the sword since young, his thoughts were too narrow and his personality was fair and gentle, although his individual strength was the strongest, but he had no talent for war formations and tactics.

Jing Hao was arranged to stand guard in the Shang Continent, while Crane and Ling Xu were to lead their troops and rush to the frontlines the next day.

Whether or not the simple training had some use to grooming military generals was widely debatable, but in the time of urgency, they could not care for much. The frontlines was in imminent danger, and every strength they had was valuable and important. The three of them had no complaints, they knew of the disparity between both parties, and the immense pressure Bing was bearing.

The guilt and

loneliness in Jing Hao's words was completely heard by Crane and Ling Xu.

After such a long time of being with each other, they grew extremely close to Jing Hao.

Ling Xu was not good with words, he simply lifted up his winecup and toasted it to Jing hao, and without a word he gulped it all down.

Jing Hao laughed, he poured another cup and raised it up, and finished it with one gulp.

Crane shook his head: “Brother Jing, your task is not only not lighter than ours, but even heavier. The ShangContinent is our foundation, and it is the pathway to Heaven’s Road, equipments, weapons, everything goes through here. If we lose this place, the battle at our frontlines will hold no meaning.”

Jing Hao’s dim eyes lit up, he became solemn: “Crane, your words have enlightened me, I have been too rash, and will punish myself with three cups! Whoever wants to take the Shang Continent has to step over my dead body.”

Jing Hao drank three cups consecutively.

Without saying a word, Ling Xu also followed with another three.

“Humph, I wonder where the hell that crazy Tang went to.” Ling Xu suddenly spoke up with killing intent: “If he gets caught by me, hehe, I will spear him to death!”

“I think something happened.” Jing Hao frowned, he then relaxed once more: “But Bing said that he is not dead, I think that

he is trying to rush back as well. It will be better once he is back, he will definitely have a way.”

Jing Hao had complete confidence in Tang Tian, he believed that once Tang Tian appears, he would definitely have a way for them to get past the difficult time.

Ling Xu snorted in disdain: “You are still pinning your hopes on that idiot, too naive!”

Crane smiled, he could not help but think about the past, and started to feign upright and just: “On this point, I have to agree with Brother Jing. Although there are many times that Crazy Tang was not reliable, but he is always able to accomplish the impossible. Don’t you think that the situation ahead of us is purposely prepared for him?”

Ling Xu was enraged, he stared at Crane: “You want to fight me?”

Crane knew that he had succeeded in disturbing Ling Xu, he and Jing Hao looked at each other and laughed, and then filled up their cups and drank again.

“You guys must be careful, if it were to fail, preserving your own life is the most important.” Jing Hao said with a trace of worry: “You guys are not true military generals, and you guys have to go to the battlefield with just this simple training.”

Ling Xu wiped away the wine marks on his mouth and said: “No

matter, we will be used to it after a few battles.”

Crane nodded his head: “There are many famed generals that became famous halfway in their lives, both of us wield even higher strength, if the situation turns dire, escaping is not a problem, Brother Jing, you don’t have to worry.”

“I have over thought, this will be my last cup.” Jing Hao looked at the fires blazing gloriously below, and thought of how he always felt gaining a name for himself ever since he started. He poured their cups full again, and took the lead to toast as he raised his wine cup: “Toast! To victory and to home!”

“To victory and to home!”

Ling Xu and Crane shouted out at the same time, and felt the burst of flames combusting in their chest, they looked at each other and gulped down, excess wine leaking from the corner of their mouths, even Crane who paid particular attention to etiquette had forsaken all at that moment.

The wine flowed through their throats like fire, they placed down their wine cups and looked at each other, then laughed out loud.

Their laughs resonated far outwards into the distance.

The Sword Forest Stronghold that was lit up was extremely busy at the moment.

Little Fool looked at the spirit treasure in his hands, and revealed a satisfied look. Under the huge military campaign, the strength that an individual possessed would be realized marginally, and thus he decided to take on the responsibility on equipment. A spirit treasure was able to increase a military general's strength, which was proven by Shi Sen and Xie Yu An. Since he could not work with quantity, he could only redeem with quality.

But spirit treasures were only compatible to military generals, and as for the soldiers, the more help a star treasure had, the higher the price required.

Tang Tian had previously brought countless of star treasures, but following the growth and expansion of the armies, there were not enough star treasures. Little Fool then began to combine a few spirit treasure refinement techniques and refined out a large quantity of black gold weapons. It was under Little Fool's continuous hard work that allowed the Shang Continent's Black Gold Weapons to increase multiple folds in might. The rise in grade of the overall equipments gave a huge boost to the Southern Alliance.

Little Fool suddenly sensed something, his eyes widened up, That is....

His body suddenly disappeared.

In the next moment, he appeared outside a laboratory, even though he was separated from the inside by a wall, he could hear

the shouts from inside.

“Success! Success! We have succeeded!”

Richard Jr.’s voice was filled with joy and sobs.

Little Fool immediately appeared inside the laboratory. Inside, his eyes were immediately fixated to the pool in the middle. It was a square sized pool with dimensions of 10m, inside the dark blue water, it resembled a sea, and inside it were flames.

Richard Jr. looked at Little Fool and said excitedly: “Master, we succeeded! It was a success!”

Little Fool controlled the excitement in his heart and asked: “You succeeded in producing spirits?”

“Yes!” Richard Jr. recovered from his excitement and replied immediately: “In our first batch of spirits, we formed 12. We have already sent them into the Sea of Energy to grow, they are still weak, and need to obtain energy from the Sea of Energy.”

“Why the need to put them in the Sea of Energy?” Little Fool asked seriously, but even so, his voice was still squeaky and childish.

Richard Jr. did not laugh, he knew that the seemingly child like spirit general was extremely powerful. He immediately replied: “Because the spirits that we synthesized have different

characteristics, and the energy required from them is different. The Sea of Energy has various different types of energy which is the best nurturing ground for them.”

Little Fool frowned, not only would it be hard to guard against the growth inside the Sea of Energy, but it would also increase the risk. But he knew that Richard Jr. was right, and asked: “How long will it take for them to grow?”

“Shortest will take a few days. Longest, could be a few hundred years.” Richard Jr. laughed bitterly: “They are like life, we are unable to control its growth.”

Little Fool pointed to the pool: “What’s that called?”

“Prairie Fire Pool.” Richard Jr. could not help but become excited again.

Richard Jr. that was almost forgotten by everyone, never gave up. He did not harbor any grievances, that’s right, what grievances can there be? He had all sorts of spirits supplied to him to study, he did not need to worry about expenditure, he did not need to keep a look out for whoever, it was the life he had been dreaming of.

The war outside had no influence to his life, he was completely immersed in his research. His life was extremely simple, to research, and every now and then he had to produce a research report.



Since he had spent so much money, he had to let them know of his research progress, although he felt that there was no need for it.

His relaxed life was broken apart when he gave a research report, Master Bing had specially ran all the way back to his laboratory. It was Master Bing's first time entering his laboratory.

In the report, he said that he found the required energy concentration required to produce spirits.

Master Bing gave a detailed description of an ocean, it was a miraculous ocean, which had flames on its water surface, it was called the Prairie Fire Ocean, and its miraculous thing was that spirits could be produced from it. Master Bing had specially described the uniqueness of Prairie Fire Ocean, and Richard Jr. immediately realized that the Ocean had a lot of similarities to the content in his research.

Master Bing rushed back out to the battlefield which was caught in a stalemate, while Richard Jr. immersed himself into the miraculous Prairie Fire Ocean.

And finally, he had actually successfully recovered a piece of the Prairie Fire Ocean, no, the Prairie Fire Pool.

“We need more of these Prairie Fire Pools.” Little Fool's tone was extremely determined: “There are no problems with regards to materials and cost. What do you need?”

“How many pools do we need?” Richard Jr. did not bask in the joy and excitement but asked earnestly.

Little Fool replied: “The more the better.”

Richard Jr. : “....”

Little Fool left the laboratory, and immediately classified the laboratory as a restricted area, and laid the most stringent security. Furthermore, he passed on the information to Bing with the fastest speed. He could imagine when Bing receives the information, how ecstatic and joyous would he be.

The production of the Prairie Fire Ocean would deeply affect the development of the war situation in the future.

He knew of the existence of the Prairie Fire Ocean, but it was a natural oddity, and even Bing did not know how it was formed.

Bing did not go into detail on how the Southern Cross Army had developed and made use of the Prairie Fire Ocean to their benefit in the past. But Little Fool was certain that the ability to produce spirits granted them the possibility of producing star treasures, which was a completely new invention that could change the world.

Even in Heaven's Road, Star Treasures could not be produced. Heaven's Road was not lacking in spirits, but the energy concentration was lacking for the spirits to form star treasures.

The Sacred Saint Galaxy had the endless Sea of Energy, but was unable to produce spirits.

Thus, the Prairie Fire Pool would change everything.

Little Fool suddenly gained a strong sense of confidence towards the war, the ability to change the world was in their hands, what was there to fear?

Humph, that fool is unable to witness this important day that will go down in history, he will definitely regret until his intestines go green.

He thought regretfully.

# Chapter 770 – Famous in One Battle

---

Cliff's face was green, but the other party's defense was as stable as a rock, and every assault they launched would leave behind corpses of their own soldiers, even he who was known as Ironblood felt the pain.

Xie Yu An, an unfamiliar name.

It was said that he used to be ranked outside of the top 100 in Sin Domain, so how can this man stop me in my tracks?

Cliff was Gou Cheng WenDao's number one fierce military general, with the name Ironblood Brave Horse under his belt. He had a tall and lofty figure with white hair, deadpan eyes and eternally cold expressions. He was an upright and selfless man, and was the most strict general of the army.

The defense lines arranged by the Southern Alliance had some standard, it was like a sturdy web, but under the crushing offense, it was quickly crumbling. But the crumbling of the defense, was a heaven sent opportunity to the military generals like Cliff, if they were able to grasp the right time, victory would be in their hands. No military generals were willing to be defeated, as the morale of the soldiers would plummet and they would weaken, and would become easily afraid, as long as a slight wind blew, they would panic and lose control, and their defense would crumble from within.

The defeat of the frontlines that cause the topple of the rear was

something that had happened time and time again in history.

When the army ahead of them started to expand their movements, a contingent remained stuck like a nail to the ground, locking firmly at the crucial point of the defense. If Cliff did not get rid of the nail, the attacking army could be faced with the threat of a flank at any time.

Cliff noticed the contingent instantly, and then ordered his 3rd Unit, that was closest to them, to destroy the troops.

But what he did not expect was that the 3rd Unit did not even attack the location, but they lost almost half of their troops. This caused Cliff to become infuriated, he had five large standardized military units that he&nb

sp;commandeered, in which he scolded the captain of the 3rd Unit badly, and then immediately ordered his 2nd Unit to attack.

Every minute was extremely important to their offense. Opportunities were fleeting, and once they gave their enemies the breather to reorganize, the enemy would once again stabilize themselves.

Cliff's 2nd Unit returned in low spirits after their defeat.

Finally, Cliff could no longer take it, and personally led his unit of 3000 men and personally fought his way up.

But.....

Xie Yu An, the nobody, was able to head on resist his attack.

More than a fifth of his 3000 elite troops died, and the thing that made Cliff feel the most helpless was that three full days had already passed. Even if they got rid of the Swift Army, they no longer had the opportunity to shine.

As for the morale.....

Cliff looked at the gloomy faces around him, and knew that their morale had already hit rock bottom.

They are no longer able to launch attacks.

“Retreat, we will rest for three days.”

Cliff's order caused a huge uproar, many of the officers and soldiers revealed looks of disbelief, they stared blankly at Master Cliff, the man whom they saw as emotionless. They never thought that such an order would actually come out from Master Cliff's mouth.

Cliff glanced through his men without any expression, he could see the relief within the shock in their eyes.

The momentum has already been broken.

The soldiers and officers under him already lost their belief of victory, Cliff quickly judged. For an army that was comprised of different smaller units, it was a dangerous sign.

His subordinates who were still bewildered retreated slowly, but Cliff stayed back, his gray pupils staring straight ahead at the enemy's formations.

The battle appeared in his mind once more. The Swift Army's attacking style was very unique, but what truly left a mark in Cliff's memory was their extravagant equipment.

Every soldier was equipped with a spirit object, and Xie Yu An's strange whip was of a higher grade, it was much stronger. Compared to them, his subordinates were basically simple and crude like farmers.

Although the Southern Region was prosperous through trade, the Southern Alliance did not hold much of an advantage, and even their strongest powerhouse, compared to the Honorable Martial Continent was nothing.

Where did all the spirit objects come from?

Cliff then thought about some rumors that he heard when he was back in the continent, his heart jumped, Could it be....

But he quickly threw the thought to the back of his mind, it was

not him to worry about the matters his superiors. I am just a military general, my only responsibility and job is to obtain victory.

Cliff did not look down on the enemy. In the short span of three days, he had invested two of his units, and on the last day, he even mobilized his own unit of 3000 men.

But, the enemy remained unfazed.

A standardized army had 5,000 men, which also meant adding all who attacked the enemy, it was a total of 13,000 men. Furthermore, his own subordinates that were directly under him were an elite army, only second to the direct elite subordinates of the five main generals. Relying on these 3000 men, he had the confidence of annihilating two standard armies.

How many men did the enemy have?

5000.

Just by relying on their defense line and equipment, they were able to endure the ferocious attacks? Cliff's men were all picked out from the best and had brilliant achievements, but they had never met an enemy that could achieve such success against them.

He had never looked down on any enemy he faced, and much less one that made him lose so much. He was very clear that the army in front of him was filled with elites.



Disregarding their luxurious spirit objects and their strange tactics or meticulous defensive line, the Swift Army still had many attractive points. For example, their synchronization, their terrifyingly perfect synchronization was definitely above 95%. Just based on this point, it could put 99% of the armies in the Sacred Saint Galaxy to shame.

And their stubborn attitude, there were many times where the defensive lines of the enemy looked to be breaking, but they still held their ground.

Such an enemy deserved to be respected.

Isolated alone at the front, White haired Cliff suddenly saluted the Swift Army.

I am awaiting our next skirmish.

Under the eyes of his subordinates, Cliff turned and without looking back, he walked away with large strides.

Xie Yu An watched the enemies that were retreating, and finally loosened the tension in his body. Fatigue gushed in like a raging tide, his legs were heavy as lead, his body swayed, he could no longer support himself, and sat down on the soil.

All of the soldiers around no longer had any strength to stand, and all of them fell and laid down on the mud.

It truly was mud, by the last battle, all of their weapons were either destroyed or almost destroyed. There was not a place in their frontlines that was intact, the enemy's attack was extremely crazy, causing their formations to be destroyed countless of times.

When the smoke gradually lifted and the blue sky returned to their vision, Xie Yu An felt as if everything was a lifetime ago.

I have accomplished my mission!

He was still in disbelief, he wanted to laugh out loud, but it felt as though his throat was clogged with smoke, and could only release silent laughs.

The enemy was too strong.

The Southern Alliance various armies had never experienced fighting such large enemies, and thus their performance was extremely bad. Their defense deployment was quickly heavily damaged. Xie Yu An's Swift Army received an equally immense pressure, Xie Yu An was prepared to retreat, because Bing's mission for them was to form layer after layer of defense, thus they still had a few defensive lines.

When Xie Yu An noticed that their formation was crumbling, he made an unexpected decision, he did not give the order to retreat, but decided to hold till the night before retreating, to delay the enemy's advancement.

One hour later, he received Bing's order. It was simple, for him to hold for one day.

Of course, he knew how dangerous the order was, the disparity between both parties' strength was too large, but he did not hesitate.

If my continent treats me with such greatness, I will repay my continent with everything that I have..

When he obtained the New Moon Swallows Command Whip, he had secretly sworn that oath, and never forgotten it.

He did not know that he had to persist with everything that he had to last through the day, he bet everything that he had against the crazy rhythm of the battle. Although he had accomplished his mission, he had no way to retreat, the enemy was advancing dauntlessly wave after wave, not leaving him a chance to retreat.

Xie Yu An knew that they were stuck, and if they were to retreat at such a time, they would definitely be destroyed.

Clenching down on his teeth, he chose to continue holding on.

After the second day, the Swift Army was almost completely numb.

On the third day, the enemies became stronger, they had even more deaths, Xie Yu An fought till his eyes were bloodshot, and at that moment, they fought without any intention to retreat, just an endless slaughter.

Until now, seeing the waves of enemies retreating and disappearing, his last taut nerve finally loosened up.

It's over.

Greedily breathing in the fresh air after the smoke had dissipated, Xie Yu An could feel that he had no strength at all, and fell asleep.

He was awoken by raindrops.

It was a downpour, waking up all the slumbering soldiers, causing the entire formation grounds to be muddy. Everyone's dulled senses regained a bit of clarity.

Everyone started to stand up, and quietly arranged themselves.

There were no cheers or celebrations for victory, out of the entire Swift Army, only 3000 odd of them were left, many of them were injured, many of them stayed in their position, never waking up again. Everyone quietly moved the corpses of their buddies, burying them on the spot after taking their spirit objects, disallowing the enemies from picking them up.

Other than their buddies, there were even more enemy corpses, and due to the large quantity, everyone was unable to tally the numbers.

It was to the point that they did not have time to care about their spoils of war, Xie Yu An had some lingering fear, but luckily for the rain, if not, even if the enemies were to quietly return, everyone would not be able to run.

They had to take the time while the enemy was reorganizing to run, otherwise they would have no other opportunity. The next wave of enemies would only be even fiercer, and staying would mean death.

Ignoring the spoils of war littered all over the ground, Xie Yu An gave the order for the army to retreat swiftly under the rain.

Xie Yu An did not know who he fought with, as there were too many of them and their offense was too fearsome. While they were retreating, Xie Yu An was pleased to realise that from the battle, the Swift Army was reborn. Not only did the strength of many soldiers breakthrough, but through the ruthless battle, the bearing and quality of the entire army had become even more stable and experienced.

He could vaguely see hints of qualities resembling that of the legendary armies.

What he did not know, was that at the same time in the Southern Region, countless of people were talking about him and his army.

Xie Yu An, the man who became famous in one battle.

# Chapter 771 – Who Else

---

Sharp Wind City was in silence.

Fu Zheng Zhi looked at the demonic figure floating in the air, his mind overwhelmed with shock. What was that just now? The deep slash mark embedded in the ground behind him looked like a crevice that leads to another world in the darkness, inside it hidden with endless dangers. The temperature of the wind in the night had suddenly dropped, causing his heart to feel cold.

Ao Gu Man's expression became serious, his eyes revealed hesitation and suspicions. He had met all sorts of experts before, but the man in front of him reeked of extreme danger. He had the thought of retreating, he was invited to Sharp Wind City for a favor, but if it concerned his own life, it was not worth it.

Out of the three of them, Xiao Han Guang's expression was the weirdest, shock, surprise, and the inability to comprehend. He stared at Ghost Face Mask for half a day, the mask that was covered with blood lines resembling red spiderwebs gave off a strange gloss, and in the darkness, it was rather glaring.

The eyes that could be seen were red like molten steel, giving off an indifferent and emotionless heat.

This guy.....

Compared to the three of them, everyone else was completely filled with fear. Ghost Face Mask's terrifying slash not only left

behind a deep scar in the ground, it even took a few lives.

The light auras formed by the annihilation of their laws blossomed like fireworks, lighting up the night sky.

All of them who were pumped up with adrenaline were completely awakened. All of their so called contributions and favouritism were nothing in the face of slaughter.

Fu Zheng Zhi reacted quickly, he knew that everyone was stunned by Ghost Face Mask's attack, and sensed that the situation was not going well.

He suddenly sneered: "Just a few moves, but by using your last resort techniques, I wonder if you can continue?"

Everyone revealed looks of shock, many of their fears lessened greatly, and once again were eager to attack, they once again

saw hope of winning. Almost everyone would have one or two last resort techniques, all of these were to aid them in preserving their lives and escaping, or killing techniques. But regardless of what last resort technique it was, it would consume a lot of power. Half of what they had was extremely ordinary, and consuming everything they have had been seen before too.

That was why ordinary martial artists would never use their last resort techniques unless it was regarding their life and death.



Previously, Ghost Face Mask's slash unleashed a terrifying might that caused fear in everybody's heart, but if it was a last resort technique, then they would understand.

It must definitely be a last resort technique!

If it were any ordinary slash, and it could cause three martial artists on the List of Powerhouses to be in such terrible shapes, then Ghost Face Mask's strength would be too horrifying. To everyone's understanding, how terrifying it can be was something only the top 10 martial artists on the list of powerhouses could attain.

Top ten of the List of Powerhouses?

Haha, this joke is not funny at all.

The top 10 rankings on the List of Powerhouses in the Sin Domain were all god figures. All of them were legends, their history and stories were legends and fairytales. Every few years, the List of Powerhouses rankings would go through changes, but the top 10 rankings had never changed in the past decade.

If the top 10 rankings were to change, it was definitely a huge matter that would shake Sin Domain. What would come after that would be the emergence of a new family and the fall of a few others.

All of these peak powerful martial artists were the true rulers of

the Sin Domain, and were the real big shots of the Sin Domain. They have all maintained a tacit understanding, that even the families beneath them were to maintain restraint and rapport.

Although Ghost Face Mask was strong, and had a few spectacular fights, and might be able to be ranked in the List of Powerhouses, but it was just limited to that.

It must definitely be a last resort technique!

Almost everyone believed Fu Zheng Zhi's guess, including Ao Gu Man and Xiao Han Guang. They were both martial artists on the List of Powerhouses, and understood what being in the top 10 meant, and knew more of how unfathomable and powerful the big shots were.

His slash being his last resort technique was the most reasonable explanation.

How many of those slashes can Ghost Face Mask unleash?

Right when everyone had reignited their fighting intent, no one had noticed that the space where Ghost Face Mask was standing previously was empty.

Fu Zheng Zhi only felt a cold intent behind him, his face changed, Not good!

His reaction was extremely fast as he moved the wooden sword

on his left hand to block his back.

Clang!

A powerful slash ferociously smashed onto the wooden sword, Fu Zheng Zhi only felt his palm turning hot, he nearly let go of his sword, but he knew it would decide his life and death, and held on tightly. His throat turned sweet as he spat out a mouth full of blood, his entire body felt as if he was smashed by a sledgehammer, and flew out.

As though a few fast sword moves cutting through the water surface, countless of ripples resonated outwards behind Fu Zheng Zhi, a ghostly figure vaguely appearing amongst the ripples.

Xie Fei Ran was one of the Patriarch of a mid tier family in Sharp Wind City and had close relations with the Fu Family, so without Fu Zheng Zhi saying a word, he rushed forward to help him. Seeing Fu Zheng Zhi throwing up blood, he was overwhelmed with shock.

He knew of Patriarch Fu's strength, but he was still not strong enough to handle the enemy!

How is that possible!

Suddenly, Xie Fei Ran regained his senses, he was startled for a moment, What is this?

In front of him was a blue flower as it just floated quietly in front

of him.

He did not notice how the blue flower appeared, What is this? Is this a spirit object of the poor fool who died? Aflash of greed flashed past his eyes, he extended his hand out and grabbed the blue flower.

Chi, his palm burned, the blue flower bloomed in his hand, This... His pupils widened.

Before his expression could even change, a bloody hole appeared on his forehead.

The blue flower that was now dripping with blood was floating behind his head.

Chi chi chi, effortlessly, the blue flower penetrated through more than 10 people's head, and in the blink of the eye,all of them had a hole of blood in their foreheads. Everyone only caught a glimpse of the blue light flashing about,they unleashed their laws, but before this blue light, their laws were like paper.

Everyone only felt that the vision before them flashing for a second, and more than 10 of them had lost their lives,and losing control of their bodies, they fell like dumplings.

The blue flower that was dyed red with blood became even more excited.

Tang Tian ignored it, as Ao Gu Man and Xiao Han Guang were fighting him.

Ao Gu Man and Xiao Han Guang had no choice, Fu Zheng Zhi was sneak attacked and injured, which made their hearts turn cold. If Ghost Face Mask had killed Fu Zheng Zhi, then they would no longer need to fight and could simply escape.

Ao Gu Man had a bronze loop in his hand, it released a resplendent light aura, inside the earth yellow light aura, a Flood Serpent figure could be seen swimming around.

Xiao Han Guang's slender fingers released jade gloss, and was extremely attractive in the dark. His ten fingers moved like water flows, and his seals changed endlessly.

A cold and dazzling sword aura flew out from his smooth changing seals. It released a ghostlike whimper, like a lady grieving in the night, the sound penetrating into people's hearts.

Ghost Face Mask's bloodshot eyes finally revealed a change, the light aura in his eyes exploded.

Weeping Sword Seal!

Tang Tian recognized it instantly, the other party had used the Weeping Sword Seal.

Could he truly be the Inheritor of Ancestor Li?

Xiao Han Guang's hand seals roused the interest of Tang Tian, the Demon Six Seals was something that he learned through the Heavy Demonic Execution. Xiao Han Guang's seals were extremely fast, causing people who watched him to be confused, and compared to his own hand seals that he polished, Xiao Han Guang's seals were much more beautiful and impressive.

Tang Tian immediately noticed that Han Guang's seals looked similar to the hand seals that he had comprehended, but there was a huge difference in terms of charm.

Xiao Han Guang's hand seals was more quick and elegant, but Tang Tian shook his head inwardly, the Weeping Sword Seal looked good, but in his eyes, it was just a facade.

Let me show you my Weeping Sword Seal.

His right palm formed the Weeping Sword Seal, which was different from Xiao Han Guang's hand seals, Tang Tian's formation of seals were as stable as a boulder without any haste, and the Undying Sword that was revolving around the Demon's palm disappeared.

Xiao Han Guang's eyes constricted, That's....Weeping Sword Seal!

How is that possible!

He had trained in the Demon Six Seals for many years, and could immediately recognize the seals being formed by Ghost Face Mask, it was truly the Weeping Sword Seal! Although Ghost Face Mask's Weeping Sword Seal was the ugliest he had ever seen, but he was 100% sure that it was the Weeping Sword Seal!

But, it's truly ugly....

Before Xiao Han Guang could even frown, his pupils constricted again.

A tiny bronze sword that was riddled with cracks appeared in front of Ghost Face Mask's Weeping Sword Seal.

That is....

Wu wu wu!

The low resounding whimpers that caused people's scalp to tremble, immediately suppressed his own sound, and the sky above Sharp Wind City was void of any other sounds. Layers after layers of fine ripples resonated out of the tiny bronze sword, emitting outwards in all directions.

It was different from Xiao Han Guang's melancholic weeping Sword Seal, the Undying Sword's whimpers was like a battlesong in the smokes of a huge battlefield, the gloomy and desolate voice travelled out far and wide.

“Without knowing whether our army is alive or dead, how can we rest in peace!”

“Southern Cross Army, advance!”

The roars of countless Heroic Figures seemed to sound out beside his ears, and the unforgettable scene appeared in Tang Tian’s mind, all the cracked faces, all of their determined eyes, all of the figures that soared into the sky.

How can we rest in peace? how can we rest in peace?

We can’t die! We can’t die!

An uneasy feeling surfaced in Tang Tian’s chest, it started to resonate with the gloomy and desolate whimpers from the sword.

Come!

Have a taste of my Weeping Sword Seal!

As though it could sense Tang Tian’s emotions, amidst the whimpers in the sky, the Undying Sword’s vibrations became more intense, and the ripples around the sword became even more condensed and fine, the downcast whimpers caused the entire Sharp Wind City to tremble.

The tiny bronze sword’s might caused Xiao Han Guang’s face to



change.

He could not believe his own eyes, the Undying Sword became a silhouette as it collided into his sword aura.

His sword aura smashed into pieces.

Xiao Han Guang's face turned white, his hands that had formed seals turned numb, the terrifying vibrations spreadthrough his entire body from his palms, causing his internal body to churn.

Backlash!

I am actually struck with the backlash from failing to form my seal!

Xiao Han Guang looked at Tang Tian in disbelief, the ten slender fingers kept on trembling as blood started to leakout from his mouth.

The Undying Sword that broke his Sword Aura had shot out without hesitation like an artillery shell and collidedinto Ao Gu Man's bronze loop. The flood serpent within the light aura of the bronze loop did not even have the timeto cry out when the light aura crumbled, countless of cracks appeared on the Bronze Loop, Ao Gu Man looked asthough he was struck by the lightning of Heavens, his blood sprinkled out as his body flew out like a kite, headingstraight down to the ground.

More and more figures fell from the sky like dumplings.

In the short span of time, the original crowd was cut by half, and they started to thin out.

Unknown whether it was devouring life after life, but Xiao Lan was becoming increasingly alluring and beautiful.

With one move, Xiao Lan and Undying Sword flew back to his body.

In the oppressive silence, in the fearful eyes of the entire Sharp Wind City, his gaze gradually swept around.

“Who else?”

# Chapter 772 – Xu Ye's Change

---

Xu Ye's pale face was filled with shock.

He was thrown to the side by Tang Tian, and watched the entire process of the battle. His mind was completely in a mess after watching Tang Tian slash out, the determined slash that Tang Tian had placed all of his hopes in. He was affected completely by the scene, in his mind, Master Ghost Face Mask was already an extremely powerful figure, and such a person should cherish his own life, instead of walking into danger.

But Master Ghost Face Mask was the opposite of his own judgement, he did not know why his Master would be able to unleash such a determined slash. He felt extremely ashamed, and yet he gained some enlightenment.

From the ancient times to the present, in the face of the vast and boundless Laws, humanity was negligible like dust, if they did not have such courage, such determination, and continued to be afraid of the slightest things, how could they pry into the obscure mysteries?

He was like a statue stuck to the same spot.

The Death Thumb Ring in his hand quietly released Death Aura, and Xu Ye's body was being corrupted at a visible rate, like a withering tree.

His face turned pale white, but his eyes blossomed a bit of light

aura that was becoming brighter and brighter.

In the other direction of Sharp Wind City, amongst the crowd, there was an ordinary looking old man, his face was ashen, and a thread of fear in his eyes. All around him, no one would have guessed that he was the famous Lu ShengXiang, the true ruler of Galloping Horse City.

He looked at Ghost Face Mask who resembled a God of War in the air, and without a word, he disappeared from the crowd.

He was not the opponent of Ghost Face Mask.

Lu Tian Wen had died to Ghost Face Mask, and both parties no longer had leeway for harmony. There are many things that if right from the get go becomes wrong, then there would never be any leeway for changes, and it would either be you be wiped out or I die.

The Lu&nbsp;

Family was faced with unprecedented danger, and to hesitate or pause for even a single moment at such a time could plunge them into the deepest of pits at any moment.

Tang Tian's gaze swept through the entire field, it was as though an oppressive might was coming out from his eyes that suppressed everyone, causing them to tremble with fear.

Suddenly, a figure flew out and like a regiment of smoke, flew out of the city fervently.

A blue light flashed in the sky.

It was like a blue light arrow that shot straight into the figure.

The person escaping fervently froze, his mouth was wide open, but before he could even scream out, he lost control of his body and flew out 200m away. Everyone then saw clearly who it was, Ao Gu Man, who had already lost his last breath and had died.

That blue light was like an illusion, as it had already returned back to Tang Tian's side, but was even more alluring.

Everyone's heart turned ice cold, no one dared to move.

Even the powerful Ao Gu Man was nothing in front of Ghost Face Mask, no one dared to move anymore. Fu ZhengZhi stared blankly at Ghost Face Mask who was still floating in the air, his heart feeling complete defeat.

How is that possible?

How can he be so strong?

Fu Zheng Zhi had thought of all different ending scenarios, but not this one, the ending before his eyes. He had thought up of

countless of plans, but none of them had any use anymore.

He finally understood what a joke he was, all of the plots that he wanted to put, how laughable they were.

In front of Ghost Face Mask, I am but just an ant. If Fu Zheng Zhi had known how powerful Ghost Face Mask was, he would never had those thoughts. But, why is Ghost Face Mask's strength so much different from the reports?

Fu Zheng Zhi immediately realised.

All an act, that's right, it was all a ruse. This powerful martial artist that is standing at the peak, had been pulling me along, acting the entire time. He had purposely created such a huge momentum for himself, to create a facade that he is just a weak but famous martial artist, since such a person is the sweetest prey in Sin Domain.

That's right, Ghost Face Mask had been acting as the sweetest prey all along, attracting countless of hunters, but in the end, this prey revealed his sharp teeth.

This is a large trap for the hunters.

Ghost Face Mask had cheated the entire Sin Domain, his ruse was extremely successful, when all the hunters gather, they would then realize that they were the prey, just like me.

What a well crafted and thought out plan!

Endless fear crept up Fu Zheng Zhi's heart, he only felt that he had been so foolish and so complacent, to actually challenge such a terrifying man.

The power that the top 10 ranks of the List of Powerhouses wield was enough to make people tremble, adding on such a well crafted plan, how terrifying was that.

Who can challenge him?

Fu Zheng Zhi's mind suddenly thought, but very quickly, it was thrown to the back of his head, It won't be me.. At the moment, he had to consider how to preserve his own life, Ao Gu Man was killed while running away, which proved how powerful Ghost Face Mask was once again, it also informed Fu Zheng Zhi that running was definitely not a good idea.

What should I do?

Countless of thoughts flashed past his mind, Fu Zheng Zhi's back was perspiring in cold sweat, he knew that his life and the Fu Family's fate was relying on this one thought.

In the next moment, Fu Zheng Zhi made a decision, and in the silence, he knelt down on the ground.

“Sharp Wind City wants to surrender!”

Xiao Han Guang stared blankly at Fu Zheng Zhi who was kneeling on the ground, 'shameless old man', he scolded in his mind. Fu Zheng Zhi's reaction was extremely fast, as it caught him unprepared, but he had to respect Fu Zheng Zhi to be able to bow and submit upon seeing that the situation was not to his side, and make such a quick decision and to be able to throw his face, it required some standard.

Compared to that old fool, I am still too inexperienced.

Xiao Han Guang sighed in his mind, but knowing that he had no other way out, he could only kneel as well: "Xiao Han Guang is willing to surrender!"

Seeing that the two strongest men had knelt down, everyone else no longer had any other thoughts and knelt down as well, and shouted: "We surrender!"

Ghost Face Mask floated in the sky arrogantly, like a Monarch descending.

But no one knew that he was extremely joyous at the moment, his gaze landed far away, towards the endless horizon, he secretly clenched his fist, The battle has just begun.

Suddenly, he 'eh' out loud once, he turned and looked outside the city.



Such a dense Death Aura!

There was an extremely dense death aura that was expanding at an astonishing rate.

That place.... Tang Tian immediately knew who it was, Xu Ye!

It was as though the gates to Hell had opened in that direction, the surging death aura was fervently reeking out. The Death Aura got denser and denser as it exploded crazily.

Tang Tian wanted to rush over to take a look, when he suddenly stopped, his eyes constricted with a look of shock.

Bang, a surging black light pillar soared into the sky, straight into the clouds!

It released a circular shock wave that was filled with dense Death Aura, sweeping through the entire Sharp Wind City. The already silent Sharp Wind City was so quiet that even the sound from a needle dropping could be heard. Everyone was dumbstruck, their mouths wide opened as they watched what looked like Doomsday.

The blood in their faces had receded, despair and fear filled their eyes, was Sharp Wind City going to be annihilated?

The pure Death Aura brought along the sense of death. Aside from those who trained in Death Laws, the ordinary people would instinctively avoid such auras.

Fu Zheng Zhi who was kneeling down was aghast, the dense surging death aura made him think of a spirit object.

Death Thumb Ring!

The ultimate treasure of Death Laws!

Fu Zheng Zhi's face changed, along with Xiao Han Guang, who also thought of the Death Thumb Ring.

That is.... Tang Tian watched the surging black fiery pillar that shot into the sky, the death aura that was spewing out was so dense that it was almost congealed. He was overwhelmed with shock, the scene before him reminded him of He Xin, and the scene where the gates of Hell was opened. Is that the Death Thumb Ring? Tang Tian immediately became anxious, Could it be that the Death Thumb Ring I gave Xu Ye that was devouring him because he cannot control it....

Damn it!

He started regretting, he never thought that the Death Thumb Ring would be so powerful. All along, he did not have much hopes for the spirit objects of Sin Domain. Compared to Star Treasures and Spirit Treasures, the spirit objects in Sin Domain, other than the material used to construct them, there was no noteworthy thing about them.

But the scene before him was Tang Tian's first true witness of the spirit objects in Sin Domain. He suspected that HeXin was able to unleash his final technique had to do greatly with the Death Thumb Ring.

Tang Tian instantly had the impulse to save Xu Ye.

But not only would he be unable to help Xu Ye if he were to make a move, but would instead harm him. Xu Ye had previously sustained from serious injuries, and his vitality was eroded greatly, it was like a defensive line that was heavily damaged, and there was no way to stop the incoming dense Death Aura.

Xu Ye's body was already being taken over by the Death Aura.

If it was another person, they would have long become a corpse, and ultimately devoured by the black flames and disappear.

But Tang Tian knew that Xu Ye still had a fighting chance, a fighting chance that was almost zero. Because Xu Ye trained in the Life and Death Laws, he held this precious chance of surviving.

Life and Death was basically light and shadow, two different sides to the same coin, always in contrast against each other but unable to survive without the other.

Even if one trained in Death Laws, they would never be able to completely remove vitality. They only had a unique method to suppress the vitality, and allow the Death Aura to be more

prominent.

Xu Ye trained in Life and Death Laws, and if he was able to find the vitality in the endless Death Aura, he would have the chance to survive through it. In theory, the densest Death Aura would definitely have the purest vitality. It is like under the most intense of light would there be the darkest shadow.

As long as he found this vitality, Xu Ye who trained in Life and Death Laws would be able to transform the dense Death Aura into nourishment for this thread of vitality and become stronger.

The change between life and death is extremely profound and abstruse, and only Xu Ye could save himself.

Tang Tian could only suppress the impulse and bite his lips.

Xu Ye, you must survive!

He didn't even look down at the captives who were kneeling before him, as his eyes remained fixated on the terrifying pillar of fiery darkness.

Wave after wave of Death Aura converged and formed a black wave, it was like an ocean wave as it continuously swept the air above Sharp Wind City. Ghost Face Mask remained like a sturdy boulder in the sky, unmoved by the waves even when the black wave struck him, as though it was nothing.

This caused the people below to revere him even more.

Death was the most terrifying laws, and such dense death aura was basically unblockable, and anybody's life would continuously be eroded in the face of such death aura.

Only Xiao Han Guang had lifted up his head, a strange glint flashed past his eyes, he could clearly sense that there was a layer of tranquility surrounding Ghost Face Mask, and even when the Dense Death aura collided into it, it could not cause any vibration on the layer of serenity.

Demon Six Seals, Ghost Face Mask cultivates the real Demon Six Seals!

Tang Tian's eyes suddenly erupted with light.

# Chapter 773 – The Goddess of War's Judgement

---

A 75m tall pyramid shaped golden pagoda, had 108 steps leading to the top. Every step was carved with both air and land beasts, along with the legendary heroes of the Savage Continent, and above the steps at the top of the pagoda was a 10m wide stage, with nothing but a chair.

This chair which seemed to be one with the pagoda was padded with soft velvet, the extremely large backrest resembled a wall, and was embedded with countless dazzling gemstones, every gemstone represented a star, depicting the starry sky of the Savage Continent.

The astonishing pagoda was being carried by 36 martial artists of the Savage Continent. Their naked upper bodies were completely robust and strong, their breathing speed was as fast as galloping horses.

Shangguan Qian Mei sat quietly on the Sovereign seat, her gaze sweeping past everyone who was kneeling down. She knew that she was in another tribe that had pledged allegiance to her, and wherever her pagoda went, the local tribes would surrender to her.

Those who did not surrender were all defeated.

In truth, the mighty and awe inspiring pagoda was extremely uncomfortable. She hated such a stance, as it made her feel that she was just a symbol for authority. But her reasoning told her that if

she wanted to quickly find BigBrother Tang Tian, she could only do this, which would hasten things up.

To head towards the Southern Region, she first had to reach the southern part of the Savage Continent, which alsomeant, she had to sweep through the entire Savage Continent.

The Savage Continent was never a peaceful land, but a land which was instead filled with war and slaughter.

The Perseus Crown released a gentle light that shrouded the throne, which blocked against the wind and snowfall ofthe Savage Continent that was as sharp as blades.

The army ahead was like an endless gushing tide with no end.

Xiao Man landed on the pagoda and bowed: “Young Miss, this is the information we have gathered on the SouthernAlliance.”

“You’ve worked hard.” Shangguan Qian Hui smiled, she took it and read it carefully. The Savage Continent had

verylittle connection to the outside world, but fortunately, Shangguan Qian Hui’s influence was vastly different from thepast, she had secretly sent many experts towards the Southern Region to obtain information, especially on theSouthern Alliance.

It was not new information that Honorable Martial Continent wanted to infiltrate into the Southern Region, but theintensity of

the battle situation caused her to be attentive.

Big Brother Tian is at the disadvantage.

Very quickly, Shangguan Qian Hui, with her new title of Goddess of War, accurately judged the situation. From the looks of the defensive lines, Big Brother Tian has very powerful military Generals under him. But the disparity in strength between the two parties is too great, the Honorable Martial Continent's Three Great Generals are also famous men. The Three Great Armies were like three extremely sharp arrows being shot into the Shang Continent.

Shangguan Qian Hui immediately noticed the crucial point, that the Shang Continent had become a burden to the Southern Alliance. If they did not need to protect the Shang Continent, then the vast Southern Region is enough for Big Brother to manoeuvre and have the space to hide.

But the Shang Continent's passage is a strategic point, and they have determined it as a place they absolutely cannot give up.

Thus, all the complicated layers of defensive perimeters were made.

Shangguan Qian Hui praised the layers of defensive perimeters in her mind, the deployment was extremely well versed and only looked random. She had already found a few possible traps, and the perimeter lines were enough to make the Honorable Martial Continent pay a hefty price.



But she knew that to rely only on the defensive perimeters to protect the Shang Continent was not possible. The Honorable Martial Continent's willpower to fight was extremely strong, and even the loss was not enough to stop them.

Because the Honorable Martial Continent did not have a retreat path, if they were to fail, then Tang Tian's prestige in the Southern Region would reach its pinnacle, and the Southern Alliance would immediately become an unstoppable force, and the unification of the entire Southern Region into one powerhouse would be unpreventable.

That was the most terrible ending for the Honorable Martial Continent.

How can I help Big Brother Tian?

Shangguan Qian Hui opened the map to the Savage Continent, and her fingers swept across the entire map, every inch that she swept was a thousand li.

Her eyes landed on Wei Ye Guan Continent.

There sat Mu Zhi Xia, the number one Great General of Honorable Martial Continent.

She suddenly spoke out: "Xiao Man, go down and obtain some information regarding Wei Ye Guan Continent, and what Mu Zhi Xia has been doing for the past few years, the more precise, the

better.”

Xiao Man complied and left.

Shangguan Qian Hui took a deep breath, Time to be busy again.

Her current large army no longer stopped at just the Steel Mountain King Court and the North Blizzard King Court. Of course, these two King Courts were now a part of the Perseus King Court, they were differentiated as the Steel Mountain Unit and North Blizzard Unit, both north great heroes were currently the largest units under the Perseus King Court, and were loyal and devoted.

The pagoda was requested by both units, as they finally saw a glimpse of the unification of Savage Continent. When this thought was birth, it grew with an unstoppable momentum, spreading around frantically.

Currently, the opinion of unifying the Savage Continent had spread throughout the officers and soldiers at the lower ranks. No one had ever succeeded in this goal, and just this thought was enough for their blood to boil and go crazy. This was the ambition in all of the strongest martial artists in every generation, a desire and future that every citizen desired for in every generation.

The Perseus King Court, no one cared about the name, as long as their Sovereign liked it.

But it was their idea to only have one King Court in the future

Savage Continent, and the only King Court was Perseus King Court!

The era of slaughter and chaos would end in their hands, and inevitably conclude, thus the Sovereign was their hope.

Shangguan Qian Hui knew of their thoughts, and also knew their hearts. She did not reject it, and naturally accepted it, it was her calling. Although deep in her heart, she knew that she was simply a passerby, an outsider, becoming their Sovereign was just but a coincidence.

The coronation became extremely important.

She was clear that she was not blinded by power. If we were to say that her subduing of the two great king courts in the north was just a coincidence, her constant expansion in power after that was not what she was truly fighting for, but it was because of the plea from countless martial artists of the Savage Continent.

They had been yearning for the unification of the Savage Continent for too long, and hoped to end the chaos and killing.

When she appeared in the sky, and won in every battle that she fought, they started to see her as the dawn of a new era, and started to see hope. They hailed her as the Sovereign, as her strength appealed to the Savage Continent, they created the current Perseus King Court, and swelled into what it currently was.

She carefully controlled this gigantic monster as if she was

walking on thin ice.

Because only this gigantic monster had the qualifications to sway another gigantic monster, like the Honorable Martial Continent. Only with that could she help her Big Brother Tian.

Of course, the current Perseus King Court was still weak compared to the Honorable Martial Continent. The current Perseus King Court was only an inflated balloon, as long as there was a prick, it would deflate. There were too many tribes that had joined in a short span of time, their communication and connection was still weak and were not up to par, it was truly just a mixed stew in a hot pot.

She required patience to change them, desalinate the tribes and select the elites to create an army, formulate a system and choose someone who was able to derive battle strategies.

All of this was never before seen in Savage Continent. The changing of traditions was never easy, and would occasionally meet with refusal. But she was not discouraged, she continued to win her battles, causing her prestige to be unprecedented, and causing her resistance to lessen.

To her, it was a military campaign, but its difficulty was far harder than what she had ever experienced.

It required a lot of work, which even Tie Ji and Ah Si Ming could not bear. In their eyes, although their Sovereign was unstoppable, but she was still a young girl.

But, she was a young lady they hailed as the Goddess of War!

Shangguan Qian Hui secretly clenched her fists, giving herself encouragement.

The bodyguards moved a table and placed it in front of the throne. A group of female servants, under her command, came forth with many records. In the blink of the eye, the table was piled up.

She quickly immersed herself in it and became extremely focused, the servants below the pagoda also increased their speed carefully, the gigantic pagoda looked as though it was sliding over ice, without any sway or trembles.

When night crept up, they started to pitch camp.

Shangguan Qian Hui came out from her work, the pagoda was carefully placed down, and the guards took guard carefully. She stood up and walked to the side of the pagoda, the golden sunset reflected on the pagoda made it look extremely splendid, and the young lady's figure looked like a peaceful goddess in the gold light.

The citizens who witnessed this scene from afar immediately paid their respects to her.

Shangguan Qian Hui quietly watched the setting sun, her thoughts slowly lingered away, and her cold and sharp eyes slowly

became gentle.

Big brother Tian, are you able to see the setting sun as well?

“Young miss, we found someone familiar with Mu Zhi Xia.”

Xiao Man's voice broke her train of thoughts, the gentleness in her eyes immediately retracted, and she once again became cold, with her indifferent expression, she spoke: “Get him to meet me.”

Shang Bei knelt down on the ground, he spoke of everything he knew while trembling in fear.

He was a man that had seen many things, but in front of the young lass, he was completely suppressed by the aura she was emitting, and there were a few times he choked. The Sovereign questioned him extremely carefully, and even the fine details he had missed were revealed from the interrogations.

The Sovereign was not forceful at all, her speed of speech was not fast, but extremely steady, every time she opened her mouth, it made Shang Bei feel as though she was prying into Mu Zhi Xia's secrets. All of the questions vanished in her presence.

When she finished, he was completely convinced, No wonder everyone says that she will unify Savage Continent.

His forehead was down on the ground, all of his hesitations and suspicions flew away. He now firmly believed in the Sovereign, that

she was heaven sent to the Savage Continent, the maturity and wisdom that far exceeded her age, her sharp gaze and calm judgements had surprised him.

Shang Bei did not know how he left, he only heard the Sovereign say “You’ve worked hard”, making him feel as though he was bathed in the spring wind, and felt as if he was floating.

Xiao Man remained by the side the entire way, she was curious, Is Young Miss going to take action on Mu Zhi Xia? But we are extremely far away from the Wei Ye Guan Continent, and to notice and care about Mu Zhi Xia now, isn’t it too early?

If Ah Xin is here, that would be good, he is extremely smart, and might be able to guess what Young Miss is thinking.

“Gather the commanders for a discussion.”

The Young Miss’ voice roused Xiao Man, who immediately complied.

In the next moment, Ah Xin, Tie Ji, Ah Si Ming and the rest gathered quickly, their expressions were solemn, they knew that something huge was coming.

Shangguan Qian Hui dropped the pen on the table, and at the same time threw the heavy grenade down to everyone.

“Mu Zhi Xia is about to take action.”

# Chapter 774 - Mu Zhi Xia Sets Out

---

The Perseus King Court moved quickly and efficiently.

No one doubted Shangguan Qian Hui's judgement, all of their previous engagements had proven it. In Tie Ji and Ah Si Ming's hearts, the ambitions that the Honorable Martial Continent had towards the Savage Continent was no secret.

The emergence of the Honorable Martial Continent was based on its continuous expansion and devouring of others, as though it was an instinct of theirs deep within the blood of the Honorable Martial Continent.

Mu Zhi Xia, as well as the Honorable Martial Continent, would definitely not sit by the side and watch as the Savage Continent unified as one.

A unified Savage Continent would threaten the Honorable Martial Continent far more than the Southern Region. Tie Ji, Ah Si Ming, and the rest were all outstanding heroes, and could see that point.

The Perseus King Court started sweeping through other powerhouses the moment it appeared, leaving Mu Zhi Xia no time to react, but the current Perseus King Court was not overly huge, thus he still had a chance to win. If Mu Zhi Xia did not take action, the longer he waited, the smaller his chance of winning would become.



The Perseus King Court was growing stronger every day.

Tie Ji and the other could see it, and they did not believe that Mu Zhi Xia, the leader of the Honorable Martial Great Generals could not see it.

Mu Zhi Xia would definitely take action, and it would be very soon.

The heated discussion between them was how Mu Zhi Xia was going to move.

An Alliance with the other remaining tribes? The probability of it happening was very low, with Shang Bei's Black Water Tribe the perfect example. The Savage Continent's xenophobia was very strong, and Mu Zhi Xia never used his background from Honorable Martial Continent but trade and benefits to form a relationship with the tribes. But if he were to participate in the battle in such a sensitive time, it would cause the larger tribes to be aware and cautious of him.

How would the Savage Tribes who were accustomed to battle ever disregard the greedy beast behind Mu Zhi Xia?

If not for Shangguan Qian Hui coming down from the sky, if not for her connection with the Heroic Spirits, she would never be so easily accepted by the Savage Continent. Their belief in the Heroic Spirits and the mystical way she appeared from the sky gave her a legendary air. Other than this, she was alone.

She was regarded by many as the hope to unify the chaotic Savage Continent, the light that pierced through the darkness. She would bring change to the Savage Continent, she would gather everybody, but ultimately the Savage Continent was everyone's Savage Continent.

No one would place their hopes for the Savage Continent with the Honorable Martial Continent, the powerful Honorable Martial Continent was like a blazing sun, and upon melting the Savage Continent, they would definitely devour it down. There would then no longer be a Savage Continent but just another Honorable Martial Continent, their traditions would no longer be revived. The lands that their ancestors have given them would no longer belong to them.

Everyone could not think of how Mu Zhi Xia would act, even Shangguan Qian Hui.

As a peak military general, he had spent 20 years building up his enterprise, and would definitely have sufficient trump cards to play.

But everyone did not panic, ever since they followed Shangguan Qian Hui, they never lost, victory after victory, it boosted their self confidence.

Furthermore, they were in the Savage Continent.

As long as Mu Zhi Xia left the Wei Ye Guan Continent, he would step into the soil of Savage Continent.

This was the largest source of confidence that Tie Ji and the rest had, since ancient times, they had never lost in their own territory. Countless famous and powerful martial artists had tried to conquer their land before, but there were no exceptions to them, all of them died in the wind and snow.

\*\*\*\*\*

Wei Ye Guan Continent.

"No one has ever conquered Savage Continent."

Mu Zhi Xia looked at the stern soldiers in front of him, and his first sentence captured everybody's attention.

"We do not need to conquer them, we just need to defeat them, or more accurately, we only need to defeat the Perseus King Court. We need the Savage Continent to be as it was, we need to destroy their hopes and dreams. Destroy, we only need to destroy, a complete destruction."

"You are the largest army of the Honorable Martial Continent, and I am Honorable Martial Continent's most powerful military general."

His face that was riddled with hardships and experience, was as steady as a boulder. Mu Zhi Xia was extremely calm when he said those arrogant words, the soldiers in front of him did not go crazy

either, they remained unmoved like steel machines. They were like Mu Zhi Xia, their armor was covered with scars from their old battles, and the blades in their hands were dull.

"We have stayed here for 20 years, and everyone has already forgotten how powerful we are, the Wei Ye Guan Continent's snow and wind has covered our blade tips, they think that we are just businessmen now."

"The swords in our hands are already impatient and thirsting for blood."

"Nothing can stop our light!"

He unsheathed the military sword from his waist and turned, becoming the lead, he walked into the canyon, with the army behind him unsheathing their weapons, they walked forward.

They were as one, their formation released white light, the cold intent of their blades mixed with the white light like bulls charging into the ocean, disappearing into nothing.

Their march was like an unstoppable flow, Mu Zhi Xia who was at the front secretly nodded his head, the cold wind still blew on him, but it was at its lowest according to his records.

My research and guess is right.

"Advance!"

The army did not stop, their determined faces did not have any expressions, the extremely deep Ice Wind Gap did not raise any suspicions.

Although the wind power from the Ice Wind Gap was at its history's lowest, but as they got closer, it was still overwhelming. The white light around the formation became unstable, but the soldiers inside the white light remained unmoved, their expressions never changed as they marched into the hole.

Mu Zhi Xia was the first to enter the Ice Wind Gap.

The Ice Wind Gap was like the mouth of a weird beast, swallowing the entire army bit by bit.

When the last smear of light disappeared into the Ice Wind Gap, the shrieks of the wind occupied the entire canyon once more.

\*\*\*\*\*

Inside a wooden hut in Sharp Wind City.

Creaaaak, the wooden door was pushed open, a good looking man walked out slowly.

"How do you feel?" Tang Tian asked with concern.

"Unprecedentedly good." Xu Ye laughed, the Death Aura on his body had disappeared, and he had gone through a huge qualitative change. The previous Xu Ye gave off an extremely unpredictable and sly feeling, but the current him was like a deep abyss, he was extremely calm without any fluctuation, and even Tang Tian could not grasp his depth. The most eye catching thing about him was his eyes, which were pitch black but bright like stars.

He suddenly bowed to Tang Tian: "Master has given this subordinate a new life, this grace is something this subordinate can never repay my whole life, but wherever Master points his blade, this subordinate will kill in that direction."

Tang Tian was slightly flustered, he did not know what to do. Although he had been a tyrant for a long time, but such direct acts was rarely encountered.

Xu Ye saw Tang Tian's embarrassment and smiled as he stood up.

Tang Tian's first evaluation when he saw Xu Ye come out of his closed doors training was that he was reborn.

The surge of Death Aura that rose from the Death Thumb Ring was too sudden without any warning. When he reacted, he was already enveloped by it, the dense death aura transformed into black flames that withered his entire body, making him feel as if he was turning into ashes, and the scene of Tang Tian slashing down reappeared in his mind once more.

The slash that accumulated many things, faith, determination,

courage, willpower....

He did not give up.

When the last of his body was being burned, he found the thread of life inside the dense Death Aura.

He stabilized his wounds, and brought his body that was enveloped with the black Death Flames, to start his closed doors training. The Death Thumb Ring was truly a treasure of death, the Death Aura emitting from it was endless. But to Xu Ye who had gained enlightenment, the Death Aura was the best nourishment for him.

By changing the Death Aura to vitality, his body quickly recovered and became even stronger, his understanding towards Life and Death also reached the level of the Xu Family Ancestor.

When he came out, his strength had soared. If he were to encounter He Xin again, he had the confidence of fighting He Xin one on one and winning.

He felt that his current strength was not inferior to Tang Tian, and with a fullness of happiness and confidence, he pushed open the doors.

But the moment he saw Tang Tian, the pride that he had from his improvements was instantly swept clean. He felt as if a bucket of ice water had drenched him from head to toe, and he quickly

calmed down.

He understood more and knew more in strength, and the moment he saw Tang Tian, he felt many more things, and the reverie in his heart grew stronger. All the things he could see were things he had never seen before, for example the space around his Master, had extremely minute distortions.

All of these phenomena were extremely minute, things that he could have never caught in the past.

Now that he could see it, there were many things that he could not understand. But, he knew that behind all of the fine and complicated phenomenon was unfathomable power. As to how unfathomable it was, he did not know, but he knew it was much stronger than him.

Truly perverse.

Xu Ye was emotionally moved, but when he saw Tang Tian's embarrassed smile, he suddenly felt that it was good.

But when he saw Xiao Han Guang and Fu Zheng Zhi's looks of shock, he became even happier, he smiled and sat by the side: "Master, you didn't kill the two of them?"

When the two of them who were still immersed in Xu Ye's transformation heard his words, their faces immediately darkened.



Surrendering was a shameless matter, and after surrendering, they were still being questioned as to why they were not dead yet, the feeling was extremely terrible. If looks could kill, Xu Ye would have died countless of times.

Xu Ye maintained his smile and was not angry.

Fu Zheng Zhi and Xiao Han Guang were fearful of Xu Ye's strength, adding their surrender and respect to Tang Tian, they did not dare make a move.

"Why should I kill them?" Tang Tian shook his head.

"That's true, Master does not kill indiscriminately." Xu Ye nodded his head, then changed the subject: "Master, what will you do after gathering back your subordinates? Do you have a place you want to go?"

"I want to bring them back to Sacred Saint Galaxy." Tang Tian said.

Everyone were immediately startled, to them, the name had long become unfamiliar.

"This subordinate has to ask, why does Master want to go back to Sacred Saint Galaxy?" Fu Zheng Zhi asked carefully.

"My companions are in a war." Tang Tian said gloomily: "We need to go reinforce them."

"But...." Fu Zheng Zhi stopped talking, he wanted to remind Tang Tian that no one had ever returned to Sacred Saint Galaxy from Sin Domain, but after seeing Tang Tian's determined look, he stopped halfway.

Xu Ye's face turned serious: "When does Master plan to go to Sacred Saint Galaxy?"

"When I have completed gathering the Null Division!" Tang Tian said firmly.

Xu Ye then bowed once more: "I hope Master will bring this subordinate back with you."

Tang Tian looked at Xu Ye: "You wish to go to Sacred Saint Galaxy?"

"Everyone in the Sin Domain does." Xu Ye said.

Tang Tian blurted out: "I thought the people of the Sin Domain had already lost their courage."

Fu Zheng Zhi's face flushed red with embarrassment, he forgot his identity as a captive and almost roared: "That's a path to death! People who rush there never survive!"

Tang Tian did not get angry, he looked at the agitated Fu Zheng

Zhi and said in a serious tone: "I will."

# Chapter 775 - Arrival of the Null Division

---

When Xiao Han Guang surrendered, he was still thinking of how Ghost Face Mask would treat him, on whether or not he would be interrogated on where he got the inheritance of the Demon Six Seals, and thought of whether he would be tortured. Demon Six Seals held an extremely important position in the Sin Domain, and no other inheritance could compare to it. If he was in any other person's hands, they would definitely interrogate and torture him.

Ghost Face Mask did not care about him.

That's right, Ghost Face Mask treated him like air, without listening or talking to him.

From the start, Xiao Han Guang still thought that Ghost Face Mask was deliberately doing it, but after a few days, he finally confirmed that Ghost Face Mask never had him in his eyes at all.

It was Xiao Han Guang's first time being disregarded, since young, wherever he was, he would be in the limelight. Even Fu Zheng Zhi, after being asked a few questions by Ghost Face Mask, he was regarded as air.

Xiao Han Guang was confused with himself, the joy in not needing to face torture and the anger in being disregarded mixed together.

And it was because of these emotions that he harbored that made Xiao Han Guang observe Ghost Face Mask secretly.

He was a 100% sure that Ghost Face Mask trained in the Demon Six Seals, although it had differences with his own. He had a misconception, that Ghost Face Mask's Demon Six Seals was the true Six Seals instead of his.

This absurd misconception made Xiao Han Guang even more confused, he was a true descendant of Ancestor Li, and trained in the Demon Six Seals since young. But to suddenly realize that there was a person who was even more powerful in the Demon Six Seals compared to him, had struck a huge wound in his confidence.

The two of them had minor differences, but because of that, Xiao Han Guang started suspecting that he might have trained wrongly.

To have suspicions on the inheritance that he had trained for over 20 years, it was an extreme pain that devoured his heart. His confidence stemmed from the Demon Six Seals, and his confidence grew in the 20 years, to become as huge as a mountain, but it actually started to sway because of a rock.

But the truth was cruel, Ghost Face Mask's Demon Six Seals was far stronger than his.

Nothing was as convincing as the truth.

After being in pain and confusion for a few days, he was on the borderline of crumbling, he felt that he would go crazy if it went on, and decided to seek guidance from Ghost Face Mask.

There is no shame in seeking a master He consoled himself, and his mood relaxed greatly. But very quickly, he started to think again, How would Ghost Face Mask react? Will he mock me? Or tell me that what I have been doing is wrong? Or continue ignoring me?

Xiao Han Guang plunged into confusion once more.

But he gathered the last bit of courage that he had to seek guidance from Ghost Face Mask.

When Xiao Han Guang asked him to teach the Demon Six Seals, Tang Tian was surprised, but very quickly recovered from it.

He thought for a moment, then decided to speak the truth: "I am not sure if my Demon Six Seals is right or not either."

This sentence caused Xiao han Guang's face to darken, As expected, Ghost Face Mask will definitely not tell me his secrets, but if it was me, I would not divulge it either.

Tang Tian did not notice Xiao Han Guang's change in expression and muttered: "I gained enlightenment on the Demon Six Seals from the Heavy Demonic Execution. I don't know either, how should I put it, what the Demon Six Seals should be, there are many variations that I cannot describe. But I think if you train in the Heavy Demonic Execution, maybe you will learn its entirety."

"Heavy Demonic Execution?" Xiao Han Guang was startled.

"Yes. The Heavy Demonic Execution is the consummate technique of the Xue Family, there was a point where Ancestor Li once stayed with them." Tang Tian said.

Xiao Han Guang blurted out: "Can you teach it to me?"

He was excited, Ancestor left a consummate skill in the past?

"I don't have time." Tang Tian shook his head.

The excitement in Xiao Han Guang's face immediately dimmed down.

"But you can follow the Null Division and learn from them." Tang Tian carried on.

Follow the Null Division and learn from them? Xiao Han Guang's eyes lit up again, it did not matter who he learned it from, as long as he could. He spoke without hesitation: "I will go and find them now!"

The entire Sharp Wind City had surrendered, and the Null Division was naturally sent out, and Xiao Han Guang knew where their camp was.

Tang Tian shook his head: "It's not them, it's the Null Division

from Purple Cuckoo City."

"Then I will go Purple Cuckoo City." Xiao Han Guang stood up and was about to leave.

"They are arriving soon." Tang Tian laughed.

\*\*\*\*\*

Ah Mo Li looked at the terrifying opening at the city walls below him, and muttered: "Crazy Tang is growing stronger and stronger."

Han Bing Ning's eyes were also attracted to the slash wound in the city walls, and secretly compared to herself, if her own sword could attain such a devastating level of destruction. She could, but the consumption was too large and she could not last more than a few swords. Although she had been chasing after him, but the distance between them just kept on growing.

Han Bing Ning's mood dampened.

"Ah Mo Li will also get strong and stronger!" Ah Mo Li suddenly swung his arms and shouted: "And defeat Crazy Tang!"

All the Null Division members around him immediately had a change in expression, they wanted to hang a plate on him writing "Naive man!".



Hearing Ah Mo Li's childish words, Han Bing Ning smiled, the gloominess in her heart swept away, That's right, I have always been seeing Tang Tian as my goal. It is why I am able to grow to where I am today!

Who would have thought back then in Star Wind City that they would reach such a realm?

She could have never have thought of it, Ah Mo Li as well, Liang Qiu as well, Sima Xiang Shan either, unknowingly, they had already thrown their past selves far back then.

Han Bing Ning then thought about Liang Qiu and Sima Xiang Shan, there had been no news about them, but she was not worried, Tang Tian would definitely save them. In a short span of time, Tang Tian had subdued the East Immortal City and the Sharp Wind City, causing everyone to be dumbstruck.

After their intense discussions, they came up with one conclusion: A perverse man will be perverse no matter where he is.

Of course, in a nicer way of saying it, gold would shine regardless of where it is.

After receiving Tang Tian's orders, the Ursa Major Null Division in Purple Cuckoo City sped towards the Sharp Wind City at full speed. No one ever doubted Tang Tian's orders. The Purple Cuckoo City had been attacked by enemies, but Tang Tian had consecutively subdued East Immortal City and Sharp Wind City, it

made everyone realize that bitterly defending Purple Cuckoo City was not right.

Recently, everyone had trained extremely hard, the aura of the Null Division had thus gone through a huge change.

Nie Qiu was extremely busy, the members saved from East Immortal City had broken their training rhythm, but he still managed to think of a new training plan. Thinking about the additional members from Sharp Wind City, Nie Qiu had a large headache.

But what made him excited was that the number of Null Division Members would exceed a thousand.

A thousand men was enough to form a small scale army, which also meant that he could utilize even more tactics. To any military general, that was the best thing they could have.

Master's strength had soared once again.

Although Nie Qiu was blind, but his other senses were far sharper than anyone else. As a military general, his thoughts came from all angles, and Tang Tian's break through in strength had created a huge impact.

He had to admit that in Sin Domain, an individual's strength was far more effective than an army.

The proof was by himself, Tang Tian had subdued two cities.

"Everyone better focus, don't throw your Master's face." He said indifferently.

All of the noise and clamor instantly disappeared, everyone raised their chest and became serious.

They quickly entered the Sharp Wind City, where the citizens started to stare at them curiously. Currently, everyone knew that Ghost Face Mask had an army. Army, it was an extremely unfamiliar term to the people of Sin Domain.

The Sin Domain never had an army, so everyone was curious as to how it would look like.

When Null Division arrived, everyone witnessed it clearly.

The completely perfect formation was extremely strict and rigid to the point that even if someone were to slash out at them, the blade would not pass through. All of their movements were in unison, their footsteps were so precise to the point that they looked like machines. In the air, they moved in unison, vacuum plates appearing beneath every single person's leg, the dense explosion of the vacuums caused their hearts to turn cold.

Boom!

More than 800 vacuum plates exploding as one, from its initial

sharp explosion sound became extremely low resounding, as though there was a huge bass drum in the air that caused everyone to palpitate. Every step the formation took brought along a huge shock wave.

Boom boom boom!

The footsteps were so precise and perfect that the scene became embedded into everybody's hearts, the trembles that shook everybody's hearts pervaded in the air.

The entire Sharp Wind City was shocked by the movements, everyone rushed out of their homes and upon seeing the war formation, they were completely stunned.

Fu Zheng Zhi's face turned pale white the moment he saw the army in the air, Is that the army? So that's the Null Division? He suddenly felt that all of his actions previously were extremely stupid. He was a martial artist on the List of Powerhouses, but in the face of the imposing power approaching, he still received the same shock.

Their strength was not worth mentioning, but when they formed up in their strict formation, it was not something to be disregarded.

All the citizens of Sharp Wind City trembled in fear.

It became extremely quiet.

When the Null Division landed at Tang Tian's residence, the loud bass sound disappeared, and the entire city finally woke up from their daze.

Nie Qiu and everyone stood in front of Tang Tian.

Fu Zheng Zhi and the others than witnessed Ghost Face Mask's awe inspiring presence, and did not even dare to breathe loudly.

"I got all of you here is because the situation has changed, and we must push forward faster." Tang Tian explained to everyone, and then turned his head towards Fu Zheng Zhi: "Patriarch, please explain the situation to them."

Fu Zheng Zhi quivered, he immediately walked up and spoke respectfully: "Yes, we have received information that Lu Sheng Xiang is already bringing his family to escape Galloping Horse City. He should know about what happened here and that he is not Master's opponent, thus is leaving early to preserve the Lu Family."

Fu Zheng Zhi sighed in his mind, he respected Lu Sheng Xiang's resolve, and feel sympathy for him as similar people in distress. Upon seeing that the situation was amiss, he would break his wrist to save himself, something that no ordinary person could do. But this action would also cause the Lu Family to fall into the abyss.

The Galloping Horse City was the foundation of the Lu Family, and if they lose it, even with Lu Sheng Xiang, they would simply be

struggling at death's door.

In the blink of an eye, the prestigious and mighty Lu Family had fallen so low, how could others not pity them?

He rejoiced in his heart, Luckily, I did not form any grievances with Master Ghost Face Mask.

"Gallop Horse City still has some men." Tang Tian said: "Nie Qiu, you bring everyone and head there, Xu Ye, go with them."

"Yes!" Nie Qiu and Xu Ye answered.

"Oh, I will hand him over to you guys." Tang Tian pointed to Xiao Han Guang: "He wants to learn the Heavy Demonic Execution."

Xiao Han Guang only felt the many eyes falling on him, and immediately he had a bad premonition.

# Chapter 776 - Pig Trotters King and Skull Unit

---

The time obtained by Xie Yu An and his Swift Army was extremely precious.

The defensive perimeter that was in imminent danger finally had the opportunity to breathe, allowing the Southern Alliance's second line of defence to finally be deployed after the initial panic.

Xie Yu An had become famous after the battle, and was currently in the leagues of the famed generals. Amongst the discussions in the cities, many people thought that the Swift Army's capability had reached half step into the Gold Rank Army standards, and was just a step away from being a true Gold Rank Army.

Gold Rank Armies, the strongest armies in the Sacred Saint Galaxy. Even the giant Honorable Martial Continent only had five Gold Rank Armies, all of them directly under the Five Great Generals.

The prestige of an army was earned through fighting, and using unique advantages in formations to defend against enemies bigger than them, that would consider them as elites. But if the enemy's general was the [Ironblood] Cliff, it was definitely something not any ordinary elite can achieve.

The atmosphere in Skull Unit was extremely gloomy, everybody's expressions were ugly.

The Skull Unit originally had the same standing with the Swift Army, and their performance in battle could only be considered average. They were not defeated, and had a zero death count while retreating, and according to the tactics drill books, they did not have any highlights or loss.

But the Swift Army's spectacular display had completely outshined them.

Xie Yu An had performed outstandingly, causing others to exclaim him to be brave and resolute, causing the entire Skull Unit to be ashamed. The Skull Unit and Swift Army were both subordinates that had joined the Master at the same time, both armies were treated equally and on average performed equally. Both armies were competitive with each other, but they did not expect for the disparity to be so great after the battle.

"I am useless! I have let everyone down!"

Aya suddenly bowed with her eyes red, feeling extremely guilty. The Swift Army was able to achieve such great results highly relied on Xie Yu An's standard as a leader. Aya who was in the same ranks as him knew that her own standard was lacking far more than him.

Aya had a tough personality, back when the Pink Skull was in a broken state, she had struggled to keep it afloat, and had never cried. But because of Swift Army's recognition and none for Skull Unit, she cried for an entire night. In the past, she felt that she could help everyone, but the cruel truth led her to realize how



terrible she was and how she had burdened everybody.

This time, everyone panicked.

"Big Sister, what are you doing!"

"Yea! Don't scare us brothers!"

.....

The entire discussion room exploded into an uproar as everyone started talking.

"A war is fought by everyone, and everyone has their responsibilities." Wu Ma Tian saw that the situation was getting chaotic, and without further ado, he jumped up the table and shouted at the top of his lungs.

The hubbub ceased, everyone were attracted to Wu Ma Tian's actions.

But very quickly, someone agreed: "That's right! Everyone has a part to play!"

Wu Ma Tian coughed lightly and gathered everyone's attention before jumping down from the table, he clapped his hands to unleash the nonexistent dust, and said calmly: "Furthermore, what's there to be anxious about, it's only the first battle. There

will still be other battles, why be afraid of not having an opportunity? Take a look at Master Bing's planning, the scale is so large that it is terrifying, we will have our chance."

Everyone was roused, That's right, it's the first battle, why the anxiousness!

Aya calmed down from her emotional state: "Pig Trotters King is right, we still have battles to be fought, we cannot shame ourselves, and must definitely achieve beautiful results!"

Aya's stern and firm voice revealed her determination.

Hearing the name "Pig Trotters King", Wu Ma Tian rolled his eyes in his mind. The pig trotters he made had become famous throughout the armies, and was well received throughout the entire period, his own name in the Southern Alliance Armies, was far lower than his pig trotters.

Whenever he met people from the other armies, they would speak to him in plain and polite manners: "Wu Ma Tian? Nice to meet you."

But upon knowing that he was the hands behind the pig trotters, the other party would become extremely excited: "What? You are the one who made the pig trotters? Pig Trotters King! Oh my god, the famed and prestigious Pig Trotters King! You don't know about this, but ever since you stopped making them, sigh, my mouth is having withdrawals from the taste, let me tell you, last night, I dreamt about pig trotters....

Blabber and blabber, they would talk about their dreams and yearnings of the pig trotters.

The name of [Pig Trotters King] was a name that got around fast, where initially Wu Ma Tian would attempt to correct them and call him by his real name, but after that, more and more people started to call him by Pig Trotters King, and there was an incident where Master Bing even shouted out his name of Pig Trotters King out loudly in a meeting, making him plunge into despair.

But the dumb nickname did not affect his position in the army at all, other than the fact that the destructive female commander would occasionally force him by the sword tip to whip up a few pig trotters, he actually had it very well.

He had obtained the trust of everyone in the Skull Unit.

The Big Sister's earnest gaze landed on him, Wu Ma Tian knew that he had to produce something out, if not after the meeting, he would be pushed to produce a mountain tall of pig trotters.

She was that cruel.

"The first defensive line is the most important, as it decreases the speed of the enemy." He thought for a moment before speaking: "The enemy are like sprinting wild boars, they charge with momentum, but as long as their speed drops, their might will cut by half. Now that they have been blocked by the Swift Army, their speed has greatly decreased."

His mind was filled with respect towards Xie Yu An, after the event, everyone was, but for him to be able to dare to do what he wanted to, and have the foresight and vision at such a critical moment, it was much harder than frying pig trotters.

He he he, how can I be pushed to be frying pig trotters....

He became focused again, with everybody's sights on him, he continued: "The Swift Army merely blocked them, and stopped the crazy wild boars, but it is not enough. They have a greater number compared to us, they have a larger volume, with a thick skin, they can directly clash into us and we have no chance to win. So what do we do? We separate their soldiers, as long as they are separated, we will have a chance."

"That's reasonable." Aya understood what he was explaining: "But why will the enemy split themselves?"

"The enemy will definitely split." Wu Ma Tian became more confident: "Xie Yu An just became famous, what are the people calling him now? The Third Best Guardian under the Heavens. Master Bing placed him at the most front lines, and gave him sufficient space behind to manoeuvre and replenish themselves. As long as the other military general is not stupid, they will not go head to head and fight to the death against Xie Yu An. They definitely can, but it will take a long time, and they will have to fork out a lot, which will really hurt them. They will definitely move around both sides, and find an opportunity."

"But they don't have to split their forces to do that." Another person rebutted.

"Time!" Wu Ma Tian said: "The most crucial thing in war campaigns is time. Master Bing's strategy is simple, to drag the battle for as long as possible. So behind the defensive lines is all mud. But for the Honorable Martial Continent, they have to do it differently, they are an army comprised of different people, and the longer it drags, the worse it is for them. Once they are unable to defeat us in a short amount of time, their momentum and shock to the other Southern Region powerhouses will fail, they will fall into battle in the mud, and that is where the true tangle will be. So, they have to split their troops, with more heads moving in, they can in the shortest amount of time find loopholes in the defense lines."

Everyone listened intently, they were all born mercenaries, and compared to Xie Yu An who came out from a prestigious academy, they had a great difference in level in terms of tactics. But, they were still veterans in battle, and with Wu Ma Tian now breaking everything down for them, how could they not understand?

"Of course, there is still something else, and that is confidence." Wu Ma Tian revealed a look of ridicule: "In Gou Cheng WenDao's eyes, what are we? They will think that pulling their own hair is more painful than us. They know of the risks of splitting their army, they can even see through our plans, but they will still do it. Even by splitting, they are stronger than us, so what are they afraid of? The risks and dangers in splitting is not as important as the time they can obtain by doing so."

"Then what do we do?" Aya revealed a look of excitement, her hands involuntarily at her sword hilt.

Wu Ma Tian silent took a step back and coughed lightly: "The Swift Army fought a good battle, and they deserve the win. But if you want me to say, they chanced upon a battle that they are best at. Staying in line and defending? Who can be better than them? But everyone has their strong and weak points."

"We are the strong in their weak points!" Aya said abruptly.

Wu Ma Tian choked and laughed awkwardly: "Yes yes yes, we are strong in their weak points as they are in ours. We have many weaknesses, but we do have our strong points as well. We cannot compare to them in defending. No one can compare to Shi Sen and that maniac Underworld Continent people in terms of long distance ambushes. But, in terms of urban warfares, who can compare to us?"

Everyone's eyes lit up, That's right! urban warfare!

The Skull Unit was initially a mercenary army and were extremely proficient in urban warfare and small fights, after that with Master Tang Chou and Master Bing's guidance, they became even stronger. Wu Ma Tian's arrival helped further improve on that point.

In the Southern Alliance Armies, the Skull Unit was truly the number one in urban battles.

"So, we need to fight them in an urban setting." Wu Ma Tian waved his hand: "That was what I could think of, so everyone need to help think as well, and see what ideas we can come up with."

Wu Ma Tian's strategy immediately gained the recognition of the rest.

Mercenary armies were definitely not clean people, they were all old foxes, they swindle and cheat and care only for themselves, everyone immediately became excited as they started discussing and more and more evil tricks started to be born.

"Urban warfare, that will be a good battlefield, the more complicated the terrain the better, and it must be big, if not we can't hold all of them in."

"What about the Stone Forest Sand Continent? The defensive lines have to move back, and if we were to lose it we will not have any buffers."

"Good place! They can't fly there, it is always filled with sandstorms there, and the wind is sharper than knives! They can only walk! If we lose that place, we will not have any face to live anymore."

"That's true, but how do we get them to go there?"

"We will cheat them! Didn't we run away the last time? We will feign escape, and they will definitely give chase. We will first form

a disposition at Narcissus Continent, then fake panic and run into Stone Forest Sand Continent, they will definitely give chase."

"What if they skirt around to other continents?"

"They can't, the Stone Forest Sand Continent is on a turbulent flow belt, warships can't pass by there. They have to enter through Stone Forest Sand, to the estuary behind our defensive line to go through."

"Master Bing's defensive lines are truly made impeccably, there is even a turbulent flow belt here!"

"But since they have to come here, why the need for us to cheat them?"

"We have to! If not they will only send a few people here!"

"That's true, that's true!"

In the discussion room, sinister green lights flooded everybody's eyes, like a pack of cunning wild wolves.



# Chapter 777 – Bai Yue's Plan

---

“They dare to look down on us? Their eye sights are truly terrible.”

When Bai Yue said those words, he spoke languidly, as though he had just woken up. He had become a famed general 20 years ago, and the White Crow Army under him was one of the three Gold Rank Armies in the Southern Region.

The other two Gold Rank Armies had rich and long histories with their own inheritances, while the White Crow Army was a recently promoted Gold Rank Army.

Bai Yue's life was very interesting, he was naughty and mischievous since young, and had always been like that until he graduated. He and Xie Yu An were classmates, but excelled in different aspects, he copied work, skipped classes, cheated in exams, and was a notorious troublemaker in school, and if not for his identity as someone from the Bai Family, he would have long been expelled.

No one in the Bai Family had ever thought that their future would depend on such a man.

Graduating at the age of 16, he returned home and ran to the Patriarch to ask him to organize and build up an army, wanting it to be his own. This absurd request was immediately denied, and who knew that Bai Yue did not give up, but he started to cause disturbances day and night. The Bai Family Patriarch and the clan

elders could not tolerate it, and simply made an army just to please the brat.

Everyone did not treat it importantly, to them, Bai Yue was just doing it for interest. Is it easy to build up an army? Money, Men, Equipment, can a 16 year old youth handle this?

The patriarch and clan elders were well aware of how Bai Yue managed to graduate.

Since it is just an oral placement, just let him play with the army.

Who knew that Bai Yue actually constructed his own army, the Patriarch and Clan Elders were surprised, but of course it was very slight. They all felt that 90% the army was created by pulling a few kids.

Alright, as long as they are happy with it.

The courageous Bai Yue pulled this newly&nbs

p;constructed army and went out excitedly to look for pirates. The entire Bai Family was so shocked from the news that they immediately sent people out to look for him, but to no avail.

After a year, just when the Bai Family thought that Bai Yue had met with some unfortunate situation, Bai Yu miraculously brought the fatigue army back.

From then on, the White Crow Army entered the eyes of the higher ups in the Bai Family. After their constant victories, although they fought with no names, but they grew and grew, and the number of experts that fell to them grew more and more. The White Crow Army became stronger and stronger, from a Bronze Rank Army to a Silver Rank Army, and finally, they recently stepped into the ranks of the Gold Rank Armies.

They were the opposite of Xie Yu An's calm and cautious behavior, Bai Yue was frivolous and did not act according to normal conventions, he was extremely quick witted and thus earned the nickname of [Southern Region Wolf].

But, no one had a positive opinion towards him.

The Three Great Armies from Honorable Martial Continent, Gou Cheng WenDao, Qiu Xu Hua and Mo Xin's armies were like three arrowheads that were moving forward uniformly.

Gou Cheng WenDao's side was gaining the upper hand with his strength, other than Xie Yu An's battle, the Southern Alliance's first line of defense had crumbled overnight. This caused everyone to know that there could be no reconciliation between the Southern Alliance and the Honorable Martial Continent.

Almost everyone felt pessimistic towards Southern Alliance's future, to them, it was only a matter of time for the Southern Alliance to fall.

Qiu Xu Hua had met with the first Gold Rank Army of the Southern Region, the Sacred Pagoda Army. Facing this seasoned opponent, As a genius brimming with talent, he was not at all at a disadvantage, both parties fought on par, both sides won some and lost some.

As for Mo Xin's side, they defeated another Gold Rank Army, the Southern Wind Army.

The Southern Wind Army's defeat led to an earthquake that collapsed the frontlines of the Southern Alliance. From the start, no one believed that the Southern Alliance could stop the great armies from Honorable Martial Continent, just like how no one believed that the Honorable Martial Continent was attacking for the sake of the Southern Alliance.

Honorable Martial Continent had made such huge movements just for a mere Southern Alliance?

Almost everyone believed that Honorable Martial Continent's Goal was not the Southern Alliance, but the entire Southern Region. The Honorable Martial Continent had eyed the Southern Region for a long time, and their ambitious and cunning hearts had long been abundantly clear. After the chaos at the initial start, the Southern Region had quickly reacted and formed a common understanding, that was to protect the Southern Region!

The Sacred Pagoda Army and Southern Wind Army moved out openly.

Everyone knew that the Southern Region was weaker in fighting strength, and with their fear towards the Honorable Martial Continent, they only mobilized the three Gold Rank Armies. As such, on paper, both parties still looked rather equal.

Both sides had Gold Rank Armies with similar numbers, so even if one side had a disadvantage, they would still be able to have a tough battle.

A battle between Gold Rank Armies was rarely seen in the course of the Sacred Saint Galaxy's history.

But when the Southern Wind Army suffered heavy losses, it caused the entire Southern Region to be at a loss for words. Compared to Gou Cheng Wen Dao's terrifying offensive ability and Qiu Xu Hua's brilliance, Mo Xin did not have much eye catching aspects, but the result was this seemingly ordinary person had produced the strongest fight.

Terror spread throughout the Southern Region quickly.

They were both Gold Rank Armies, but the disparity of strength was actually so huge. The Southern Wind Army was different from the White Crow Army that was recently promoted, the Southern Wind Army was an experienced unit, but no one would have expected them to lose so tragically.

With even the Southern Wind Army not being able to contend against Mo Xin, no one had any expectations for Bai Yue.

Each piece of news that they received was more tragic than before, as though the Southern Region had already lost, they did not even care about Bai Yue's support.

"Our qualifications are too shallow." The one who broke the news was Guan Jin, who had a calm expression, he was Bai Yue's adjutant, and was one of the oldest people in the White Crow Army.

Bai Yue who liked to move without restraint, with the meticulous and cautious Guan Jin, they were prime partners.

"That's right." Bai Yue placed his legs on the table, half lying down in his chair without any care for image, he spoke lazily: "But to be underestimated this badly, how can we not care?"

Do you even look like you care?

Guan Jin resisted the urge to roll his eyes, he then poured himself a cup of tea to soothe his throat: "Mo Xin will not be easy to handle."

"Then we won't handle him." Bai Yue said casually.

"We don't?" Guan Jin placed the tea cup down and frowned: "Other than us, nobody can stop him."

"Why must we stop him?" Bai Yue rebutted.

Guan Jin was startled.

“The Honorable Martial Continent said that their goal is the Southern Alliance.”

Guan Jin subconsciously refuted: “Impossible, just the Southern Alliance is not worthy for them to mobilize so much. Furthermore, if it truly was for Southern Alliance, they would not require to split their armies in three routes.”

“Whether if it is worth it or not, only they will know.” Bai Yue yawned: “Now, the entire Southern Region believes that they are rushing in for the Southern Region, but what if they are truly going for the Southern Alliance? It is easy to explain the reason the tri split force, the path is not able to fit so many armies. Furthermore, you see, are there anyone supporting the Southern Alliance? No, why? Everyone’s forces are focused on Mo Xin and Qiu Xu Hua.”

Guan Jin’s face turned gloomy, he trusted Bai Yue’s judgements, although he looked unreliable, but his judgement on the battle situation was through extremely sharp intuition, and almost never wrong.

“Then are we going to reinforce the Southern Alliance?” Guan Jin could not help but ask.

“No.” Bai Yue moved his body, after thinking about Tang Tian and his group, the laziness on his face became less as he revealed a

sneer: “The Honorable Martial Continent and the Southern Region has underestimated the ShangContinent too much.”

“The Southern Alliance has just experienced a lost.” Guan Jin reminded Bai Yue, then reinforced: “Your oldclassmate fought well.”

“I know him, he has that capability.” Bai Yue’s expression became more proper: “He is the kind of person that oncegiven the opportunity, he would grasp it and never let go. The Southern Alliance loss can only prove that they are abunch of amateurs, but they have a top grade commander.”

“Top grade commander?” Guan Jin was surprised, Bai Yue’s eyes were aimed for the top, and he would rarely givesuch high judgements to anyone.

Bai Yue smacked his forehead: “I forgot, they have two!”

Guan Jin started to think that Bai Yue was joking, Were top grade commanders grown on the streets likevegetables?

Bai Yue saw Guan Jin’s unhappy face, and then laughed: “Let’s not quarrel about this. The Southern Alliance is weak, but the Shang Continent is very strong. If the Honorable Martial Continent thinks that it is enough with Gou Cheng WenDao, then they will definitely suffer. Truthfully, I would rather fight with the Honorable Martial Great Generals or the Sacred Pagoda then fight with the people in Shang Continent.”



“Because their commander is that outstanding?” Guan Jin asked.

“No.” Bai Yue shook his head: “It’s Meng Nan, that inconceivable man. He is not that intelligent, but he is never afraid or scared, he will never retreat, even if there is no hope, he will never give up and will fight going down. These qualities that he brought into the Shang Continent, that is the most terrifying.”

“So you think they can stop Gou Cheng Wen Dao?”

“He is someone even I find troubling. Hey, do you not trust my eyesight?” Bai Yue showed his displeasure.

“Although I do not understand why you have so much confidence in them, but I hope that your judgement is right.” Guan Jin was already lazy to argue with him, and said: “Then where do we go now?”

“The Sacred Pagoda Army.” Bai Yue’s face was sinister: “We are gold rank amateurs, and definitely need to mix with the oldies. Furthermore, don’t you think it’ll be fun in a 2 v 1?”

Guan Jin was startled: “Then we let Mo Xin enter the Southern Region?”

“Enter? He won’t. Mo Xin is a cautious man, and will definitely not make the mistake of entering alone. They are not in the Honorable Martial Continent, entering too deep will only cut off their path of retreat, and they can just cry.” Bai Yue scoffed.

Guan Jin immediately noticed the advantages in Bai Yue's plan: "Then we need to conceal ourselves well, the Honorable Martial Continent is infiltrating the Southern Region deeply. If we are able to suddenly appear on Qiu XuHua's flank, he will definitely panic."

"Aiyah, since you know it already, then it is not my problem anymore. I want to go and sleep."

Bai Yue yawned and stretched, he closed his eyes, and not long later, he fell asleep.

Guan Jin was already used to it, he had become extremely excited over Bai Yue's brazen plan, and wanted to immediately set into motion. He finally understood why their movements were so weird.

He looked at Bai Yue, everyone had been cheated by the man sleeping in front of him.

But even though Bai Yue could sleep, Guan Jin himself could not. Their partnership was extremely special, Bai Yue would move his lips, but the one who truly did the work was Guan Jin. Guan Jin did things extremely meticulously, and rarely made any mistakes.

Qiu Xu Hua, we are coming for you.

# Chapter 778 – Formless Spirit Seal

---

“I’m disappointed.”

Gou Cheng WenDao’s voice was ice cold, his sinister and cold eyes swept across the generals that were seated upright, the war room extremely quiet. His bangs covered half of his eyes, bringing forth a bizarre coldness to his handsome yet pale face.

Besides sounding cold, he was emotionless.

“It was such a thin defense line, yet they blocked you guys for three days. Cliff, it was your responsibility.”

Cliff stood up and replied: “Yes!”

He did not push away the responsibility, and did not give any excuses, a failure was a failure.

“Sit down first.” Gou Cheng WenDao looked at the white haired Cliff, the lines on his cold and skinny face became gentler. Cliff, Ken, and Zeke were the big generals directly under him, Cliff having been by his side the longest, and had contributed the most. Furthermore, he understood that of his own generals, Cliff was a model militant, and would definitely not make any simple mistakes.

Xie Yu An was powerful, that was the thought he had when Cliff gave him a report.

“Yes!” Cliff did not say anything else and sat down.

Gou Cheng WenDao’s squinted eyes flashed a bit of admiration, regardless of victory or defeat, Cliff never gave himself any excuses, and never doubted any orders. For this point, Ken and Zeke could never compare to Cliff.

His expression became cold once again, and his tone became sharper: “We have not fought outside the Honorable Martial Continent for a long time, everyone is unfamiliar with it, we have very limited information on the Southern Alliance as well, but these are not excuses for failures.”

His gaze swept across the field: “Victory! I only want victory! Understand?”

The various generals’ hearts turned cold, they replied in unison: “Yes!”

The morale is good, seems like the impact Xie Yu An made is not big.

Gou Cheng WenDao remained expressionless as he judged his soldiers, and continued: “The opponent’s willpower is very strong, and they are not willing to admit defeat easily. They want to pull us into their tempo, and want to use their defense li

nes to form a meat grinder, so they hope we will split our

soldiers.”

He stopped for a moment, his eyes looking at his generals, he said indifferently: “We will split our soldiers.”

Although many of the generals remained calm, but the shock in their eyes still betrayed their expressions. But Cliff, Ken, and Zeke, the three big generals, did not reveal even a thread of surprise.

“Time.” Gou Cheng WenDao said coldly: “If we want to break away from this entanglement, we must be like sharp blades that cut through leather, we need to completely devastate their defense, leave them no time to reorganize their defensive lines. I have no patience to fight an endless battle with them. They are betting on us splitting our troops, so they can cut down on our advantage in numbers. But, this will increase our chances of finding loopholes to their defense.”

“I have a simple request, you must all push in together, and destroy this defensive line.”

Gou Cheng WenDao spoke monotonously, and the half squinted eyes suddenly opened up wide, which revealed a cold that was like blade auras.

“I will get rid of Xie Yu An, and leave the rest to you guys, any questions?”

Everyone stood up with cold expressions and complied in unison.

They were all completely shocked, the Master was actually taking action personally!

\*\*\*\*\*

Tang Tian opened his eyes, the Undying Sword released extremely fine vibrations that continuously swept through his body.

The condensed vibrations flowed deeply into his bones, causing the impurities that he had no way to remove to slowly be removed. The Crying Sword Seal's strengthening of the body was far slower than the Grasping Flower Seal and the Angry Fist Seal, but it was far more effective and in depth.

His body that had stopped improving was actually doing so again.

The reason why he did not leave to Flying Galloping City was because he felt that he was at another bottleneck.

The continuous intense battles against all the martial artists on the List of Powerhouses opened his eyes wide, with many enlightenments.

He maintained his meditative state and slowly reminisced about the battles, slowly gaining enlightenment. He was no longer unfamiliar with this state, in all of his training, he had already encountered such a situation many times.

He had gained enlightenment on three seals out of the Demon Six Seals, but in truth, other than the Angry Fist Seal, his Grasping Flower Seal and Weeping sword Seal's enlightenment were still rather shallow. The illusion state that he was in previously with Xiao Lan and the Undying Sword made him know that the illusion was not as simple as what it was.

Could everything that happened in the illusion be something that I had gone through before?

In that moment, he suddenly thought about his progress in training the Thousand Cleave Demonic Hand, which had some resemblance.

Illusion? I have never heard of such a powerful Illusion!

Alright, this seems a bit too complicated. Tang Tian immediately threw it to the back of his mind. Whether or not it was an illusion, it led him to gain enlightenment on the Grasping Flower Seal and Weeping Sword Seal, especially all the events that happened in the illusion were especially crisp and clear, he could clearly remember all of the emotions he felt inside.

It was truly an arduous battle.

Up until now, that battle in the illusion was the most bitter and most unbearable battle he was in. There were countless of times where he found himself crumbling, that if he were to do it all over again, he dare not confirm whether or not he would be able to

make it out.

For some reason, he suddenly thought about the emotions he had in that situation.

That was my critical point.

At that time, I relied completely on my instincts to battle. He did not collapse, but he was unable to exceed that critical point, and unexpectedly, it was in that period of time where his fighting style was the most fearsome.

Truly like a killing machine!

All of his methods used, all of his styles were unleashed to their maximum.

At that time, his Heavy Demonic Execution was simply unstoppable, far stronger than usual.

Could the state where I was at my limit truly be when I can unleash all of my potential?

Once that thought surfaced, it became unstoppable. Tang Tian's desire for more power was simply crazy, regardless of what method it was, as long as it could make him stronger, he would choose it without hesitation.



Everyone is still waiting for me to save them, I need to fight my way back to the Sacred Saint Galaxy!

But, how can I enter that critical state? Tang Tian frowned, the current him had a tyrannical physical strength, almost to the point where it would make people tremble. This level of strength did not only indicate his power of the physique, but it also included his extremely fearsome vitality, the amount of Life Origin Essence that he had devoured. An ordinary battle would be incapable of exhausting his physical strength. As his consumption was unable to exceed his recovery rate.

If not for the illusion, if not for the endless tides of gemstone blue dwarves, he would be unable to enter that critical state.

He laughed bitterly, he never thought that there would be a day that he would be annoyed by his recovery rate, which was something unthinkable in the past.

Does this path stop here?

Tang Tian was not resigned to it, he had a faint sense that his guess was right.

How can I let my physical strength reach its lowest?

Got it! Tang Tian who kept on racking his brains suddenly found the method.

Godfist! He still had the Godfist!

Every time I used Godfist, won't i feel depleted to the point of dying?

That's right!

Tang Tian immediately became excited, without saying a word, he flew up in the air.

In the clouds, Tang Tian's eyes were as bright as the stars as he slowly pulled out his fist stance.

Zzziiii!

Countless Law Threads converged towards his fist from all directions, countless variation marks swept into his mind. The light aura on his fist gradually grew brighter, and in the blink of the eye, it was like a sun.

The Sharp Wind City became as bright as daylight.

The terrifying aura emitted from the Godfist swept through the entire city, causing everyone to look up in shock at Tang Tian.

Tang Tian felt the power of physique in his body quickly depleting, his muscles became extremely weak, his glass like mental state was powerful, as two types of completely different

feelings emerged which was exceptionally contradicting.

No, not enough!

Although his body felt empty, but it was still not enough to reach the critical point.

Unknowingly, his body had become extremely powerful, to the point that Tang Tian was able to unleash Godfist. But what made him annoyed was that it meant he had to find a way to continue exhausting his strength.

What else can I do?

Another Godfist?

Tang Tian shook his head, he was already feeling empty, and definitely unable to endure a second Godfist, if he were to forcefully try it, he would plunge into a coma.

More importantly, the variations in his Godfist had reached its limit.

His Godfist contained all the variations in fist techniques according to his fundamental fist techniques, which were then reversed, changing from the complicated to its simplest form, concentrating all the variation marks into an ultimate fist technique. This fist no longer had any variations, only the variation marks, which attracts all the compatible Law Threads.

With many variation marks, he was able to form the scene whereby he attracted all the Law Threads around.

But regardless of how much variation marks he had previously, upon completion, there would only be one.

The air around Tang Tian had froze, countless Law Threads had converged into his fist, and were completely suppressed into a light ball.

What else can I do?

The variations in his right hand was already full like a pool filled with water and no longer able to accommodate another drop. Other than unleashing his fist, he could no longer make any other actions.

No, I still have my left hand, Tang Tian suddenly thought.

Right, I have my left hand!

What can my left hand do? Heavy Demonic Execution? Angry Fist Seal? Grasping Flower Seal? Or Weeping Sword Seal?

A few strange yet familiar seals appeared in his mind, and subconsciously, he started to form them with his left hand.

The seals were somewhat shaky, but still complete.

## Formless Spirit Seal.

Out of the Golem Five Gestures, he was most familiar with the Formless Spirit Gesture, because it increased intuition. But the Formless Spirit Seal was something he had not gained enlightenment on, and this made him feel very weird.

The Golem Five Gestures and the Demon Six Seals possessed a great relationship, and it could be considered a replicate of the Demon Six Seals, and in the past, it formed five unique meridians in his body which had their own uses. But after Tang Tian used the Sword Tempest Cyclone to refine his body and train out the unprecedented Zero Energy Body, all of the meridians, dantian and what not were all swept clean and disappeared.

The Demon Six Seals consumed power of the physique, with the variation marks in his hand, the remaining physical strength of his was quickly consumed.

When the Formless Spirit Seal was completed, Tang Tian's body jolted, a faint white air dissipated out in every direction with him as the center.

It was as if an invisible bowstring had been tugged by his ear, the sudden quiet movements of the string sounded out.

Tang Tian slowly opened his eyes, as the world before him became completely different.

# Chapter 779 - Ocean Guardian Stronghold

---

"Your work is the crucial point on whether we will win or lose in this battle!~"

Bing's affectionate words surfaced in Little Fool's mind. He felt that Bing was purely trying to squeeze him as a laborer, Those words are most likely meant to mislead me, but....what if it was real?

Little Fool hesitated many times, but he still hardened his skin and continued working overtime.

Alright, he is that terrifying.

Little Fool cheeks' had streamed with tears countless of times, it had been proven, compared to Bing's treacheries, he was still too naive.

Producing spirits required time, and the star treasures were almost depleted, Little Fool had thought about it for a long time, and in the end he placed his focus on the Black Gold. The Black Gold was outstanding and suitable to create weapons, but were more suitable to create warship weapons.

Little Fool placed his attention on warship weapons.

Compared to the complicated spirit treasures, the composition of warship weapons were much simpler. To other people, it would be

extremely difficult to manufacture, but it was not a problem for Little Fool. He had the Spirit Devouring Flame which made refining the Black Gold extremely easy.

Borrowing the techniques accumulated inside the Forceful Subjugating Bead, Little Fool's warship weapons were quite different from ordinary warship weapons.

But his personal time and focus was limited, and with the pressing time, he could only refine out the core parts, and leave the rest for others to complete. But by doing so, they were able to mass produce, although he became extremely tired.

Luckily for him, they completed it.

He suddenly became excited to see how Xie Yu An would look when he received the new batch of weapons.

\*\*\*\*\*

Ocean Guardian Stronghold.

"Add a few more here."

"Pay attention to the angles of offense."

"The training of the recruits is too slow, be urgent. Place the focus on controlling the warship weapons!"

Xie Yu An patrolled around the defensive line up and down without stopping a rest. There were many benefits from earning his fame after one battle, for example all the soldiers' morales were sky high, for example the recruitment of new soldiers was abundant.

But all of this did not affect Xie Yu An at all. He had experience wasted time, and knew of the hypocrisy of the world, people only valued what they liked.

The Ocean Guardian Stronghold guarded the Southern Ship Channel A, its significance being self-evident. The Southern Ship Channel A was the most important shipping route in the Southern Region, where the Ocean Guardian Stronghold used to be a supply point for the route. After that, following the growing bustling activities on Southern Ship Channel A, the Ocean Guardian's position rose, it was constantly reworked with more and more things, resulting in its current stronghold form.

The Ocean Guardian Stronghold was the Southern Region's most famed stronghold, the constant upgrading had swelled its size multiple folds.

It was mainly formed by a long and straight rock that had a diameter spanning 7km, the main bulk of it formed from Ocean Shell Rocks. Ocean Shell Rocks were more commonly seen in the Sea of Energy, it was able to effectively block against the corrosion from the Sea of Energy, But, it was not considered very sturdy, it was not extremely hard.



A large portion of these Ocean Shell Rocks were completely dug up, with a large quantity of materials reinforcing the rock, allowing it to be more sturdy. The Southern Region's thriving business made them have no lack of money, and the cost of Ocean Guardian Stronghold far exceeded that of ordinary strongholds.

There was once a military general from the Honorable Martial Continent that called the Ocean Guardian Stronghold a pearl in the Southern Region's Sea of Energy, secretly mocking the stronghold as being flashy. This ridicule often appeared, and the most common saying was that the amount of money spent on the Ocean Guardian Stronghold was sufficient to create three similar grade strongholds.

Right from the start, the Ocean Guardian Stronghold was like a luxurious palace and not a firm and unbreakable stronghold.

After the formation of the Southern Alliance, the Ocean Guardian Stronghold fell into its hands, with Xie Yu An ordered to explore ahead.

It was indeed like that.

The first time Xie Yu An laid his eyes on Ocean Guardian Stronghold, he had the same thoughts. After mixing a large quantity of gold micas and recasting again, the Ocean Guardian stronghold looked to be more luxurious and dazzling, the golden blinking stars resembled the stars in the sky, which can be seen even from a great distance.

As a stronghold, nothing was worse than this.

Its dazzlement and extravagance became a target observable from a 50km away, while the interior was extremely messy. The blind pile up of precious minerals and materials made the place look more like a warehouse instead of a stronghold.

Xie Yu An who was accustomed to hard times was dumbstruck. The majority of the materials were materials that he knew of, yet unusable, and were currently stockpiled inside.

Without hesitation, with Bing's intention to remodel it, Xie Yu An wielded the authority and began remodeling the place boldly and decisively.

Gold Micas could increase defence, but due to its dazzlement, they required to layer the walls with gray lacquer. The interior was hollowed up and left with a large space, but the structure was too loose and brittle, and thus he gathered a large amount of black stones and once again recast the twelve giant frames that held the stronghold in place, to assure that no matter how large an attack was launched, the stronghold would not crumble within. They remodelled the place and divided a place for living and a place for training and fighting, and increased reinforcements to the channels etc.

The large makeover caused the Ocean Guardian Stronghold's fighting capabilities to rise, from a luxurious and dazzling pearl, it became a gloomy and dark hedgehog.

Bing who handed the task of remodeling the Ocean Guardian Stronghold to Xie Yu An, also gave the task of protecting it to him.

Xie Yu An did not expect that the Honorable Martial Continent would infiltrate in, and did not expect that the Ocean Guardian Stronghold would quickly become a protective screen for the Shang Continent. He had previously spent a great deal of effort to remodel the Ocean Guardian Stronghold because he could not stand seeing the materials laying around.

But now he was glad to be able to fight.

A large transport ship docked nearby, Li Ran jumped down from the ship and limped towards Xie Yu An, and bowed: "Commander Xie, the things you need are here."

Xie Yu An revealed a look of joy as he returned a bow to Li Ran: "You've worked hard!"

Li Ran was Qin Yu Ran's head bodyguard, and performed in the defense at the Moon Manor. Qin Yu Ran felt that by following her, it was a waste of his talent, and after recommending him to Tang Tian, Li Ran quickly became a subordinate under Tang Tian.

As he was crippled in his right leg, Li Ran was not suitable to fight at the front lines, and thus Bing handed the logistics over to him. Li Ran was familiar with war matters, and with his outstanding talent and serious and cautious man, he quickly obtained Bing's trust.

Many large cases that was over 15m tall were slowly pushed out from the transport ship.

"Nothing much, it's my job." Li Ran handed a list over to Xie Yu An: "Please inspect it."

Xie Yu An long had his suspicions, with the size of the cargo, something was wrong, as though... there were too many things.

He accepted the list and swept through it, instantly becoming startled.

200 warship weapons, this number was far from what he had ordered.

Xie Yu An quickly regained his senses, he opened a box, and a strange black gold weapon appeared in front of everybody.

It had the shape of a shuttle, the size of it resembling a small boat, when the bow of it was raised up, the bent crescent faced the front, revealing two rows of seats that could hold 12 men.

Moon Ripple Wheel!

The eyes of the soldiers around Xie Yu An all lit up, it was the warship weapon in which they trained the most in, the [Moon Ripple Wheel], nicknamed [Small Boat]. The Moon Ripple Wheel required 12 men, with tremendous might, to control it, and demanded for a high level proficiency towards rippling blade

techniques.

Everyone shouted out in joy, the [Moon Ripple Wheel] in front of them was specially prepared for them, as the Swift Army were the experts in rippling blades. If they had the Moon Ripple Wheels in the last battle, they definitely would not had lost so many men.

The might of warship weapons were immense, but extremely expensive. Half of the cost of making a warship laid in its weapons. There were a total of 200 Moon Ripple Wheels sent to them. This number far exceeded the equipment for a fleet of ships, which was why the soldiers were so happy.

Xie Yu An did not stop his soldiers from celebrating as he stared at the Moon Ripple Wheel for half a day, as it revealed a faint gold color.

The batch of Moon Ripple Wheels were made completely from Black Gold, as black as ink, with an eye catching gold glimmer at the bend. He turned his head and looked at another wooden chest that was just pushed open, the crescent of the Moon Ripple Wheel also had the faint gold color.

Could it be....

Xie Yu An's heart was thumping hard, he almost pounced on it like a ravenous wolf.

All's well, all's well.....they are not gold rank [Moon Ripple

Wheels].

To be precise, they were half step gold rank, out of the entire Moon Ripple Wheels, only the crescent parts were gold rank, while the rest were silver grade.

For some reason, he heaved a sigh of relief, 200 gold rank Moon Ripple Wheels would be too terrifying. Up until now, he had not seen a true gold rank Moon Ripple Wheel, but he had the basic knowledge, gold rank warship weapons were definitely impossible to mass produce.

Half step gold rank warship weapons were already rarely seen. Xie Yu An was clear that on the market, half step gold rank Moon Ripple Wheels were extremely expensive, and the 200 Moon Ripple Wheels made him emotionally moved with the huge transaction of wealth.

He continued to check them when suddenly, he stopped abruptly.

Wait a minute!

The Moon Ripple Wheels here.....are completely different from the ones we used to use!

This feeling, is so familiar....where did I feel it before....

He suddenly opened his eyes wide, the New Moon Swallows

Command Whip!

Yes, it is the aura of the New Moon Swallows Command Whip.

It was made by Master Little Fool though, could it be that these Moon Ripple Wheels were made by Master Little Fool?

The overwhelming surprise shook him, when a brazen thought suddenly barged into his mind. Could it be, that these Moon Ripple Wheels are compatible with my New Moon Swallows Command Whip? The more Xie Yu An thought about it, the more plausible it became, and he wanted to test it out.

But, Li Ran was still waiting for him to inspect the goods, thus he suppressed the impulse.

The Black Gold produced by the Shang Continent were most suitable to manufacture warship weapons, thus Xie Yu An would apply for a request for a batch of warship weapons to increase the offensive capabilities of the stronghold. Although the remodelled Ocean Guardian Stronghold was already extremely sturdy, but Xie Yu An knew that his responsibility was big, he did not dare to be careless, and thus requested for it.

He was shocked by the 200 half step gold grade Moon Ripple Wheels.

Xie Yu An was beyond shocked. He never expected for the Shang Continent to be capable of producing half step gold grade Moon

Ripple Wheels, this rapid improvement was truly stupefying.

Furthermore, it was too rich and overbearing!

"Master Bing also wanted to give this to Commander Xie." Li Ran said.

There's something else?

Xie Yu An was surprised.

But when he saw the chest, he squinted, the chest that was as tall as a human was actually made from black gold.

What's inside?

Xie Yu An suppressed his suspicions and opened the chest.

The dazzling gold light lit up the entire interior of the transport ship, causing everyone to stop all of their movements, and turned to look towards the gold light.

An imposing gold armor stood tall and majestic right in front of them.



# Chapter 780 - The Mantis Stalks the Cicada, Unaware of the Oriole Behind

---

"Boss, we caught up!"

Ah Leng's voice was filled with excitement, and upon hearing him, the generals around Shi Sen immediately revealed looks of joy.

"Follow them, but be careful, don't make them cautious."

Shi Sen remained calm, he was not one to celebrate early. He had fought for many years, but it was his first time meeting such crafty opponents.

Mei Chen Xiu, this gentle and woman-like name, was a name that made even Bing feel vexed. With the infiltration of the Honorable Martial Continent, Bing immediately stopped and retreated to the defense lines and ignored Mei Chen Xiu.

But Shi Sen did not give up.

If it was just Mei Chen Xiu alone, there would not be a need for so much effort, but behind Mei Chen Xiu was a terrifying woman, Lady Rou. Lady Rou possessed sharp political senses, and excelled in plotting and planning.

If the two existed separately, it would not be worrying.

Mei Chen Xiu fought with random armies, the backbone of his subordinates were all Honorable Martial Continent pirate commanders, but they were unable to change the qualities of the pirates. No matter how outstanding the pirates were, they were still pirates. Lady Rou moved around in various influences, with her money and power, she formed many forms of communications.

If the two of them were to collaborate, it was enough to cause fear in others.

The Honorable Martial Continent's attack has caused various powerhouses in the Southern Region to panic, which was perfect for Lady Rou to gain additional ground. As for Mei Chen Xiu and his army of pirates, if he were to find a footing, it was undoubtedly a fatal venomous sting lodged in their backs.

Bing needed to consider for the big picture, compared to the big picture, Mei Chen Xiu and Lady Rou were not as directly dangerous and pressurizing as the three armies from the Honorable Martial Continent.

Shi Sen had his own considerations.

The Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts had been replenished with fresh blood, their overall fighting ability had not improved but instead fell, and thus he required time to grind them and make them a whole. Mei Chen Xiu's White Pirates were undoubtedly the best grindstone for them.

The other reason was their way of fighting. The Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts' forte was in long distance ambush and flexibility, raiding in long range behind enemy lines, but what was extremely vital for the Southern Alliance in the initial phase of the war, was a strong defensive line footing.

Bing agreed to his request.

Shi Sen led the Underworld Demonic Mounts and chased after the White Pirates.

The other party's craftiness caused Shi Sen to become extremely careful, he knew he only had one chance, and if he were to fail, then the enemy would be even more difficult to catch the second round. Furthermore, he had a limited time for this mission, once the frontlines were in danger, he had to lead the Demonic Mounts back to reinforce the frontlines.

Shi Sen was like an experienced hunter, patient and cautious as he stalked the White Pirates.

Mei Chen Xiu never thought that there would actually be people chasing behind him.

In the previous bout of hide n seek, the other party was helpless against him, making him extremely excited. Lady Rou did not reveal anything to him, so when he learned that the Honorable Martial Continent's armies were invading the Southern Region, he was shocked, but he very quickly sensed that it was an absolutely

good opportunity!

Truly, he sensed that the pressure on him had disappeared.

The great armies were pressuring the Southern Alliance, causing them to give up on him.

He tested them by attacking a few cities, and did not find any traces of warships. He did not expect that Shi Sen did not take any warships, but brought the Demonic Mounts and traversed the Sea of Energy by foot, pursuing him closely and unwilling to let go.

Following the reports regarding the frontlines, Mei Chen Xiu became even more relaxed. The Southern Alliance's first defense line had been breached, although it revealed Xie Yu An as an outstanding military general, but the entire Southern Alliance was not performing well.

The breach of the first defense lines meant that the Southern Alliance's pressure had increased.

He was able to imagine the immense pressure on them.

A god sent opportunity!

Mei Chen Xiu became extremely eager and excited, the attention of the Southern Alliance had been taken away by the front lines, and their empty behind was like an unprotected beauty, which was so attractive and alluring.

Destruction, he only needed to cause great destruction.

Destroying the Southern Alliance's supply lines and their workshops would cause the Southern Alliance to bleed heavily. Although he did not think that the Southern Alliance was able to stop the Honorable Martial Continent's great armies from advancing, but his actions would greatly hasten the Honorable Martial Continent's plan to subdue the Southern Region.

That was what they were for.

He did not make his move impulsively, after a few bouts of probing and attracting panic, he would lead his troops and disappear amongst the crowd. The more anxious the frontlines were, the more desiring the backlines would be, which was not only eyed by him alone, there were many in the same line as him who were preparing to attack.

To pirates, chaos was the best, and only by disturbing the water would one be able to touch the fish. Whether or not the Southern Region was sieged did not matter to them. The greedy pirates only wanted to profit from it.

As time passed, the pirates' activities quickly became more rampant.

Amidst the chaos and panic, Mei Chen Xiu's White Pirates infiltrated in like sharks ready to ambush from within the deep sea.

He was gradually closing in on his target, the Steel Mountain Continent.

The Steel Mountain Continent was not a big continent, but very few people knew that this seemingly ordinary continent was actually where the Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce, the leading weapons trade in Southern Region had its base camp in.

The Honorable Martial Continent had long infiltrated the Southern Region, and after knowing Mei Chen Xiu's activities, the Honorable Martial Continent intelligence immediately supplied him with an important target list. Inside this target list was what Mei Chen Xiu had long desired, and he finally chose Steel Mountain Continent.

Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce was the Southern Alliance's most important member, and as a weapons trader, the majority of the weapons supplied to the Southern Alliance was from them.

Mei Chen Xiu was calm, even with the smooth advancement, he did not think that the battle would end quickly. It was a battle to conquer, and to the Southern Region who had no way of retreat, they would definitely fight to the death.

Since ancient times, battles seeking to conquer would always receive the strongest retaliation by the locals.

If they could destroy the source of the Southern Alliance's weapons, especially their base, it would undoubtedly be fatal. This

attack would not be obvious in the short run, but once the battle was drawn out, they would not have sufficient equipment to resupply, and this would gradually influence the war situation, which would last a long time.

The construction of any weapons base could not be completed in a short time.

That was where one would truly bleed.

Leaving aside strategic importance, the Steel Mountain Continent had a weak defence, which was the most vital part for Mei Chen Xiu's plan. The Steel Mountain Continent only had one army in defence, and it was the army belonging to the Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce. In the Honorable Martial Continent's reports, this Steel Mountain Army was described as a group of rich traders in luxurious equipment.

It is also time to replenish myself.

Just by thinking of the piles of weapons made Mei CHen Xiu drool. His White Pirates were comprised of the Honorable Martial Continent elites, but their equipment was sloppy. Of course, to any pirates, their current equipment was satisfactory, but to the ambitious Mei Chen Xiu, it would never be enough.

He was not here to watch a show.

He was hoping that the Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce's weapons

would truly be able to equip them well.

In his vision, the distant Estuary stronghold started to get closer, they were advancing quickly, but the stronghold did not give out any warnings, as though the other party did not even notice them.

Mei Chen Xiu knew that they were doing an infiltration mission, but seeing the estuary get closer and closer, he could not stop his heart from beating quickly. He had to control his own breathing, the fleet was quietly advancing, the dark Sea of Energy was extremely calm, and only the distant light aura that emitted a faint yellow light shot in through the warship's windows.

This should probably be my most important battle.

Something rarely seen happened, his palms were perspiring.

If it was Qiu Xu Hua, encountering this situation, he won't be anxious right.

Upon thinking of that, his anxiousness dropped by half, and his breathing calmed down. He got closer and closer to the estuary, but the stronghold did not have any movements at all, causing his mood to be strangely calm.

"Go closer."

He spoke gently, as though he was afraid of awakening the dormant stronghold, but this whisper of a command, was



extremely clear to his fleet. The pirates became restless, the stronghold was already 1km away, which was a distance sufficiently close for them to attack.

The elites of the Honorable Martial Continent were growling, the restlessness became more as they got closer.

600m.

300m.

150m.

Mei Chen Xiu seemed to be able to see the sleeping figure behind the window of the stronghold, he could not help but smile, this smile had no warmth, but was as cold as a blade.

"Full force attack!"

Countless thick light auras condensed like a rain of light regiments, surging out from the pirate fleet.

With such close proximity, the estuary stronghold was instantly decimated.

An even more dazzling light aura lit up from inside the stronghold, the sturdy walls instantly shattering like paper, the pieces that were ripped apart flew in all directions, the scene was

so bright it looked like they were devoured by flames.

Even the pirates were stunned, the explosion swept across the fleet like a tornado.

It was as if an invisible hand had pushed the entire fleet back by 60m.

When the pirates regained their balance, they watched blankly at the terrifying flames from the stronghold, and after that short silence, screams of joy came out.

The current Steel Mountain Continent was like a half naked beauty who was simply too alluring. Their only obstruction was the Steel Mountain Army.

Mei Chen Xiu was high in spirits, indescribable feelings surged in his chest, even if it were a group of elites standing in front of him, he had the confidence of winning.

This battle will definitely shake the Southern Alliance.

Fame General Mei Chen Xiu's preliminary battle, this phrase is truly exciting.

"Land on the Steel Mountain Continent."

All of the warships quickly surged into the Estuary.

When the last pirate ship entered Steel Mountain Continent, the Sea of Energy became silent once more, and only the remnants of the stronghold at the estuary remained burning.

Nearby the stronghold, the unstable energy were quickly ignited, and in the blink of the eye, it transformed into a sea of flames.

The sea of flames burned brightly, distorting the Sea of Energy.

In the distance, figures appeared from the darkness as they surfaced up silently.

# Chapter 781 - The Battle in the Steel Mountain Continent

---

Xu Hong Lin was extremely worried.

The Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce had joined the Southern Alliance, and was able to share the profits from the Pontoon Bridge, giving it a bright future. The black gold was an extremely vital and strategic resource, it made Xu Ji Worldwide commerce a tiger with wings. Although the Bai Family was able to take a portion of it, but ultimately they were not specialized weapons traders. This point could be clearly seen on the weapons list, with close to 70% of the weapons of Southern Alliance given to Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce to manufacture. All of the Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce's workers worked overtime with the full load operations.

But this vibrant workplace was extremely frail under the dark clouds of war.

Xu Hong Lin was extremely clear of the family matters, although the Steel Mountain Army was well equipped, their strength was not considered strong. The Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce rarely needed to mobilize the army, and even if there were troubles, they never needed to rely on the Steel Mountain Army. Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce had many allies, and many famous armies frequently traded with them. When they required an army, they had a large array to select from.

As long as the Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce was willing to provide rewards, then the various larger armies were willing to give their

service. To the robust and rich Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce, money was never the problem. In contrast, the Steel Mountain Army that had many Xu Family disciples, as long as many injuries were to occur, countless of the clan elders, managers etc would run over to give trouble.

Even the Patriarch of Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce did not want to come into contact with such people.

The Steel Mountain Army became more and more lazy, even their regular daily training lessened to the point that there were even instances where the military machines and weaponry were stolen and sold. With regards to these matters, Xu Hong Lin could only close on eye.

The Steel Mountain Army was already rotten to the core.

After another two more months, his term would come to an end, and he was already thinking of ending it early. He had been called and talked to by the Patriarch and Clan Elders many times recently, and what they wanted was that he could direct and restart the Steel Mountain Army.

Xu Hong Lin knew why.

The invasion of the Honorable Martial Continent had made the entire Southern Region chaotic, and everyone was in danger. All the armies that partnered with them were currently busy themselves, how could they take care of the Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce? The situation in the Southern Region was quickly

turning from bad to worse. Countless pirates were emerging in rapid succession from god knows where, and they were appearing everywhere. Consecutive convoys were plundered from, shocking the entire Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce. Then, they were shocked to realize that even with money, they could not purchase an army, and immediately flew into a panic, that was when they remembered their own Steel Mountain Army.

Xu Hong Lin secretly shook his head, If we had known earlier, there wouldn't be a need for all of this?

It's too late.

The current Steel Mountain Army that had long been neglected, completely had no fighting ability.

But the Patriarch continued to encourage them, Xu Hong Lin knew that the situation was dire, and was trying to think of ways to remedy the situation. All of the young masters in the Steel Mountain Army could not be counted on, and he might as well recruit another batch of people to serve as the Steel Mountain Army to be prepared for battle.

He continued to train them daily, but in such a short time frame, only the heavens would know how much use that would be. Although Xu Hong Lin was serious in his work, but he knew it in his heart, that all of his work was to give him a bit of consolation.

Ultimately, he was still a Xu Family Disciple, thus Xu Hong Lin gave it his all.

It was just that he was worried that the Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce would be targeted. Their pitiful fighting strength and their desirable wealth would attract countless of prying eyes.

The only thing that made him feel at ease was the defense of the Steel Mountain Continent. The Steel Mountain Continent was Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce's headquarters, and they did not spare anything for the construction of the various defensive strongholds.

Suddenly, the loud warning alarm broke the Steel Mountain Continent's tranquility.

Xu Hong Lin's face underwent a huge change, he suddenly felt that his mouth had turned bitter, the thing that he was most worried about had happened!

The soldiers were all stunned and startled, and only awoke from their daydreams a few seconds later, the barracks became a burning hive, all the soldiers were running aimlessly like flies, causing the entire place to be extremely chaotic.

A group of small black dots in the distant sky could be seen quickly approaching them.

It was raining.

Xu Hong Lin raised his head up, the raindrops falling from the sky hit on his face, it was cold and refreshing.

Bang bang bang!

Fire regiments surged out one after another, many workshops started to explode into pieces. The crowd that had lost control screamed and ran all around, looking like ants running around after their nest had been trampled from a bird's eye view.

Destruction, we only need destruction.

Destroy as much as we like.

The pirates were currently in a state of euphoria, there was nothing else as exciting as the scene before their eyes. The entire Steel Mountain Continent was screaming under their feet, the immense wealth right in front of them to hug. Countless people were dying in the time it took them to think about it.

They killed crazily, screaming out loud as they opened fire, the thick fiery light pillars and balls of light plunged into the ground.

Bang!

A blue light shot out from one of the spires and struck the starboard of Mei Chen Xiu's warship, causing the ship to sway.

Even more light auras shot out from the ground.



The long stronghold entered Mei Chen Xiu's vision.

Mei Chen Xiu judged from the rate of fire from below, the stronghold was lacking in manpower, and their training was rather limited.

Mei Chen Xiu had a calm expression: "Every ship listen, you are to move in at full speed and prepare to fire together."

The pirates that had lost control were slapped by the Honorable Martial elites a few times before waking up. All of the warships stopped their attacks, and pulled back to form a formation, and followed Mei Chen Xiu's warship and rushed in.

Mei Chen Xiu shook his head, In the end, they are still just pirates.

If it was an Honorable Martial Continent fleet, they would have stopped attacking at the same time that he gave the orders.

The pirates moved in at full speed, causing the commander garrisoned in the stronghold to panic, as he shouted with all of his might: "Attack! Full force attack!"

Bang bang bang!

One light beam after another lit up and landed on one of the pirate ships, causing it to explode into flames and black smoke, but the other pirate ships did not attack.

When the fleet was just 300m away, the commander inside the stronghold revealed a look of despair.

Inside the warship, Mei Chen Xiu's clear order boomed out: "Fire!"

All of the pirate ships roared at the same time as countless of light auras immediately fell onto the stronghold.

Bang!

A gigantic large regiment devoured the stronghold.

The intense assault resulted in a shock wave that swept in all directions, and inside the 600m scope around the stronghold, all the buildings were razed to the ground.

Everyone in the Steel Mountain Continent was stunned by the scene, by the time they regained consciousness, all the fighting spirit in their hearts crumbled. The soldiers inside the other various strongholds all started to spill out like the tide and ran frantically in every direction.

By the side of Mei Chen Xiu stood an extremely ordinary man, he was a Honorable Martial Continent spy that had infiltrated the Steel Mountain Continent. Mei Chen Xiu was able to smoothly bypass the stronghold at the estuary and enter, due to him. He had no name and was simply called Rust (Tie Xie).

Rust praised out loud: "General Mei's judgement is truly awe-inspiring."

Not everyone would have the courage to bring their fleet close to a stronghold to attack close range. The Steel Mountain Continent had many strongholds, and if they were to destroy stronghold after stronghold, ignoring the fact that it would take time and effort, but it would defeat the fighting spirit of the citizens.

They were just a group of pirates and if they could not resolve their enemies in a short period of time, they would fall into a more dangerous position. Once the Steel Mountain Continent organizes and resists them, it would be their turn to be trapped and be unable to escape.

Mei Chen Xiu's volley of fire not only destroyed the stronghold, but destroyed the enemy's will to fight.

Mei Chen Xiu was indifferent to Rust's praise, his gaze landed on an incoming group of people.

They were extremely agile and dodged the attacks from the warships.

"Steel Mountain Army?" Mei Chen Xiu was surprised.

"To be precise, it is a replacement Steel Mountain Army." Rust looked at them and laughed: "The real Steel Mountain Army had

long ran off with wet pants. Xu Hong Lin knew that those young masters are not reliable, thus recruited a new batch of people with the plan to replace the army. By the looks of their figures, I think half of them had already ran away."

So it was like that.

Mei Chen Xiu was enlightened, but he did not hesitate as he spoke coldly: "Prepare the warships to land and fight."

Looking at the incoming group of people, Mei Chen Xiu's eyes flashed with a cold glint, the group of people that overestimate themselves are the last resistance in Steel Mountain Continent.

Once we trample over them, nothing can stop us.

Figures jumped down from the pirate ships, the pirates released weird screams and howls as they jumped down from the sky.

The pirates were not well versed in tactics like that of elite armies. Mei Chen Xiu could only prepare training that was relative and useful for them, to allow them to be stronger than ordinary pirates.

But to handle this situation, it is more than enough.

The pirates quickly formed into small groups, and like a sharp dagger, they plunged into the Steel Mountain Army's weak spots, bringing forth a rain of blood.

Watching from his warship as the two parties collided, Mei Chen Xiu looked as though he was admiring the spectacular scene.

The taste of victory is so enchanting.

500 Underworld Continent Demonic Mounts stood upright, the establishment of the Southern Alliance had led Shi Sen's name to soar in Underworld Continent. The declined Demonic Mounts once again entered the eyes of the people, and like a rotten log, the Underworld Continent once again ignited with hope. More and more Underworld Continent youths joined in the test to be Demonic Mounts, and their numbers started to increase once again.

But Shi Sen did not expand the size of the Underworld Continent Demonic Mounts, but instead took a step forward and compressed them.

From the many Underworld Continent Demonic Mounts, he chose 500 men who were true elites. All of them were Silver Saints, and had endured the most brutal tests and were extremely powerful. Out of them, any one would definitely be able to hold the position as captain in any other armies.

But under Shi Sen, they were ordinary soldiers.

Shi Sen was able to observe Mei Chen Xiu from afar without alerting the enemy because they did not sit in warships. Travelling in the Sea of Energy by foot had already become a unique way of

training for the Shang Continent.

Shi Sen was one of those who kept to such a training method.

No one knew that he had once brought the 500 Underworld Continent Demonic Mounts and avoided all the cities, ship routes, sentries, and reached the borders of the Honorable Martial Continent.

The rain falling grew heavier, the flames that soared to the sky in the distance would occasionally explode and cause the ground to shake.

Shi Sen did not say a word, holding onto Evening Snow Ocean's white blade hilt, he advanced forward quickly.

The 500 Underworld Continent Demonic Mounts behind him moved in the exact same way as him, with their blades in hand, their movements were silent.

They moved at the same speed, at the same strides, their entire formation looked as though it was cut out by a blade, even their breathing were in unison.

The 500 men had formed a giant slaughtering ghost that moved ahead silently.

Their speed was not considered fast, and amidst their silent somber, they gradually pushed open the curtains of rain.

# Chapter 782 - Swoop Down! Underworld Continent Demonic Mounts!

---

Underworld Continent Demonic Mounts, it was a name that had long fallen.

Their past glory had declined over the years, but Shi Sen was still extremely calm. With more Underworld Continent youths taking the initiative to join the Demonic Mounts and go through the cruel tests, this allowed the Underworld Continent Demonic Mounts to enter everyone's eyes once again.

People who had some slight knowledge would be able to see that the Sacred Saint Galaxy had reached a crucial point.

The intrusion of the Honorable Martial Continent was destined to break the stable situation between the four large regions. War was no longer fixed to the small continent battles, but the big heads were all moving, and the cruelty and brutality of the war far exceeded what anyone could imagine.

The Sacred Saint Galaxy brought with it darkness and chaos.

Maybe the Honorable Martial Continent could unify the entire world, but the bigger probability was that ever since the Sacred Saint Galaxy started the ignition, all the heroes from all over would not stop until the expedition was put to pieces.

The most prominent proof was that bandits were springing up

from everywhere.

No one felt safe, and all of the powerhouses were doing the same thing, preparing for war. Even those that did not have any heart to conquer others, with an army in their hands, it would allow them to have a more peaceful sleep.

The Underworld Continent was a land that supplied traditional soldiers, and naturally their trend developed according to the situation. A current ordinary Underworld Continent Soldier had a yearly salary far exceeding 300 thousand cloud coins. This current price was something that was never seen before.

The price to recruit a Demonic Mount was even more exorbitant, because the free Underworld Continent Demonic Mounts in the market had all disappeared.

Over 90% of the Demonic Mounts were in Shi Sen's control.

As the man to personally pull the Underworld Continent Demonic Mounts' name out of the mud, Shi Sen's prestige had long soared in the Demonic Mounts.

Shi Sen himself understood, that the people who all went through the Demonic Mounts test were all geniuses, and naturally were arrogant. There was no one who clearly knew more about what the Demonic Mounts truly wanted, because he wanted it as well.



When he spoke to the ambitious youths calmly saying that the Underworld Continent Demonic Mounts would become the number one mounts,

all the young riders had suspicions towards him, but when they saw the Shi Sen's units' equipment, all of their eyes turned red.

In terms of wealth and overbearingness, the Shang Continent was definitely unable to enter the top 50 in Sacred Saint Galaxy, but in terms of armies, very few people could compete with them. The Underworld Continent was an extremely barren and cold place, since when have they seen high grade objects like spirit objects? Master Shi Sen said, that as long as they joined them, each person would receive one. One spirit object per person? Everyone thought that they had heard wrongly.

They brought along their metal wings and black armor, called the Black Feather Armor, which had the insignia of Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce, something that only the highest grade equipment would have. Master Bing then further into details, stating that each armor's price outside would be a maximum of 80 million cloud coins.

Lodged onto the back were Empyrean Ice Tree Spears, which were not sold outside, it was said that each spear cost 100 million. One, two.....five spears!

The blades were cheaper, 60 million cloud coins per blade, which was in the highest grade Black Feather series of Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce.

Each person wielded 8 weird bronze boxes on their waists.

They were armed to the teeth!

All of the youths who were previously suspecting Shi Sen of boasting without proof, upon seeing the imposing equipment, were all convinced by him.

Gold would forever be much more convincing than boastful words.

All of the youths rushed up and happily took their equipment, clumsily equipping them on. When Shi Sen calmly said that they were about to begin training, no one cared much about it. In the Underworld Continent, only the strongest warriors had the qualifications to be hailed as Demonic Mounts. All of these young Demonic Mounts went through the toughest and harshest of tests to obtain the title.

But very quickly, they realized the bitterness they had to face.

All kinds of training made them complain without stopping. But the most brutal training was the dragging in the Sea of Energy.

All of the young Demonic Mounts were all brilliant and courageous people. Who have not walked inside the Sea of Energy before?

Shi Shen brought them from one continent to another without any indication of stopping. One of the hardships was they only found that out through experience, if not for them being naturally arrogant, they would have given up a long time ago. The youths all clenched their jaws and followed Shi Sen, defending against the corrosion of the Sea of Energy, it was extremely difficult to move.

Continent after continent without any intention of stopping, they never entered any city. If they were lacking in something, they would attack pirates, they would either fight or walk.

Until one day, when Shi Sen said that the dragging training was over, when they realised in shock that they had already arrived at the borders of the Honorable Martial Continent.

They did not dare believe their own eyes, but when they regained their senses they understood what accomplishment they had achieved.

There had never been anyone who had travelled so far by walking!

Just when they were crying with tears of joy, Shi Sen gave the order to return to the Shang Continent. Just when they were filled with anticipation to the idea of having a boat sending them back, Shi Sen destroyed their hopes mercilessly.

They had to walk back.

Up till now, Shi Sen could still remember the stunned looks on their faces, to the point that they were about to cry.

The training that exceeded all torture also made them improve greatly. The continuous grinding and sharpening gradually removed the naivety on their faces, and what replaced it was experience and stability.

Shi Sen felt immensely proud, it was a brand new Underworld Continent Demonic Mounts.

The majority of the soldiers in the past troops had returned to the Underworld Continent to serve as military instructors. They had many internal injuries, and along with their age, their fighting capabilities had already stagnated without any space to grow.

They were destined to lay down and serve to help the next generation.

The young Demonic Mounts in front of him were still in their growing stage, and had a much broader space to grow. He carefully led this group of eagle chicks, ensuring that they did not go down the wrong path, and idle away.

The Shang Continent's atmosphere was a thousand times better than how it was when they just started out, because their boss that they could rely on and give their lives for, and regardless if it was Master Bing or Master Tang Chou, they were the most outstanding commanders he had ever met, and there was nothing that was in a mess.

The new Underworld Continent Demonic Mounts became the sharpest blade.

Our achievement, must shock the entire Sacred Saint Galaxy.

That was Shi Sen's ambition.

A genuine and important battle.

Shi Sen was at peace with himself, his expression was calm, the scenery by his sides swept past extremely quickly, and he looked as though he was skating forward silently on ice.

The young Demonic Mounts behind him moved as silent as him.

They were like a group of specters moving in quietly.

Ah Leng was one of the older generation that stayed because of the insufficient numbers, he was still considered young and had outstanding talent, and was the most outstanding man compared to his peers. His current strength was only a step away from a Gold Rank martial artist.

Hand in hand with Ah Leng was Huo Qing, he was a young and brilliant lad, greatly recognized by Shi Sen. He did not disappoint Shi Sen's hopes for him, and continued to train and push himself harder than the rest, and took great interest in formations.

Shi Sen reckoned that Huo Qing had the potential to become a real general.

Of course, that was looking into the future, as the current batch of Demonic Mounts were reluctant to leave him.

Shi Sen held onto the Evening Snow Ocean's blade hilt, his state of mind was extremely calm, the sky full of fire and dense smoke did not cause any fluctuation in his mind. The loss in the Steel Mountain Army would definitely affect the front lines, but this influence would only be in the short term, and would not magnify.

This loss, in exchange for wiping out Mei Chen Xiu's opportunity was worth it.

Regardless of what happens today, we cannot let the pirates survive and leave.

His gaze landed on the pirate fleet in the sky that had tightly surrounded a warship. When they were initially moving in at full force, the single warship's troops at the front were not afraid of Mei Chen Xiu. When the situation stabilized and the warship reorganized, they had obviously become cautious of him.

Truly a powerful man.

Even Shi Sen had to give his respect towards mei Chen Xiu. If he had met Mei Chen Xiu in the past, he would have definitely turned

his head and ran. But currently, not only did it not make him feel fear, but instead incited his determination.

Without saying a word, he begun to increase his speed.

Without making any sound, the Demonic Mounts behind also started to increase speed.

The pirates did not notice that a group of specters had appeared behind them, their gaze were fixated and attracted to the Steel Mountain Army's equipments. The last thin layer was already broken and were in a disarray, and it was almost time to reap their harvest. Their excitement was so immense that it caused them to tremble, the instinct to slaughter and massacre had ignited every inch of their muscles and their blood.

Shi Sen who kept on increasing speed remained expressionless as he got closer to the enemy fleet.

They did not even have their energy barriers activated.

Shi Sen squinted his eyes, his face that was covered with experience and a steel like cold, while increasing his grip on Evening Snow Ocean.

At a distance of 500km, the Underworld Continent Demonic Mounts borrowed the over of the smoke and gradually started to climb. They were like a regiment of black flowing clouds, quietly increasing their altitude.

They welcomed the rain, passed through the dense layer of clouds, and arrived above the clouds.

The sunlight shone on their bodies from the sun behind them, the pirate fleet beneath the clouds were shrouded by the dense layer of clouds, as explosions continued to occur.

This regiment of black clouds that continued to rise formed a beautiful arc in the sky, and begun to swoop down, the black feather armors' wings started to tremble intensely, releasing a trembling buzzing sound.

The light buzzing sound sounded out together, arising from the sea of clouds, the air that they swept past would have fine ripples that reflected the sun.

The sea of clouds became bigger in their eyes, the young Demonic Mounts started to breathe faster, as there was nothing as exhilarating as diving down.

Shi Sen remained extremely calm, he welcomed the fast sweeping wind, but appeared to be strolling leisurely, he gradually unsheathed the Evening Snow Ocean, revealing its crystal jade blade body that reflected in the sunlight, making it look extremely beautiful.

The blades were unsheathed.



Different light auras lit up from their bodies. Some light auras flowed along the blade bodies, some connected with each other, some were like flames flowing around each individual's bodies, all of them were different.

They activated their star treasures, and it suddenly felt as if there was an invisible hand approaching down from the heavens.

Whoosh!

They were like a black seabird, plunging into the white clouds.

Chi!

They were like burning flatiron that formed a large hole in the dense sea of clouds, and the pirate fleet appeared in their vision.

Borrowing the power of the dive, they continued to increase their speed!

Zzi!!!

Their formation revealed many rays of dazzling fire tongues, they were like gigantic boulders of flames, whistling downwards.

Shi Sen's eyes revealed a smear of red, the armor on his body suddenly lit up with a dazzling gold light, and he slashed Evening Snow Ocean downwards.

"Kill!"

The five hundred Underworld Demonic Mounts roared: "Kill!"

In the mix of flames and rain, their roars being the thunder, the Underworld Continent Demonic Mounts smashed into the densely packed fleet.

## Chapter 783 – The Battle Has Just Begun!

---

The Underworld Continent Demonic Mounts that dived down into the pirate fleet exploded out and split three ways, entering the fleet.

The sky full of whistling seemed to stop momentarily, the ear shattering explosions halted, everything stopped in that second, as though time had slowed down.

The sudden ambush caused Mei Chen Xiu's face to change: "Ambush...."

Before he could finish his sentence, the consecutive explosions overpowered his voice.

His eyes opened up, a blade aura that was over 100m long brought forth a hair standing whistle, and ferociously smashed into a pirate ship that was in front of him. The sturdy hull smashed into countless of pieces like paper.

Bang!

A gigantic ball of fire birthed out from the ship, the dazzling explosion of white flames seemed to be forming a monster from hell, it quickly swelled up and devoured the entire ship.

Mei Chen Xiu's face turned white, his hands cold.

His mind was in a mess, his knowledge surpassed others, but he was always responsible for giving advice, and after arriving in the Southern Region, he finally got to lead. In the past, his battles were always against pirates. With his knowledge, adding the Honorable Martial Continent's elites acting as his backbone, facing other pirates, it was simply overwhelming victories. He rarely needed to fight a bitter battle, and it was his first time facing such a difficult situation.

The instinctive fear occupied his state of mind, it was as though he had received a huge hit to his head, his face was filled with nothing but fear.

In terms of reacting to danger, he was beneath his pirates subordinates.

Maybe it was due to their low achievements, the experienced pirates were all unorganized, but when it came to preserving their lives, they were all better than Mei Chen Xiu, a military general from a life of discipline. All of the pirates had completely lost control, with only one thought in their mind, run!

The remaining pirates that remained on their ships completely ignored the pirates that had jumped ship, while the Honorable Martial Continent elites on the

boats wanted to take control of the situation, but facing the crazy pirates, they could not even control any flowing water. The fear of death caused all the coward pirates to become completely nuts. Anyone who tried to stop them from escaping became their enemies. They moved insanely with bloodshot eyes, drowning the

Honorable Martial Continent elites who wanted to stop them.

They pounced to control the ships like a school of bees.

“Turn! Quickly turn!”

“Fucking turn now!”

.....

Mei Chen Xiu who finally regained his senses did not even have time to speak and was spun by a huge force, causing him to fly and hit the ceiling. Bang, he struck the ceiling, causing him to become muddled. He tried to maintain balance, and at the corner of his eye, he glanced onto the aft, and was immediately stunned.

The aft was gone.

The pirate ship's aft was hanging by the back, and was trying to escape.

The pirate ship had just moved 30m, when a blade aura over 60m long soared down from the sky and shot straight into the hull, and the pirate ship immediately became a large regiment of flames.

Mei Chen Xiu who had lost his spirit sat with his butt down on the floorboard, his mouth revealing a bitter smile. Pirates were ultimately still pirates, if it was the Honorable Martial Continent

Army, at least they would have the discipline, and he would still be able to counterattack, but now, he had no hope.

I performed badly too.

Knowing that he had no way to run, Mei Chen Xiu became calm instead.

The fleet was in flames, in the air, the pirate ships had become large fire regiments, floating and burning.

They are truly strong.

Mei Chen Xiu's tactic standards were out of the norm, at the moment where he calmed down, his mind started to understand the enemy's intent.

The target of the enemy's first wave was aimed for the pirate ships on the exterior. More important, the degree of their attacks. The ships were bombarded so badly they lost the ability to attack and fly, but at the same time, they did not fall to the ground and crash.

Their goal is most likely to use the floating fire regiments to prevent the other pirate ships from escaping.

Mei Chen Xiu was aghast at the opponent general's brazen ambush.

A complete wipeout, the other party plans to wipe us out, and thus will do this.

It had to be said, although he was the opponent, he admired the enemy's general.

He simply walked to the broken end of the ship and admired the battlefield. Since we are incapable of doing anything, why not admire the enemy's performance. He was truly curious about Shi Sen. He had just entered the Steel Mountain Continent, and the only possibility was that the other party had followed them by their tail, and secretly followed them. How could I not have sensed them at all! I have been careful the entire time, and did not slack, but I did not sense any trace of the enemies.

How did they escape my senses?

They must have a unique method.

In the air, the black figures reorganized, all of them looked like a group of black bats, they would suddenly scatter and suddenly converge, they moved extremely weird, causing the enemies to be unable to grasp them.

Mei Chen Xiu was surprised, the enemy was not large, at the maximum of 600 men. How could 500 to 600 men have such fearsome fighting ability? Even in Honorable Martial Continent, 500 to 600 men could only go against a single pirate ship, and the unit would not be any ordinary unit.

After observing for a moment, the surprise on Mei Chen Xiu's face disappeared, replaced with seriousness.

They are real elites!

Although they were few in numbers, but every single one of them were elites, at the very least Silver Rank Saints, causing Mei Chen Xiu to be stunned. When he focused, he saw the equipment on the soldiers, causing Mei Chen Xiuto gasp with cold air, a man who originated from Honorable Martial Continent.

The black armor and blades were no ordinary products, but that was not the surprising thing, as the ShangContinent's black gold was widely known. The rumored black gold was most suitable to create warship weapons, and was an extremely expensive material used to make such warship weapons, to actually use the black gold to create armors, it was truly a waste!

The blue spears on their backs looked familiar to Mei Chen Xiu, when he suddenly remembered about the batch of Empyrean Ice Tree Spears that appeared on the market.

Could it be....

Mei Chen Xiu's nose turned runny, but when his eyes landed on the myriad of light auras on the black armored soldiers, he became dumbstruck like a chicken, as though he was struck by some spell.



Spirit objects!

Those are spirit objects!

It was not surprising for Mei Chen Xiu to recognize spirit objects. No one else had more spirit objects than the Honorable Martial Continent, as their research was at the top in the entire Sacred Saint Galaxy, and the Honorable Martial Continent's martial technique system were related to spirit objects.

Even for Honorable Martial Continent who was widely known for their spirit objects, they were not so extravagant for each soldier to have one each!

Seeing the pirates being cut down like vegetables, Mei Chen Xiu's hands started to tremble.

The powerful warriors all armed to the teeth, every single one of them was a killing machine.

The White Pirates had gone through equipping by the Honorable Martial Continent, and was stronger than any regular army. Furthermore, this batch of White Pirates was specially selected by Mei Chen Xiu, although they did not have high attainments in tactics, they had the strength to make up for it.

But against the enemies who were armed to the teeth, the White Pirates looked like beggars.

But with the wide disparity in strength between both parties, the other party did not have any intent to fight alone.

They were always in groups of three to five that would suddenly gather or scatter, like countless of tributaries that would split and connect, but every time they attacked, they would quickly gather to assault together, even if the enemy was one man.

The almost ancient and mechanical strategy did not have high efficiency, but it made Mei Chen Xiu feel fear. It required an extremely high mutual understanding, and required extreme discipline, demanding power implementation ability.

It was this mechanical separation, gather, and killing that caused the sky to be filled with fire. One after another, the flaming regiments caused the entire place to turn red. The dense clouds were all scattered due to the rising heat.

The sunlight shot through the holes formed by the scattering of the clouds, lighting up the entire battlefield.

Mei Chen Xiu even suspected that the entire fight was in the hands of the enemy's general.

The enemy's general...

Mei Chen Xiu looked around to look for him, and quickly found him.

The other side's general was extremely obvious, in the figures of black, Shi Sen's entire dazzling gold armor made him look like a god of war.

The armor that looked like it was made up of gold released a dazzling gold light, he was unable to make out the figure on the armor. The tyrannically terrifying aura from the person moved like a gold needle around.

That is also a spirit object, but.....

Mei Chen Xiu was overwhelmed with shock.

He had never seen such a powerful spirit object before, the gold luster made it look like it was liquid gold, the surface of the armor looked to be flowing from head to toe. The gold helmet looked like an eagle head, its gold armor so bright that it caused his face to be shrouded, leaving only a pair of cold eyes. On the back of the armor was a pair of gold wings, as though it was made out of thin gold pieces layer upon layer, it was extremely magnificent.

One of the Sword Forest Stronghold's six armors, the silver grade armor [Shiny Wings] from Aquila Constellation.

After the constant nourishment in Sword Forest Stronghold, it had absorbed a countless amount of energy, it had become a gold armor, and thus change its name to [Gold Wings]!

Armor equipment was rather unique amongst the star treasures,

when comparing equal grade star treasures, armors were stronger than the rest. Even in Heaven's Road, gold armors were few, and only the 12 Ecliptic Palaces had them, while the other constellations could produce at most silver armors.

With Evening Snow Ocean in hand, Shi Sen who was clad with Gold Wings was invincible in the battlefield.

Gold Wings and Evening Snow Ocean released an energy undulation that could shatter mountains and churn theseas, countless energy scars appeared in the sky, the dense sea of clouds were evaporating quickly.

Every blade that the Evening Snow Ocean released would have a length of over 150m long and left white streaks as it swept by, which was the surging energy that converged on the blade aura.

The Gold Wing's gold light was mystical, all the blade auras were as quick as lightning, and wherever the gold light flashed, it would shoot through a ship.

How is that possible....

How can there be such a powerful spirit object in the world.

Honorable Martial Continent' elites' deaths and injuries occurred due to counterattacks, because they were surprised by the launch of the Demonic Mounts. All the pirates were in complete disarray, all of them frantically running in different directions.

Shi Sen ignored those fleeing pirates, they were all sporadic, and leaving them to the Steel Mountain Continent guards would suffice.

He only needed to destroy the pirate ships, and the sporadic pirates would be lost without anywhere to run.

Shi Sen who was using the Gold Wings for the first time was equally shocked at the might produced from it, but even more so excited and eager. He badly wanted to go to the frontlines and let the Honorable Martial Continent armies witness his power.

He took a deep breath and suppressed the raging fighting intent.

Noticing that people were evaluating him, he lowered his head and glanced down, and realized that there was a young man with pale face looking at him.

Is that Mei Chen Xiu? I never thought he was so young!

Yet another talented youth

Shi Sen felt faintly regretful, but without hesitating, he gently waved Evening Snow Ocean, a blade aura immediately slice through the air and through Mei Chen Xiu's body and into the warship.

A regiment of flames enveloped the entire warship.

Without looking, Shi Sen spun his Gold Wings and flew up. In that whistling scream, many black figures flew out like black lightning out of the battlefield into the air, and converged behind him.

The Underworld Continent Demonic Mounts had completely gathered in the blink of the eye, above the flames, they disappeared into the horizon.

The war, had just begun!

# Chapter 784 – Silver Frost Sheep Horn Seal

---

As a new military general, Ling Xu was definitely not qualified.

He lacked patience, was extremely destructive, and upon disagreement, he would start engaging. His desire to do battle was too intense, and was unable to make the reasonable choice from time to time, maybe he would be more suited to be a vanguard, but never a military general. But with the insufficient manpower, he had no choice but to take on the role.

Ling Xu also felt that ever since leaving the Shang Continent, his mood was terrible.

Damn it, everything is not going well.

In the short crash course, it was just to fill Ling Xu's mind up with the fundamentals, and only the heavens would know how much he remembered.

Seeing everybody moving relaxingly, his expression turned gloomy. The troops under Crane was extremely neat, which was an enjoyable sight. Although his own troops were trying their best to be neat and form up, but it was like a crumbling biscuit, any slight strength would break it apart.

Their march was not going well, and ignoring the fact that they were weak, their march was too slow, and he so badly wanted to kill all of them with his spear and rush to the Honorable Martial Continent on his own.

If not for Yu Qing Yi and the rest being there with him, the situation would have been worse. Yu Qing Yi and the rest came from The Five Southern Island Families, so they were very familiar with army formations and what not.

Bing requested him and Crane to build up their own army.

Using The Yu Family of the Five Southern Island Families as his backbone, regardless of whether they had inheritances from Aries Constellation, they all walked the same path. The Yu Family disciples numbered less than a 100, and they were insufficient to form the army, thus he chose others who were relatively strong and trained in spear techniques, then made up his own army.

This brand new army was called the Silver Frost Mounts, which was the only name he could think of.

Just that....

When he looked how terrible they were, he could not help but laugh bitterly in his mind, compared to the legendary Silver Frost Mounts, his own group of people were not even worth their shoes. If Teacher knows that I am tarnishing the name of Silver Frost Mount, I wonder if he will be so angry that he crawls out of his coffin.

Alright, who cares.



Ling Xu who was feeling annoyed sat down and placed his silver spear on his legs, he then watched the light regiments in the Sea of Energy in the distance. Travelling on foot in the Sea of Energy was not easy, maybe it was alright for Yu Qing Yi and the rest with star treasures that they had trained with daily, thus they were rather used to the Sea of Energy. But for the newly recruited soldiers, they had never experienced such a thing, and they were all extremely fatigued, and could not help but lay everywhere.

The speed of the march was mostly delayed due to the recruits, who were as slow as turtles crawling. But Ling Xu had tried various methods, regardless of how he shouted or beat, their maximum was just that.

If he had known this earlier, he would only use the disciples from the Five Families, Ling Xu grimaced in his mind. But the remorse disappeared in a flash, only the Yu Family trained in the spear amongst the five families, and the other families did not, so he did not know how to command them. Thus, he chose only the Yu Family, while the other four families were handed over to Crane.

Yu Qing Yi saw Ling Xu's unhappy face, and consoled him: "Master, don't get too annoyed by it, it's always like that at the start."

Hearing those words, Ling Xu became even more depressed.

Although it was his first time as a military general, it was not a surprising matter for him to feel that way, but to the arrogant and prideful Ling Xu, letting him bear failure and being weak was even more unbearable compared to dying.

He glanced at Yu Qing Yi unkindly once. Yu Qing Yi cowered and immediately retreated back to the side. They followed Ling Xu and trained in the spear, they were clear of his temper, and provoking him meant a spear would be thrust out at them.

Ling Xu held onto his spear pole and struck it against his own head, the soldiers around him watched him and immediately swallowed their salivas and changed positions.

No! I need to think of something else, this cannot go on. He could ignore the name of Silver Frost Mount, but he did not want to be the cause of their failure. Upon thinking of Crazy Tang's despicable eyes, Ling Xu felt that he would go crazy.

Calling my own army the Silver Frost Mounts, it cannot suck.

What do I do?

He thought about the Silver Frost Mounts of the past, and his heart moved, How did they train in the past?

Although he did not want to admit it, but he knew that he was the inheritor of the Silver Frost Mounts, but he only cared about the martial techniques related to the Silver Frost Mount Inheritance, and did not have any interest to any army or formations.

He had never thought that there would be a day that he had to

have his own army.

This is truly infuriating!

The only idea he could think of was the Silver Frost Mounts. He racked his brains and tried to recall, the portions of inheritances that he managed to suddenly witness. But regardless of how he tried to recall, everything was a blur.

Bang, Ling Xu who was so furious smashed his own head hard.

Suddenly, he thought of something, the Silver Frost Sheep Horn Seal.

The Silver Frost Sheep Horn Seal had been in his hands for a very long time, but he had never cared much about it, because it was the Silver Frost Mount's mark. At that time when they were splitting the loot, Tang Tian handed the Silver Frost Sheep Horn Seal over to him, because it was linked to him.

Ling Xu who was fixated on battles did not have any interest in the Silver Frost Sheep Horn Seal, but at the moment he was being forced to a corner, and suddenly recalled that he had such an object.

He took it out and started to play around with it.

The Silver Frost Sheep Horn Seal had a simple form, it had two sheep horns that were as straight as swords, with the seal being the

insignia of the Silver Frost Mounts.

How do I use this?

Ling Xu tossed and turned it over and over again, pondering about how to use it, but realized that he had no clue.

Since it is a seal, I should try and use it to chop it somewhere. Ling Xu thought baselessly. But, where do I chop it on? Ling Xu looked around, the soldiers were long shocked and afraid of his actions and maintained a distance from him, thus the 30m area around him was empty.

Seeing that, Ling Xu held the Silver Frost Sheep Horn Seal in his right hand and chopped onto his left palm.

A prominent Silver Frost Mount insignia was inked onto his palm.

nothing?

Ling Xu stared at it for half a day, but there was no reaction at all, causing him to feel disappointed.

Just as he was about to throw the Silver Frost Sheep Horn Seal back, he suddenly heard a bell stroke, and could not help but be stunned.

The Sheep Horn wind bells on his silver spear was moving without any wind blowing.

The clear bell sound seemed as though it had chimed through time, and arrived on him. Layers upon layers of ripples with the Sheep Horn Wind Bells as the center started to spread. Ling Xu who was fixated on the Sheep Horn Wind Bells did not notice that the Silver Frost Mount insignia in his palm had lit up with a faint light aura.

It gradually rippled through the entire camp.

The scenery around them distorted, everyone looked as though they were struck by some spell as they realized that they were all unable to move.

The power that was confining him was extremely powerful, Ling Xu tried to struggle, but he was unable to move an inch. He was not surprised, but instead revealing a look of joy, That's right, it's this, he suddenly remembered that when he was training in the Aries Spear of Stars once, and fell into the same state and illusion. Inside that illusion, all of the blurred figures guided him on how to use the real Aries Spear of Stars.

All the lights of stars in the Sea of Energy disappeared, and a ground appeared beneath their feet. The ground continued to extend out like mud, flowing and growing into many mountain peaks.

In the blink of the eye, they were in a place filled with hills.

Ling Xu moved, the power confining him had disappeared without a trace.

A gentle breeze swept past, and the faint bell sound caused his hairs to stand, he immediately shot up and shouted: "Prepare for battle!"

All the soldiers were immersed in the shock, they were just in the Sea of Energy, how did they suddenly end up in a completely foreign land? All of them had fear revealed in their eyes, such an absurd thing had caused their hairs to stand.

Yu Qing Yi was equally shocked, but hearing Ling Xu's warning, he suppressed the fear and struggled to stand.

A few of the braver soldiers also slowly stood up.

If such reaction speed were to occur in a normal situation, Ling Xu would hit all of them ten times without saying a word. But at that moment, Ling Xu could not be bothered with them as he stared at the small slopes ahead of them.

The familiar bell chimes was coming from there.

As expected, it's this again!

Ling Xu no longer bothered to berate his troops, holding up his

silver spear, he suddenly turned and swept his spear at the soldiers who were still paralyzed on the ground, causing mud to shroud over them.

“Get up!”

“All of you, get up now!”

..... The paralyzed amateurish soldiers who were immersed in their shock finally woke up from the mud. Compared to them, the Yu Family disciples reacted better, since they had gone through one or two battles. But the newly recruited soldiers were completely amateurs.

One after another, white clothed figures with silver spears appeared on the small slopes.

Ssssi, Yu Qing Yi and the rest all inhaled in cold air, all of their faces turned white, What the hell are those things?

The white clothed silver spears rode on some sort of dual sword horned sheeps. But there was nothing beneath the white clothes, just a regiment of mist. Their faces were also just mist, there were no features and no eyes.

The strange creatures naturally caused everyone's hairs to stand.

Furthermore.....

Everyone could not help but look at Ling Xu, because all of the white clothed silver spear figures looked exactly like Ling Xu, even the silver spear that had the Sheep Horn Wind Bells, they were exactly the same.

“Prepare for battle!”

Ling Xu roared, he was ready to welcome the enemies.

There were only 50 figures coming down the slopes, but the aura emitted from the 50 of them far exceeded that of the amateurs behind Ling Xu. the 50 riders did not make any sound as they sat on their Sword Horned Snow Sheep.

Although their faces were just mist, but Ling Xu could clearly feel that their gazes were on him, although they had no expressions, but for some reason, Ling Xu could feel the disdain that they did not bother concealing.

That’s right, disdain.

Pure disdain.

Ling Xu’s face turned red, the disdain was like getting a slipper to slap his face.

Assholes! Since when have I been underestimated?



The 50 riders from the slopes raised the silver spears in their hands, the Sword Horned Snow Sheep beneath them moved with small steady steps. They moved in a very delightful manner, and even when they were advancing, their formation was extremely neat.

Ling Xu's orange pupils blazed up, he no longer had any complicated thoughts in his mind, but only one.

Kill them all!

## Chapter 785 – The Evening Spring Massacre

---

Crane's mission was different from Ling Xu's.

# Chapter 785 – The Evening Spring Massacre

---

Crane's mission was different from Ling Xu's.

His black and loose robes drew the outline of his tall and thin figure with great saturation, his flawless and handsome looks, his warm and gentle temperament, regardless of where he stood, he was always the most dazzling person.

Tang Tian and Ling Xu had been jealous of him for a very long time because of this.

"You don't look like a military general at all with that body of yours." Bing spoke to him in a languid and mocking tone, with a cigarette in his mouth, giving Crane a cup of water.

Crane accepted the cup and laughed: "Thank you."

Bing sat down and placed his legs on the table, he puffed out a smoke ring and said casually: "How does it feel?"

Crane placed the cup down and thought for a while before speaking seriously: "I am not used to it yet. I did not have many interactions with this in the past, to do things at the last minute, I do not know how effective it can be."

"At least it is better than having none at all." Bing laughed: "What a pity Crazy Tang is not here, if not I would grab him to lead the troops, that would definitely be exciting. I truly want to see his

expression, haha.”

Noticing that Crane was sitting upright, he flicked the cigarette ashes and laughed: “Relax, Little Crane, the situation is not that terrible.”

“I am not anxious.” Crane revealed a smile: “I just want to know what I should do next.”

“You always have such self confidence.” Bing said bluntly, and nodded his head: “Then we will keep this short. Your mission, is to guard Xie Yu An’s back, help to bear a portion of Xie Yu An’s pressure, and when it is needed, you have to support him. Xie Yu An has took the Honorable Martial Continent’s face, and they will want it back.”

“They plan to face Ocean Guardian Stronghold with force?” Crane was skeptical about it: “They are not worried about death and injury?”

The Ocean Guardian Stronghold was a different grade stronghold, the one garrisoned in it was Xie Yu An, who had obtained the name of “Third Best Guardian under the Heavens”, and anyone who had intellect would definitely not attack head on and seek their own death, because they would definitely sustain a huge loss.

In the rankings of the Military Generals, the Best Guardian was

from the Five Honorable Martial Tigers, Jia Ya, while the second best was Song Ji Ze from the Eastern Region's Gold Continent.

“Two reasons.” Bing sat upright: “First, he is Gou Cheng WenDao. Gou Cheng Wendao is known to be a fanatical aggressor, I studied his battles, and he is proficient in lunatic aggression. Secondly, they have no time. If they are unable to hasten their movements, and allow the various families of the Southern Region to recover and lose their fear, at that time, the Southern Region would become a flesh capstan. Gou Cheng WenDao doesn't have a choice, he has to storm in the front, and only with that can he shake the heroes of the Southern Region.”

Crane was enlightened: “So my mission is to aid Xie Yu An to drag the time?”

“That's right.” Bing revealed a look of admiration, Crane's intellect was truly top notch, and speaking to intelligent people required less effort: “It is best that you conserve your strength, and best that you delay as much as you can, if you are able to exhaust the enemy's strength slightly, that would be best.”

Crane stood up and said instantly: “I will move out now.”

Bing also stood up and sent Crane to the door, and said suddenly: “If things go south, escape with your life.”

Crane smiled: “As the commander-in-chief, such unlucky words should not come out from your mouth.”

Bing laughed out loud and said without a care: “You guys never fought a war before. In such a large scale war, preserving lives is always the number one choice. Power is like a deck of cards, as long as you have them in hand, you can always choose to fight or not. If you don’t even have any cards, then you have nothing at all.”

He patted Crane’s shoulders and said with experience: “You have to trust me on this. In this large scale war, I am certain that no one is more experienced than me in the entire Sacred Saint Galaxy.”

Crane laughed: “These words feel as though you did not live for ten thousand years in vain.”

The two looked at each other and laughed.

\*\*\*\*\*

“In this large scale war, I am certain that no one is more experienced than me in the entire Sacred Saint Galaxy.”

Ah Xin spoke indifferently, in front of him stood Tie Ji and the rest, all of them revealing looks of reveration. Right at that moment, his eyes glanced upon Xiao Man wielding her blade that was the size of a door, and he instantly froze. He felt that he had spoken too early, the young lady with military power as full as her breasts was another existence equal to him. When they were in the Ophiuchus Constellation, she was one of the most crucial backbones for them.

Alright, she is more savage than me.

Ah Xin's face was covered with smiles, he started speaking with a flattering tone: "Oh my, Xiao Man, you're here!"

The chop from the blade the size of a door did not come.

Xiao Man's expression was strange: "There's a situation, it's best you come take a look."

Ah Xin retracted his smiles and stood up. Tie Ji and Ah Si Ming looked at each other and followed along.

Seeing the corpses that littered the entire wilderness to as far as they could see, everyone's expressions became gloomy.

Tie Ji rubbed his nose, the smell of blood still pervaded the air, he bent down and grabbed a pile of dark red mud, he rubbed them, causing the mud to become specks that dropped down his fingers.

He spoke out: "This was here for around 10 days."

Ah Si Ming flipped over a few bodies and stood up: "They are the Evening Spring Tribe."

Tie Ji and Ah Si Ming looked at each other, both with shock in their eyes. The Evening Spring Tribe was not a small tribe, its strength was comparable to both of their King Courts and was no

way inferior. The reason that they did not establish themselves as King Courts was because the region they were in was littered with scattered heroes, and the north only had the two heroes.

The two of them seemed to have thought of something, and immediately went to look around.

After a moment, they found their target, it was a middle aged man's corpse, his aura had long dissipated and his eyes were filled with unwillingness.

“Even Mu Chun Ye is dead.” (TN: Evening Spring is Mu Chun, the tribe's name came from this man.)

When Ah Si Ming spoke, his voice was trembling. He and Mu Chun Ye had sparred countless of times, and he knew Mu Chun Ye's strength inside and out, which was in no way inferior to his. Mu Chun Ye suffered from a deadly attack, the entire Evening Spring Tribe was massacred, the killer was truly terrifying!

For the other party to have slaughtered the entire Evening Spring Tribe so easily meant that the other party had the ability to kill both the North Heroes.

Since when did Savage Continent have such a powerful tribe?

Tie Ji and Ah Si Ming were both tyrants, they always thought that even if they were not the strongest in the Savage Continent, they were in the same league as the strongest. It was no easy

matter for anyone to want to kill them. But to suddenly find out one day that there was an existence that could easily slaughter them, they were overwhelmed with shock.

Ah Xin knelt down and examined Mu Chun Ye's body, where there were no external wounds.

Ah Xin pointed to Mu Chun Ye's left chest and said: "Open him up from here."

Hearing that, Ti Jie immediately drew a line with his finger at the location Ah Xin pointed out, and Mu Chun Ye's corpse was split into two.

As the land was filled with frost and cold, the corpses had long frozen into ice, thus maintained as perfect bodies. Everyone's face changed, Mu Chun Ye's heart had ruptured, and what was left was a white sword scar that ran across it.

After 10 days, the sword scar still left a faint white light aura, it was unbelievably scary.

"Honorable Martial Continent! This was done by Honorable Martial Continent!" Tie Ji's face became ugly.

The white sword scar emitted an intense unique aura that came from the Honorable Martial techniques.

Ah Si Ming's face turned green, his eyes filled with rage: "Mu Zhi



Xia, only Mu Zhi Xia could kill Mu Chun Ye! The Honorable Martial Continent has infiltrated Savage Continent!” (TN: Their surnames are written differently.)

“They are trying to send us a warning.” Ah Xin who was quiet suddenly spoke up.

His words immediately attracted the eyes of the two men.

Ah Xin looked at the dark clouds in the sky and said calmly with confidence: “Because we can unify the Savage Continent.”

“That’s right!” Ah Si Ming said hatefully: “The Honorable Martial Continent has always secretly pried into our ancestral lands, they want us to be as chaotic as we can be! Seeing how the Savage Continent is about to be united, they can no longer sit still, and have to think of ways to break the unification!”

Tie Ji sneered: “That’s right, only by killing the Young Miss can our hope disappear, and the Savage Continent will once again plunge into a dark era. This old man will risk his life and prevent the Honorable Martial Continent from succeeding!”

The two of them were undoubtedly famed heroes in Savage Continent, Ah Xin had just given them a bit of information, and the two of them immediately saw the Honorable Martial Continent’s intent.

“Strange, isn’t Mu Zhi Xia guarding Wei Ye Guan Continent?

Why will he appear here now?" Xiao Man's face was filled with suspicion.

They were currently in the interior of Savage Continent, and was far from Wei Ye Guan Continent. The reason they never thought the Honorable Martial Continent was the enemy was precisely because of this. Once the Honorable Martial Continent's armies stepped into Savage Continent, they would suffer the frantic attacks from the various tribes wherever they went. Regardless of how good Mu Zhi Xia's relation was with the other tribes, no tribe would allow him to step into their own home, for example the Black Water Tribe.

For Mu Zhi Xia to think of subduing Savage Continent with him and his army alone was truly a joke.

"I am afraid he found a Star Door that reaches the interior of Savage Continent." Ah Xin thought of a logical answer, and spoke quickly: "by infiltrating deep into enemy grounds, their target will be for the leader. If that is the case, they will not have a lot of men. If they had a lot of men, they will be unable to hide. But strength cannot compare to true elites, To easily massacre the Evening Spring Tribe, it should be Mu Zhi Xia's direct subordinate army. Mu Zhi Xia is truly vicious, just to stop Savage Continent's unification, he would take the risk himself."

"We must find out where they are, if not no one can have a good rest." Ah Si Ming said ferociously, but his eyes could not help but reveal a thread of fear.

An Army in the darkness staring at them was definitely

something troubling.

Tie Ji nodded his head: “We should spread the news of Mu Zhi Xia’s army barging into Savage Continent and slaughtering the Evening Spring Tribe to everyone, and let us see how they move about!”

Ah Si Ming then added: “We need to find the Star Door as well, if not our Savage Continent will become their garden where they can walk in and out with ease.”

Hearing the two of them talk, Ah Xin remained silent.

He had a premonition, that all the simplistic ideas had limited effects.

It was Mu Zhi Xia.

As the leader of the Five Honorable Martial Tigers, a man who was able to idle patiently for 20 years to slowly permeate would have definitely thought of an elaborate and careful plan to strike out so early, and must have thought of all the problems.

Ah Xin had never underestimated any opponents, and furthermore, it was Mu Zhi Xia.

But, that did not mean he could only wait idly for opportunities.

A brazen idea suddenly appeared in his mind.

# Chapter 786 - Awakened God Armor

---

The wildfires of the Sacred Saint Galaxy did not influence Tang Tian one bit.

Out of the Golem Five Gestures, he was most familiar with the Formless Spirit Gesture, and the Formless Spirit Seal activated with Godfist, it seemed to have opened a new window. He became like a demon in training for days and nights, oblivious to the world around him.

He gradually pulled Godfist, as countless of Law Threads gathered around his right fist. In the blink of the eye, his right fist was blazing like a sun.

Sharp Wind City was extremely bright because of him, and the terrifying aura shrouded the entire city. Occasionally, people would prostrate in fear as they looked up into the skies, but many more were used to it. For the past few days, this situation had occurred countless of times. The "sun" in the night would rise multiple times, and everytime it happened, a terrifying might would ferociously smash onto the entire city like a huge gust of wind.

From the initial shock, people became used to it. It had to be said, a human being's adaptability to its surrounding was shockingly strong.

Tang Tian carefully experienced every fluctuation and change in his body.

Compared to his past, his scope of vision was many times stronger than before, and his understanding in power and strength was far more than before. Martial techniques, laws, mechanical weapons etc, all had ins and outs. The so called "ins" was unearthed from a human body's potential. The so called "Outs", was naturally the understanding and usage of laws. Both sides form as one, because a human body is naturally one. That is also why every type of power, when at its apex, would naturally converge back together.

The five fingers on his left hand moved extremely quickly and formed the Formless Spirit Seal.

The light converged on the Godfist on his right fist seemed to look like liquid metal, which flowed along his entire arm, towards his body. The light aura dimmed down greatly, but still remained extremely bright, it shrouded Tang Tian's entire body, looking as though it was providing Tang Tian with an armor.

The final liquid light aura extended to the back of his head, and flowed down from Tang Tian's forehead and covered his entire face.

The world in his eyes immediately became different.

The beautiful world lost its color and became black and white. All of the airflow he could previously see all disappeared, replaced with complicated but orderly lines, which were law threads. It was Tang Tian's first time witnessing this different state of Law

Threads, making him instantly excited, causing him to instantly exit the state.

After continuous days of probing, he finally got some experience. He realized that the Law Threads were not actually real 'threads'. They were countless light dots lined up together, the light dots had two different types, white and black. He did not know what the black and white dots were for yet.

Tang Tian was not anxious at all, there are no shortcuts in growth. Everyone always talked passionately about "a moment of enlightenment", but people rarely saw the accumulative work prior to it. People only know a bowl is full when water starts leaking from it.

His mental state seemed as though he was flying out of Sharp Wind City, like the sun releasing its light from the horizon, sweeping through the great lands.

There was no joy or anger, he was like a calm bystander as he watched the beautiful world being engulfed by the black and white, and returning to its origin.

By mixing Godfist and the Demon Six Seals, it reached a special state. It was a brand new fighting ability Tang Tian had created.

Tang Tian felt that this state was like an awakening. He thought about Barbara and his Awakened army, and did not know if the awakening was what he was experiencing, but he did not care. The light aura was like an armor, making him think of armor

equipments. Since this is from Godfist, let's call it God Armor. Combining them together

Awakened God Armor!

His body moved and gently stepped onto the law threads, causing his body to instantly disappear. He appeared 3000 km away without any warnings.

He extended his finger out and touched onto the law thread that extended into the horizon, it was a law thread containing Wind Laws, and his body started to float up like a feather, and floated along the continuous winds blowing.

He arrived at a layer of clouds, where he extended his finger out, and lightly prodded a law thread hanging down.

Rumble!

Countless lightning snakes suddenly lit up from the clouds, and converged at his fingertip.

Tang Tian's Awakened God Armor dazzled with the lightning aura, making him look like a Thunder God descending.

The unprecedented experience made Tang Tian extremely focused, he felt as if he had become a part of the world, but he maintained his calm. He carefully felt the changes of the world, something that he had done for the past few days.



The fluctuations of the world was endless, although the world in his eyes was just black and white, but it was extremely exciting with abundant things, all there for him to probe and investigate.

Suddenly, he stopped, there were people flying over.

It was a large gold boat that flew.

"Brother Su's Flowing Tassel Boat is truly a top grade experience." The one who spoke was roughly 26-27, called Ji Ze. Ji Ze had an elegant appearance with long and narrow eyes and pale thin lips, making him look rather bewitching.

He stretched his back with a look of satisfaction.

When the others heard his words, all of them nodded. Everything on the boat were extremely pricey goods, the alcohol and desserts were so exquisite it made people look as if they had not eaten in years, and even the fur coat they were sitting on was made from a complete Black Water Otters pelt. Black Water Otters thrived in the extreme cold, and were few in numbers with extremely cautious personalities, thus they were difficult to catch, needless to say the value in their pelts. Such perfect pelts were rarely seen, but the boat had more than 50 of them.

Su Qing felt extremely pleased as he laughed out loud: "To have my brother Ji Ze praising me, my Flowing Tassel Boat has not been built in vain."

The Flowing Tassel Boat was Su Qing's favourite, it was a completely golden colored boat, and was Sin Domain's most famous treasured boat. The entire body was made up from a wood material called the Flowing Tassel Cedar, the boat length was over 60m long and its interior was decorated extremely lavishly. For it, Su Qing spent a fortune to obtain the best craftsman to build it up with uncommon materials.

Under the control of 10 Wind Law proficient martial artists, the boat moved like a feather by borrowing the wind with a fast speed. Furthermore, the men controlling the boat were all experts, and even with the speed at which they were moving, the boat was not shaky at all.

The Su Family was an old family in the Four Main Cities, and their wealth was naturally deep. And as one of the clan elder that held authority in the Su Family, Su Qing had money and power, as well as being versed in enjoyment and music, he had many connections.

"The Flowing Tassel Boat truly lives up to its name." Zi Je said: "I wonder if Ghost Face Mask is truly as powerful as the rumors, he better not be disappointing, if not it will be too boring."

Ji Ze's brazen words were not refuted by anyone, but instead had looks that agreed to him.

"Bewitching Blade Ji Ze, who dares to oppose you?" Su Qing pretended to be anxious: "Brother Ji Ze, you better not introduce

yourself later, if not, you will scare him away, we took such great effort to travel so far, what will we do if we were to see the enemy run away?"

Everyone broke out in laughter.

"That's right!"

"Such kind words!"

"I am truly waiting to see Brother Ji show off his prowess, if you were to frighten away the enemy's courage, that will be bad!"

Although Ji Ze revealed a laugh, but he still looked to be extremely calm, but his long and narrow eyes had a faint arrogance. But, he did not bask in the joy of their flatteries, but turned to speak to Su Qing: "How much does brother Su knows about Ghost Face Mask?"

"Not much." Su Qing retracted his smile: "Upon talking about Ghost Face Mask, then we must talk about the Ursa Major Null Division. This group of people was sent up the shores from the tide, numbering close to 5000. There isn't any place called Ursa Major Continent in the Sacred Saint Galaxy, who knows if it is a new powerhouse that appeared in the last two to three centuries. But from how the name sounds, it resembles an army."

"That's right." Someone else added: "They are truly an army, and demand exact compliance with instructions, even as prisoners,

they are different from others. But it is also weird, all of them are extremely sturdy and strong, all good men."

Ji Ze squinted his eyes and said: "Brother Su, I believe that this journey is not something that only the Su Family thought of."

Su Qing nodded his head: "Brother Ji Ze is astute, and saw through everything. Although my small family is somewhat intertwined with Flying Galloping City's Lu Family, but this journey is something that everyone agreed to."

At this time, everyone all placed down the cups in their hands and listened intently.

"Whether Ghost Face Mask is Ancestor Li's inheritor or not isn't important" Su Qing looked at everyone and said: "The Sin Domain has a history of a few hundred years, and the structure ended up with the Four Main Cities as the core. For so many years, everyone has lived well, the higher ups think that if this continues, it will bring trouble to everyone."

Ji Ze was surprised: "Does the masters think that Ghost Face Mask and his Ursa Major Null Division will pose a threat to the Four Main Cities?"

Su Qing laughed sinisterly: "Ursa Major Null Division's power is solely based on Ghost Face Mask, how much can he do? The higher ups are just worried that some ambitious people would take the chance to do something. Furthermore, the best thing to do is to strangle the development while it is still in its cradle."

Ji Ze fell into deep thoughts, while the rest remained quiet.

Su Qing raised his cup and toasted towards Ji Ze: "If this matter isn't important, why would we dare to trouble brother Ji Ze? But to be able to watch Brother Ji Ze, you, take action, my heart is at ease."

Ji Ze laughed: "I will take responsibility with Brother Su's words."

Su Qing spoke with an emotional look: "Talking about it, this Ghost Face Mask is strange. Lu Tian Wen died to him, He Xin lost to him, and the current Sharp Wind City has fallen to him. All of them are experts on the List of Powerhouses, how are they unable to take down a mere Ghost Face Mask?"

Ji Ze knew that Su Qing was borrowing the momentum to incite him, but he was uninhibited by it, and did not avoid taboos, he scoffed: "List of Powerhouses? Just because they are on it, they are considered experts? Haha!"

It was as though he had heard a joke and was laughing wantonly.

Su Qing laughed, As long as Ji Ze is here, it is good.

Suddenly, Ji Ze's laughter stopped.

It was as though he had been struck by a spell and remained stationary, his eyes staring outside the boat. The willfulness in his eyes disappeared without a trace, his expression was frozen on his face, and the blood slowly receded, becoming as white as paper.

The sudden change caused everyone to be confused.

"Brother Ji Ze?" Su Qing probed him.

He was secretly thinking, Does Ji Ze have some secret disease that suddenly acted up?

Only the servant behind Ji Ze had her mouth opened as she was shocked to see that on the back of Ji Ze's white robes, perspiration was quickly spreading.

# Chapter 787 - To Unleash His Blade and Kill So Ferociously

---

Tang Tian had appeared in front of the Flowing Tassel Boat like a ghost.

Borrowing the flow of wind of the Flowing Tassel Boat, he was like a feather flowing along the wind. Although the Flowing Tassel Boat used a large amount of soundproofing equipment, but to the current Tang Tian, it was not a problem.

He had heard the entire conversation occurring inside the boat.

Tang Tian's mental state did not have a bit of undulation, he was exactly like how he was inside the illusory world where he faced the army of gemstone Blue Dwarves, listening with indifference.

He did not plan to continue waiting, as it was not a good habit to waste time. After confirming their identities as enemies and their intent, there was no point to delay.

The Flowing Tassel Boat in Tang Tian's black and white vision was completely different from what other people saw it, the faint moving Law Threads and the unique materials used to construct the defensive system and its unique Law Threads, along with the Wind Laws used by the martial artists to control the flow were clearly visible to him.

The 60m long Flowing Tassel Boat was like a large glutinous ball

covered with countless of flickering Laws in Tang Tian's eyes.

The surprising amount of Law Threads that resembled spider webs had wrapped the entire Flowing Tassel Boat.

But Tang Tian was able to locate six different sized empty spaces inside the large web, his gaze landed on the hole closest to him, he raised his right palm, he steadied his arm as he aimed it towards the side of the boat.

The Awakened God Armor's surface layer was flowing with silver snake-like lightning auras, it immediately surged to his palm, his right palm suddenly became extremely bright and dazzling, and the astonishing amount of lightning aura converged at his palm.

Su Qing who had a face of suspicion was about to question Je Zi, when suddenly a large explosion occurred, causing his eyes to become wide opened. In his vision, a dazzling silver light beam had shot through the left side of the boat, and in an instant, it shot through the right side of the boat, across the middle of Flowing Tassel Boat!

The thick silver beam shot and disappeared extremely quickly, if not for the large hole remnants blasted through the left and right walls in everyone's eyes, everyone who were stunned would think that they had gone blind.

Splinters and broken wooden boards flew all over, a figure had unknowingly stood in front of them.



The raining wooden planks that were near him would be disintegrated by minute flames into ashes.

Ji Ze's pale white face had already turned and was about to run the moment the light beam had exploded, but when he caught a glimpse of the flickering figure from the corner of his eyes, he felt like a cat that had been leashed by an invisible rope.

He firmly stopped the impulse to escape, and sat nailed on the chair, not daring to move an inch!

It was from him!

He was the first to sense the demon, and when he thought of warning the rest, he was shocked to realize that his senses seemed to be locked firmly by the other party, and following that, the air around him seemed to have congealed, his own laws had turned sluggish, and his senses to the world around him were all trapped.

It was as if his body was not his to control.

When he thought about that, he stood still like a statue, not daring to move.

There was a stark difference between what he had initially felt and the feelings he had after, but there was no difference in the ending. A thread of flickering killing intent that was like an invisible strangling rope had locked right on his neck, as long as he moved, only one ending would happen to him.

It was something he was not willing to face.

Damn it! He knew that the thread of flickering killing intent was deliberately set off by the other party for him to sense. If the other party had wanted to kill him, he would have died a long time ago.

This recognition was useless to him, but instead made him even more fearful, he had never felt so helpless before.

The cracking of the broken wooden planks falling caused the entire boat to become quiet.

A deadly silence.

All of their cups were raised in the air, everyone with their mouths wide opened as they stared blankly at the figure that appeared. Amongst all of them, only a minority knew what was happening.

Aside from Ji Ze, Su Qing was the second to react, he was after all a man who had seen the world and was capable by himself.

His mouth was dry, his heart thumped quickly, he finally understood why Ji Ze had revealed such a strange expression. He looked at Ji Ze, Where had all of his unbridled arrogance go to? He is just like a docile cat retreated to a corner, trying his best to hide his fat belly, not trying to attract attention.

Even Ji Ze is acting like that....

Su Qing's heart was thumping hard, but he forced himself to calm down, he extended his hand to reach out for a wine cup, and borrowed this action to conceal the fear in his heart. When he touched the cup, he finally calmed down.

"Distinguished sire, to come uninvited, why not have a seat for a drink?"

Su Qing smiled, he did a gesture of invitation with his left hand, like a good host trying to accommodate to his guest, inviting the guest for a drink.

Ji Ze could not help but feel admiration for Su Qing. Previously, he was still looking down on the wine sack, if not for his identity, he would never had bothered. Who knew that in such a serious situation, Su Qing could maintain himself, just with this point, Su Qing was stronger than him.

After thinking about his own performance, Ji Ze blushed with shame. Su Qing had given him a lesson on life, on what was how to give it his all and never let others look down on him.

In the next moment, his expression froze.

Su Qing's neck had a thin fine line of blood, he was still in his gesturing pose, except his wide opened eyes revealed the shock in him. The blood spurted out like a fountain, which covered the

entire table before Su Qing fell to the ground.

Ji Ze's eyes almost fell out his eye sockets, his face that had initially recovered a bit of blood had no traces of it anymore.

He was dumbstruck like a chicken.

To unleash his blade the moment he met someone he could not get along with, Ji Ze was someone like that as well.

But to unleash his blade and kill so ferociously the moment they did not get along, It was his first time meeting such a person.

That's too ferocious....

He muttered in his mind, Shouldn't a person like you with some important position sit down and discuss things at such a time? How can you make your move just like that? How can you just kill someone the moment you step in?

Right at this moment, the deadly silent boat erupted like a beehive.

All of the frightened guests seemed to have awoke from their daydream, Su Qing's corpse and the blood all over had completely overwhelmed them.

Their screams reached a falsetto, they were like headless

mosquitoes flying around aimlessly. The bodyguards that were on the boat upon seeing that the situation was not right had jumped off the boat and ignoring everything else, they escaped.

But before they had flown a few meters, their heads seemed to have struck onto something, and their bodies fell to the ground like sandbags.

It was as though the sky was wrapped up like a dumpling.

The slower ones immediately stopped in their tracks, no one saw how the martial artists had died, the fear had completely overwhelmed their hearts, they mumbled inaudible words with their faces as white as paper, their bodies trembling, no one dared to escape.

Losing the martial artists controlling the boat, the Flowing Tassel Boat was no longer being controlled, inciting a panic.

But in the next moment, the Flowing Tassel Boat that had lost control seemed to be grabbed tightly by an invisible hand and reestablished stability. The panicked guests suddenly lost their balance, the stable Flowing Tassel Boat moved abruptly, tossing them into the sky, and screams came out again.

Flowing Tassel Boat flew faster and faster, higher and higher.

Inside the boat, Ji Ze gritted his teeth, as even his teeth was trembling.

The demon who was clad in an entire body of armor had stepped over the pool of blood, and was slowly walking towards him.

Bewitching Blade Ji Ze....I am Bewitching Blade Ji Ze....how can this....

He felt as though his entire body was locked down, the other party's ghostly like footsteps was audible to his ears, it sounded like a specter moving. Then, he felt the invisible noose around his neck tightening.

He did not know if it was real or not, but he felt as though he had difficulty breathing.

Damn it!

! I am the Bewitching Blade Ji Ze!

He roared in his mind, he obediently raised his hands and with his last bit of strength, he said weakly: "I surrender!"

The demon's footsteps stopped.

This sentence drained every ounce of strength left in him, he sat in his seat in disappointment, but could feel an unspeakable relaxation in him, the noose around his neck had loosened, he greedily took in breaths of air, and even though the air was

pervaded with blood, it was still the most delicious and sweet smelling air he had ever breathed.

Living feels so good.

I have already lost, who cares about other people looking down on me?

The terrifying demon did not even look at him and turned to leave, causing Ji Ze to almost cry. He had never thought that there would be a day that he would fall to this extent.

Just because they are on the List of Powerhouses, they are considered experts?

Thinking back on his own words, Ji Ze smiled bitterly, That is truly too fucking logical! He now so badly wanted to swallow the words back into his stomach, because of such words, he had to meet such a terrifying man.

All of the people screaming gradually calmed down, they all sat down on the floor with pale faces and trembling bodies. All of them had their hands over their heads as they shrank themselves as much as they can, looking like prawns. Su Qing's headless body was constantly reminding them not to gain the Demon's attention.

The maid servants were all crying.

Ji Ze then saw the Demon clearly.

From the moment he had appeared, the Demon never spoke a word. His figure was not huge, but wrapped around his entire body was an extremely strange armor, it was like a layer of molten steel without any tangible form.

It emitted a strange light aura, which was bright but not dazzling.

What kind of unique liquid metal is that?

Ji Ze racked his brains, if such an armor had appeared before, it would have definitely left a mark in his mind, Why don't I have any recollection of it at all?

The Demon stood at the boat's bow, facing the wind.

Because the martial artists controlling the boat had ran, none of them were alive. But the Flowing Tassel Boat was actually flying even faster and even more stable than before, as though it was skating on ice. He was controlling the Flowing Tassel Boat by himself, and was actually more outstanding than 10 martial artists who trained in Wind Laws.

Damn it! Who exactly is this demon!

Ji Ze felt that his mouth was extremely bitter, feeling that everything that had happened was outrageous. What shot through the Flowing Tassel Boat was Lightning Laws, and what killed Su



Qing were Spatial Law Threads, but what did he use on me? Ji Ze did not know. Now, the man revealed his expertise on Wind Laws, the more Ji Ze examined the demon, the more despair he felt.

What he did not understand even more was how he had never heard or at least have an inkling of thought towards such a powerful man.

How is this possible?

Who is this man?!

Suddenly, light shot into the boat, causing the figure standing at the boat's bow to be in the middle of the light, looking like a God of War.

Ji Ze was stunned.

In the next moment, he had his eyes wide opened revealing a look of disbelief.

This direction is.... Towards Sharp Wind City!

This man....is Ghost Face Mask!

# Chapter 788 - Bewitching Blade Ji Ze

---

Tang Tian was completely oblivious to Ji Ze's thoughts, and even if he did, he did not care.

When the Flowing Tassel Boat flew down to Sharp Wind City, it attracted an uproar. Only when everyone saw Tang Tian standing on the ship's bow did Sharp Wind City calm down temporarily, after which it grew into a bigger uproar.

The Flowing Tassel Boat was not a nameless boat, but instead was extremely famous. There were very few boats in the Sin Domain because of the limited materials. The Sin Domain itself was barren and infertile, thus the amount of materials grown was extremely few. The large hull of the ship meant that countless of materials were involved, thus being expensive. The reason why caravans were so popular was because boats were extremely rare and only the big families had the power to manufacture them.

The big boat that was flying in the sky also became the target of many families.

The Flowing Tassel Boat was a prestigious and famous boat, and aside from it being from the Su Family, it was known for its extravagance. In all of the boats in the Sin Domain, the Flowing Tassel Boat was hailed as the most extravagant of the three big boats.

The two large holes on the boat's side and the pervading blood smell indicated that a battle had occurred.

Master actually seized the Flowing Tassel Boat!

Fu Zheng Zhi and the rest were shocked to the point of being dumbstruck.

But what made them even more dumbstruck was that one after another, beautifully dressed captives with dejected and sincere looks spontaneously left the boat. Through the entire process, no one made a sound, there were no uproars, no one was rebellious or had any intention of resisting.

Fu Zheng Zhi who boarded the boat saw the corpse and the blood, and when he saw who it belonged to, everyone then realized that Su Qing was killed by their Master.

Everyone looked at each other.

Even before he had boarded, Fu Zheng Zhi already had guessed who it was, but when he saw Su Qing's body, he could not help his face from turning.

After the battle a few days ago, Fu Zheng Zhi still felt the unhappiness from his surrender, and after personally watching Ghost Face Mask's transformation for the past few days, he no longer had the heart to resist. Ghost Face Mask's horrifying display of potential made everyone see a bright future, Alright, it is no longer a potential, even the current Ghost Face Mask's strength is enough to shake the entire Sin Domain.

The Floating Tassel Boat in front of them proved that.

Fu Zheng Zhi's gaze swept through the captives, Su Qing himself was not an expert, and he had to rely on a true expert. When he saw a skinny young man, his eyes focused.

The other party sensed his gaze and turned to glance at him, before returning his attention on Master Ghost Face Mask.

It was just a glance, but it made Fu Zheng Zhi's face change, his heart instantly turned cold. It was a gaze that was as sharp as a blade, and the strange fervent and cold was like a lone wolf travelling in the night, which was filled with a dangerous aura.

This man is no unknown hero!

Fu Zheng Zhi was about to remind the Master to be careful of him, when he heard someone flatteringly asking for instructions.

"Master Ghost Face Mask, what do you need Ji Ze to do?"

Fu Zheng Zhi stared at the young man standing in front of Master Ghost Face Mask, Where did the fervent and coldness go to? What lone wolf travelling in the night, he is obviously a flattering watchdog! How can this young man be able to change his face so easily? Where did his anger and rage go to? Where is the young man's impulsiveness? How can this young man be so experienced, how are we old timers going to continue helping out like this....

Wait a minute!

Ji Ze? That man called himself Ji Ze?

Fu Zheng Zhi's eyes opened wide, and cold beads of perspiration trickled down his back.

Ji Ze!

Bewitching Blade Ji Ze!

Ranked third in the 12 Rank A Infamous Great Legends, Bewitching Blade, Ji Ze, hailed as the one to rule the Infamous Men in 10 years!

Fu Zheng Zhi's face was overwhelmed with shock.

Out of the Infamous Men, Ao Gu Man was ranked 5th, and although the difference was just two ranks, but Fu Zheng Zhi clearly knew the stark disparity of strength between the two. The 12 Rank A Infamous Great Legends, the disparity between the top 3 ranks were immense, and the three could be of different grade martial artists. The 3rd ranked Ji Ze and the 4th ranked Suo Lin, no matter how popular they were, in terms of strength, there was a great difference. But between the 4th and 12th rank, the difference was not as big.

The top three had long surpassed the rest.

But the 25 year old Ji Ze was able to step into the top three of the Rank A Infamous men, thus being viewed as the man who would be able to hold the 1st position and control the Infamous Men in 10 years. The top 2 were both over 50 years of age, and had started their road of decline, while the 25 year old Ji Ze still had a long way before he reached his peak.

Other than the name of being the future number one Infamous Man, even in the List of Powerhouses, many people believed that Ji Ze in 10 years time would kill his way to the top 3.

One must know, when Fu Zheng Zhi realized that the evil and sinister youth in front of him was actually Bewitching Blade Ji Ze, he received a great shock. Fu Zheng Zhi himself was a powerful martial artist on the List of Powerhouses, but he clearly knew the difference in strength between himself and Ji Ze. At their level, every slight gain in strength had become extremely difficult.

Of course, Master Ghost Face Mask was an exclusion.

Master Ghost Face Mask's improvements in the past few days is truly inconceivable.

Upon thinking about Master Ghost Face Mask, the shock from Bewitching Blade Ji Ze on him grew much lesser. No matter how strong Ji Ze is, he is not as strong as Master Ghost Face Mask, and no matter how much potential he has, it isn't bigger than Master's.

Upon thinking in that manner, Fu Zheng Zhi calmed down.

Tang Tian removed the Awakened God Armor and his vision gradually became normal again, and he left the bizarre mental state. The Undying Sword on the Weeping Sword Seal on the Demon's hand in his body released layers after layers of undulation, which was like an invisible hand that was constantly massaging every inch of his body, which provided an unspeakable comfort.

Who knew the Undying Sword could actually remove fatigue, this is an unexpected joy.

The power that the Awakened God Armor possessed was extremely powerful, but its consumption was astonishing as well. In truth, the Awakened God Armor was an accidental discovery while compelling himself to enter the critical state, and it extracted out almost 95% or higher of Tang Tian's power. Only by doing that could Tang Tian enter the critical state, allowing him to be in the Awakened mode.

Even without the Awakened State, Tang Tian's control over his strength had reached a perverse level, adding the Awakened God Armor that increased his control, it caused his control over Laws to reach a brand new height, which was something he could not hold for long.

It was through this unknown multiple folds of increase to his ability to control that Tang Tian in his Awakened God Armor could use only half of his power of the physique, but unleash fighting capabilities many more times than he could in the past.

At the start, Tang Tian could not remove the Awakened God Armor by himself.

But currently, he was able to better control every ounce of strength that he had, and he even grasped a few useful knacks by using laws to recover his own strength. By relying on these small tricks, his enlightenment on Laws kept on rising, and Tang Tian finally learned how to fully control and remove the Armor.

Ji Ze was shocked, the Master who had removed his armor was like a God that had fallen and became a mortal, and the palpitating and terrifying aura that he gave off had disappeared without a trace.

Ji Ze's mind started to have suspicions.

When he had sensed Tang Tian on the boat, the reason why he was so overwhelmed with shock was because he had extraordinary sharp senses. Before others had discovered Ghost Face Mask, he had already sensed him, and it was because of his senses that he could sense the immense danger and terrifying aura.

But at the moment....

The master before him was no different from an ordinary man, and he could even hear the slight gasp for air as though Tang Tian was tired.



Ji Ze lowered his head and stared at his own legs, his expression did not have any change, and he still remained docile and respectful, but his long and narrow eyes flashed with a light aura that was sinister and cold.

Are you purposely acting weak to test me?

Do you think such a simple trick will fool me? Too naive!

I am Bewitching Blade Ji Ze!

I am like a lone wolf in the wild, I am patient and crafty. As long as I have enough patience, I will definitely find Ghost Face Mask's weakness and flaws, at that time....

Ji Ze's mind suddenly imagined himself stabbing Ghost Face Mask's chest with his Bewitching Blade, and Ghost Face Mask revealed a look of shock and disbelief, making him extremely excited, to the point that he almost shuddered!

Hahahaha, only powerful Martial artists like Ghost Face Mask has the qualifications to be the prey of mine, Bewitching Blade Ji Ze!

For this victory, I will hold myself back and submit to this humiliation first, it is just a passing thing, I will make you feel numb to me.

Just a bit of numbness! Ji Ze felt elated with his plan.

Hearing Ji Ze's compliance, Tang Tian was startled for a moment, he turned to Fu Zheng Zhi and said: "Give him something to do."

He then left.

He left Ji Ze to his wandering thoughts, Test, that's right, this is definitely a test!

After Lu Sheng Xiang's escape with the Lu Family, the Galloping Horse City plunged into chaos and panic. The Lu Family had always been Galloping Horse City's head, and no one would have expected them to crumble within a night.

They were unable to think who was able to strike such fear in the Lu Family. The unprecedented panic enveloped all the families in Galloping Horse City, the the point that all the other families did not even have the mood to split the Lu Family's remaining wealth. The families all tried to search for information, and when their paths brought them more information, they fell deeper into fear.

It was Ghost Face Mask and his Null Division Prisoners!

Especially on the news that in the battle at Sharp Wind City, where Ghost Face Mask shouted "Whoever imprisons my subordinates will die!" was passed to them, all the remaining families who still had the Null Division Prisoners trembled with fear.

So when Nie Qiu led the Null Division to sweep across Galloping Horse City, they did not meet with any resistance, all the various families respectfully waited outside and welcomed the Null Division into the city. It was their first time witnessing an army, and they were immediately overwhelmed by the sight of the Null Division's awe-inspiring atmosphere that their souls almost separated from their bodies.

To Nie Qiu, the journey to Galloping Horse City was just like a march, and they did not encounter any troubles.

All of the Null Division Members from Galloping Horse City returned safely, along with wealth that piled up like a mountain given by the various families hoping to be pardoned. But Nie Qiu did not care about the wealth, he who had used the Lu Family as a barracks for himself and was wholeheartedly training.

Following the increase in the return of the Null Division members, the Null Division's overall strength had dropped, the new members needed time to adjust and fit into their formation.

Nie Qiu knew that this problem would hinder him in the long run. And as expected, two days later, all the families in the neighbouring cities, Bi Ze City and Shang Yi City, respectfully handed the Null Division members back.

The battle in Sharp wind City and the escape of Lu Sheng Xiang had caused Ghost Face Mask's name to rise, and also made the Null Division members become a problem.

Compared to the value of the Null Division members, the families lives were more important, no one wanted to become a second Lu Family.

The Null Division Unit under Nie Qiu had grown to over 2000 men strong.

The Four Main Cities started to feel the pressure.

# Chapter 789 - Shamed Zhong Li Bai

---

This is definitely a goddamn place!

Xiao Han Guang cursed in his heart, his entire body was covered in dust and he was in an extremely terrible state. From young , he had never been dirtied before, and he would occasionally look at his own reflection in his blade, and almost could not recognize himself who was currently looking like a beggar.

But he did not dare to lose focus, if he were to make another slight mistake in the next cooperation, not only him, but the entire small unit would be face with more punishment and more training. If it was him in the past, he would had left with pride, How can you weak people be my teammates?

Everything spiralled out of control ever since he was handed to the Null Division,

On the same day, where the march happened in the afternoon, he was requested to participate in all of the Null Division training.

Damn it!

He was only there to learn the Heavy Demonic Execution!

His reason was put down by the despicable blind man, who said with a calm look, since the Master had handed the army over to him, all matters regarding the army would be decided by him. How

could the prideful Xiao Han Guang tolerate that? He did not have anything to say for losing to Ghost Face Mask, but that did not mean that he could be appointed as a subordinate to anyone else.

This blind man dares to criticize and give me orders?

He snorted and started to walk out, he did not believe that the blind man dared to do anything to him.

Before he could even leave the barracks, Xu Ye blocked his path.

Xu Ye's strength struck fear in him, Xu Ye's enlightenment and the terrifying death aura brought forth by him in Sharp Wind City had left an extremely deep impression in Xiao Han Guang. But it was just fear, he was not afraid.

Right at that moment, the ground of the entire barracks started trembling.

Countless figures rushed forward like a tide from every corner of the barracks towards him. Xu Ye was a man with a belly full of tricks. He hit him hard, saying that so long as he could escape from the group of them, he would not need to participate in the army training.

Xiao Han Guang snorted, Just by relying on you guys, you think you can stop me?

Without hesitation, he rushed towards the group of people.

The start of a lifelong unforgettable and shameful battle begun, the berserk waves of attacks came in, the terrifying offensive storm caused him to quickly lose consciousness, he only lasted for 30 seconds, a pitiful 30 seconds. He was struck by Ah Mo Li who grasped an opportunity, the big man who had so happily taught him the Heavy Demonic Execution in the day had raised his large guillotine blade and without holding back, smashed onto Xiao Han Guang's body without any sentiments.

He shamefully fainted right there and then.

Following that, he was awoken by a bucket of ice water, and then dragged by Ah Mo Li into the ranks and started to participate in the training.

That was the start of his hellish life.

The arrogant Xiao Han Guang had always been seen as a genius since young, and all the ordinary teammates around him that he looked down on could never keep up with his rhythm. But very quickly, he was punished, and he who was unconvinced by the punishment scolded out, that there was no meaning in the cooperation.

Nie Qiu did not retort, and simply let Han Bing Ning and her small team fight with Xiao Han Guang in a real battle.

Xiao Han Guang felt that it was an opportunity to prove himself, he immediately took the initiative and rushed towards Han Bing

Ning. But he quickly fell into trouble, as Han Bing Ning's fighting style was completely different from Ah Mo Li.

Ah Mo Li was like an invincible heavy hammer that could smashed through everything, he liked to unleash his blade together with his unit, the power imposing and fearsome.

Han Bing Ning had a different temperament, she was like a metal web with blades hung all over, most proficient in using three to five man coordinating attacks. They suddenly separated and converged, each strike did not have Ah Mo Li's power, but each strike was undoubtedly sharp and penetrative, Xiao Han Guang realized that all of his Demon Seals were quickly being put in a pinch. Although he managed to inflict some injuries onto Han Bing Ning's group, he had to display all of his abilities to saturation, but he was unable to change the outcome.

Xiao Han Guang had nothing to say. Although he was an arrogant man, but he was no fool, and nothing was as convincing as having the better ability.

But, damn it! What does an army tactic have to do with me?

I am just here to learn the Heavy Demonic Execution.....

Xiao Han Guang roared in his heart, but against Nie Qiu's demand for him to participate in the daily trainings to have the qualifications to earn the Heavy Demonic Execution, he had no choice but to obediently listen and train with them.



Xu Ye sat on the city wall and watched Xiao Han Guang train bitterly.

Xu Ye was basking in the joy of Xiao Han Guang's calamity, It is truly a joy seeing young talents being beaten up. Xu Ye who had participated in the training for a period of time knew how terrifying the Null Division was, and even Xu Xiang Dong harbored a grudge towards the unit.

Xiao Han Guang was stronger than Xu Xiang Dong, but the Null Division was also stronger than before. The various experts from Purple Cuckoo City, like Gu Xie, had merged into Null Division, increasing the Null Division's fighting ability.

Ah Mo Li and Han Bing Ning's improvements caused others to be stupefied.

The Null Division members in the field had their teeth clenched, they were patiently doing drills over and over again. Even as an outsider watching, Xu Ye felt that the training was too tedious and dull. However, the Null Division members had red faces and tensed necks, they were perspiring all over and gasping for breath with their eyes wide opened.

Suddenly, Xu Ye felt envious of them.

Their strength was nothing to Xu Ye, but they were filled with enthusiasm, to the point that he felt it was fanatical. Their trust and unity was something that in Nie Qiu's eyes was not of standard yet, but to Xu Ye, it was enough for others to be shocked.

For some reason, he liked to sit by the city walls and watch the Null Division train.

Maybe because they are not compatible with the Sin Domain.

The Sin Domain had struggled at death's door for too long and had lost their aspirations, the people were long used to lowering their heads. But the Null Division members were different, they were filled with energy and the enthusiasm towards life, filled with fearlessness towards battles. Even when they were reduced to prisoners, they still stood with a backbone and straightened necks, arrogant and unbridled.

The entire Sin Domain was actually unable to do anything to these prisoners. I wonder what the Sin Domain will think, looking on helplessly at the Null Division who were previously their captives, this is truly confusing, who were the true captives?

What a turn of the tables, what absurdity is this.

The Sin Domain had already forgotten their ancestor's glories, and the spirit in expansion and development had all disappeared within two generations. How long has it been since the Sin Domain had increased the number of cities?

So he liked to watch the Null Division members training from a distance, only by watching them could he feel that life was full hope, his heart that had been shrouded by the haze could he finally see the sunlight.

The Sin Domain that had sunk into depravity, the Sin Domain that had lost its determination, the Sin Domain that was struggling at death's door, was as weak as a decaying tree.

Only from within the ashes could it have hopes of producing a new sprout.

But it was a pity, the Master had no interest in the Sin Domain. Xu Ye sighed in his mind, ~Sin Domain's various families are extremely cautious towards Master, but they would never have thought that Master had no intentions for the Sin Domain at all.

~Master has never concealed his intentions, he just wants to lead the Null Division back to the Sacred Saint Galaxy, from what he has said, there is most probably a huge war there.~

He shook his head, and threw out all of the excess thoughts, I should think about how I can complete the task Master has entrusted me.

They had completed their task of obtaining the Null Division Members from the Flying Galloping City perfectly, which was out of expectations, but Xu Ye knew that this was not due to their hard work, but because of the intimidation that the Master gave off. As a subordinate, to only be able to accomplish their mission because of their Master was not something praiseworthy.

Xu Ye suddenly stood up, he sensed that someone was watching.

The scouts that had come for two days, had become more substantial. All of these scouts came from different places, there were many of them, causing Xu Ye to be surprised.

The Flying Galloping City and the Four Main Cities were neighbours, with an army of 2000 trained soldiers being deployed, how could the Four Main Cities remain unconcerned?

The difference between Nie Qiu and Xu Ye was that Xu Ye understood better on how the higher ups of the Sin Domain operated.

The Four Main Cities would definitely not take action straightaway, they were too unfamiliar with armies, and they would never take such risks. Out of all of those eyes around, majority of them would definitely be related to the Four Main Cities.

How will they react?

Xu Ye frowned, a look of worry flashed past his eyes. He had never thought that there would be a day where he would make enemies out of the Four Main Cities, which were horrifying existences. Thinking about that, Xu Ye could not help but laugh. The Purple Cuckoo City was just a sideline city, and the Qin Family back then was already an immovable and majestic mountain that he could never surpass, he never thought that they would pose a threat to the Four Main Cities.

Thinking about the power the Four Main Cities held, Xu Ye's face became serious.

They are the truly overlords of Sin Domain, and everywhere that the Sin Domain has people will be somewhat related to them.

What will they do?

\*\*\*\*\*

"Such bad luck!" Zhong Li Bai's face was extremely ugly, he spat out saliva angrily, killing intent soaring.

They had just besieged a fortified mountain stronghold, the enemy actually cheated them and feigned surrender, causing Zhong Li Bai's men to have a lot of casualties. In the face of death and where their plan had failed, the enemies had ashen faces, to them, the consequences would be inevitable.

"Out of every 10, kill one."

Zhong Li Bai said indifferently, his subordinate pounced into the group of captives, where the screamings of plead and howls continued endlessly. Zhong Li Bai ignored them, there were many of them, and if he did not need their strength, he would have killed all of them.

Zhong Li Bai who was from a proper education and school did not like bandits and thieves.

But the current him was no different from the bandits, his troops had swelled, and he currently had over 20 thousand men. The entire mountains had been swept by him, and all of the bandits were under him now.

The number seemed huge, but their fighting capability was no different from cannon fodder.

What made him even more repulsive was that the battle in Sharp Wind City had allowed the Master's name to soar, and ultimately letting Nie Qiu take advantage of the situation, and it was heard that he currently had 2000 Null Division members under him. Even though Zhong Li Bai had 10 times the number of men, but he knew that they could not fight against Nie Qiu and his 2000 men.

That blind man is actually ahead of me. Zhong Li Bai felt extremely terrible. What made him feel even worse was that his master that had improved greatly made his plan sound like a joke.

Following Master's speed, before my plan even succeeds, they will have obtained all of the Null Division.

I took the initiative to pull people out, ultimately to go around doing nothing, how can I go back with nothing? What have I accomplished? Oh, I swept through the mountains and killed off the bandits, and provided a meritorious service to the Sin Domain, providing them with safety....

Upon thinking about that, Zhong Li Bai so badly wanted to cover

up his face that was heating up with shame.

Right at that moment, a scout rushed over anxiously: "Master, there's a situation!"

# Chapter 790 - Night Ambush

---

Something happened?

Zhong Li Bai raised his head, his expression unkind.

The one who rushed in to report was an old man from East Immortal City. The old man swallowed his saliva with difficulty, sensing that the boss' eyes that was staring at him resembled a wolf about to devour him whole. Zhong Li Bai was extremely upset with his own achievements, but in the eyes of his subordinates, it was already too alarming.

Along the road, they were like the autumn gale sweeping away all the fallen leaves, flattening the entire mountain strongholds, in the face of their Master, all of the unbreakable mountain strongholds were destroyed effortlessly. They did not have to suffer too many casualties, as many of them had fought with bandits before. All of the poor and fierce bandits were difficult to handle, their tactics were ferocious and being tenacious, they were hard to defeat.

Their realignment of allegiance was initially mostly due to the circumstance, but after being with Zhong Li Bai, they were heartfelt in following him.

The strong will always be revered.

Although the various elites of the East Immortal City did not understand what a military general was, but their victories were



through and through. Winning battle after battle consecutively was the best food for them, upon tasting it, they never wanted to stop.

Their boss who was extremely vicious towards the enemies was actually extremely generous to his subordinates, and treated everyone fairly. Whoever performed and trained well, whoever had high achievements would be rewarded more. With the strict discipline restricting his subordinates and ample reward system that encouraged them to strive to do better, the unorganized bandits gradually transformed.

Even the bandits that surrendered afterwards were also converted. To the bandits, the majority of them were people unable to live in the city anymore, they were treated kindly. But for the arrogant and unbridled ones, those who were insincere and cunning, were beheaded by Zhong Li Bai without hesitation.

The Boss was a ferocious man that did not even blink in the eyes of the rivers of blood, and even the bandits who were known to be ferocious and crafty were trembling sheep in front of him.

The scout who was being stared at by Zhong Li Bai trembled, and immediately spoke up: "There is someone outside who wishes to see you, boss!"

"See me?" Zhong LI Bai squinted his eyes.

"Yes, they say they are here to do business with our East Mountain Pirates."

"Business?" Zhong LI Bai muttered, he sensed something amiss.

He had pulled his troops out of East Immortal City, and for the sake of not attracting attention, he disguised the entire troops to be like bandits, and gave himself the name as the East Mountain Pirates.

There were always battles between bandits, and no one would link them to Ghost Face Mask.

After annexing many of the mountain strongholds, their strength had grown, and the East Mountain Pirates' name became popular. Everyone knew of the newly emerged and powerful bandits that had already annexed many other bandit strongholds.

"They did not state what business." The scout said honestly.

Zhong Li Bai sneered: "Then let us see what they want, let them come in. Transmit the order down to the Pro-Guard Unit, tell everyone we are welcoming noble guests."

"Noble guests", he articulated those two words extremely clearly.

The surrounding Pro-Guard Unit all stood up, the sense of ill discipline disappeared from their bodies, they took out their weapons and stood in positions.

The hall became silent, and a dense killing intent pervaded out.

Zhong Li Bai was at the front with his gold blade and horse, all of the Pro-Guard Unit were elites personally selected out by him from over 10 thousand men.

There were 2500 bandits in the Pro-Guards Unit, they were the true core of the East Mountain Pirates.

Out of them, there were elites from the East Immortal City's various families, elites from bandits, but most of them were actually chosen from ordinary refugees staying in the mountains. All of these refugees did not have any positions, and were people that had the most arduous jobs and obtained the least food.

Zhong Li Bai had specially chosen them.

Many of the bandits wanted to laugh at Zhong Li Bai, the refugees that did not have much strength did not have much use, and did not even have the qualifications to be cannon fodder.

The Pro-Guard Unit possessed the most optimal treatment, but at the same time, had to go through the harshest of trainings. The trainings that made the bandits stupefied were not able to incite any negativity from the Pro-Guard Unit.

None of them knew that their daily trainings and fighting style were tactics related to the legendary armies.

Even if they did, they did not care, because as long as they finished their training, they would be able to eat, and no one needed to starve. Compared to the arduous labor that had no hope, what was training? All of the petty and low refugees risked their lives in training until they fainted.

They were weak and did not have the habit of flaunting their own strengths, thus they never rejected the complicated coordinations and formations.

All of them risked their lives to train, causing the people who watched them to be speechless. The Pro-Guard Unit was not the strongest, but they were the most disciplined and obedient to take commands, and were the most upright and had seriousness in training, they were people who were not afraid of dying.

In the first battle, many of the Pro-Guard Unit died, but Zhong Li Bai rewarded the survivors tremendously. It did not take much to replenish the numbers, as countless of refugees watched in envy, all of them were racking their brains trying to join the Pro-Guard Unit.

A man in the dust would never hesitate when they could use their petty and low life in exchange for a hope to see the sun.

After a few battles, this Pro-Guard Unit grew quickly, like a treasure blade that revealed its luster when it drew blood. Every battle that was locked in stalemate would be broken by them.

Their blades and swords were aplenty, and their killing intent

pervaded.

The multicolored armors mixed together did not cause these elites standing upright lose their appearances at all. They puffed their chests up with their heads high, their expressions indifferent, the spaces between where they stood left no gap for any blades to cut through.

It was dead silence, yet filled with intimidation.

When the three guests faced the group of elites, their faces changed.

\*\*\*\*\*

Flying Galloping City.

"There's good news, and bad news."

Xu Ye had a complicated expression.

Nie Qiu laughed: "I hope the good news is better, and hope that the bad news is not that bad."

Xu Ye was amused by Nie Qiu's words, but quickly retracted the smile on his face: "The good news is that Master has obtained Su Family's Flowing Tassel Boat, killed Su Qing, and caught Ji Ze."

"That sounds like a remarkable feat." Nie Qiu praised.

"Not sounds like, it is extremely remarkable." Xu Ye remembered that Nie Qiu was not familiar with Sin Domain, No wonder he is so calm, then continued to explain: "Ji Ze is hailed as Bewitching Blade, and is 3rd in the 12 Rank A Infamous Great Legends, and is the youngest out of all of them, he is a brilliant chap. I never expected him to be caught as a captive by Master, this time, Sin Domain will find it difficult not to do anything."

"That is truly good news." Nie Qiu could not help but feel happy.

Xu Ye then revealed a bitter look: "The bad news is that Su Qing's death has shocked the Su Family. They want revenge, and will come after us. Su Qing's death is a reason for them to do so. My previous worry is how the Four Main Cities would probe us, but now, I reckon that the Su Family will take the lead."

"I understand." Nie Qiu nodded his head: "We will soon meet with the enemy's attacks."

"I am afraid so." Xu Ye's eyes flashed with a look of worry: "The Su Family's attack will definitely be strong!"

Right at that moment, a warning signal sounded out like a owl hooting, breaking the silence.

"Your judgement is very accurate."

Nie Qiu laughed, he stood up and left, leaving Xu Ye dumbstruck.

The Lu Family residence in Galloping Horse City lit up with lights, and human all flew out.

"Everyone in position!"

"Prepare to face the enemy!"

On the high walls of Galloping Horse City, four figures stood side by side and overlooked the entire place.

"They are truly ants."

The tallest figure stood there quietly with his cold voice. Qin Zhen, His eyes was leaking out a venomous anger, it was the ants in front of him that destroyed the Qin Family, and caused his few decades of hard work to go down the drain.

By his side was an old man that looked like a farmer. Lu Sheng Xiang, the Sect Leader of Lu Family, he looked as if he had aged a decade, his face was even more sunken as he remained silent.

"I still feel that they are rather neat." The one who spoke was a lady, her lustrous purple hair hang down like snakes to her waist, with a pair of full and voluptuous breasts, her deep red lips and ice blue eyes gave people a very beautiful sight to look at.

Su Fei, ranked 36 on the List of Powerhouses.

The last person was enveloped with black mist all over his body, making him look like a ghost. The other three looked to be fearful of him, maintaining a respectable distance away from him.

No one knew his name, but he was a famous man who dealt with death, and was well known in the entire Sin Domain as Death Servant, with a position of 28 on the List of Powerhouses. He was extremely mysterious, other than the fact the he trains in Death Laws, everything else was unknown. He was always reclusive and hardly came out, no one would have expected for the Su Family to be able to employ him.

Right at that moment, a light 'eh' came out from the dense black mist.

The three of them were startled, Did he sense something? They all turned their gaze towards the Lu Family courtyard.

Nie Qiu was seated down quietly, in front of him, the Growing Yin Sword floated in front of him with the sword tip pointed towards the ground. He could feel an extremely miraculous connection with it, causing him to feel out of sorts. After the continuous probing, his understanding towards the Growing Yin Sword grew stronger and deeper, it was able to strengthen his formation's might, and knew the value of the sword.

Tang Tian's generosity truly made him surprised.



In the Leo Constellation, such a treasure would never be so easily given to subordinates. Of course, even if it was given, it would definitely not be given to someone like him. Because hope births ambitions, when he left Leo Constellation, and became Tang Tian's subordinate, he still did things carefully and cautiously. Regardless of how one saw it, he could not be considered a direct faction of Tang Tian.

He used to think that it was good enough for Tang Tian to give him control over an army, so much that he did not even have the hope that his army would be able to obtain a level as that of a core army.

But he did not expect that not only did the Master give him the Null Division, he even gave him the trust and space, and the Growing Yin Sword, a treasured spirit object to him.

Such a treatment far exceeded all of his expectations.

In the Leo Constellation, although everyone hailed him as a genius, but he had never been treated so importantly before. But under the Master, he as an outsider, to be able to control an important army, that trust and expectation in him, this heavy pressure became an endless force for him to push on.

Thinking about the days where he sighed about the difficulty for him to achieve magnificent goals, to actually be able to enjoy battles, how fortunate is that

Life is just like that, all of this is enough!

Nie Qiu's palm held onto Growing Yin Sword's hilt, his word suddenly quieted down, and the fringe on his forehead moved although there was no wind, his somewhat pale white face revealed a gentle yet fanatical smile.

Come, I will fight in the name of my Master!

Come, I will win in the name of my Master!

# Chapter 791 - Tang Tian's Idea

---

20 li away from Galloping Horse City, two figures flew high up in the sky, their figures flickering visible for a moment and disappearing in the next.

The wind around them seemed to have disappeared, the air around them was completely still as they observed Galloping Horse City releasing many light auras.

"I never knew that the might of an army could reach such a state." The old man was filled with surprise, he had white eyebrows and dressed in snow white robes, there was no anger on his face, he was frowning with a worried expression.

"Yes." The other man sighed: "Military generals' education, it has been lost in the Sin Domain for a long time, the Sin Domain just does not have the space for military generals to survive. I never thought that this child would find an alternative route and use laws to control them, it is indeed surprising. It seems like it isn't that Sin Domain does not have the space, it is we did not find the route."

The middle aged man looked to around 40 year of age, he had a tall and sturdy figure with thick eyebrows and big eyes.

"This child has a unique talent, and very strange laws." The white brow old man shook his head: "Ultimately, it isn't a true path. But I have to say, just by relying on these soldiers, to want to get everyone together, isn't easier said than done?"

"It truly isn't easy." The middle aged man nodded his head: "But, It is truly a good help for us. Talking about military education, we cannot compare to these outsiders, but in terms of laws, how can they compare to us?"

The white brow old man's frown smoothened out: "That's right."

He then changed the topic: "This time, even with Su Family's capital, they might not be able to win."

"The Su Family's decision will naturally be dictated by the Su Family." The middle aged man said nonchalantly: "If not for their help, we would not have been able to see an army. To connect people through laws certainly is interesting."

The middle aged man's eyes flashed with a light, he was obviously extremely interested with armies.

"Ghost Face Mask's subordinates are truly geniuses." The white brow old man said: "If not for me personally seeing all of this tonight, I am afraid that you and I will still be frogs in a well. This Ghost Face Mask man isn't simple as well, Ji Ze was captured by him. With such ferocious subordinates, given a few more days, I am afraid that Sin Domain will be his world."

While he was speaking, Su Fei was coincidentally being repelled back, while the other three were dejected and depressed, with nothing much to say. There were countless of Law Threads surrounding Galloping Horse City, and at the moment, who knew

how many people were watching the battle.

"The people in Purple Cuckoo City only have ordinary talent and are weak, how much time has passed only, but in Ghost Face Mask's hands, they are suddenly soaring like tiger with wings." The old white brow man said calmly: "That lady with laws that are like rainbows used to be Qin Zhen's general, but today, Qin Zhen is not even her match! And that Xu Ye, he is just the head of a small family, but now, he is on par with Death Servant. Ghost Face Mask himself uses some very strange laws, and he improves extremely quickly, I am still suspecting whether or not Ancestor Li has possessed his body. In the Purple Cuckoo City, much less Qin Zhen, it was said that he was on par with the big rock called Shi Sen. But now, he even captured Ji Ze, every time I think about it, it makes me unable to eat and rest easy."

Hearing that, the middle aged man turned his head with a strange light aura in his eyes: "But I feel that this is not necessary a bad thing."

"Oh?" The white brow old man was surprised.

"It's been too long since a new power has emerged in the Sin Domain." The middle aged man spoke: "For example, look in front of us, to personally watch how an army maneuvers, with our understanding of Laws, I believe that in a short time, we can gain enlightenment on other marvels. Ever since Ancestor Li gained enlightenment on Laws, the 200 years of development and the studies of Laws in Sin Domain had reached a bottleneck. If we were to have new blood in us, our Dao in laws can improve further."

"Improve further?" The white brow old man looked at the middle aged man deeply: "The Sin Domain is already ours, you want us to improve further? Unless you are thinking of returning to Sacred Saint Galaxy?"

"Why not?" The middle aged man returned back with a stare without retreating.

The white brow old man choked.

"If we are able to grasp the marvels of an army, we will definitely be able to return to the Sacred Saint Galaxy!" The middle aged man's eyes flashed with a light full of ambition, his words echoing into the distance.

The White Brow old man looked as though he had seen a ghost, revealing a look of panic, he blurted out: "Everyone will not agree! You will cause all of us to die!"

The middle aged man replied profoundly: "Is that so?"

The explosion of light auras reflected his face, revealing a calm look.

\*\*\*\*\*

Tang Tian was still immersed in his Awakened God Armor, the more he probed it, the more he could sense its immense power. It was a brand new world, it was incomparably broad, and there were

more to come, as though there were no end to it.

The continuous probing and investigation made Tang Tian finally have an idea about the Awakened God Armor. He knew that he was in a race against time, and naturally could not casually probe it with ease like in normal times.

He was thinking of an extremely realistic problem.

The Awakened God Armor is very strong, but how can I use it to defeat my enemies?

If he wanted to bring the Null Division to leave Sin Domain, there was one man he had to surpass, he was the strongest of Sin Domain, the man who gained enlightenment on the Law Domain, Du Ke. Although the Awakened God Armor was extremely powerful, it was unable to allow him to form a Law Domain.

Tang Tian's enlightenment on laws had not reached to the stage of gaining a Law Domain, and he had limited knowledge on it even in theory.

He asked Fu Zheng Zhi and Ji Ze, how strong martial artists who have Law Domains were. But both Fu Zheng Zhi and Ji Ze were unable to describe what a Law Domain was. They firmly believed that other than Du Ke, no one else knew how martial artists with Law Domains fought.

There were very few rumors about Du Ke, born as a genius from

an aristocratic family, he was already flowing with talent ever since he was young. The Du Family in Du City was not considered a powerhouse amongst the Four Main Cities. But following Du Ke's continuous rise, the Du City gradually became the head of the Four Main Cities, and they gradually took control of the entire Sin Domain.

Du Ke was the only man confirmed to have stepped into the Law Domains level.

In his eyes, there were no secrets left in Laws.

No one knew how strong Du Ke truly was, as the outside world never had news about his battles. As a man, he was extremely low profile, pragmatic and reserved. While he was young, he had actively participated in matters regarding the family, and based on this point, he was completely different from other martial artists.

"Du Ke attempted the Sin Door once."

Ji Ze suddenly spoke out, but the moment he did, he felt infuriated. Damn it! Why am I helping this guy and giving him advice!

Fu Zheng Zhi was stunned, this matter was something the entire Sin Domain had never heard of. The number 1 man of Sin Domain actually attempted the Sin Door quietly, what explosive news was that!



The Sin Door was guarded by the Honorable Martial Continent, and was the key to moving between the Sin Domain and the Honorable Martial Continent. Ever since Ancestor Li stepped into the Sin Domain, countless people had tried attacking the Sin Door, but no one had ever succeeded, the road had become a land of bones, and thus hailed as the Death Path to Home.

The Death Path to Home had been there for many years, and no one stepped onto it again.

But who would have known that the Number 1 man of Sin Domain, Du Ke, travelled the Death Path to Home alone and attacked the Sin Door!

Fu Zheng Zhi then asked: "How do you know that?"

"Because at that time, I was also preparing to go to the Sin Door." Ji Ze said with please, seeing the two looking at him suspiciously, he immediately explained: "I was only thinking to go and see what the Sin Door looks like, I am not Du Ke."

Tang Tian clapped his hands: "He wants to return to the Sacred Saint Galaxy?"

Ji Ze who initially wanted to stop talking suddenly blurted out with a bit of daze: "Who doesn't want to?"

Upon saying that, he broke his cup: "What sort of place is this Sin Domain? Who likes it here? I do not know what other people

think, but I don't. Du Ke is already the number 1 in Sin Domain, and he isn't even that old yet, why not test himself out?"

"That's true!" Tang Tian scratched his chin, revealing a pondering look.

But Ji Ze only knew this much, Tang Tian turned his head and asked: "Are you familiar with the Sin Door?"

"Nope." Ji Ze shook his head, his face was slightly ugly: "I only saw a glimpse of it."

Tang Tian then turned to Fu Zheng Zhi, who also shook his head with a slightly dejected look.

To any man in the Sin Domain, The Sin Domain was a lock that had firmly latched onto their necks, upon talking about the Sin Door, everyone would be clenching their fists and jaws. The Death Path to Home was formed by a river of blood, which was many generations of Sin Domain's people's blood.

Fu Zheng Zhi hesitated for a moment: "If Du Ke wants to return to Sacred Saint Galaxy, will he cooperate with us?"

"Who cares if he is willing to, we are all returning to Sacred Saint Galaxy." Tang Tian's tone was tyrannical and without any hesitation.

Ji Ze's mind felt disapproval, but he did not dare reveal it on his

face. Fu Zheng Zhi only lowered his head, not knowing what to think.

Tang Tian then threw the question to the side: "The reason why I came to find you guys is because I have an idea that I want you guys to try."

Hearing that, the two of them raised their heads, revealing looks of curiosity.

"You guys also know about armies, Nie Qiu's Yin Yang formation is a unique Law, which mobilizes everyone's strength. I am not too good with armies, but my Awakened God Armor is much better with laws, so I was thinking, if I could use the Awakened God Armor, to gather everyone's strength?"

Fu Zheng Zhi revealed a look of puzzlement, Ji Ze's froze, his face revealing a look of shock.

After a while, Fu Zheng Zhi regained his senses, his eyes bursting with a strange light aura.

The two of them were experts and had more understanding towards Laws than others. To others, they would never be able to comprehend such a thought. Different Laws were incompatible with each other, and the higher level the law was, the harder was it to combine them.

But Tang Tian's Awakened God Armor allowed that possibility.

The Awakened God Armor seem to contain all the Laws, it was like a port for the countless of Laws, and if everyone's laws were able to find a corresponding port, in theory, it should be possible.....

The two of them knew what that meant if the idea truly worked!

When 10 or a hundred Law Surfaces connect through Awakened God Armor, the power between the Law Surfaces could benefit each other and make up for each other's shortcomings, and aside from that, there would be countless of variations!

"Let's try it!"

The two of them stood up and said in unison.

For different Law Surfaces to merge, what would happen? No one knew, because this sort of thing had never happened before!

The two men looked at each other with excitement, anticipation and shock in their eyes.

If the idea truly succeeded, the Sin Domain had the possibility of a complete makeover!

The theories of Laws would be rewritten!

# Chapter 792 - The Key to Victory

---

"Pay attention to your control, the power projected from the Law Surface cannot be too strong, that's right, weaken it a bit more."

"Converge your focus, maintain yourselves!"

.....

"Once more!"

.....

How long had it been since they had to go through hard work? Ji Ze was fine, although he was unbridled and arrogant, but his body of strength did not fall from the sky, but through bitter training. Fu Zheng Zhi was even more in a terrible situation, he had been in a high position for many years, and although he had strength, he had lived like a prince for so many years, and thus he complained in his heart endlessly.

But when in front of Tang Tian, the two of them dared not have any anger.

Tang Tian in the Awakened State was brimming with oppressiveness like a Fiendgod. His indifferent eyes seemed to be able to see through a person's heart.

Furthermore, the Flowing Tassel Boat was stopped by the side with the two large holes that constantly reminded the two of them what crossing Ghost Face Mask meant.

The two of them had a mix of feelings, and even they did not know how to express it. The two of them knew how powerful Master Ghost Face Mask's theory was, and to say that there was no attraction to it was fake. But out of the two of them, one was a great legend, the other a man overflowing with aggressiveness, and to be placed in such a terrible situation, it was impossible not to feel anger.

Alright, circumstances makes the man That was how the two consoled themselves.

Tang Tian did not know of what they were thinking, or cared about it, as he had never meant to be reasonable. Each family knows how each family runs, in terms of controlling and management, only intelligent people like Qian Hui knows how to do it. As for me, I can just use my fist to convince others.

Fu Zheng Zhi and Ji Ze quickly displayed why they were stronger than the average people.

Fu Zheng Zhi leaned towards being unscrupulous and efficient, he was an experienced man, and would usually use simpler methods to control the situation. As for Ji Ze who had the name of Bewitching Blade, his Laws would always cause other people's eyes to open wide, as his beautiful and majestic techniques were filled with imaginations.

Little did they know, as the shock Tang Tian gave them was even more intense.

Master Ghost Face Mask was like a bridge, the difficulty of connecting two person's Law Surface was truly inconceivable. But what made the two feel ashamed was that right from the start, the bridge was extremely stable, but it was the two of them giving troubles.

How can Master's understanding towards Laws reach such a stage!

The two of them were unable to comprehend it. They had long perfected their Law surfaces, and corresponding to it was their Law Surfaces barrier were extremely stable. From a logical sense, these seemingly unbreakable barriers were something they could not even break themselves.

But their Master effortlessly connected their Law Surfaces.

This might not seem as much, but when they tried to give their power to Tang Tian, the result left them stupefied. Master Ghost Face Mask was like an endless ocean, and the power they gave to him was like a bull running into the ocean, to the point that all of the power projected from the Law Surfaces were lost to Tang Tian, but Tang Tian did not have any reaction.

The two of them had expressions as though they had seen a ghost.

They knew the terrifying amount of power accumulated in their Law Surfaces, and according to a standard dao path, any one of their Law Surface was able to cause the Master to explode. But, the Master devoured both perfected Law Surfaces' strength, yet nothing happened.....

Tang Tian did not care about them, he was carefully experiencing the two different types of power.

But their shocked conjectures were wrong, the thing that was bearing the power of their Law Surfaces was in truth the Awakened God Armor. Tang Tian realized that he was still underestimating the use of Awakened God Armor, it was able to withstand a great amount of power, and its potential was far higher than Tang Tian's own expectation.

Tang Tian tried to form the two powers together, but he quickly realized that it could not work. The two large forces of power were separated clearly inside his God Awakened Armor. And Tang Tian found out that he had difficulty controlling both powers.

His idea was slowly becoming unfeasible in each and every step.

If Tang Tian was in his usual mental state, he would have become restless and agitated. But in the Awakened state, his entire person had taken a great change, when the problem could not be solved, he began thinking from another perspective.

It is possible to connect Law Surfaces, this has been proven. Tang



Tian did not believe that his connection was useless.

It must be that I have not found the way.

Suddenly, he thought about a familiar yet foreign phrase, Synchronization.

Synchronization was commonly used in armies, it was used to balance the power undulations and state between the soldiers. The higher the synchronization, the more powerful the energy that could be produced. Synchronization was the goal that all military generals aimed to achieve, and it seemed to assimilate in all the trainings.

It was because of that that high synchronization became the most sought after training practise. A 90% synchronization was the standard criteria for an excellent army, and when achieved, it meant that 90% of the soldiers could perfectly maintain the same energy synchronization.

Tang Tian only knew this bit of synchronization, but this gave him an epiphany.

Not only could energy have undulations, in truth, even the power projected from the Law Surface could have undulations. Energy synchronization could increase power at an astonishing rate, so if the power projected by the Law Surfaces was able to experience the same synchronised state, what would be the result?

This epiphany made Tang Tian's eyes light up, and immediately started working on it.

Power was again injected into the two people's Law Surfaces.

Tang Tian said coldly: "In a while, when I give the command, only when you have received it, attack me."

"What attack?" Ji Ze immediately asked.

After the past few days of interacting, Ji Ze realized that currying favor with Ghost Face Mask in his normal state was extremely useful. But Ghost Face Mask in the Awakened State was completely different, as nothing could work on him, only that they could discuss work when they were working, and anything had had to be clarified were asked directly, which proved to be more effective.

Tang Tian thought for a moment, then said: "Give me your strongest attacks."

The two of them was puzzled, but still made preparations.

Suddenly, an indescribable undulation pervaded out from their Law Surfaces.

The two of them jumped in fright.

Why are you guys not attacking?"

Master Ghost Face Mask's cold gaze caused the two of them to tremble, they then understood that that was the command.

"Once more."

When the undulation appeared once again on both of their Law Surfaces, they both took action without hesitation.

Fu Zheng Zhi's hands wielded two jade green wooden short swords, which were known as the Green Swords. The moment the undulation appeared, the Green Swords shot out jade green light.

At the same time, Ji Ze unleashed his own blade aura. The blade in his hand was extremely thin, long and curved, the blade body's flushed red lines looked like blood moving along the blade, and the blade aura he released was blood red as well.

The light in Tang Tian's eyes exploded, with the simultaneous attacks from both Law Surfaces, an indescribable rippled out from his body as well, and the Awakened God Armor grew brighter.

The green sword light and blood red blade aura disappeared at the same time.

Then, a jade green light mixed with blood blade aura appeared in their eyes.

This is.....

Fu Zheng Zhi and Ji Ze's body trembled, their faces revealed looks of disbelief.

Fusion!

Their attacks, actually fused!

This is impossible....two completely different type of Law powers, how can they possibly fuse?

In their shocked eyes, the green and red mixed blade aura shot into the mountain peak outside the city.

Bang!

An intense raging light that seemed to blaze like the sun blossomed out, their vision immediately went white, and they could not see anything. The terrifying shock wave from the attack conjured up tornadoes, the destructive aura caused the blood in their faces to recede.

Only after a few seconds did their vision recover, the scene before them struck them as though they were caught in a spell, they could not move at all.

The tall mountain peak outside the city had completely

disappeared!

Gone....

Their faces were pale white, their eyes staring straight ahead, they stared blankly at the remaining bottom half of the mountain. The charred top surface was still glowing red, which was the high temperature melting the rocks that had not cooled down, showing how high the temperature was inside.

T-t-this.....

Inside the Awakened God Armor, Tang Tian's eyes were extremely bright.

He kept on recalling the scene that happened in his mind. The moment the two Law Surfaces started projecting their power, he could clearly feel the miraculous resonance between the two law surfaces.

That's right, it was resonance.

Compared to the resonance formed from energy synchronization, the resonance between Law Surfaces was even more terrifying.

The resonance between both parties initially repelled each other, but in the next moment, they merged and produced a might far beyond what they had expected.

Who could have thought that with just three men's casual strike, they would produce such a terrifying power.

With Fu Zheng Zhi and Ji Ze's strength, destroying a mountain peak was not difficult. But to instantly cause the mountain peak to disappear, that was not easy at all. Furthermore, it was a joint attack between the two of them.

And it was a casual strike, which they could continue producing for the entire night.

How many people could possibly withstand such an attack?

Even they themselves would definitely not find it easy to face such an attack. And if the attack that was so powerful to such a degree was produced just from a test, even Tang Tian felt that he would not be able to win against it.

What about the number 1 in Sin Domain, Du Ke?

Maybe he can deflect it.

But if the three of them were to give it their all? Can he block it? Tang Tian thought about it, and felt that Du Ke should still be able to withstand it. The Law Domain was an even higher grade power, and although the attack they conjured had a great increase in might, it was not out of reach from the power of the Law Surface.

The higher grade power's multiplier folds in might would usually hit an increase of 10 to a 100 times.

A higher grade power against a lower grade power would usually lead to an overwhelming victory.

But Tang Tian was not discouraged, he dared to confirm that if the three of them were to give it their all, although they were still unable to reach the realm of Law Domains, but they were still able to break the threshold of Law Surfaces.

Furthermore, adding him, they were only three men!

What if they had more?

When 10 Law Surfaces were to resonate, what would happen, and when a 100 Law Surfaces were to resonate together, what would happen?

Suddenly, an enlightenment surfaced in Tang Tian's mind.

Isn't this like an army? Energy Synchronization was the fundamental core of the Sacred Saint Galaxy's armies, then the synchronization of Law Surfaces, will be the fundamental core for the armies in Sin Domain!

I actually found the crux of building up a Sin Domain army accidentally.

Doesn't this mean that I can truly build a Sin Domain Army?

Tang Tian's eyes became as bright as the stars in the sky. He had forked out countless of hard work, perseverance, and self belief that he would definitely fight till the end, he who was always brimming with self confidence, finally, at that moment, felt that he had found the key to victory.

It was not only him, Fu Zheng Zhi and Ji Ze who had regained their senses were looking at each other, they could see the immense shock, startelement, fear and indescribable anticipation in each other's eyes!

Sin Domain, is going to change.



## Chapter 793 – Qiu Xu Hua's Determination

---

Mei Chen Xiu's death did not incite a huge commotion in the various large armies of the Honorable Martial Continent.

The Honorable Martial Continent had plenty of famed generals, and Mei Chen Xiu was just like a newcomer, which they had plenty. Lady Rou admired his brilliance and promoted him to become the Commander-in-chief of the White Pirates, that was already a hardly seen grace. Lady Rou was an intelligence person, thus the difference in influence between the two were huge.

Qiu Xu Hua who had a large age gap with Mei Chen Xiu, regardless of battle achievements or prestige, was far stronger. Qiu Xu Hua was the youngest in the Honorable Martial Continent's Five Great Generals, his brilliance and talent caused everyone to gasp in shock, and many believed that he was the Honorable Martial Continent's most brilliant leader in history. Even before reaching the age of 30, his merits and achievements gained him the position of number one, and he became the most eye-catching person out of the Five Great Generals.

Mu Zhi Xia's perseverance that lasted for a few decades made people feel that he was extremely diligent and responsible. Regardless of whether it was attacking or defending, Mo Xin could handle them proficiently with ease, it seemed as though he had no shortcomings. Balanced and steadiness was his specialty, but at the same time, many people did not want to go against him. Jia Ya was hailed as the Best Guardian of the Sacred Saint Galaxy, he kept a low profile and had a reserved personality, rarely coming out of seclusion. Gou Cheng Wen Dao enjoyed attacking, his offensive abilities caused people to feel fear, but as a temperamental man,

and being extremely ruthless, very few people liked him.

Qiu Xu Hua had a handsome appearance and came from a prestigious backing, he had proper etiquette and a graceful bearing. Brimming with talent, he had long been hailed as an idol towards countless of Honorable Martial Continent's citizens, and became the most dazzling star of the Honorable Martial Continent.

But the invincible Qiu Xu Hua had suffered a defeat.

Qiu Xu Hua encountered the Sacred Pagoda Army's allied forces, where both parties engaged in a heated battle which was extremely intense. The Sacred Pagoda Army was one of the Southern Region's Gold Rank Armies, and comparing it to the equal Gold Rank Southern Wind Army, the Sacred Pagoda Army was much stronger.

The Sacred Pagoda Army's a

llied forces held an astronomical sum of 190 thousand men, while Qiu Xu Hua only had 150 thousand men.

Both parties engaged in a heated battle in the broad battlefield spanning over 800 km inside the Sea of Energy, where they battled for many days, taking turns to attack and defend, ending up in a stalemate. Qiu Xu Hua did not overreach, although he was young, he had plenty of experience in battle, and understood that in such a large scale battle, there would always be ups and downs.

Furthermore, he was holding the advantage. Aside from his direct subordinated army, he still had many more standard armies in his hands. All of these standard armies were weaker than his direct subordinated army, but many ants could still bite an elephant to death. Giving his direct subordinated army the standardized equipment of the standard armies and allowing the armies to merge was the Honorable Martial Continent's formulated rule through countless battles. This rule that was exchanged with blood presently unleashed a powerful momentum for them.

Compared to them, the Southern Region that had been in peace and glory for too long was lacking a lot. The Sacred Pagoda Army had many allies around them, but out of all of these armies, they lacked one true commander, thus their coordination was chaotic, and they had their own quarrels between themselves.

The Sacred Pagoda Army's tenacity was admirable, if not for them, the alliance's defensive line would be in imminent danger. But as time went on, the huge numbers advantage held by the alliance slowly started losing.

But, just as Qiu Xu Hua thought that victory was in his grasp, an army suddenly appeared at the side of his fleet like ghosts. When Qiu Xu Hua found out that they were the White Crow Army, the situation went out of control.

The White Crow Army did not look like a new army at all, they were extremely experienced like old farmers, they knew how to slaughter through all the critical points of their enemies, who would have thought that they were an army that was recently

promoted into a gold rank army?

Their attacks were ferocious and decisive, and the average standard armies fell quickly under them.

Qiu Xu Hua understood what that meant, when they lost their flanks in a stalemate.

As expected, the Sacred Pagoda Army's commander did not waste the opportunity given to him, they immediately put in their all and engaged in a full force offense.

The moment Qiu Xu Hua's flank started to crumble, he immediately gave orders for his direct subordinated army to retreat. Right at that moment, Feng Yun Man, a general under him, automatically led his troops to break out with their lives, giving the rest an opportunity to retreat.

Qiu Xu Hua lost 30 thousand men, where 8000 of them were lost due to the stalemate, and these 8000 men gave their lives to kill 15000 men on the other side. At least 20 thousand of their casualties came from the White Crow Army.

The loss of 30 thousand men to a 150 thousand army was already a serious injury, but the real pain that Qiu Xu Hua felt was from the death of his general Feng Yun Man.

Southern Region Fox, Bai Yue, became famous from it.

Upon thinking about the White Crow Army, Qiu Xu Hua's complexion turned green.

The White Crow Army did not have many men, but their fighting capabilities were extremely strong, and from what Qiu Xu Hua could tell, they were stronger than the Sacred Pagoda Army.

“Every single one of their warships is equipped above quota warship weapons, according to the analysis from the recordings, every single one of their warships has twice the amount of weapons equipped, and 1.5 times of ours.”

The one who spoke was another general under Qiu Xu Hua, Zi Che Jia Jing. Zi Che Jia Jing had a tall and lanky build, his long brown hair was draped over his shoulders, his neutral and handsome face gave off a calm expression, but at the moment, his gentle voice could not hide the trace of helplessness.

That's right, helplessness.

Warship weapons were expensive, especially the weapons used by gold rank armies, they were higher grade than ordinary warship weapons, and much more expensive. Upon hearing that every White Crow Army's warship equipped weapons were actually 1.5 times more than theirs, everyone was stunned. They had experienced the White Crow Army's warships power, their warship weapons were a standard higher than their own equipments.

Every warship weapon of theirs were 1.5 times more than theirs!

The Honorable Martial Continent's armies were known for their elite equipments, causing them to have it easy with their countless of advantages against enemies.

A war was fighting with money!

Since when have Honorable Martial Continent actually lost in a fight with money?

In that short silence, everyone's complexion became terrible.

“It is said that the Shang Continent has a unique produce of Black Gold, and are extremely good materials to construct warship weapons, but is the Black Gold able to produce such high grade warship weapons? We have never seen such a report.”

Zi Che Jia Jing regained himself.

Everyone knew of the Shang Continent's Black Gold product that was appropriate for Warship weapons, but no one had thought that the Black Gold would be able to produce such high grade warship weapons!

It goes the same for silver rank warship weapons, there was a great difference in power between the weapons, as the silver rank was just a general term. The same goes for the Honeycomb Sword Cannon, different weapons traders produced different grades, all of which had different standards, their attacking efficiency, the power of the sword auras, all had stark differences. And to large

scale warship weapons, it was even more complicated, the more refined the manufacturing of the warship weapons, the stronger the weapon, and the lesser the space it accommodated meant the lesser number of people required to operate etc.

For the gold rank warship weapons, only Qiu Xu Hua and his direct subordinated few generals' warships were equipped with them, as they were too expensive.

Wei Yue shook his head: "All of these warship weapons might not necessarily be built completely with Black Gold. The Southern Alliance also has Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce, they are in the top 5 of weapons trading in the Southern Region, manufacturing and purchasing a batch of warship weapons is probable."

"What a pity, Mei Chen Xiu's ambush on Steel Mountain Continent failed."

Someone mumbled in the conference room, causing many others to reveal upset looks. News of Mei Chen Xiu's plan to suddenly ambush Steel Mountain Continent had been received by them, but no one cared. They had complete self confidence that with their own strength, they could completely obliterate their enemies.

Until when they tasted their own blood did they realize that if Mei Chen Xiu had succeeded, it would have changed the entire war completely.

"This is not the reason why we lost."

Once Qiu Xu Hua spoke up, everyone's heart trembled, all of them lowered their eyes to their nose, which lowered down to their chests.

“The White Crow Army's equipments are better than us, but they are only one army, I was too careless this time, and made the mistake of underestimating the enemy.”

Upon hearing Qiu Xu Hua's words, a few of the generals wanted to speak up, but Qiu Xu Hua waved his hand to stop them, and spoke sternly: “Do not worry yourselves over a temporarily loss or win. The important thing for is to find a solution to our failure. Everyone must know, what this war expedition means to Honorable Martial Continent.”

The various generals all became serious.

Qiu Xu Hua's eyes became bright as he said calmly: “Whether we win or lose doesn't matter. But in this expedition, there can only be one victor, and that is the Honorable Martial Continent!”

Zi Che Jia Jing then spoke up: “Looking from a macro view, our victory or loss is not important.”

His words immediately attracted the attention from the rest, many of them revealed looks of dissatisfaction, What do you mean, we travelled for so long and arrived in Southern Region, not to win, but to lose?



Qiu Xu Hua remained unmoved: “Continue.”

“Although the Southern Region People think that we are here to conquer their lands, to the point that we are also thinking that ourselves, but I need to remind everyone here, from the start, our goal has always been the ShangContinent.”

Zi Che Jia Jing’s words was gentle, but it was a bomb to the entire room. A few of the generals revealed looks ofshame, while others were still unconvinced.

“In the initial battle, we were like a hot knife slicing through battle, that made us lose consciousness, and with theinappropriate ambitious hearts, it made us deviate from our goal. If we were able to attract the Sacred Pagoda andWhite Crow Army, the remaining few Gold Rank Armies of Southern Region, and make them unable to reinforce theShang Continent, then, General Gou Cheng WenDao and his march will have less resistance. With regards of ourmission to obtain the Shang Continent, we have accomplished something.”

At such a time, the few leaders that Zi Che Jia Jing’s gentle voice that initially could not convince, revealed looks ofthoughts.

“Our goal is Shang Continent.” Qiu Xu Hua did not hesitate and continued: “Including me, the ambition of obtainingthe merit of conquering the Southern Region has clouded our eyes. The failure this time is not disadvantageous to usat all, because it made us realize the situation we are in clearly. Everyone, even if we have to bear the name of losers,even if we do not have the merit, even with the remaining forces here, we have to delay these two gold rank

armies!”

He stood up, and looked around at the generals around him and spoke sternly: “This war is the starting point of my Honorable Martial Continent’s goal to unify the Sacred Saint Galaxy, in which we can only win, and not lose! Everyone below me, it must be fine for you to sacrifice yourselves. Everyone below me, whoever runs, will be beheaded.”

“With my sharp blade, I will transform this battlefield into a slaughterhouse, and no one can think about escaping.”

He suddenly smashed his fist onto the table, his handsome face became fanatical and sinister, his eyes bloodshot.

All of his generals were affected by him, and became agitated as they shouted out in unison: “Yes!”

## Chapter 794 - Mediate and Bridge

---

"Southern Region Fox, a well-deserved reputation, Representing the allied armies, I sincerely thank your noble troops for the reinforcements."

Peng Ruo's hair was pure white and his face was scarred with hardships, he had a huge and sturdy built, one could imagine that when he was young, he must have definitely been an iron tower. He had taken on the role of Commander of the Sacred Pagoda Army for over 3 decades, and his name was known throughout the entire Southern Region.

This old general's eyes flashed with a look of admiration when he looked at Bai Yue who was standing in front of him.

The White Crow Army's sudden emergence in the battlefield not only shocked Qiu Xu Hua, but even Peng Ruo did not expect it. The White Crow Army's performance after that was also unexpected, causing this old general with countless years of experience under his belt to be shocked. The grasp in opportunity and decisiveness to engage in battle with their valiant and sharp fighting strength had rapidly defeated Qiu Xu Hua's great army.

The Allied Armies had many people that suspected that Bai Yue had already arrived earlier and was waiting for the last moment while watching them die.

All of these voices were pressed down by the old general, Bai Yue's choice of appearing was perfect, resulting in a perfect

outcome, proving him to be an outstanding general. Furthermore, Bai Yue was not under his jurisdiction, and should not bear the faults. He was long unhappy with the clumsy performance of the allied armies.

"You're overpraising me, this junior's luck is just better." Bai Yue spoke in a respectful manner.

His respect was not feigned, the Sacred Pagoda Army had a long history, and had always been upright and unyielding, seeking justice for people and protecting them, with Peng Ruo who had a good moral standing and reputation. When Bai Yue was still in school, Peng Ruo was always in many of the lessons, and was frequently used as an example or discussion of topic.

Peng Ruo stretched his lips, he disliked beating about the bush, and got right to the point: "What about Mo Xin?"

"Ignore him." Bai Yue said straight out, his careless temper was about to surface, but upon seeing the meticulous old general in front of him, he immediately straightened himself: "We are fighting in our homeground and occupy the favourable land, what we should first consider is how much fighting strength the enemy still has."

Peng Ruo nodded his head, he agreed with Bai Yue's thoughts, then asked another question: "What is your unit planning to do next?"

"We can't leave anymore." Bai Yue revealed a bitter smile: "Qiu

Xu Hua will definitely plan to make us stay."

Peng Ruo was extremely clear of the situation of the battlefield. Qiu Xu Hua had returned and fought back extremely quickly, scaring almost everyone. Before they had the chance to rejoice over their difficult victory, they had to welcome yet another battle.

Qiu Xu Hua focused a third of his strength to fight the White Crow Army.

It was a cunning move, Qiu Xu Hua led 80 thousand men to mix with 15 thousand of his allied forces, but was not at a disadvantage. His subordinate, General Wei Yue led an army of 40 thousand men and locked the White Crow Army down. Peng Ruo suddenly spoke out: "You are from the Southern Alliance, and have the responsibility of reinforcing the Shang Continent. If you need to leave, quickly draw close to my unit, I will carve a way out for you."

The faces of his men all took a great change, they understood what Peng Ruo was saying. If they wanted to pull the White Crow Army out of the battle, they needed to resist Wei Yue, that was no different from telling them to use their own bodies to block the blades for the White Crow Army.

Another thread of respect surged in Bai Yue's mind, he knew that it was not easy for the old general to say such words in such a difficult situation.

"Thank you for your kind intentions." he suddenly smiled: "The

Shang Continent does not require me to support them, I am more interested in making this place Qiu Xu Hua's burial grounds."

Peng Ruo's expression did not change, but a trace of surprise flashed deep in his eyes, while he spoke calmly: "You have a lot of confidence in the Shang Continent."

"Yes." Bai Yue said blatantly: "They are the most outstanding bunch of people I have ever met."

"I hope they are as you think they are." The old general nodded his head, he no longer spoke on this matter, and changed the subject: "Your unit's warship weapons are extremely exquisite, I wonder if you are able to support us? We are willing to pay for them."

The White Crow Army's equipped warship weapon's powers were already proven on the battlefield. Every single White Crow Army warship were like hedgehogs with sharp pricks everywhere, their powerful battle ability had left a deep impression in the old general.

What left a deeper impression was that every warship of the White Crow Weapon actually had double the warship weapons equipped compared to his own warships. Both their warships were roughly the same size, which meant only one possibility, that was the White Crow Army's warship weapons had greatly reduced the number of people needed to man the weapons.

Bai Yue was startled for a moment, but quickly reacted: "I am

sorry, we do not have much spares. If you truly want to purchase them, I am willing to mediate and bridge you to the supplier, but you need to organise a convoy back to the Shang Continent."

"The Shang Continent?" The old general looked at Bai Yue in surprise: "Not Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce?"

Everyone knew who were in the Southern Alliance, but with regards to weapons, everyone had subconsciously thought that it was the Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce, as their weapons were usually far more advanced and complicated than others.

It's actually the Shang Continent!

"Yes, the Shang Continent." Bai Yue explained: "Black Gold is the Shang Continent's unique product, although they have supplied some to the Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce and did not limit their manufacturing, but these brand new warship weapons originates and comes from the Sword Forest Stronghold. The Shang Continent also has proficient warship weapons manufacturers, I personally think that their standard is higher than the Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce, but they do not sell it on the market."

Guan Jin who stood beside Bai Yue also revealed a look of agreement.

As Bai Yue's adjutant, most of the weapons purchase was handled by him. At that time, when Bai Yue had suggested choosing the warship weapons produced by the Shang Continent, Guan Jin refuted it with intensity, until they got to the testing phase, only

after going through the tests did he realize that the Shang Continent who were not known for their weapons actually had such outstanding weapons manufactured.

The completely refurbished White Crow Army increased their strength greatly.

But a pity, these people are not interested in the manufacturing of warships....

Guan Jin felt that if the Sword Forest Stronghold were to start producing warships, it would definitely be powerful.

"I think I will need the recommendation letter of yours." Peng Ruo bowed towards Bai Yue.

"I am pleased to be able to do something for you." Bai Yue returned the bow.

Peng Ruo who had obtained Bai Yue's recommendation left happily. As the commander of the allied forces, he was not worried about spending money, the Southern Region's robust businesses between the various continents was strong enough for him to utilize and obtain assets. As for the transport, there were no problems at all, although they needed to take a big detour and enter through the back of the Shang Continent, but in the war that was expected to last for many days, they still had time.

Bai Yue watched as Peng Ruo left, and touched his chin: "With



such a big bill, I should find the Sword Forest Stronghold and obtain some commission, Old Guan, tell me, how much is appropriate? What about 10%?"

"Nothing great about it." Guan Jin said impolitely: "Instead of a discount, we should pay attention to whether the Sword Forest Stronghold has produced any new weapons, their efficiency is shocking."

"That's right! They are a group of maniacs!" Bai Yue immediately said: "They will definitely have good stuff! We need to send people there to check it out."

The White Crow Army had experienced the benefits, and were extremely excited towards the Shang Continent's weapons.

Suddenly, Guan Jin's face changed.

Bai Yue noticed it, and asked: "What's wrong?"

"Gou Cheng WenDao is personally sieging Ocean Guardian Stronghold!" Guan Jin's face turned white.

Bai Yue sucked in cold air.

He knew that the Shang Continent's defensive lines would have to bear extremely large stress, but they were not worried towards the Ocean Guardian Stronghold at all. The stronghold was under the hands of Xie Yu An, a man proficient in defense, and the

abilities that he could produce was definitely beyond expectations.

Bai Yue knew that how proficient his fellow old classmate was in defensive formations. In school, Xie Yu An's defense positioning work had caused all their teachers to have headaches. It was to the extent that every time that Bai Yue allowed Xie Yu An to help him do his work, he had to reinforce the point to only reveal half of his strength, and have to leave at least five or more flaws.

If not, their teachers would immediately know who was the one who truly did the work.

He had plenty of confidence in Xie Yu An. He did not know whether Xie Yu An was the Third Best Guardian in Sacred Saint Galaxy, but in terms of laying defensive formations, he believed that his old classmate was number one.

Even Bai Yue himself would not dare touch Xie Yu An who had a stronghold under his belt.

But....

That's Gou Cheng WenDao!

Gou Cheng WenDao's battle achievements were the most terrible out of the Five Great Generals.

Mu Zhi Xia had stood guard in Wei Ye Guan Continent for many years, and had fought many different scales of wars in its initial

period with Savage Continent, definitely suffering a few times. As for Jia Ya who monopolized in defense, he had hardly been beaten. Qiu Xu Hua had suffered a few times in his initial battles, but from there, he only went higher and battle. As for Mo Xin who sought the most logical choices, he never had any traces of loss.

With just a four years of age gap, Gou Cheng WenDao had suffered many loss, but, he was the enemy that all the generals were never willing to face.

He attached importance in attacking to kill, he was unbridled and rampant, destructive and fanatical. Gou Cheng WenDao would always leave various flaws and weaknesses in battle, but he did not care, as he firmly believed that even before he was beaten, his enemy would break first. Even in the most despairing situations, his number one reaction was to attack. To fight with him, one can never think about retreating, if not they would have to prepare to forever be on guard.

If there was only one of him, it was not scary, but the terrifying thing was that he held another bunch of equally savage and fanatical maniac, which were his direct subordinated army!

Any ordinary person would definitely not touch the Ocean Guardian Stronghold, as it was the stronghold that sat the Third Best Guardian In Sacred Saint Galaxy!

There were many good places in the entire defensive lines to attack, why would anyone choose the strongest and most guarded place to attack?

But, this seemingly illogical choice was extremely logical in Gou Cheng WenDao's hands.

Bai Yue could not help but feel worried.

If it were any other military general sieging Ocean Guardian Stronghold, he would not even care. Even if it was Qiu Xu Hua or Mo Xin, as long as they knew that it would not work, they would never waste the lives of their soldiers. But Gou Cheng WenDao did not have the word "impossible" in his dictionary.

He would constantly attack fervently, even if he had to bleed himself, he would force his enemy to bleed.

Guan Jin bit his lips, and spoke through his teeth: "They require assistance."

"No." Bai Yue shook his head unexpectedly: "We will continue with our previous plans."

"But...."

"We have to believe in him." Bai Yue took a deep breath and gritted his teeth: "Even if it is Gou Cheng WenDao, we have to believe in Old Xie! Furthermore, don't forget about Bing, that crafty and cunning man will definitely not sit idle and watch Old Xie suffer."

The worry on Guan Jin's face did not lessen, he always felt that Bai Yue had a blind trust towards the commander-in-chief of the Shang Continent.

Why does Ah Yue always think that that man has an idea?

Did that man truly prepare for this already?

# Chapter 795 - Ping Xiao Shan's Surprise Attack

---

Bang bang bang!

Consecutive explosions punctured the night sky with brilliance, the dazzling splendors of light reflected Nie Qiu's pale face, the corner of his mouth had formed an arc. It seemed as if he had planned everything in advance, but the beads of perspiration trickling down his head also revealed that he was doing his best.

The instant the battle started, it was already at a climax.

Qin Zhen, Lu Sheng Xiang and them were absolutely irreconcilable, and upon meeting, their eyes were already red. The Su Family's Su Fei also knew it was a battle that Su Family could only win and not lose. Death Servant's gaze never left Xu Ye's Death Thumb Ring the moment he saw it.

To Nie Qiu's side, they were also not lacking in determination. Upon seeing Qin Zhen, Gu Xue revealed killing intent, the lock on her spirit was extremely painful, giving this strong young lady an immense trauma. Although she managed to breakthrough with Tang Tian's help, but the trauma never disappeared, she never forgot the pain, and the hatred still existed.

The first person Xu Ye looked at was also Death Servant, who emitted a dense aura and a gaze full of desire. Xu Ye immediately knew the intent of the other party.

The Death Thumb Ring, it was a sacred object yearned by any martial artist that trained in Death Laws. But to Xu Ye, it was not a treasure just for training, as it held even more to him. It allowed him to struggle free from the grasp of the Death God and obtain new life. For this, Xu Ye's arrogance made him decide without any hesitation, to use his life to protect it.

Enemies could only obtain the Death Thumb Ring from his corpse. That was the only way to obtain it.

Lu Sheng Xiang snorted, he raised his right palm in the air, causing a large ball of lightning to emerge. The dazzling lightning ball was extremely eye piercing, trapped within it was a dangerous aura. The lightning ball's diameter was around 1m, the dense thunderous booms coming from it raged out endlessly.

His body became hidden from the ball of lightning.

Many blurred figures surged forward like gushing water. The moment he had summoned the ball of lightning, they were already rushing to him.

"Kill!"

The stout man at the most front used his momentum to clash head on onto the ball of lightning!

The lightning ball swayed, before it could explode, consecutive

slashes arrived. In the time it took for a person to blink his eyes, the lightning ball received five slashes, and like a deflating balloon, the lightning ball shrunk, zzzzi, it transformed into a lightning aura that flowed along the broad guillotine blade.

A portion of the man's body froze, his footsteps became sluggish.

But....

The few people who had rushed first seemed to be unaffected. Lightning snakes flowed along the surfaces of their bodies, and Lu Sheng Xiang was able to see that the lightning auras were jumping up and down excitedly on their flesh, but they looked completely unharmed, their sinister faces revealed their intent to continue assaulting.

The door sized broad guillotine blades unleashed attacks that were earth-shattering. And with their fearsome momentum, it caused others to tremble.

Lu Sheng Xiang might look calm, but his heart was becoming gloomier.

Their bodies are actually tempered to such a state!

The lightning auras enveloping around their bodies wielded piercing might, and no one was as clear about it as Lu Sheng Xiang, and he had never seen a person being able to use his flesh body to withstand the lightning aura. Truly monstrous bodies, no, even



monsters would die from such condensed lightning auras.

If we were to say that their perverse bodies made him feel speechless, then their style of attacking actually shocked him even more.

Is this the legendary army?

The distance between each soldier was obviously calculated and planned out. Their slashes were exceptionally strong, besides the power in their slashing technique, it was also because they seemed to be able to converge all of the power in their body. To use slashes that required them to go all out without reserving some strength as a form of attack was against common logic. Because it had no margin of leeway, upon failure, the opponent would be able to take their lives. Unless it was a desperate situation, Lu Sheng Xiang hardly saw people who fought like that.

But, in the hands of the group of people in front of him, it was their most common style of attacking.

Lu Sheng Xiang was experienced and sharp, he quickly understood the theory behind the attacks. They used numbers to make up for the gaps left after going all out with each slash, their slashes were never done single-handedly. Enemies only had to sustain one slash and would instantly be barraged by the consecutive slashes. The men were like bees forming groups and moving in perfect coordination. As long as they landed a strike, their teammates would follow up. And in this extremely short time interval, the other groups would have completed preparing and would follow up to produce the barrage of slashes.

It seemed like an invisible hand was directing and controlling the large group of bees with accuracy and precision.

Any martial artists proficient in defense could only withstand the fearsome barrage of slashes for a moment. Their cutting angles were obviously arranged through careful deliberations, and were extremely crafty.

The slashes that came like a tide were extremely viscous, and upon being affected by it, the man could only wait to be devoured.

Lu Sheng Xiang's hairs started to stand.

He immediately chose to fight numbers with numbers, but also quickly realized that his choice was still not good enough. When he added more lightning balls, the might of the lightning balls would decrease substantially, while the enemies are able to withstand it. What made him panic even further was the exhaustion, his strength was depleting faster than he had anticipated.

Swimming inside the lightning auras, Ah Mo Li was indifferent. Other than the numbing sensation, he was not injured. Also, behind him followed the group of Null Division Members that were rescued first. They had trained in the Heavy Demonic Execution the longest, and had absorbed a great amount of Life Origin Essence from the Golden Steel Gravel, and after going through a great refinement, their flesh bodies had reached an all new level.

He opened his large eyes widely, revealing no fear but incomparable excitement. The lightning balls in front of him made him think of Lu Tian Wen.

That idiot was the one who died under me, the valiant Ah Mo Li!

There's less than half of my brothers behind me, but it is enough. Although the old man still had many lightning balls, but Ah Mo Li could clearly sense that they were weakening.

This old man is exhausted.

He licked his lips, his eyes flashing with killing intent.

This old man might not look like it, but he is much stronger than that crazy Lu Tian Wen. Seeing the men who had fallen, Ah Mo Li grasped the old man's strength. But they are those that were recently saved, and have not gotten used to such style of fighting. As long as they are not dead, it is good to suffer a bit, they will learn and want to train more diligently.

Ah Mo Li did not realize that his thoughts had become rather wise and experienced.

His gaze was locked onto Lu Sheng Xiang, the floating lightning balls looked like bubbles that were popping one after another.

Suddenly, his eyes constricted, Shit, that old man wants to run!

Lu Sheng Xiang's Law Surface was depleting extremely quickly, causing his face to become uglier and uglier. He looked towards Su Fei who was in a heated battle in the distance, and his expression changed again. If I were to escape now, then the Lu Family holding up in their place will definitely suffer and die. But If I were to die in battle, the Lu Family that has no martial artist on the List of Powerhouses would be even more useless and can be thrown aside anytime. As long as I survive, I have my use, and to the large families, I will still be valuable.

Without hesitating further, he suddenly used his last ounce of strength and grew lightning auras around his body.

Dazzling and eye piercing lightning auras enveloped his entire body, and silver snakes as thick as arms danced all around him.

Zzziii zzzzii zzzzii.

The intense lightning auras caused the space in front of him to distort, and a black dot started to expand within the light.

Ah Mo Li who was sprinting was surprised, he roared out, his figure suddenly became blurry as his speed increased exponentially. He rushed towards Lu Sheng Xiang like a specter.

Lu Sheng Xiang glanced at him coldly, and pointed towards Ah Mo Li.

Zzzi!

An extremely thick lightning aura that resembled a silver lightning spear shot at Ah Mo Li.

The dazzling light exploded.

Lu Sheng Xiang revealed a pleased look, although Ah Mo Li's offensive made him troubled, but he knew that if he wanted to leave, they would not be able to stop him. Ah Mo Li's last attack was also anticipated by him.

Suddenly, the black hole in front of him that was expanding burst forth with a ripple.

Shit! His face took a great change!

Right at that moment, his eyes suddenly spotted a fine black thread connected to the black hole, That's....a spatial law thread!

On the other side of the black thread was a scrawny figure, who was smiling at him.

It was Ping Xiao Shan!

At the start, Ping Xiao Shan's only job was to cut the Golden Steel Gravel, but Nie Qiu was not willing to have an idle person in his troops, so Ping Xiao Shan was pulled for more training. Ping Xiao

Shan was not as arrogant as Xiao Han Guang, and did not have any resistance towards additional training. And after seeing the lively soldiers training day by day, he grew somewhat envious.

He used Spatial Laws, so Nie Qiu treated him as a unique liaison and specially arranged a few tactics for him.

The days living and training in the army changed Ping Xiao Shan immensely. The initially coward and shy Ping Xiao Shan grew to be more manly. When he saw Lu Sheng Xiang using his lightning to break space, he sensed that it was an opportunity for him, and with that intent, he struck out.

Using the broken space, he produced a ripple to conceal himself, and quietly activated his spatial law thread, instantly appearing near the black hole.

When he arrived near the black hole, Ping Xiao Shan suddenly realized that his actions were too impulsive. He had not gained enlightenment on any Law Surface, and facing Lu Sheng Xiang, a martial artist on the List of Powerhouses, he was as insignificant as an ant. He knew that even if Lu Sheng Xiang was exhausted, it would be easy to kill him.

What do I do?

Under the pressure, Ping Xiao Shan who was anxious forced himself to calm down. What would the commander usually say? In the army, never set using an individual to win the enemy as a goal, everyone has their uses, and one should only prevail through a

rational coordination.

Am I able to do anything useful?

His gaze landed on the constantly growing black hole, and his eyes lit up.

As long as I break that black hole, Lu Sheng Xiang can't run, won't that give Master Ah Mo Li a chance?

Others might not have any methods to deal with a broken space, but Ping Xiao Shan who excelled in Spatial Laws, knew that the broken space was not as stable as what everyone thought it was.

His Spatial Law thread quietly connected to the black hole.

He did not know what the outcome was, but he knew that it would cause the space to be chaotic.

In the next moment, Ping Xiao Shan's mind was in a mess.

Am I going to die?

# Chapter 796 - The Sin Domain's First Army Battle

---

"Why are all of you squeezing for!"

"Everyone, stand properly!"

.....

Tang Tian who was standing on the roof did not look at the chaotic scene below. Chewing on a grassroot in his mouth with his arm as a pillow, he gazed at the gray sky, somewhat lost in thought. The Sin Domain's grassroots are as hard as steel wires, and they taste so bitter and disgusting, it doesn't even have any fragrance of fresh grass.

I've stayed in the Sin Domain for too long, I wonder how everyone is doing.....

Tang Tian looked lost in thoughts, his eyes quickly regained clarity, and he clenched his fists.

Everyone, hold on for a bit longer, I have already found the way to get out of Sin Domain!

Wait for me to come back!

Tang Tian suddenly stood up and leapt down from the roof.



Fu Zheng Zhi's face was red, berating here and there from time to time, he was doing his best at his job. Upon thinking about Master Ghost Face Mask's next plan, his entire body was brimming with energy.

## The Sin Domain's First Army!

Just that name was enough to make him extremely excited.

Ji Ze had outstanding talent and was young with limitless potential, he cared more about personal growth, and lacked interest in the army. But Fu Zheng Zhi was different, his personal growth and strength had reached a limit and he had difficulty improving. He was not a solitary man, with the Fu Family as his backing. Thus, his thoughts were more meticulous and had more concerns than Ji Ze.

His surrendering to Ghost Face Mask previously was due to the situation. Fu Zheng Zhi did not have any kind intentions towards Ghost Face Mask, as he knew himself of the unfathomable strength the Four Main Cities held. Although Ghost Face Mask and the Null Division were strong, but upon thinking about the retaliation from the entire Sin Domain, he felt that Ghost Face Mask was not able to win.

He felt extremely depressed with the uncertain future, it was as though he could see his and the Fu Family's outcome.

Until now, when master Ghost Face Mask's so called army

revealed its terrifying might, it was like a sunlight piercing through the darkest of clouds, allowing him to see hope. His and the Fu Family's hope.

He found out that the Null Division was also an army, and seeing them being groomed, he was immensely shocked. But the Null Division were ultimately still outsiders, and many of their methods were still incomprehensible for Fu Zheng Zhi. As for how strong they truly were, his only response was a head full of perspiration.

The Null Division was not enough to him, as the Sin Domain was a place incapable of building up an army.

Until the day before, when Master Ghost Face Mask brought him and Ji Ze, and accomplished the Law Surface Resonance, displaying an astonishing might, did it let him understand that the Sin Domain was about to change. He did not know if what they did was considered an army convention, or how powerful Du Ke was with his Law Domain, but he felt that if the army they built were to challenge Du Ke, they had a chance.

It was a revelation.

For the longest of time, the Sin Domain had a common understanding, that peak martial artists who had gained enlightenment on Law Domains were people that could not be defeated merely by relying on numbers. To defeat peak martial artists that had Law Domains, they required other peak martial artists as well.

But now, there was the possibility of changing everything.

Despite it being a possibility, but the intense effect it had on Fu Zheng Zhi led him to be unable to sleep for nights. When Fu Zheng Zhi regained his senses, he quickly realized the absolute opportunity contained in it!

The Sin Domain's first army, an epoch-making product, an established monster that would topple the entire Sin Domain!

Whether or not they could challenge Du Ke, it represented an unmatched force with a definite glorious and dazzling future.

To be Sin Domain's commander of the first army, that thought was extremely stimulating. No, it is the first elder! Ji Ze did not have any interest in the army, he felt that what the Master truly needed was a diligent subordinate such as himself.

Master Ghost Face Mask's thoughts had never just been on the Sin Domain.

And the Sin Domain's First Army needed to rely on Master's Awakened God Armor, only Master can control them, that meant that the Sin Domain's First Army will become Master's direct subordinated army!

This conclusion almost caused Fu Zheng Zhi to choke.

The dazzling bright future made him agitated.

As long as a man like Fu Zheng Zhi who had took on the responsibility as a leader for decades have set his mind clear, he would immediately display his abilities and capabilities. He did not choose disciples from his Fu Family because of bias, but went along with harsh standards, and only three Fu Family Disciples were chosen to participate.

Following the standards his Master had given, he carefully selected 20 men.

The Master had requested only for martial artists that had perfect Law Surfaces. In the Sin Domain, perfect law surfaces was a point required for powerful martial artists. If the laws they trained in were unique, or if they had unique inheritances, they would be able to land themselves a position in the List of Powerhouses.

The majority of them trained in ordinary laws and had normal inheritances, preventing them from gaining a position in the List of Powerhouses. But in a small family, they were sufficient to form the backbone.

In the Sharp Wind City, there were 50 men that fulfilled these criterias. But, Fu Zheng Zhi who had already saw Sin Domain's First Army as his life goal, made the standards even harsher. He was extremely clear of the qualities of each person, he removed the old foxes, although he had not comprehended much about armies, but he still knew what obedience was. Other than that, the younger ones had the advantage, they represented flexibility and potential.

And just like that, Sin Domain's first army unit was born.

Master Ghost Face Mask is extremely pleased with my work, Fu Zheng Zhi heaved a sigh of relief.

"Is it too little people?" Ji Ze asked.

Tang Tian shook his head: "Nope."

He was unclear on how many Law Surfaces his Awakened God Armor could connect.

I have no time to waste He waved his hands.

"Let's start training!"

\*\*\*\*\*

The Du Residence was the first residence in Sin Domain, but Du Ke did not like extravagance, thus it looked to be like any ordinary residence. But no one would underestimate it just because of its dilapidated look. All of the guests that visited Du Residence would leave their carriages three streets down, and walk to the gates of the Du Residence as a sign of respect. There were no boats that dared to fly over the Du Residence.

A boundary around the area of Du Residence was a restricted

flying zone. All the citizens who stayed within these area were ordinary citizens who engaged in normal livelihood, working and trying to make a living. All of them were not fearful of the Du Residence's prestige, and normal human traffic flowed along the streets, making the area extremely lively. The Du Residence did not express any opinion about anything.

When Du Ke was free, he enjoyed having a cup of tea and spending time leisurely in the teahouse outside of his home.

The large teahouse did not make any special rooms for him, and the shopkeeper never prepared any special tea for him, and there were even times when they were so busy that the shopkeeper would call for him to pour more water for the other guests.

But, it was a special day, the boss cheerfully gifted a plate of fried beans, because of Miss Du Xin Yu.

Du Xin Yu immediately thanked the shopkeeper, who waved his hands and smiled happily before turning away.

Du Ke whined somewhat unhappily: "Even I don't have such treatment."

Du Xin Yu had a beautiful and fresh appearance, with long beautiful hair, she sat opposite of Du Ke quietly, holding onto a large cup of tea with both hands, she started sipping slowly. She was lazy to retort back towards her senior brother's whines.

For him to ask me for tea, something's up.

"The Su Family was defeated." Du Ke said.

Du Xin Yu did not raise her head, she knew that was not the main point, as even if the entire Su Family was destroyed, her senior brother would not care.

"The Su Family sent out four powerful martial artists on the List of Powerhouses." Du Ke picked up the teacup in front of him and drank the entire cup in one shot: "Lu Sheng Xiang and Qin Zhen are dead, Su Fei is captured, and Death Servant escaped, but even with that last bit of life he has, I think he will not last long."

Du Xin Yu continued to sip on her tea, such a situation might seem out of hand to others, but to Du Xin Yu, it was nothing much. If senior brother moved, none of them would have survived at all.

"Their enemy was the Null Division."

Du Xin Yu stopped and raised her head: "An army?"

Du Ke was pleased seeing that his sister had caught the crux of the matter: "That's right, it is an army. In terms of numbers, this victory isn't really praiseworthy. Null Division mobilized a thousand odd men, and they had some casualties. But these 1000 odd men had just gained enlightenment on Law Threads."

"A thousand amateurs who had just learned law threads, defeated

four List of Powerhouses martial artists?" Du Xin Yu summed up.

"No, it's two." Du Ke shook his head: "Death Servant fought with Xu Ye, the two were relatively equal, and Xu Ye had the support of Death Thumb Ring, and took the advantage. Qin Zhen was killed by some lady who used a sword, but she used slashing techniques, and every technique she released produced rainbows. I think that the rainbow rumors that occurred in Purple Cuckoo City is most likely related to her. The ones who died in the hands of Null Division were Lu Sheng Xiang and Su Fei."

Du Xin Yu asked: "How did they do it, they used their numbers to make up for their enlightenment disparity?"

In Sin Domain, the gap between boundaries will never be able to be covered with numbers, that was the most fundamental knowledge. Martial artists who gained enlightenment on the Law Surface, would completely suppress martial artists who only had Law Threads. Law Threads, Law Surface, Law Domain, the disparity between every level were gaps that were unable to cross.

It was this disparity that formed the various regimes in Sin Domain.

Sin Domain only had one ruler, and that was the man drinking tea, Du Ke. The Four Main Cities were the rulers in name, but in truth they just disliked Du Ke to rule, and thus split the authority to rule.

Du Xin Yu knew that clearly, if numbers could break through the



disparity, that would mean that the regime structure of Sin Domain completely collapsing, and Du Ke's position would become unstable.

His identity as the number one man was heavily respected and regarded, but it was not incontestable.

Du Ke had never looked down on his sister's intellect. There was no fear of his authority being shaken, but instead he praised out: "They are truly strong to the point that people want to stop them, their mobilization of power and coordination far exceeds our expectation. Although they have only gained enlightenment in law threads, their physical bodies are powerful. Their style is clear cut but contains immense power. They attack like a gushing tide, wave after wave, fast to the point that people are dumbstruck. Lu Sheng Xiang was defeated like that. Su Fei as well, although her opponent's attacks were penetrative instead, but intrinsically they are the same."

"How did they do it?" Du Xin Yu could not resist to ask.

"Laws." Du Ke's eyes lit up: "Their general is a blind man. But his Law is extremely unique, with many black lines like spiderwebs, he uses this invisible large web to control the attacks."

Du Xin Ke then understood Du Ke: "So you want me to build an army?"

"That's right!" Du Ke did not hide his intention: "Your Laws are naturally suited for such battles. What about it, Sin Domain's First

Army, how great is that."

"What about you?" Du Xin Yu asked.

"I will be your assistant." Du Ke said surprisingly, he had his own thoughts regarding armies.

"I understand." Du Xin Yu nodded her head.

"So you agree?" Du Ke did not hide his excitement. He knew it was not easy convincing his sister.

"Now I will need my assistant to fulfil your responsibilities."

Du Xin Yu stood up, revealing her beautiful back,

"Get the bill."

# Chapter 797 - War Monsters

---

The Ocean Guardian Stronghold was enveloped with many dazzling light auras.

The densely packed warships were like locusts surrounding the stronghold, and the light auras spewing out from the warships was like a torrential downpour of rain. The Ocean Guardian Stronghold was not to be outdone, its thick light beams formed packs of sword auras that attacked the warships around fervently.

Warships would explode from time to time, blossoming out white light auras like a sun reflecting in the Sea of Energy. When the light auras dimmed, the orange flaming regiments were like full bloom flowers binding up the remains of the warships.

The soldiers who were on fire screamed and jumped out from the flames, and plunged into the Sea of Energy.

The battle was intense.

Gou Cheng WenDao's face did not have any fluctuations, he watched the battle unfold emotionlessly.

The generals around him had their fists clenched and their faces were pale white. Such sieging warfare was the most brutal. There was no way to retreat, no space for plans and movements, every inch of space was being fought over, and it could only be won with blood and determination.

No one underestimated the battle, and furthermore the enemy was one who became famed through one battle, Xie Yu An was known for his defence. But no one opposed Gou Cheng WenDao's decision, to the Honorable Martial Continent, every second was extremely precious to the point that he sacrifice was worth it.

The Ocean Guardian Stronghold was an extremely sturdy bone, and was the strongest of the enemy defense lines. It was a nightmare for anyone to attack, but upon breaking through, the entire defensive line would crumble, and they would be able to invade straight into the Shang Continent.

From the start of preparations, he had never thought about defense, and all of his preparations were meant for attacking. As for casualties, he never cared about it, because he knew the higher ups would not either.

As long as they could take down the Shang Continent in the fastest time, there was no problem.

At such a time, anything was worth it if they could exchange it to shorten the time.

Ever since they started preparing, all of his plans revolved around this point. In everybody else's eyes, Gou Cheng WenDao was impulsive and crazy, but very few people were aware of how much he had prepared prior.

He had carefully studied all the possible sieging routes, and tried

out all possible defensive and counter attacking measures the Shang Continent would take, ultimately formulating out a plan that had 62 different contingency measures.

At the present, the development of the battle had not surpassed his expectations.

He was not complacent over it or became blind in the trust he had for himself. No matter how robust a plan was, it would never be able to encompass the myriad of changes that could happen in a battlefield, and upon stepping on the battlefield, he would leave the battle to his crazy instinctive battle abilities.

But this time, his preparations were not for nothing.

In his planning phase, the Ocean Guardian Stronghold appeared more than once. The Southern Region had very few strongholds, and the Ocean Guardian Stronghold's strategic location made it extremely important, because the Shang Continent's disadvantageous fighting ability borrowed on the advantages from the defensive strongholds.

The Honorable Martial Continent had infiltrated the Southern Region for many years, and had secretly obtained reports on various places, and naturally knew of the significance that the Ocean Guardian Stronghold had in terms of military strategies.

"If only it was the old Ocean Guardian Stronghold." The adjutant said.

The other generals nodded their heads, before Xie Yu An had taken over, the Ocean Guardian Stronghold's defense was lax, making it a warehouse filled with expensive weapons. At that time, the intelligence had once given a report on it, saying that any pirate would easily be able to take down the extravagant stronghold.

Only after Xie Yu An took over did everything change.

After the Honorable Martial Continent lost a few good informants, they heard about Xie Yu An's reconstruction to the place. In the past, everyone did not pay heed to such a matter, as Xie Yu An was a nobody previously, thus no one took it to heart.

But after fighting with him, not only did it make them notice the changes to the stronghold, it immediately made them worried.

In the hands of people just eating and waiting to die, the Ocean Guardian Stronghold was a dazzling gold warehouse, but in the hands of a famed general, this rich and meticulous warehouse was able to transform into a terrifying stronghold.

Xie Yu An, who became famous after a battle, had attracted the eyes of Honorable Martial Continent's informants, and every detail about him was quickly surged out. Even his part time job when he was studying was unfolded and became a heavily studied subject.

When a few general blueprints of the stronghold was passed down to the front lines, even Gou Cheng WenDao, a seemingly emotionless man, revealed two twitches on his forehead.

Everyone finally understood how crafty and sinister the Ocean Guardian Stronghold was.

Gou Cheng WenDao nodded his head: "Truly worthy of his name."

The generals around him looked at each other, they had followed the master for too long, and knew that the master hardly ever praised their enemies. To actually obtain his praise was something rarely seen.

After a while, an adjutant reported excitedly: "Master! The sieging boats are in position!"

"Begin the siege." Gou Cheng WenDao said indifferently, his heart could not help but heave a sigh of relief. The Ocean Guardian Stronghold was like a hedgehog in a turtle shell, leaving him helpless to do anything.

"Yes!"

The generals around revealed excited expressions, with looks anticipating a good show. The fleet of sieging boats that were as slow as turtles had finally arrived. The probings they had done previously let them know how tough the Ocean Guardian Stronghold was.

Gou Cheng WenDao's fighting spirit in battle was naturally not

something a few blueprints could scare off, There was no doubt to Xie Yu An's standard, but at the same time, Gou Cheng WenDao himself had a trump card.

Gou Cheng WenDao's trump card was the sieging boats that he had brought along.

The Ocean Guardian Stronghold had created a big problem for them. They had to get rid of this nail deeply embedded in place, and left with no choice, he decided to form a sieging convoy army specially meant to defeat the Ocean Guardian Stronghold.

This sieging convoy army consisted of 22 large scale sieging boats and 70 middle scale sieging boats, hailed as the largest and strongest convoy to be made, its appearance shook the majority. If the slow moving, defenseless siege boats were to be ambushed, that would be the end. Gou Cheng WenDao had personally escorted it, thus even with its slow speed, no one could do anything.

Now. It's time for me to reveal my trump card.

The large convoy of ships slowly approached the battlefield.

The Honorable Martial continent's large scale sieging boats were unlike the small scale boats sieging the Sword Forest Stronghold, these massive large scale boats were the size of floating islands, and were all stronghold's worst nightmare.

They moved extremely slowly and had weak defenses, but their



firepower was immense, it's range was exaggerated, and made all the other warships pale in comparison.

The 22 large boats were like 22 gigantic monsters, upon opening their bloodied and big mouths, no stronghold would be able to withstand their combined attacks.

When these 22 large scale sieging boats arrived on the battlefield, the entire warzone immediately quieted down.

Since time immemorial, the battle between the offensive and defensive would never stop.

Strongholds held advantages in defense, causing large armies to be stopped from advancing. But they also had their natural enemies, which were sieging boats. These war weapons were specially crafted to attack defensive structures, wielded super firepower and extraordinary range.

No matter how tough the turtle shell was, they would be able to shatter them.

If we were to say that siege boats were natural enemies of strongholds, then large scale siege boats were undoubtedly natural monsters to them, and the nightmares of all strongholds. So much so that when Xie Yu An, a defence specialist, saw the incoming war monsters, his face could not help but change.

It was the first time his sturdy confidence swayed.

All the soldiers around him were dumbstruck like chickens, their expressions extremely terrible.

Are we going to lose?

Xie Yu An watched quietly as the war monsters slowly approached, his face becoming gray. There were no strongholds that had survived peacefully under the 22 large scale siege boats ever before.

Large scale siege boats were war monsters, but also gold devouring monsters, the value of each siege boat was astronomical. They were without a doubt the most expensive bill that any war would have to fork out. The Honorable Martial Continent had completely shown their wealth by taking out 22 of them.

This is truly despairing.

Are my dreams for a Gold Rank Army going to end like this?

Truly, I am truly too greedy, I am already here today, and I am still not resigned to it?

That's right, I'm not resigned to this.

This path had not been easy. I walked through so much difficulty to get here, for my Swift Army to be where it is at today, it truly

wasn't easy.

The unreachable dreams of the past appeared once again in the middle aged man's mind.

The drive that had long died down, arose like the sun leaping out from the horizon. Sweeping past the wasted time that had aged his body, this burning pain made him feel what it was like to be alive again.

The blood that had turned cold a long time ago finally became warm again as he began to desire again and become enthusiastic again, like how he was when he was young.

That's right, unknowingly, I have become like this.

Xie Yu An's mouth revealed a bittersweet smile, he raised his head once more, the light aura in his eyes was like the sunlight piercing through the dark haze.

Even if I die here, It will be worth it.

Better than dying on the sickbed, waiting for my last breath.

Better than crawling to a dark corner and hugging my knees and regretting life.

Whose dreams will definitely be fulfilled?

It is just that my battles had never stopped.

"Prepare for battle."

The warm voice resonated through every corner of the Ocean Guardian Stronghold, causing the soldiers who had lost their spirits to raise their heads.

"Everyone, please prepare for battle."

The Master's familiar voice gradually woke all of them.

"The following sieges will be extremely intense, everyone be mentally prepared. But, it is not like we have no chance, six hours, as long as we hold on for six hours, we will have the chance for a comeback."

The Master's voice sounded extremely calm, as though he was talking about something ordinary.

But, is there truly a chance?

Many people revealed looks of doubt, Why will Master say that we have a chance in the face of those monsters?

"Six hours, regardless of anything, I plead everyone to help me stand guard in here for six hours."

Xie Yu An's voice was not forced or vehement, but sincere. The man who was gentle but firm, the man who had crawled in the mud and got his ass whooped together with all of them, the man who was not good in loud arrogant talks, but regardless of anything, would always be positive.

Like their superiors, the soldiers of the Swift Army remained quiet, they did not say anything, they did not have any discussions. They simply returned to their battle positions quietly, quietly preparing for the battle to come.

Six hours right?

Then let's defend for six hours.

# Chapter 798 - Time Will Prove Everything

---

"What!"

Bai Yue jumped out, he was shocked, but quickly shook his head: "22 large scale siege boats? Impossible! How does the Honorable Martial Continent have so many large scale siege boats? Don't joke around, 22 of them, is there even 22 large scale siege boats in the entire Sacred Saint Galaxy?"

If not for the fact that it was General Peng Ruo standing in front of him, he would have long kicked him out of the door.

Guan Jin who was standing by the side also revealed a look of doubt, the news truly sounded too exaggerated.

Large scale siege boats were top grade weapons in the Sacred Saint Galaxy, and were undoubtedly the kings in siege battles. Large scale siege boats were immensely huge, to the point that they resembled floating and mobile strongholds.

The astonishing large bulk required expensive materials, that was one of the reason why large scale siege boats were so expensive. The other being the difficulty in manufacturing them, which required the highest of techniques.

The large scale siege boats that were built with anti-strongholds in mind required extremely high grade techniques. The Sacred Saint Galaxy had countless of weapons traders, but only three of them had the ability to manufacture such large scale siege boats.

Even the Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce, the widely known and most famous weapons trader of the Southern Alliance, was unable to manufacture them.

Only top weapons traders with robust wealth and robust techniques were able to manufacture large scale siege boats.

But even so, the time and effort it required to manufacture such boats took as long as 3 years, causing people to fear doing it. Bai Yue and Guan Jin had never heard of 10 or more large scale siege boats appearing at any one time, to suddenly hear a fleet of 22 large scale siege boats, how could they believe it.

Peng Ruo did not reveal any intention of joking: "I have already double checked and confirmed it."

The old general was extremely serious, when he saw the report, he too did not believe it. Not until he went to reconfirm it, did he know that this absurd report was actually true without fault, causing his emotion to plummet.

22 Large scale siege boats was history's most extravagant fleet for a siege, causing the old general to become somewhat at a loss, the scene where 22 of the war monsters are gathering must definitely be spectacular.

But, the war monsters belonged to the enemy, causing the old general to tremble.

Any stronghold facing such an unprecedented scene of fleets would definitely crumble like paper. There were no defensive lines that could possibly stop the war monsters, and the advantage of position would prove to be useless.

To the Southern Region, it was definitely the most terrible news.

After battling Qiu Xu Hua, Peng Ruo had a personal experience with the Honorable Martial Continent's battle ability. If not for Bai Yue's ambush, the allied forces would have long been defeated. On the battlefield, the various Southern Region armies were not lacking in determination to battle, and the well off Southern Region was not inferior in terms of equipping at all, but the intrinsic qualities and the standards of the officers between both parties, were completely on different levels.

The Honorable Martial Continent had engaged in all sorts of tactics for many years, although they never fought in a big war, they were constantly in small wars. The various armies of the Honorable Martial Continent were all experienced veterans. But the majority of the Southern Region armies were merely for show, and coming across pirates were already hard to come by opportunities. Many armies that had been built up for a long time had never truly experienced warfare.

The Honorable Martial Continent was extremely unified, upon making a decision, everyone would wholeheartedly follow through. But although Peng Ruo was the allied forces commander-in-chief, ultimately, the relation between the factions beneath him were tangled and complicated, many of them only had outward devotion but carried inward opposition, and many things were



frequently occurring.

All of these reasons did not cause the old generation to lose hope, because they were in their home territory and had the advantage of their own grounds with sufficient depth. Although they would have to fork out many casualties, they only needed to reach a stalemate with the enemy, and it would be their victory.

But the appearance of the war monsters instantly shattered his confidence.

The slow moving war monsters could easily destroy all of their defensive lines and make them lose their advantage of being in their own grounds, and the Honorable Martial Continent's armies could then invade and take up more land. At that time, the situation would become so rotten that they had no way to recover.

Bai Yue's mouth was wide open, with his face void of blood, but he did not make any sound. Guan Jin's face was also as white as paper.

Peng Ruo sighed in his heart, he did not have any mood to even mock Bai Yue, his own reaction was the same when he had received the news. But he was still an experienced old general, and even in the most hopeless situation, he could never despair.

"The Southern Alliance defensive lines will be lost soon, the Shang Continent cannot be held." The old general said: "After they obtain the Shang Continent, they will have the Black Gold, and our situation will become even more terrible. We need to think of an

idea to destroy the large scale siege boats, regardless of what we have to pay, if not...."

There was no need to continue his words.

Guan Jin bit his lips tightly, causing it to turn white: "It will be difficult, Gou Cheng WenDao will definitely protect those ships at all costs."

"It will be difficult." The old general nodded his head: "But no matter how difficult it is, we need to destroy them. The Ocean Guardian Stronghold definitely can't last, and the Southern Alliance defensive lines will definitely be shattered. If the Honorable Martial Continent truly plans to take the Shang Continent, we still might have a chance."

Guan Jin did not understand what the old general was saying.

Peng Ruo looked at the crestfallen Bai Yue, and said: "The Southern Alliance's strength is far stronger than I thought. The Ocean Guardian Stronghold will not be able to stop Gou Cheng WenDao's momentum, they will only retreat, all the way to the Shang Continent. The Shang Continent's estuary is small, the large scale siege boats will be unable to enter, and even the middle scale siege boats are unable to. To the Southern Alliance, their only chance is to bring the battle to the Shang Continent. If the Honorable Martial Continent truly wants to take the Shang Continent, Gou Cheng WenDao has to mobilize his soldiers into the Shang Continent. At that time, the defence for the large scale siege boats will also be at its weakest, and that will be our only opportunity."

Guan Jin immediately understood that the old general was prepared to leave the Southern Alliance as food. But he had to admit it was an ingenious plan, and also the only feasible plan they currently had.

"Time is of the essence, I hope your army is ready to move out. We will launch an attack on Qiu Xu Hua, and cover your rear." The old general said.

Guan Jin looked at Bai Yue, in the entire Southern Region, the only ones capable of accomplishing the mission was White Crow Army and Sacred Pagoda Army, but the allied forces required the old general to hold it down, thus the mission could only be tasked to them.

Bai Yue suddenly raised his head, and unexpectedly, he shook it: "The situation might not be as terrible as we think."

Peng Ruo could not help frowning, he never thought that at such a stage, Bai Yue would still hold his trust. He was somewhat surprised, after fighting alongside Bai Yue for the past few days, he gradually knew and understood how Bai Yue was as a person, who was an unswerving man with good reasoning.

But, time was the of the essence.

A fleet with a massive 22 Large scale siege boats was unstoppable, and if not for its slow movement speed, they would not have a chance at all. Since it was so, if Bai Yue were to leave as soon as

possible and make haste, they would still have a chance. If they were to delay any further, their time of opportunity would disappear.

Bai Yue was an outstanding general, and Peng Ruo believed that such a lousy mistake would never appear on him.

He was waiting for Bai Yue's explanation.

Guan Jin was also waiting for his Master to explain, to him, it was the only chance they had, he too did not understand why the Master would hesitate at such a crucial moment.

"The situation will not be that terrible." Bai Yue repeated himself, he had organised his train of thoughts, and was thinking of how to phrase it: "Xie Yu An is in the Ocean Guardian Stronghold, and any strongholds with him in it will not be so easily destroyed. Even if the enemy has so many large scale siege boats, it will not be easy. I know him, he is not a man that will wait to die."

As he spoke, his eyes became brighter: "Furthermore, their commander-in-chief is not a man who allows himself to be caught in such a predicament."

Peng Ruo revealed a look of disappointment, Bai Yue's words did not have any useful information. Xie Yu An was not a man that will wait to die, the Southern Alliance Commander-in-chief was also not a man that would sit and wait to die, what use was that? In the face of absolute power, all of such discussion were pointless.

"Stop delaying." Peng Ruo immediately interrupted and said coldly: "As the commander-in-chief of the allied forces, I am ordering White Crow Army to immediately move out!"

Bai Yue laughed.

"You want go against my orders?" Peng Ruo squinted his eyes.

"My apologies, I do not belong to the allied armies jurisdiction." Bai Yue retracted the smile on his face and spoke calmly: "My White Crow Army is under the Southern Alliance, and only takes orders from Master Bing, the Commander-in-chief of the Southern Alliance."

Guan Jin opened his mouth wide, Why didn't I know that?

Peng Ruo did not say anything, he simply observed Bai Yue, who did not reveal any panic or was faking his emotions. He was somewhat disappointed but even more surprised. The White Crow Army is actually taking orders from Southern Alliance Commander-in-chief?

The White Crow Army was a Gold Rank Army with a superior position. The Southern Region only had two remaining Gold Rank Armies, and if not for Bai Yue's prestige being insufficient, he would actually be able to hold command over an allied force as well.

Regardless of how Peng Ruo looked at it, the White Crow Army bore much more weight than the Commander-in-chief of the Southern Alliance.

He did not expect for the White Crow Army to obey the Southern Alliance, There are too many thought-provoking issues here. Everyone else was under the impression that the Bai Family only had an investment in the Southern Alliance, and not a complete submission. From the looks of it, it seems that the authority in the Southern Alliance is different from what people thinks.

For the first time, Peng Ruo became interested in the so called Commander-in-chief of the Southern Alliance.

Seeing Bai Yue's firmness, Peng Ruo could not do anything, and simply said: "I hope that you do not regret your decision."

"Time will prove everything." Bai Yue said respectfully.

Seeing the old generation leaving emotionlessly, Guan Jin's face turned black: "Master, why does this subordinate not know of such important information?"

Bai Yue laughed: "Oh oh oh, I just made that decision."

Guan Jin was stunned, followed by a burst of rage that rushed out from his heart: "Master, do you know what that decision means? Do you know how many people of the entire Southern Region will die because of you? This subordinate doesn't

understand, why Master has that much confidence in them, and even in the face of such a situation, Master, you are willing to firmly believe that they have their plans, and would make such reckless decisions...."

Bai Yue smiled as he took a cup of tea: "Drink some tea to loosen the anger."

Seeing how Bai Yue was so shameless, the anger in Guan Jin disappeared for some reason.

"Time will prove everything."

The smile on Bai Yue's face disappeared as he said indifferently.

# Chapter 799 - The Battle Begins

---

No one was more familiar with the Ocean Guardian Stronghold than Xie Yu An. Every inch of space inside had been memorized by him, and every battle position was carefully selected by him. He had thrown out all of the past installations and deployments, and reconstructed everything.

The Honorable Martial Continent's intelligence had obtained the layout and positions of the Ocean Guardian Stronghold, but it cannot be considered successful, as they did not have the new plans.

But, the generals of the Honorable Martial Continent did not care, in the face of 22 siege boats, all strongholds were like biscuits.

They watched the battlefield leisurely, some even had tea prepared, and had their tea cups in hand, engaging in leisure conversation in small groups, and would occasionally turn to look back at the situation.

"This is truly exciting, such a scale of flames have never occurred in the Sacred Saint Galaxy's history before."

"We have made ourselves impatient, I bet the enemies must be fully suffering from their predicament."

"That's right, I was still thinking if I would be able to witness the Third Best Guardian under the Heavens' splendor, but I guess we have no chance."



"In the face of absolute power, what's the use of the those so called famed generals?"

.....

Gou Cheng WenDao listened to his subordinates' conversations, he lowered his head and drank his tea and did not make a sound to stop them. When he had first brought up such a plan, many of them had went against him intensely, and if not for his persistence, they would had never been able to achieve even a quarter of the current scale.

Thinking about how the Ocean Guardian Stronghold would wail under the splendor of light auras and the entire Southern Region trembling in his presence, an ineffable pleasure surfaced from his heart.

The large scale siege boats were just completing their preparations to begin their siege, which was relatively complicated. The amount of energy spewed out from the large scale siege boats was astonishing, as there were no materials ever able to bear the power, thus they required many complicated compositions and structures to share the pressure.

Large scale siege boats were extremely powerful but at the same time weak, as they basically did not have any defensive capabilities. The complicated compositions meant that they would be easily destroyed.

Xie Yu An's only chance was to take the opportunity while the war monsters were preparing to launch a surprise attack and destroy the boats.

Once they complete their preparations, Xie Yu An would have no more chances.

Gou Cheng WenDao had specially laid out meticulous traps, thus his direct subordinated army was anxiously waiting. If Xie Yu An were to give up on the stronghold and decide to fight to the death with them, Gou Cheng WenDao would be equally happy.

An intact Ocean Guardian Stronghold was far more valuable than a stronghold reduced to rubble. He only needed to allocate a small force to guard the throat, and it would aid the process of entering the Southern Region.

Gou Cheng WenDao's attention was already beginning to turn towards the situation in the entire Southern Region.

He knew that the higher ups were far more interested in Heaven's Road than the Sacred Saint Galaxy, but Gou Cheng WenDao thought differently. Rather than placing their bets on the remote and unknown Heaven's Road, why not focus on the Sacred Saint Galaxy?

The sense of unifying the entire Sacred Saint Galaxy was far more enticing to any military general than conquering an unknown world.

The largest achievement we can get is still unifying the Sacred Saint Galaxy.

Conquering Heaven's Road might help make it easier for us to unify the Sacred Saint Galaxy, but but by the time we conquer Heaven's Road, I will no longer be young. The Shang Continent can no longer play any tricks to change the situation in Southern Region, this is enough.

With the defeat of the Southern Alliance, we can use the Pontoon Bridge to move further in quickly. With the Southern Alliance as the bridge, we will attack the Southern Region, and that will greatly ease everything.

"Master, the preparations are complete."

The reporting of his subordinate broke his train of thoughts, he raised his head and looked up, to see that Xie Yu An did not appear. He shook his head, Xie Yu An might be good at defending, but he does not have enough manpower. Although it is a trap, it was their only chance. It is uncertain hope, but Xie Yu An did not take it and is waiting to die. Such an action made Gou Cheng WenDao who had dedicated his life to being on the offensive, be unable to accept it.

But come to think of it, all the generals who are proficient in defense seem to have the same moral integrity.

Gou Cheng WenDao thought, Since you are heartfelt about your shell, then I shall break it for you.

"Begin the attack."

All of the generals stopped their discussions as they focused onto the battlefield. One after another, the majestic beast-like mountains gradually lit up with light auras, like ancient beasts awakening from their slumber.

Inside the Ocean Guardian Stronghold, it was so quiet that even the sound of a pin falling could be heard. Everyone were holding their breaths.

Xie Yu An's gaze never left the large scale siege boats, and when he saw the light auras blossoming out, he took a deep breath and shouted: "Open all the sluice gates!"

"Sluice gate 1 opened!"

"Sluice gate 2 opened!"

.....

The urgent command quickly passed down, the atmosphere quickly turning anxious.

Inside the unnoticeable shadows, many sluice gates were opened, causing chaotic energy from the Sea of Energy to surge in. Behind every sluice gate was a silver star treasure.

The star treasures fervently absorbed the energy that poured in, as though they had not eaten for thousands of years.

Every star treasure blossomed with flickering light auras.

The soldiers inside the stronghold were roused, the undulation that suddenly appeared was not unfamiliar to them, for they were the undulations produced by the star treasures absorbing energy. It was just that the intensity of the undulations far exceeded their expectations.

They, are truly powerful!

Xie Yu An's pupils flashed with light, he did not know if he was worthy of holding the title Third Best Guardian under the Heavens, but in the aspect of preparing deployments, he had unshakeable confidence. This pride was deeply concealed, something no one knew. It was just like how no one knew how meticulous he had restructured the Ocean Guardian Stronghold, which was to him, his best creation.

He had planned extremely carefully for the stronghold. Not only that, he had even prepared trump cards that no one knew.

Star treasures.

The moment when he had landed his eyes on the Sword Forest Stronghold, he was immediately attracted to the unique defense

technique it held. His own attainments on defense deployment was profound, and without spending much time, he understood the theory behind Sword Forest Stronghold. After that, when Bing equipped the Swift Army with star treasures, he irresponsibly requested for Xie Yu An to probe out tactics for himself. Xie Yu An had spent a great deal of effort to understand the star treasures, and thus his attainments became even more profound.

The former Ocean Guardian Stronghold was already perfect in his heart, but he still got a few star treasures from Bing. It was just because of his desire for perfection, that he felt that even without the star treasures, no one would be able to siege and occupy Ocean Guardian Stronghold.

Who knew they would actually be used.

Xie Yu An did not mobilize them right from the start, he was waiting, waiting for the large scale siege boats to start their attacks. He never interacted with such boats before, but he had relative knowledge towards the weaknesses of the war monsters.

Upon unleashing their attacks, they were unable to move, and required as much time as it needed to prepare to cool down.

"Target 15, prepare to engage!"

The subordinate's tone had anxiousness mixed in, the atmosphere quickly turning anxious. Their 22 Large Scale Siege boats aimed at the target number, and prepared for the next command.

A dazzling thick light beam suddenly shot through the battlefield, heavily smashing down onto Ocean Guardian's Stronghold.

Bang!

Everyone's vision turned white, no one could see anything, the entire Ocean Guardian Stronghold trembled, and everyone inside swayed around. Everyone held firmly onto anything they could around them, as their minds buzzed about.

Cold exhales and surprised sounds came out from aboard Gou Cheng WenDao's warship. Even for the generals of Honorable Martial Continent, very few of them had ever seen the large scale siege boats unleash attacks.

"Oh my god!"

"Too scary!"

"As expected of the best siege weapons, that light beam's diameter was at least 20m."

"If I am not wrong, it should be 38m."

"Truly despairing...."

"That's right, a man's strength is so insignificant in front of these monsters...."

Astonished cries and praise came out continuously, many of the Honorable Martial Continent's generals revealed fervent looks. Their hearts were trembling, their entire bodies filled with a sense of pride, How powerful are we, this is the Honorable Martial Continent, our Honorable Martial Continent!

In the face of such power, who can stop us?

No one can stop us!

The Southern Region is ours, the entire Sacred Saint Galaxy is ours!

When the light aura dissipated, the Ocean Guardian Stronghold appeared in their vision, the defensive barrier had evidently dimmed down, causing another round of surprised sounds. For such a large scale stronghold, Ocean Guardian Stronghold's defensive barrier was definitely sturdy and firm.

In the next moment, the defensive barrier of the Ocean Guardian Stronghold recovered its brightness.

But everybody did not care, they had just released the attack from one large scale siege boat, once they released more attacks, Ocean Guardian Stronghold's energy barrier would shatter. If they did not have any large scale siege boats, they would have to



sacrifice many people just to cause the thick defense barrier to tremble. Previously when they sent out probes, they were unable to even affect the barrier at all.

22 Large Scale Siege boats were right outside the firing range of Ocean Guardian Stronghold's warship weapons, causing them to be able to watch as their turtle shell crumble piece by piece without any ability to counterattack.

How pitiful was that!

The second large scale siege boat opened fire, and the third.....

Dazzling light auras enveloped the battlefield, the bright light auras pierced everybody's eyes to the point that it hurt. But even so, the generals of Honorable Martial Continent did their best to open their eyes wide and witness the battle, as missing it would only make them regret it for the rest of their lives.

The large scale siege boats attacked at a very slow frequency, every attack that struck the defensive barrier would produce an extremely loud explosion. It sounded like ancient giants striking down with large heavy hammers, every strike would cause everybody's hearts to thump, the numb feeling causing them to revere at the attacks.

The dazzling eye piercing silver light and bassy explosions enveloped the entire battlefield.

The killing zone encompassed Ocean Guardian Stronghold and its surrounding, the undulating energy extremely fatal inside. The aftermath of the explosions were enough to shatter warships, showing the immense might of large scale siege boats, the top grade monsters in the battlefield.

The impregnable Ocean Guardian Stronghold was like a small wooden hut in the middle of a storm, swaying incessantly.

Bang!

The explosions continued for an hour, which only continued to become stronger and stronger, causing everyone to be roused.

The Ocean Guardian Stronghold's defense barrier is about to be broken!

Yet inside Ocean Guardian Stronghold, it was extremely quiet. From the initial panic, the Swift Army soldiers had quickly adapted. Even though the ground beneath their feet were trembling, they remained steadfast and calm.

But the atmosphere was extremely tense, everybody's expressions were stretched taut with anxiousness. Rapid orders were constantly shouted out and repeated throughout the stronghold.

"The defensive barrier is less than 10%!"

"The star treasures are almost full!"

.....

"The defensive barrier is broken!"

"Star Treasures Replenishment complete!"

Two officers responsible for the star treasures shouted out at the same time with flushed red faces.

It's time!

In that instant, Xie Yu An's face turned sinister as he roared out with all of his might: "Fire!"

# Chapter 800 – Tang Tian’s Reflection

---

Fu Zheng Zhi was enormously proud with his own success.

The army was growing steadily and quickly, and in a few days, it had its rough shape. Although the Master was rather harsh, but thinking about the bright future, his heart could not help but be filled with excitement.

The Sin Domain’s First Army, thinking about that name made him smile the entire night.

If there was anything bad, that would be the Master being too strict. There were many times when he felt that everyone were doing well, but they would always hear an angered “again” after that.

Now, whenever he heard those words, he would subconsciously tremble.

It was not only him, Ji Ze, the unbridled Bewitching Blade, completely did not dare to throw a temper. The two of them were beaten to the point that they did not dare utter a word, and the people beneath them dared not even gasp.

After the long time, Fu Zheng Zhi also grasped Master Ghost Face Mask’s temper.

Definitely a perfectionist!

He can never see any defects or flaws, and his demands are so harsh to the point that it has become fearful. Furthermore, those who are crafty and try to provoke him will definitely die horribly. Although every soldier was carefully picked out by Fu Zheng Zhi, but none of these martial artists ever thought that the training would be so tough.

This is so cruel!

Fu Zheng Zhi initially considered himself as one who had seen everything, but the daily training made him feel as though the days had stretched into years, his skin had become tough, and ultimately he himself did not know how he managed to hold on for so long. Even Ji Ze who proudly announced that he had never suffered before, would always stare blankly in space, upon hearing the Master calling them for training, his eyes would reveal a deep sense of fear.

Technically with their understanding of the Law Surface that had reached the apex and their control over their power also reaching a state of ease, such training should not be too difficult for

them. But no one expected the Master to have such high demands, to them, it had turned from the possible to impossible.

200 Law Surfaces attaining a 100% resonance!

That was just impossible!

When Fu Zheng Zhi heard Master Ghost Face Mask announce that with his trademark emotionless and monotonous voice, he was instantly stunned and stayed petrified right on the spot for a few minutes before gradually regaining his senses, subconsciously wishing to refute him. But the shadow that Master Ghost Face Mask had casted over his heart was too strong, and the intense shadow made him stop rigidly two seconds before he blurted the words out.

For me to refute Master's first orders, am I trying to die?

To him, there was nothing more to say about the Master's strength, he was too strong. In the entire Sin Domain, the only one able to compete with Master is the number one Du Ke. Whether his Master or Du Ke was stronger was not something he could judge. But Master is too young, despite being strong, and thus taking it for granted.~

If not, he will never propose such an unrealistic goal.

Do not judge them based on him and Ji Ze completing the resonance with their Law Surfaces. How high level werethey? Their control over the power projected from their Law Surfaces were top notch in Sin Domain. It might notlook difficult for the two to complete the resonance, but the level of technique required in it was not low.

The two hundred people also had perfected Law Surfaces, but they were of a lower standard compared to the two ofthem.

Their control was incapable of reaching such detailedness and carefulness.

Furthermore, it was 200 people!

Not two, but 200, a complete 200! What did 200 Law Surfaces being in complete resonance mean? As long as anyone of them were to make a mistake at any point in time, they would be unable to resonate.

Fu Zheng Zhi thought about it in another way, Maybe Master is just giving everyone a long term goal, 100% is too exaggerated, but 50% is probable. Even if we obtain 50%, 100 Law Surfaces resonating, how terrifying would that power be.

Fu Zheng Zhi thought that he had clearly understood the matter only realized how naive he was after the training.

Master is actually trying for 100% resonance!

The seemingly impossible goal caused everyone to be dumbstruck. But the Master personally brought everyone to train together. He remained expressionless, and definitely did not talk about face, as long as there was a mistake, they would have to repeat the entire procedure.

Countless of them felt that the Master was striving to achieve extraordinary things, and going through such high intensity

training, ultimately it was the Master that was the first to collapse.

As expected, after the training on the first day, the Master was so tired he could not even lift his fingers.

Everyone secretly heaved a sigh of relief.

On the second day, the Master was even more fatigued.

Everyone saw a glimmer of hope.

On the third day, upon training, the Master fell asleep, and did not even eat.

Everyone felt that victory was close.

Fourth day, Fifth day, Sixth day....

Day after day passed, the people who were patiently waiting could no longer hold it in.

Everyone knew how tired the Master was the day before. On the second day, the Master looked as though he had been reincarnated, he was not shaken by the prior day's events, and looked like a machine that did not know fatigue, he went through the training without lessening the intensity, but actually increased it. Going through the training, the master was like a demon, his expressions never changed, he was extremely strict and stern, he never



shouted, his indifferent tone of speech was forever patient as he corrected them.

In that despair, some people gave up, and absconded through the night.

Fu Zheng Zhi arrived on the training grounds as usual, his footsteps extremely sluggish.

In the distance, there were a few bamboo poles with a few soldiers hanging from them.

Fu Zheng Zhi immediately focused his eyes, he did not know what method the Master used, for their Law Surfaces were all sealed. Fu Zheng Zhi's heart trembled, he had never heard of Law Surfaces being sealed. But the scene before his eyes spoke reality.

How far is Master's comprehension on Laws? Could it be that Master is actually like Du Ke, a martial artist with a Law Domain?

That thought flashed past his mind.

The people who were hung up could not rely on the power projected from their Law Surfaces, rendering them like babies hung up through the night causing their facial expressions to be sunken.

All the soldiers that entered the training grounds jumped, many of them rejoiced that they did not go crazy and tried to escape. In time, the entire army was afraid.

The entire army kept quiet out of fear.

This time, Tang Tian was not like his usual self, about to start training, but he had his hands beneath his chin, reflecting. He was not trained for army warfare, but was forced to it. Bing had once thought of pushing him to be a mechanical martial artist, but never urged him to be some military general. Even Bing, a man who basked in the glory of the Southern Cross Army, felt despair upon thinking of Tang Tian's path as a military general, thus Tang Tian had never thought that his talent with regards to army to be anywhere good.

But the reality was right in front of him, and it was his best idea. If the Army was truly successful, the Sin Domain naturally could not hold him back, and whoever Du Ke was, Tang Tian need not even care. At that time, who will dare continue imprisoning a member of the Null Division? Wouldn't they quickly send them obediently back to me?

Tang Tian was not a man who liked to admit defeat, and since he thought it was a good idea, then it must be him not doing well in another aspect.

But, what am I doing wrong?

If only Bing was here, Tang Tian whined in his heart. But it was only for a moment. There isn't anyone to help me, so I have to rely on myself.~ He racked his brains, and did his best to recall how Bing trained the armies.

Discipline is strict and partial, there are rewards and punishments....

Hold up!

Tang Tian's eyes lit up, he felt that he had grasped the crux of the problem! That's right, I always give punishments, but never gave rewards, no wonder, no wonder. Tang Tian revealed a look of enlightenment. To want the horse to run, one has to feed the horse first. Tang Tian still understood that simple logic.

But the question is, what can I reward them with?

Tang Tian felt joyous over his clarity, This is good to resolve, wait, wait, wait a minute! Tang Tian suddenly realized, he was not in the Ursa Major Constellation or the Sacred Saint Galaxy, but in the Sin Domain, where he was penniless.

I am penniless....

Tang Tian's face darkened, to a nouveau riche who had used his money to buy armies and buy warships, and threw money everywhere to win his enemies, the feeling of being penniless was extremely terrible.

Empty promises? Although Tang Tian's skin was thick, but he was never unable to do such a thing.

It was reasonable to think about Fu Zheng Zhi and his family wealth, but Tang Tian had never thought of using them. Originating as Andrew Academy's tyrant, Tang Tian had a very simple thought process, if people were to follow you, and you are already not giving them any benefits, but you want to dredge up their family wealth as well?

That was not reasonable at all.

Tang Tian never spoke about principles with his enemies, but with regards to his own companions, he was extremely prudent.

And upon thinking about his next enemy being Du Ke, all the small wealth were unable to rouse him.

A portion of money equals a portion of power, this logic is the same everywhere.

Upon thinking about it, Tang Tian was not angry, but felt that he had taken advantage of everybody. In any ordinary day, it is fine if everybody listens to your orders, but if you were to make them go all out for nothing, it would be unforgivable for being so stingy.

After ordering Fu Zheng Zhi to bring the men down, he continued to think about the problem.

If only I had my Silver Aquarius Cabinet, that would be good, there are a pile of oddities and star treasures in them, if not, would I be in such a difficult situation?

If not, Little Fool would be fine too, he can easily refine out a few spirit treasures, and dazzle the hell out of everyone here!

Eh, refining spirit objects.....

Tang Tian who was about to go crazy from thinking suddenly had his eyes lit up with the idea.

He did not know how to refine spirit objects, and there were no star treasures in Sin Domain that he needed to refine as well. But the materials in Sin Domain were extremely unique, and completely different from Heaven's Road and the Sacred Saint Galaxy.

Senior Gui Wu's Forceful Subjugating Bead had many unorthodox methods of refinement processes, but Little Fool was the one more proficient in it, as Tang Tian never cared about it. Now that he was forced in such a situation, he could only frown and attempt to recall about the bits and pieces.

This recollection lasted through an entire night.

Fu Zheng Zhi had become worried, Is Master discouraged because of the soldiers attempting to escape?

That cannot happen! Although there are a few small twists and turns, but the army's future is extremely limitless!

He was about to advise the Master, that the army was directly linked to him and his family's future. I cannot let Master continue being so dispirited.

He found Master, and heard Tang Tian mumbling delirious ravings, which he did not even understand a bit.

Before he could even speak up, Tang Tian saw him with lit up eyes, and spoke out: "Your Green Swords, take them out for me to see."

Fu Zheng Zhi's heart jumped, Master sees something in my Green Swords?

But after thinking about it, he felt that it was impossible as Tang Tian did not use swords. Furthermore, Master even gave the Death Thumb Ring to Xu Ye, how can he desire my Green Swords?

Fu Zheng Zhi's entire head was covered with perspiration, but he still gave his Green Swords over to the Master.